

**The Andes and the Amazon, or, Across the continent of South America / by James Orton.**

**Contributors**

Orton, James, 1830-1877.

**Publication/Creation**

New York : Harper, 1875.

**Persistent URL**

<https://wellcomecollection.org/works/ffpja92x>

**License and attribution**

This work has been identified as being free of known restrictions under copyright law, including all related and neighbouring rights and is being made available under the Creative Commons, Public Domain Mark.

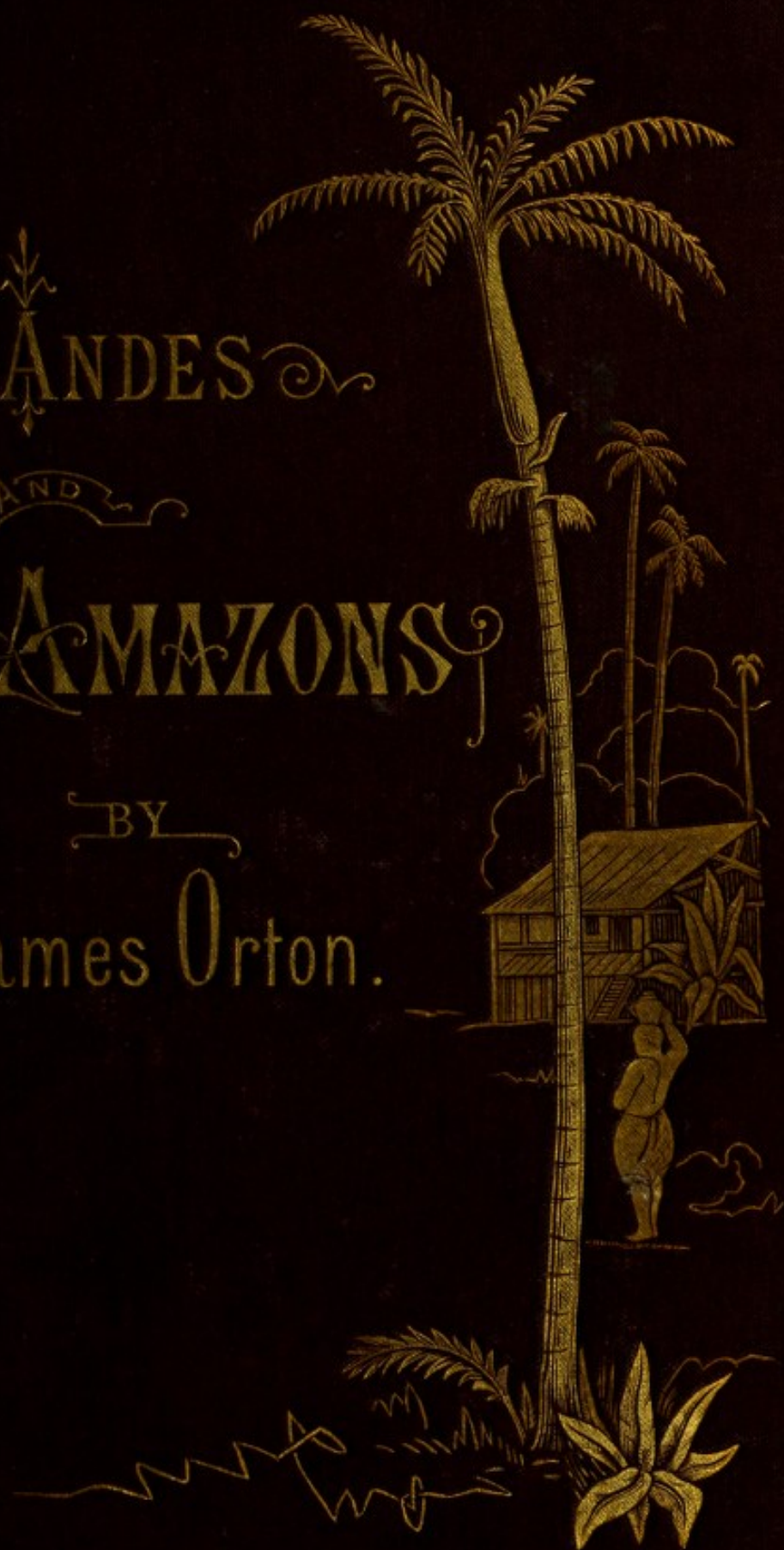
You can copy, modify, distribute and perform the work, even for commercial purposes, without asking permission.



Wellcome Collection  
183 Euston Road  
London NW1 2BE UK  
T +44 (0)20 7611 8722  
E [library@wellcomecollection.org](mailto:library@wellcomecollection.org)  
<https://wellcomecollection.org>



THE ANDES  
AND  
THE AMAZONS  
BY  
James Orton.



EX LIBRIS



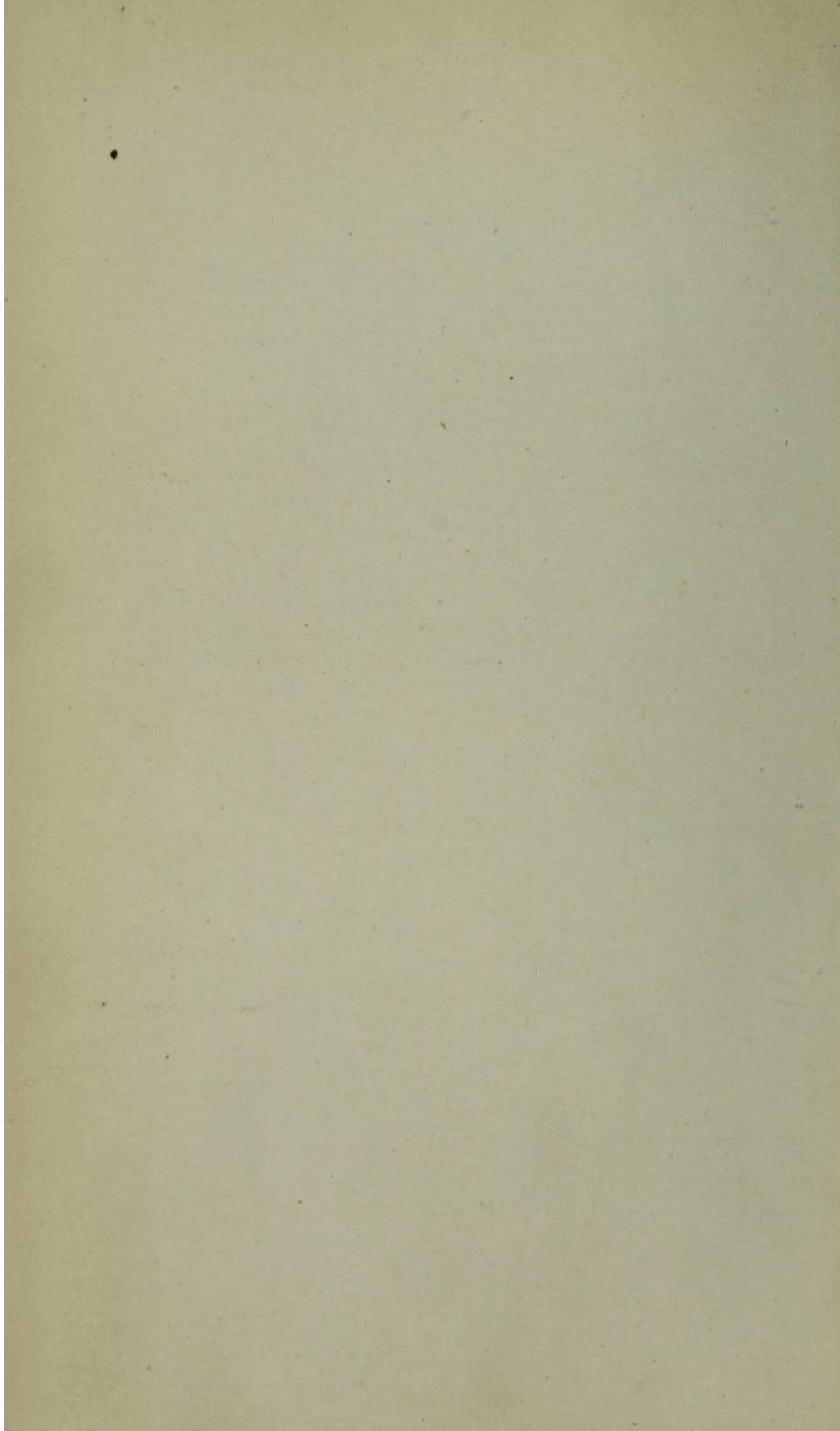
WELLCOME BUREAU OF SCIENTIFIC RESEARCH

LONDON



22501472288



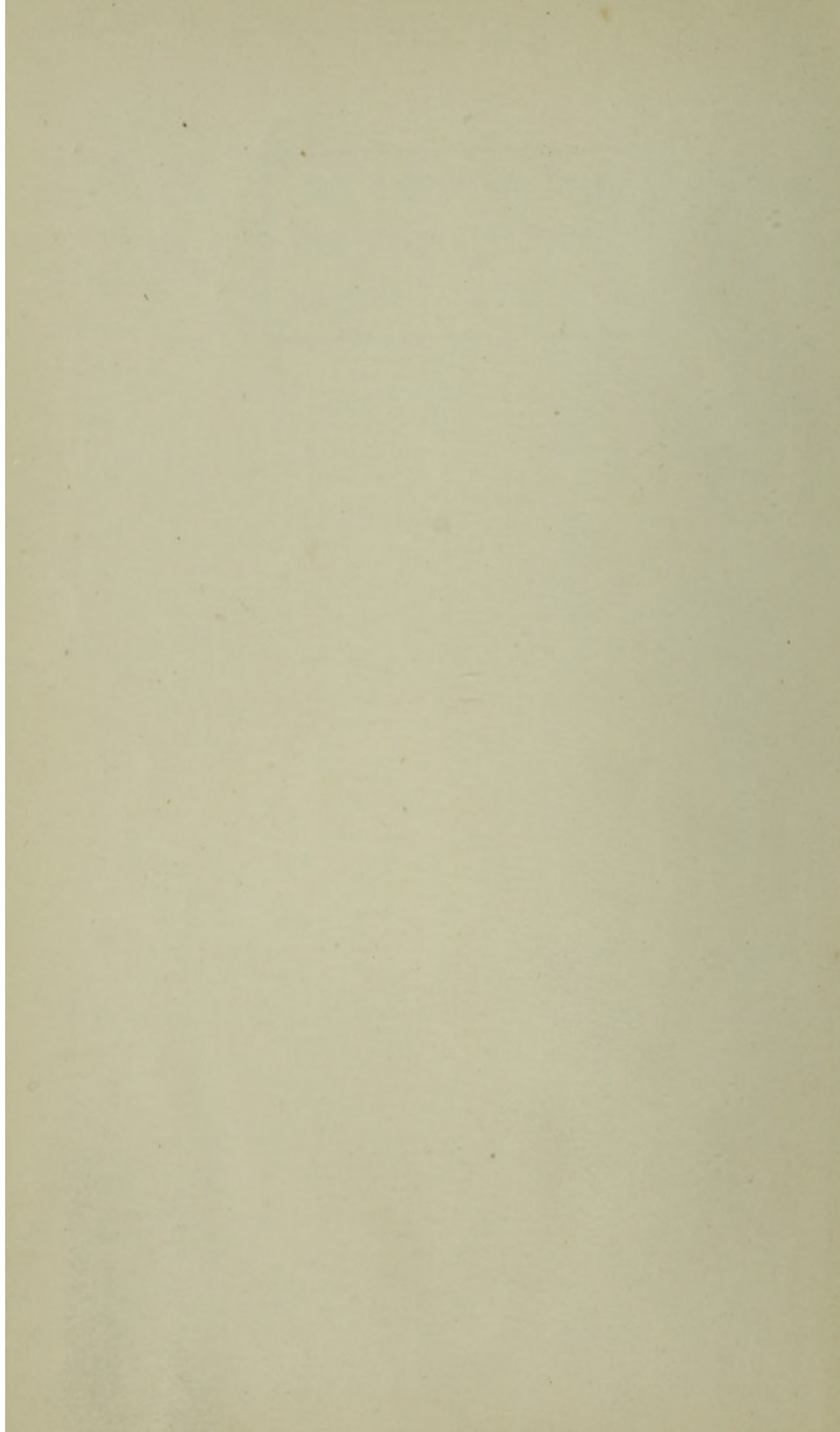


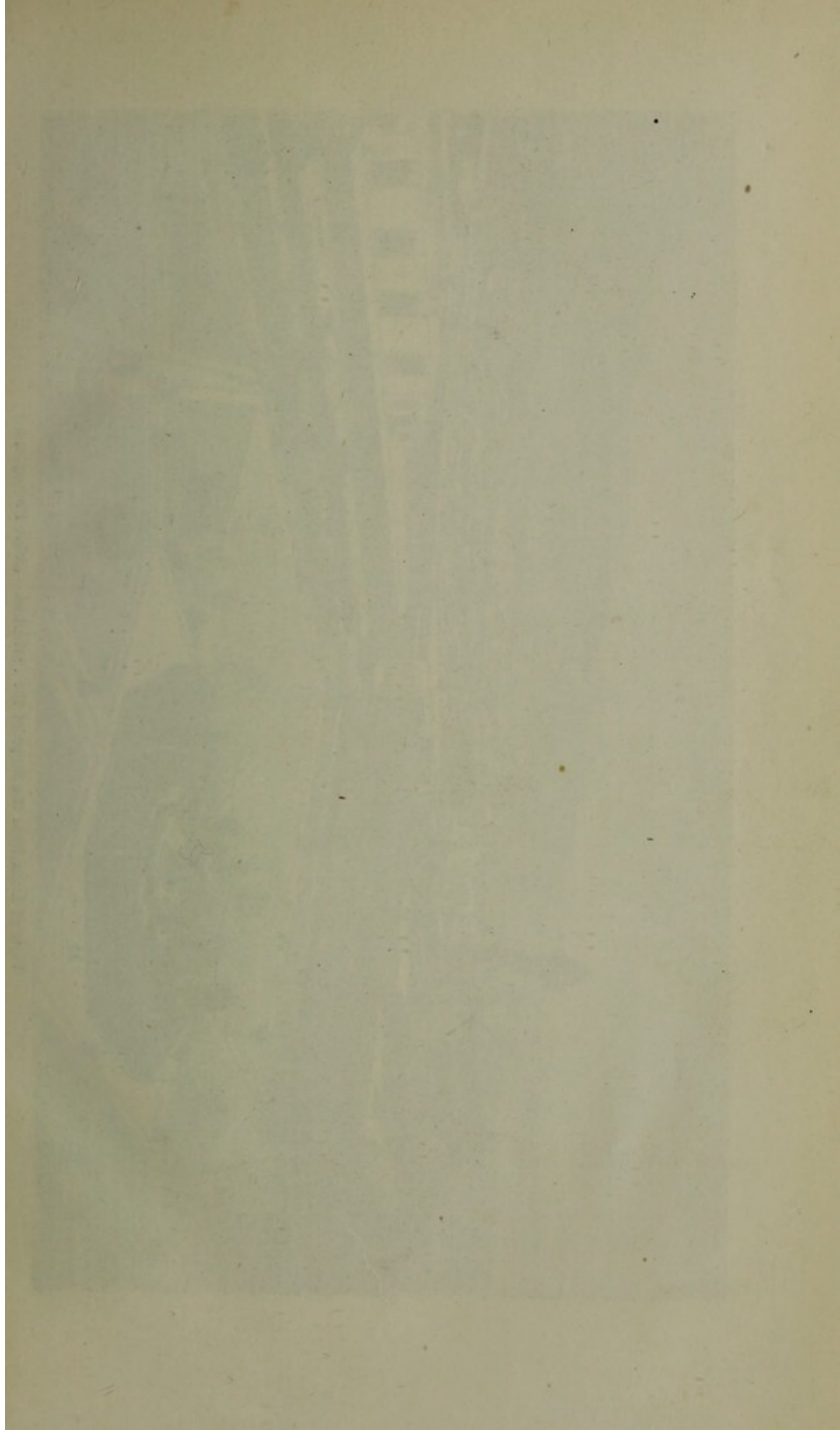


41  
~~6.9.~~ 1302  
W. B. S. R.

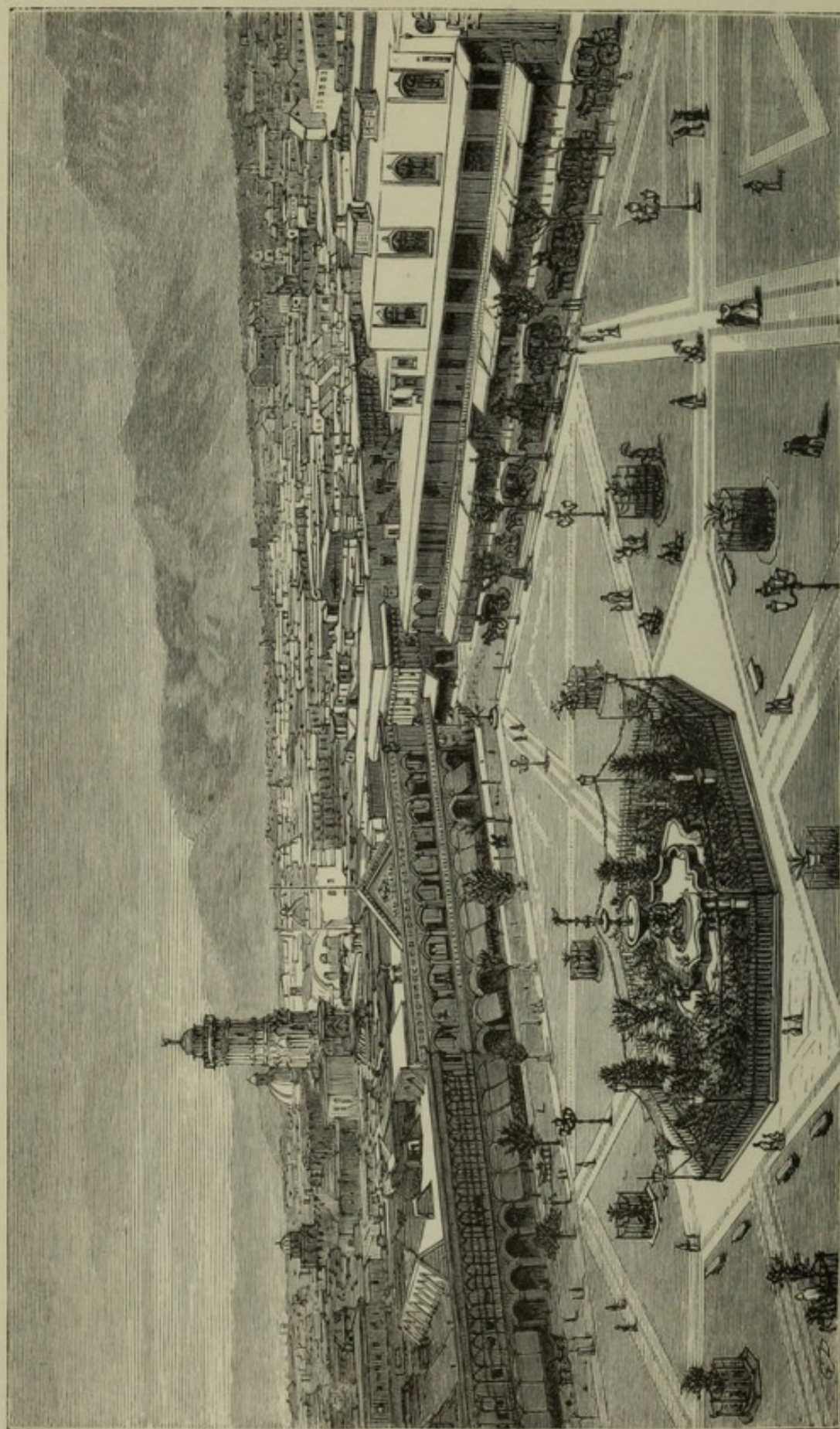
X.2

THE PROPERTY OF  
THE WELLCOME BUREAU  
OF SCIENTIFIC RESEARCH.









View of Lima from the Steps of the Cathedral. (After Photograph.)



THE  
ANDES AND THE AMAZON;

OR,

ACROSS THE CONTINENT OF SOUTH AMERICA.

BY JAMES ORTON, A.M.,

PROFESSOR OF NATURAL HISTORY IN VASSAR COLLEGE, POUGHKEEPSIE, N. Y.; CORRESPONDING MEMBER OF THE ACADEMY OF NATURAL SCIENCES, PHILADELPHIA, AND OF THE LYCEUM OF NATURAL HISTORY, NEW YORK;  
AUTHOR OF "COMPARATIVE ZOOLOGY," ETC.

THIRD EDITION, REVISED AND ENLARGED,  
CONTAINING NOTES OF A SECOND JOURNEY ACROSS THE CONTINENT  
FROM PARA TO LIMA AND LAKE TITICACA.

*WITH TWO MAPS AND NUMEROUS ILLUSTRATIONS.*



NEW YORK:  
HARPER & BROTHERS, PUBLISHERS,  
FRANKLIN SQUARE.

Entered according to Act of Congress, in the year 1875, by

HARPER & BROTHERS,

In the Office of the Librarian of Congress, at Washington.

(2) ZDF.79. AA8

TO  
CHARLES DARWIN, M.A., F.R.S., F.L.S., F.G.S.,

WHOSE PROFOUND RESEARCHES  
HAVE THROWN SO MUCH LIGHT UPON EVERY DEPARTMENT OF SCIENCE,  
AND  
WHOSE CHARMING "VOYAGE OF THE BEAGLE" HAS SO PLEASANTLY  
ASSOCIATED HIS NAME WITH OUR SOUTHERN CONTINENT,  
THESE SKETCHES OF THE ANDES AND THE AMAZON ARE, BY PERMISSION,  
MOST RESPECTFULLY

**Dedicated.**

"Among the scenes which are deeply impressed on my mind, none exceed in sublimity the primeval forests undefaced by the hand of man; whether those of Brazil, where the powers of Life are predominant, or those of Terra del Fuego, where Death and Decay prevail. Both are temples filled with the varied productions of the God of Nature: no one can stand in these solitudes unmoved, and not feel that there is more in man than the mere breath of his body."—DARWIN'S *Journal*, p. 503.



## PREFACE TO FIRST EDITION.

---

THIS volume is one result of a scientific expedition to the equatorial Andes and the river Amazon. The expedition was made under the auspices of the Smithsonian Institution, and consisted of the following gentlemen besides the writer: Colonel Staunton, of Ingham University, Leroy, N. Y.; F. S. Williams, Esq., of Albany, N. Y.; and Messrs. P. V. Myers and A. Bushnell, of Williams College. We sailed from New York July 1, 1867; and, after crossing the Isthmus of Panama and touching at Paita, Peru, our general route was from Guayaquil to Quito, over the Eastern Cordillera; thence over the Western Cordillera, and through the forest on foot to Napo; down the Rio Napo by canoe to Pebas, on the Marañon; and thence by steamer to Pará.\*

Nearly the entire region traversed by the expedition is strangely misrepresented by the most recent geographical

\* Another division, consisting of Messrs. H. M. Myers, R. H. Forbes, and W. Gilbert, of Williams College, proceeded to Venezuela, and after exploring the vicinity of Lake Valencia, the two former traversed the llanos to Pao, descended the Apuré and ascended the Orinoco to Yavita, crossed the portage of Pimichin (a low, level tract, nine miles wide, separating the waters of the Orinoco from those of the Amazon), and descended the Negro to Manáos, making a voyage by canoe of over 2000 miles through a little-known but deeply-interesting region. A narrative of this expedition was published by D. Appleton and Co., under the title of *Life and Nature under the Tropics*.



works. On the Andes of Ecuador we have little besides the travels of Humboldt; on the Napo, nothing; while the Marañon is less known to North Americans than the Nile.

Many of the following pages first appeared in the New York *Evening Post*. The author has also published "Physical Observations on the Andes and the Amazon" and "Geological Notes on the Ecuadorian Andes" in the *American Journal of Science*, an article on the great earthquake of 1868 in the Rochester *Democrat*, and a paper *On the Valley of the Amazon* read before the American Association at Salem. These papers have been revised and extended, though the popular form has been retained. It has been the effort of the writer to present a condensed but faithful picture of the physical aspect, the resources, and the inhabitants of this vast country, which is destined to become an important field for commercial enterprise. For detailed descriptions of the collections in natural history, the scientific reader is referred to the various reports of the following gentlemen, to whom the specimens were committed by the Smithsonian Institution:

Volcanic Rocks.....	Dr. T. Sterry Hunt, F.R.S., Montreal.
Plants.....	Dr. Asa Gray, Cambridge.
Land and Fresh-water Shells.	M. Crosse, Paris, and Thomas Bland, Esq., New York.
Marine Shells.....	Rev. Dr. E. R. Beadle, Philadelphia.
Fossil ".....	W. M. Gabb, Esq., Philadelphia.
Hemiptera.....	Prof. P. R. Uhler, Baltimore.
Orthoptera.....	S. H. Scudder, Esq., Boston.
Hymenoptera and Nocturnal	
Lepidoptera.....	Dr. A. S. Packard, Jr., Salem.
Diurnal Lepidoptera.....	Tryon Reakirt, Esq., Philadelphia.
Coleoptera.....	George D. Smith, Esq., Boston.
Phalangia and Pedipalpi.....	Dr. H. C. Wood, Jr., Philadelphia.
Fishes.....	Dr. Theodore Gill, Washington.
Reptiles.....	Prof. E. D. Cope, Philadelphia.



Birds .....	John Cassin, Esq.,* Philadelphia.
Bats .....	Dr. H. Allen, Philadelphia.
Mammalian Fossils .....	Dr. Joseph Leidy, Philadelphia.

Many of the type specimens are deposited in the museums of the Smithsonian Institution, the Philadelphia Academy of Natural Science, the Boston Society of Natural History, the Peabody Academy of Science, and Vassar College; but the bulk of the collection was purchased by Ingham University, Leroy, New York.

The Map of Equatorial America was drawn with great care after original observations and the surveys of Humboldt and Wisse on the Andes, and of Azevedo, Castelnau, and Bates on the Amazon.† The names of Indian tribes are in small capitals. Most of the illustrations are after photographs or drawings made on the ground, and can be relied upon. The portrait of Humboldt, which is for the first time presented to the public, was photographed from the original painting in the possession of Sr. Aguirre, Quito. Unlike the usual portrait—an old man, in Berlin—this presents him as a young man in Prussian uniform, traveling on the Andes.

We desire to express our grateful acknowledgments to the Smithsonian Institution, Hon. William H. Seward, and Hon. James A. Garfield, of Washington; to Cyrus W. Field, Esq., and William Pitt Palmer, Esq., of New York; to C. P. Williams, Esq., of Albany; to Rev. J. C. Fletcher,

\* This eminent ornithologist died in the midst of his examination. Mr. George N. Lawrence, of New York, has identified the remainder, including all the hummers.

† We have retained the common orthography of this word, though *Amazons*, used by Bates, is doubtless more correct, as more akin to the Brazilian name *Amazonas*.



now United States Consul at Oporto; to Chaplain Jones, of Philadelphia; to Dr. William Jameson, of the University of Quito; to J. F. Reeve, Esq., and Captain Lee, of Guayaquil; to the Pacific Mail Steamship, Panama Railroad, and South Pacific Steam Navigation companies; to the officers of the Peruvian and Brazilian steamers on the Amazon; and to the eminent naturalists who have examined the results of the expedition.

---

## PREFACE TO THIRD EDITION.

IN 1873 the author made a second expedition across South America, in company with Mr. H. Walter Webb and Mr. E. I. Frost, of the School of Mines, New York. The general route was up the Amazons from Pará to Yurimáguas, thence over the Andes to the Pacific coast and down to Lima. Among the side excursions was a trip to Lake Titicaca, by the way of Arequipa.

The main objects of the journey were scientific. The large collections in natural history have added many new species to science, and thrown light upon the distribution of tropical forms. The special study of the physical features of the Marañon region—a vast and interesting country, most rudely laid down in existing maps—has resulted in the careful chart appended to this volume, which, as it is based upon actual surveys, it is believed will prove a valued contribution to geographical science. Much labor was also expended in obtaining facts illustrating the commercial resources and possibilities of the Valley of the



Amazons, a subject which is destined to arrest the attention of enterprising men and nations.

This edition has been prepared by adding to the narrative of the expedition of 1867 a description of a more southerly route, with such fresh observations as would most likely interest the practical man. To swell the volume with scientific details would defeat the purpose of the work, which is to present a popular yet accurate picture of the fairest and most promising part of our southern continent. For elaborate papers the naturalist is referred to the Proceedings of the Philadelphia, Boston, and Salem societies. Some of the following chapters, abbreviated, have already appeared in the *Scientific American*, *Independent*, *Evening Post*, *Engineering and Mining Journal*, and *Annals and Magazine of Natural History*.

Special thanks for extraordinary favors are due to Sr. Pimenta Bueno, of Pará; to Mr. Meiggs, of Lima; to William R. Garrison, Esq., of New York; to the Pacific Mail Steamship Company; to Mr. Wettermann, of Chachapoyas; and to Doctor Galt, Captain Rochelle, and other members of the Peruvian Hydrographical Commission, under Admiral Tucker. The Map of the Marañon and several pages derive their chief value, if not their existence, from the generous contributions most courteously furnished by this Commission.





# CONTENTS.

---

## PART I.—THE ANDES AND THE AMAZONS.

### CHAPTER I.

Guayaquil. — First and Last Impressions. — Climate. — Commerce. — The Malecon. — Glimpse of the Andes. — Scenes on the Guayas. — Bodegas. — Mounted for Quito. — La Mona. — A Tropical Forest.....Page 25

### CHAPTER II.

Our Tambo. — Ascending the Andes. — Camino Real. — Magnificent Views. — Guaranda. — Cinchona. — The Summit. — Chimborazo. — Over the Andes. — Chuquipogyo the Wretched. — Ambato. — A Stupid City. — Cotopaxi. — The Vale of Machachi. — Arrival at Quito..... 40

### CHAPTER III.

Early History of Quito. — Its Splendor under the Incas. — Crushed by Spain. — Dying now. — Situation. — Altitude. — Streets. — Buildings..... 56

### CHAPTER IV.

Population of Quito. — Dress. — Manners. — Character. — Commerce. — Agriculture. — Manufactures. — Arts. — Education. — Amusements. — Quito Ladies..... 68

### CHAPTER V.

Ecuador. — Extent. — Government. — Religion. — A Protestant Cemetery in Quito. — Climate. — Regularity of Tropical Nature. — Diseases on the Highlands..... 85

### CHAPTER VI.

Astronomic Virtues of Quito. — Flora and Fauna of the Valley of Quito. — Primeval Inhabitants of the Andes. — Quichua Indians..... 97

### CHAPTER VII.

Geological History of South America. — Rise of the Andes. — Creation of the Amazons. — Characteristic Features of the Continent. — Andean Chain. — The Equatorial Volcanoes..... 114

### CHAPTER VIII.

The Volcanoes of Ecuador. — Western Cordillera. — Chimborazo. — Iliniza. — Corazon. — Pichincha. — Descent into its Crater..... 127

### CHAPTER IX.

The Volcanoes of Ecuador. — Eastern Cordillera. — Imbabura. — Cayambi. — Antisana. — Cotopaxi. — Llanganati. — Tunguragua. — Altar. — Sangai. 143



## CHAPTER X.

The Valley of Quito.—Riobamba.—A Bed of "Fossil Giants."—Chillo Hacienda.—Otovalo and Ibarra.—The Great Earthquake of 1868... Page 152

## CHAPTER XI.

"The Province of the Orient," or the Wild Napo Country.—The Napos, Zaparos, and Jívaros Indians.—Preparations to cross the Continent. . 164

## CHAPTER XII.

Departure from Quito.—Itulcachi.—A Night in a Bread-tray.—Crossing the Cordillera.—Guamani.—Papallacta.—Domiciled at the Governor's.—An Indian Aristides.—Our Peon Train.—In the Wilderness..... 177

## CHAPTER XIII.

Baeza.—The Forest.—Crossing the Cosanga.—Curi-urcu.—Archidona.—Appearance, Customs, and Belief of the Natives.—Napo and Napo River. 187

## CHAPTER XIV.

Afloat on the Napo.—Down the Rapids.—Santa Rosa and its Mulish Alcalde.—Pratt on Discipline.—Forest Music.—Coca.—Our Craft and Crew.—Storm on the Napo..... 200

## CHAPTER XV.

Sea-cows and Turtles' Eggs.—The Forest.—Peccaries.—Indian Tribes on the Napo.—Anacondas and Howling Monkeys.—Insect Pests.—Battle with Ants.—Barometric Anomaly.—First View of the Amazons.—Pebas. 215

## CHAPTER XVI.

Down the Amazons.—Steam on the Great River.—Loreto.—San Antonio.—Tabatinga.—Brazilian Steamers.—Scenery on the Amazons.—Tocantíns.—Fonte Boa.—Ega.—Rio Negro.—Manáos..... 230

## CHAPTER XVII.

Down the Amazons.—Serpa.—Villa Nova.—Obidos.—Santarem.—A Colony of Southerners.—Monte Alegre.—Porto de Moz.—Leaving the Amazons.—Breves.—Pará River.—The City of Pará.—Legislation and Currency.—Religion and Education.—Nonpareil Climate..... 247

## CHAPTER XVIII.

The River Amazons.—Its Source and Magnitude.—Tributaries and Tints.—Volume and Current.—Rise and Fall.—Navigation.—Expeditions on the Great River..... 264

## CHAPTER XIX.

The Valley of the Amazons.—Its Physical Geography.—Geology.—Climate.—Vegetation..... 280

## CHAPTER XX.

Life within the Great River.—Fishes.—Alligators.—Turtles.—Porpoises and Manatís..... 295



CHAPTER XXI.

Life around the Great River. — Insects. — Reptiles. — Birds. — Mammals.....Page 300

CHAPTER XXII.

Life around the Great River.—Origin of the Red Man.—General Characteristics of the Amazonian Indians.—Their Languages, Costumes, and Habitations.—Principal Tribes.—Mixed Breeds.—Brazilians and Brazil.. 315

CHAPTER XXIII.

How to Travel in South America.—Routes.—Expenses.—Outfit.—Precautions.—Dangers..... 325

CHAPTER XXIV.

In Memoriam..... 334

---

PART II.—THE ANDES AND THE AMAZONS REVISITED.

CHAPTER XXV.

The Navigation and Commercial Resources of the Amazons.—Volume of the Great River and its Tributaries.—Natural Wealth.—Sailing Craft and Steamers..... 339

CHAPTER XXVI.

Pará: its Situation, Climate, Industry, and Commerce..... 358

CHAPTER XXVII.

Up the Amazons.—A Thousand Miles on the Great River.—Scenery.—Santarem. — Manáos. — Value of Labor and Productions. — Duties and Freights ..... 364

CHAPTER XXVIII.

Up the Amazons.—From the Rio Negro to the Andes.—The Great Wilderness.—Steam on the Marañon.—The Birmingham of the Amazons.—Price of Labor and Food.—Survey of the Marañon. .... 376

CHAPTER XXIX.

Routes over the Andes.—A Polar Expedition at the Equator.—A Tramp through the Forest.—Moyobamba and the Manufacture of Straw Hats.—Crossing the Cordillera. .... 385

CHAPTER XXX.

Over the Andes.—Chachapoyas.—The Heart of the Andes.—Cajamárca and its Relics of Atahualpa.—Arrival at the Pacific.—The City of Lima. 396

CHAPTER XXXI.

Over the Andes by Rail.—The Desert of Islay.—The City of Arequipa.—The Summit.—Puno and Lake Titicaca ..... 412

## CHAPTER XXXII.

- The Commerce of Peru.—Her Vast Possibilities.—The Present Source of her Wealth. ....Page 430

## CHAPTER XXXIII.

- The Silver-mines of Peru: Cerro de Pasco.—Hualguayoc.—Puno.—Chilete.—Ancachs. .... 440

## CHAPTER XXXIV.

- The Railways of Peru.—Henry Meiggs and his Enterprises. .... 444

## CHAPTER XXXV.

- The Aborigines on the Andes and the Amazons ..... 454

## CHAPTER XXXVI.

- Game on the Amazons; or, Friends and Foes in the Animal Kingdom.. 474

## CHAPTER XXXVII.

- The Valuable Woods in the Valley of the Amazons. .... 488

## CHAPTER XXXVIII.

- The Fruits of the Amazons, Edible and Medicinal. .... 509

## CHAPTER XXXIX.

- Brazilian Drugs, Dyes, Gums, and Textile Plants. .... 522

## CHAPTER XL.

- The Palms of the Amazons, Fan-leaved and Feathery ..... 534

## CHAPTER XLI.

- The Geological Structure of the Amazons Valley ..... 551

## CHAPTER XLII.

- On the Condors and Humming-birds of the Equatorial Andes. .... 564

## CHAPTER XLIII.

- Cotopaxi: The First Ascent of the Great Volcano. .... 574

## CHAPTER XLIV.

- Medical Notes on the Upper Amazons. .... 580

## CHAPTER XLV.

- A New Route for Tourists: Up the Amazons and over the Andes. .... 615

- APPENDIX A.—BAROMETRICAL MEASUREMENTS ACROSS SOUTH AMERICA. .... 622

- APPENDIX B.—VOCABULARIES FROM THE QUÍCHUA, ZÁPARO, YÁGUA, AND CÁMPAS LANGUAGES. .... 624

- APPENDIX C.—COMMERCE OF THE AMAZONS ..... 628

- APPENDIX D.—HYDROGRAPHICAL OBSERVATIONS. .... 633

- INDEX ..... 637



## ILLUSTRATIONS.

View of Lima, from the Cathedral Steps. } <i>Frontispiece.</i>	Diagram showing the Fall of the Amazons along its Course from Borja to Pará.....Page	341
Cathedral of Guayaquil.....Page	27	
Equipped for the Andes.....	37	Teotonio Falls, Madeira River... 344
Ascending the Andes.....	42	Compensation of Floods in the Amazons Basin..... 352
Quito from the North.....	61	Amazonian Craft..... 353
Water-carriers.....	62	Plan of Callao and Lima..... 404
Street in Quito.....	63	A Lima Lady ..... 406
Capital at Quito.....	66	Bridge over the Rimac in Lima.. 409
Indian Dwellings.....	78	Sand-dune ..... 414
Washerwomen.....	83	Arequipa, Peru, and the Volcano of Misti..... 417
Ecclesiastics.....	88	Cathedral of Puno ..... 424
Profiles of Ecuadorian Volcanoes	123	View of Sorata across Lake Titicaca..... 426
Crater of Pichincha.....	135	Balsa Navigation on Lake Titicaca..... 429
Humboldt in 1802.....	156	Guano Islands..... 435
Ibarra.....	158	Henry Meiggs..... 446
Napo Peon.....	184	Verrugas Bridge, Oroya Railway 450
Autograph of an Indian.....	185	Monolithic Gate-way..... 455
Papaya-tree.....	202	Remaining End-walls of the Temple of the Sun, Cuzco..... 457
Trapiche, or Sugar-mill.....	208	Section of a Burial-tower at Silustani ..... 458
Our Craft on the Napo.....	211	Quichua Woman, Cerro de Pasco. 459
Hunting Turtle-eggs.....	217	Aymará Woman, Puno ..... 460
A Howler.....	223	Aymará Men, Puno..... 461
Kitchen on the Amazons.....	238	Maué Indian..... 464
Natives on the Middle Amazons.	241	Conibo and Shipibo Indians,* Ucayali River ..... 467
A Siesta.....	244	Hunting with the Blow-gun ..... 475
Manaos.....	248	The Pira-rucú..... 479
Pará.....	255	An Army of Eciton Ants..... 486
Fruit-peddlers.....	259	Deposits in the Amazons Valley. 489
Igarape, or Canoe-path.....	265	A Giant of the Forest..... 491
Coca-plant.....	293	
Iguana.....	305	
Toucans.....	307	
Brazilian Hummers.....	309	
Capybara.....	310	
Jaguar.....	311	
Native Comb.....	317	

\* In this cut the Conibos are standing, and the Shipibos sitting.

Leaves and Flowers of the Cedro.....	Page 493	Cacáo.....	Page 518
Leaves, Fruit, and Flower of Maçarandúba.....	501	Mandioca.....	519
Leaves, Nut, and Flower of Sapucaya.....	503	Branch of the India-rubber-tree.	529
Pine-apple.....	509	Palms on the Middle Amazons...	535
Cajú Nut.....	511	Assaí Palm ( <i>Euterpe oleracea</i> )..	540
Abacáte Pear.....	511	The Vegetable-ivory Plant.....	549
Guáva.....	512	Diagram of Route from the Amazons Valley to the Pacific Ocean.....	553
A Bunch of Cocoa-nuts.....	515	Map of Equatorial America.....	<i>End.</i>
		The Marañon and its Tributaries “	



PART I.

---

THE ANDES AND THE AMAZONS;

OR,

NOTES OF A JOURNEY FROM GUAYAQUIL TO PARÁ.

# THE STORY OF THE WANDER

## CHAPTER I

### PART I

# THE WANDER AND THE WANDER

## THE WANDER OF A TALENTED MAN

# THE ANDES AND THE AMAZON.

---

## CHAPTER I.

Guayaquil. — First and Last Impressions. — Climate. — Commerce. — The Malecon. — Glimpse of the Andes. — Scenes on the Guayas. — Bodegas. — Mounted for Quito. — La Mona. — A Tropical Forest.

LATE in the evening of the 19th of July, 1867, the steamer "Favorita" dropped anchor in front of the city of Guayaquil. The first view awakened visions of Oriental splendor. Before us was the Malecon, stretching along the river, two miles in length—at once the most beautiful and the most busy street in the emporium of Ecuador. In the centre rose the Government House, with its quaint old tower, bearing aloft the city clock. On either hand were long rows of massive, apparently marble, three-storied buildings, each occupying an entire square, and as elegant as they were massive. Each story was blessed with a balcony, the upper one hung with canvas curtains now rolled up, the other protruding over the sidewalk to form a lengthened arcade like that of the Rue de Rivoli in imperial Paris. In this lower story were the gay shops of Guayaquil, filled with the prints, and silks, and fancy articles of England and France. As this is the promenade street as well as the Broadway of commerce, crowds of Ecuadorians, who never do business in the evening, leisurely paced the magnificent arcade; hatless ladies sparkling with fire-flies\* instead of

\* The *Pyrophorus noctilucus*, or "cucujo," found also in Mexico and the West Indies. It resembles our large spring-beetle. The light proceeds from two eye-like spots on the thorax and from the segments underneath. It feeds



diamonds, and far more brilliant than koh-i-noors, swept the pavement with their long trains; martial music floated on the gentle breeze from the barracks or some festive hall, and a thousand gas-lights along the levee and in the city, doubling their number by reflection from the river, betokened wealth and civilization.

We landed in the morning to find our vision a dissolving view in the light of the rising sun. The princely mansions turned out to be hollow squares of wood-work, plastered within and without, and roofed with red tiles. Even the "squares" were only distant approximations; not a right angle could we find in our hotel. All the edifices are built (very properly in this climate) to admit air instead of excluding it, and the architects have wonderfully succeeded; but with the air is wafted many an odor not so pleasing as the spicy breezes from Ceylon's isle. The cathedral is of elegant design. Its photograph is more imposing than Notre Dame, and a Latin inscription tells us that it is the Gate of Heaven. But a near approach reveals a shabby structure, and the pewless interior is made hideous by paintings and images which certainly must be caricatures. A few genuine works of art imported from Italy alone relieve the mind of the visitor. Excepting a few houses on the Malecon, and not excepting the cathedral, the majority of the buildings have a tumble-down appearance, which is not altogether due to the frequent earthquakes which have troubled this city; while the habitations in the outskirts are exceedingly primitive, floored and walled with split cane and thatched with leaves, the first story occupied by domestic animals and the second by their owners. The city is quite regularly laid out, the main streets

on the sugar-cane. On the Upper Amazon we found the *P. clarus*, *P. pellucens*, and *P. tuberculatus*. At Bahia, on the opposite coast, Darwin found *P. luminosus*, the most common luminous insect.



running parallel to the river. A few streets are rudely paved, many are shockingly filthy, and all of them yield grass to the delight of stray donkeys and goats. A number of mule-carts, half a dozen carriages, one omnibus, and a hand-car on the Malecon, sum up the wheeled vehicles of Guayaquil. The population is twenty-two thousand, the same for thirty years past. Of these, about twenty are from the United States, and perhaps twenty-five can command \$100,000. No foreigner has had reason to complain



Cathedral of Guayaquil.

that Guayaquilians lacked the virtues of politeness and hospitality. The ladies dress in excellent taste, and are proverbial for their beauty. Spanish, Indian, and Negro blood mingle in the lower classes. The city supports two small papers, *Los Andes* and *La Patria*, but they are usually issued about ten days behind date. The hourly cry of the night-watchman is quite as musical as that of the muezzin in Constantinople. At eleven o'clock, for example, they sing "*Ave María purísima! las once han dado, noche clara y serena. Viva la patria!*"



The full name of the city is Santiago de Guayaquil.\* It is so called, first, because the conquest of the province was finished on the 25th of July (the day of St. James), 1533; and, secondly, after Guayas, a feudatory cacique of Atahualpa. It was created a city by Charles V., October 6, 1535. It has suffered much in its subsequent history by fires and earthquakes, pirates and pestilence. It is situated on the right bank of the River Guayas, sixty miles from the ocean, and but a few feet above its level. Though the most western city in South America, it is only two degrees west of the longitude of Washington, and it is the same distance below the equator—Orion sailing directly overhead, and the Southern Cross taking the place of the Great Dipper. The mean annual temperature, according to our observations, is 83°. There are two seasons, the wet, or *invierno*, and the dry, or *verano*. The *verano* is called the summer, although astronomically it is winter; it begins in June and terminates in November.† The heavy rains come on about Christmas. March is the rainiest month in the year, and July the coldest. It is at the close of the *invierno* (May) that fevers most abound. The climate of Guayaquil during the dry season is nearly perfect. At daybreak there is a cool easterly breeze; at sunrise a brief lull, and then a gentle variable wind; at 3 P.M. a southwest wind, at first in gusts, then in a sustained current; at sunset the same softened down to a gentle breeze, increasing about 7 P.M., and dying away about 3 A.M. Notwithstanding heaps of filth and green-mantled pools, sufficient to start a pes-

\* The ancient name was *Culenta*.

† The continuity of the dry season is broken by a rainy fit commencing a few days after the autumnal equinox, and called *el Cordonazo de San Francisco*. "Throughout South America (observes Mr. Spruce) the periodical alternations of dry and rainy weather are laid to the account of those saints whose 'days' coincide nearly with the epochs of change. But if the weather be rainy when it ought to be fair, or if the rains of winter be heavier than ordinary, the blame is invariably laid on the moon."



tilence if transported to New York, the city is usually healthy, due in great part, no doubt, to countless flocks of buzzards which greedily wait upon decay. These carrion-hawks enjoy the protection of law, a heavy fine being imposed for wantonly killing one.\* It is during the rainy season that this port earns the reputation of being one of the most pestiferous spots on the globe. The air is then hot and oppressive, reminding the geologist of the steaming atmosphere in the carboniferous period; the surrounding plains are flooded with water, and the roads, even some of the streets of the city, become impassable; intolerable mosquitoes, huge cockroaches, disgusting centipedes, venomous scorpions, and still more deadly serpents, keep the human species circumspect, and fevers and dysenteries do the work of death.

The Guayas is the largest river on the Pacific coast; and Guayaquil monopolizes the commerce of Ecuador, for it is the only port. Esmeraldas and Peylon are not to be mentioned. Through its custom-house passes nearly every import and export. The green banks of the Guayas, covered with an exuberant growth, are in strong contrast with the sterile coast of Peru, and the possession of Guayaquil has been a coveted prize since the days of Pizarro. Few spots between the tropics can vie with this lowland in richness and vigor of vegetation. Immense quantities of cacao—second only to that of Caracas—are produced, though but a fraction is gathered, owing to the scarcity of laborers, so many Ecuadorians have been exiled or killed in senseless revolutions. Twenty million pounds are annually exported, chiefly to Spain; and two million pounds of excellent coffee, which often finds its way into New York under the name of “pure Java.” There are three or four kinds of

\* The turkey-buzzard, the “John Crow” of the West Indies, is not a social bird, though a score are often seen together: each comes and goes by himself.



indigenous cacao on this coast, all richly deserving the generic title *Theobroma*, or "food for the gods." The best grows in Esmeraldas, as it contains the largest amount of oil and has the most pleasant flavor. But very little of it is exported, because it rots in about six months. The *cacao de arriba*, from up the River Guayas, is the best to export, as it keeps two years without damage. Next in order is the *cacao de abajo*, from down the river, as Machala, Santa Rosa, Balao, and Manabi, below Guayaquil. A still richer nut is the mountain cacao, but it is never cultivated. It is small and white, and almost pure oil. This oil, called cacao-butter, is used by the natives for burns, sores, and many cutaneous diseases. Cacao contributes more to the commerce of the republic than any other production of its soil. The flowers and fruit grow directly out of the trunk and branches. "A more striking example (says Humboldt) of the expansive powers of life could hardly be met with in organic nature." The fruit is yellowish-red, and of oblong shape, and the seeds (from which chocolate is prepared) are enveloped in a mass of white pulp. The tree resembles our lilac in size and shape, and yields three crops a year—in March, June, and September. Spain is the largest consumer of cacao. The Mexican *chocolatl* is the origin of our word chocolate. Tucker gives the following comparative analysis of unshelled beans from Guayaquil and Caracas:

	Guayaquil.	Caracas.
Theobromine.....	0.63	0.55
Cacao-red.....	4.56	6.18
Cacao-butter.....	36.38	35.08
Gluten.....	2.96	3.21
Starch.....	0.53	0.62
Gum.....	1.58	1.19
Extractive matter.....	3.44	6.22
Humic acid.....	8.57	9.28
Cellulose.....	30.50	28.66
Ash.....	3.03	2.91
Water.....	6.20	5.58
	<hr/> 98.38	<hr/> 99.48



The coffee-tree is about eight feet high, and has dark green leaves, white blossoms, and green, red, and purple berries at the same time. Each tree yields on an average two pounds annually.

The other chief articles of exportation are hides, cotton, "Panama hats," manufactured at Indian villages on the coast, cinchona bark, caucho, tobacco, orchilla weed, sarsaparilla, and tamarinds.\* The hats are usually made of the "Toquilla" (*Carludovica palmata*), an arborescent plant about five feet high, resembling the palm. The leaf, which is a yard long, is plaited like a fan, and is borne on a three-cornered stalk. It is cut while young, the stiff parallel veins removed, then slit into shreds by whipping it, and immersed in boiling water, and finally bleached in the sun. The same "straw" is used in the interior. The "Mocora," which grows like a cocoa-nut tree, with a very smooth, hard, thorny bark, is rarely used, as it is difficult to work. The leaves are from eight to twelve feet in length, so that the "straws" will finish a hat without splicing. Such hats require two or three months, and bring sometimes \$150; but they will last a lifetime. They can be packed away in a vest pocket, and they can be turned inside out and worn, the inside surface being as smooth and well finished as the outside. "Toquilla" hats are whiter than the "mocora."

The exports from Guayaquil bear no proportion to the capabilities of the country; Ecuador has no excuse for being bankrupt. Most of the imports are of English origin; lard comes from the United States, and flour from Chile.

The Malecon and river present a lively scene all the year round; the rest of the city appears deserted in com-

\* In 1867 there were exported to Europe of cacao, 197,260 quintals; cotton, 10,247 do.; caucho, 8911 do.; sarsaparilla, 149 do.; orchilla, 10,247 packages; quinine, 5000 do.; tobacco, 2000 do.; coffee, 1611 do.; tamarinds, 65 bbls.; sides of leather, 22,514; hats, 8397.



parison. The British steamers from Panama and Payta arrive weekly; Yankee steam-boats make regular trips up and down the Guayas and its tributaries; half a dozen sailing vessels, principally French, are usually lying in the stream, which is here six fathoms deep; and hundreds of canoes are gliding to and fro. But the *balsas* are the most original, and, therefore, the most attractive sight. These are rafts made of light balsa wood, so buoyant as to be used in coasting voyages. They were invented by the old Peruvians, and are the homes of a literally floating population. By these and the smaller craft are brought to the mole of the Malecon, besides articles for exportation, a boundless variety of fruits—pine-apples (whose quality has made Guayaquil famous), oranges, lemons, limes, plantains, bananas, cocoa-nuts, alligator pears, papayas, mangos, guavas, melons, etc.; many an undescribed species of fish known only to the epicure, and barrels or jars of water from a distant point up the river, out of the reach of the tide and the city sewers. Ice is frequently brought from Chimborazo, and sold for \$1 per pound. A flag hoisted at a favorite café announces that snow has arrived from the mountains, and that ice-cream can be had. The market, held every morning by the river side, is an animated scene. The strife of the half-naked fishmongers, the cry of the swarthy fruit-dealers—"Pinas!" "Naranjas!" etc., and the song of the itinerant dulce-peddler—"Tamales!" mingled with the bray of the water-bearing donkeys as they trot through the town, never fail to arrest the attention of every traveler.

But there is another sight more attractive still—one worth a long voyage, for Nature nowhere else repeats the picture. From the balconies of Guayaquil can be seen on a clear day the long, towering range of the Andes. We may forget all the incidents in our subsequent journey, but



the impression produced by that glorious view is unfading. The sun had nearly touched the Pacific when the clouds, which for days had wrapped the Cordilleras\* in misty robes, suddenly rose like a curtain. There stood, in inconceivable grandeur, one of the stupendous products of the last great revolution of the earth's crust, as a geologist would say, but, in the language of history, the lofty home of the Incas, made illustrious by the sword of Pizarro and the pen of Prescott. On the right a sea of hills rose higher and higher, till they culminated in the purple mountains of Asuay. Far to the left, one hundred miles northeasterly, the peerless Chimborazo lifted its untrodden and unapproachable summit above its fellows—an imposing background to lesser mountains and stately forests. The great dome reflected dazzlingly the last blushes of the west, its crown of snow fringed with black lines, which were the steep and sharp edges of precipitous rocks. It was interesting to watch the mellowing tints on the summit as the shadows crept upward: gold, vermilion, violet, purple, were followed by a momentary "glory;" then darkness covered the earth, and a host of stars, "trembling with excess of light," burst suddenly into view over the peaks of the Andes.

Bidding "adios" to our Guayaquilian friends, we took passage in one of Captain Lee's little steamers to Bodegas, seventy miles up the river. The Ecuadorian government, strange to say, does not patronize these steamers, but carries the Quito mail in a canoe. The Guayas is a sluggish stream, its turbid waters starting from the slope of the

\* *Cordillera* (pronounced Cor-de-yér-ra), literally a long ridge, is usually applied to a longitudinal subdivision of the Andes, as the east and west cordilleras inclosing the valley of Quito; *Sierra* (from the Spanish for saw or Arabic *sehrah*, an uncultivated tract) is a jagged spur of the Andes; *Cerro*, "a hog-backed hill." *Paramo* (a desert) is the treeless, uninhabited, uncultivated rolling steppes just below the snow-limit.



Andes, and flowing through a low, level tract, covered with varied forms of vegetable life. Forests of the broad-leaved plantain and banana line the banks. The fruit is the most common article of food in equatorial America, and is eaten raw, roasted, baked, boiled, and fried. It grows on a succulent stem formed of sheath-like leaf-stalks rolled over one another, and terminating in enormous light green, glossy blades nearly ten feet long by two feet wide, so delicate that the slightest wind will tear them transversely. Each tree (vulgarly called "the tree of paradise") produces fruit but once, and then dies. A single bunch often weighs 60 or 70 pounds; and Humboldt calculated that 33 pounds of wheat and 99 pounds of potatoes require the same space of ground as will produce 4000 pounds of bananas. They really save more labor than steam, giving the greatest amount of food from a given piece of ground with the least labor. They are always found where the palm is; but their original home is the foot of the Himalayas. The banana (by some botanists considered a different species from the plantain) is about four inches long, and cylindrical, and is eaten raw. The plantain is twice as large and prismatic, and uncooked is unhealthy. There is another variety, *platanos de Otaheite*, which resembles the banana in size and quality, but is prismatic.

A belt of jungle and impenetrable brushwood intervenes, and then cacao and coffee plantations, vast in extent, arrest the eye. Passing these, the steamer brings you alongside of broad fields covered with the low, prickly pine-apple plant; the air is fragrant with a rich perfume wafted from a neighboring grove of oranges and lemons; the mango spreads its dense, splendid foliage, and bears a golden fruit, which, though praised by many, tastes to us like a mixture of tow and turpentine; the exotic bread-tree waves its fig-like leaves and pendent fruit; while high over all the beau-



tiful cocoa-palm lifts its crown of glory.\* Animal life does not compare with this luxuriant growth. The steamer-bound traveler may see a few monkeys, a group of *gallinazos*, and many brilliant, though songless birds; but the chief representative is the lazy, ugly alligator. Large numbers of these monsters may be seen on the mud-bank basking in the hot sun, or asleep with their mouths wide open.

Eight hours after leaving the Malecon we arrived at Bo-degas, a little village of two thousand souls, rejoicing in the synonym of Babahoyo. This has been a place of deposit for the interior from the earliest times. In the rainy season the whole site is flooded, and only the upper stories are habitable. Cock-fighting seems to be the chief amusement. We breakfasted with the governor, a portly gentleman who kept a little dry-goods store. His excellency, without waiting for a formal introduction, and with a cordiality and courtesy almost confined to the Latin nations, received us into his own house, and honored us with a seat at his private table, spread with the choicest viands of his kingdom, serving them himself with a grace to which we can not do justice. Much as we find to condemn in tropical society, we can not forget the kindness of these simple-hearted people. Though we may portray, in the coming pages, many faults and failings according to a New York standard, we wish it to be understood that there is another side to the picture; that there are virtues on the Andes to which the North is well-nigh a stranger. "How many times (says an American resident of ten years) I have ar-

\* The mango of Asia is superior in size and flavor to that of America. It is eaten largely in Brazil by negroes and cattle. The cocoa-palm is also of Asiatic origin, and is most abundant in Ceylon. It has a swollen stem when young, but becomes straight and tall when mature. The flowers burst into a long plume of soft, cream-colored blossoms. It is worthy of remembrance that the most beautiful forms of vegetation in the tropics are at the same time most useful to man.



rived at a miserable hut in the heart of the mountains, tired and hungry, after traveling all day without any other companion than the *arriero*, to receive a warm-hearted welcome, the best, perhaps the only chair or hammock offered to me, the fattest chicken in the yard killed on my account, and more than once they have compelled me by force to take the only good bed, because I must be tired, and should have a good night's rest. A man may travel from one end of the Andes to the other, depending altogether on the good people he meets."

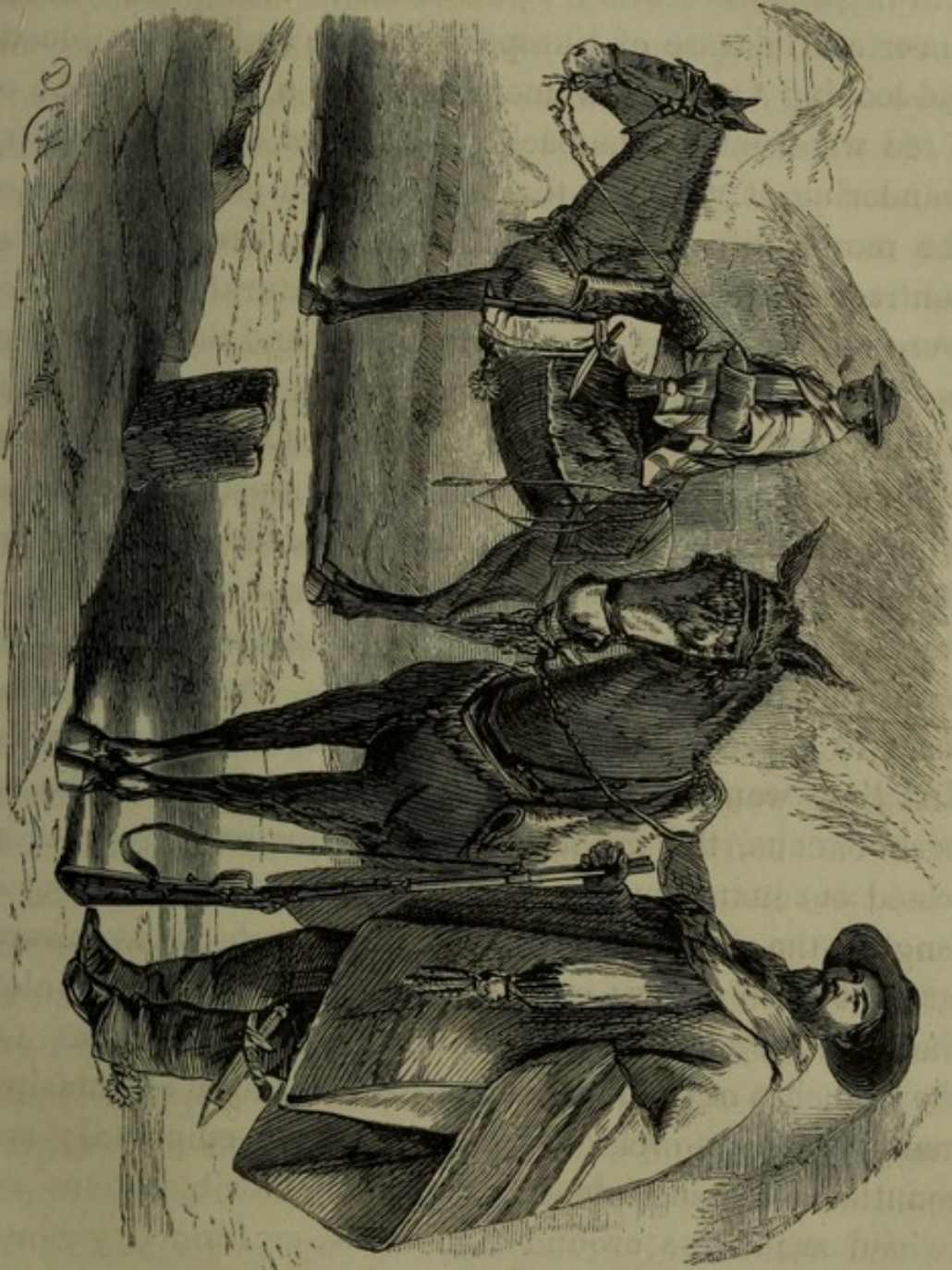
At Bodegas travelers take to mules or horses for the mountains, hiring one set for Guaranda and another at that village for Quito; muleteers seldom allow their animals to pass from one altitude to the other. These *arrieros*, or muleteers, form a very important class in Ecuador. Their little caravans are the only baggage and express trains in the republic; there is not a single regularly established public conveyance in the land. The *arrieros* and their servants (*peons*) are Indians or half-breeds. They wear a straw or felt hat, a poncho striped like an Arab's blanket, and cotton breeches ending at the knees. For food they carry a bag of parched corn, another bag of roasted barley-meal (*mashka*), and a few red peppers. The beasts are thin, decrepit jades, which threaten to give out the first day; yet they must carry you halfway up the Andes. The distance to the capital is nearly two hundred miles. The time required is usually eight or nine days; but officials often travel it in four.

We left Bodegas at noon. It was impossible to start the muleteer a moment earlier, though he had promised to be ready at seven. Patience is a necessary qualification in a South American traveler. In our company were a Jesuit priest, with three attendants, going to Riobamba, and a young Quito merchant, with his mother—the mother of



only twenty-five children. This merchant had traveled in the United States, and could not help contrasting the thrift and enterprise of our country with the beggary and laziness

Equipped for the Andes.



ness of his own, adding, with a show of sincerity, "I am sorry I have Spanish blood in my veins." The suburbs of Bodegas reminded us of the outskirts of Cairo; but the road soon entered a broad savannah instead of a sandy



desert. At 3 P.M. we passed through La Mona, a village of twenty-five bamboo huts, all on stilts, for in the rainy season the whole town is under water. Signs of indolence and neglect were every where visible. Idle men, with an uncertain mixture of European, Negro, and Indian blood; sad-looking Quichua women, carrying a naked infant or a red water-jar on the back; black hogs and lean poultry wandering at will into the houses—such is the picture of the motley life in the inland villages. Strange was the contrast between human poverty and natural wealth. We were on the borders of a virgin forest, and the overpowering beauty of the vegetation soon erased all memory of the squalor and lifelessness of La Mona. Our road—a mere path, suddenly entered this seemingly impenetrable forest, where the branches crossed overhead, producing a delightful shade. The curious forms of tropical life were all attractive to one who had recently rambled over the comparatively bleak hills of New England. Delight is a weak term to express the feelings of a naturalist who for the first time wanders in a South American forest. The superb banana, the great charm of equatorial vegetation, tossed out luxuriantly its glossy green leaves, eight feet in length; the slender but graceful bamboo shot heavenward, straight as an arrow; and many species of palm bore aloft their feathery heads, inexpressibly light and elegant. On the branches of the independent trees sat tufts of parasites, many of them orchids, which are here epiphytal; and countless creeping plants, whose long flexible stems entwined snake-like around the trunks, or formed gigantic loops and coils among the limbs. Beneath this world of foliage above, thick beds of mimosæ covered the ground, and a boundless variety of ferns attracted the eye by their beautiful patterns.\* It is easy to specify the individual

\* Ferns constitute one sixth of the flora of South America; Spruce counted



objects of admiration in these grand scenes, but it is not possible to give an adequate idea of the higher feelings of wonder, astonishment, and devotion which fill and elevate the mind. This road to the Andes is a paradise to the contemplative man. "There is something in a tropical forest (says Bates) akin to the ocean in its effects on the mind. Man feels so completely his insignificance, and the vastness of nature." The German traveler Burmeister observes that "the contemplation of a Brazilian forest produced on him a painful impression, on account of the vegetation displaying a spirit of restless selfishness, eager emulation, and craftiness." He thought the softness, earnestness, and repose of European woodland scenery were far more pleasing, and that these formed one of the causes of the superior moral character of European nations. Live and let live is certainly not the maxim taught in these tropical forests, and it is equally clear that selfishness is not wanting among the people. Here, in view of so much competition among organized beings, is the spot to study Darwin's "Origin of Species." We have thought that the vegetation under the equator was a fitter emblem of the human world than the forests of our temperate zone. There is here no set time for decay and death, but we stand amid the living and the dead; flowers and leaves are falling, while fresh ones are budding into life. Then, too, the numerous parasitic plants, making use of their neighbors as instruments for their own advancement, not inaptly represent a certain human class.

140 species within the space of three square miles. Their limits of growth are 500 and 7000 feet above the sea.



## CHAPTER II.

Our Tambo.—Ascending the Andes.—Camino Real.—Magnificent Views.—Guaranda.—Cinchona.—The Summit.—Chimborazo.—Over the Andes.—Chuquipogyo the Wretched.—Ambato.—A Stupid City.—Cotopaxi.—The Vale of Machachi.—Arrival at Quito.

WE reached Savaneta at 5 P.M. This little village of hardly twenty houses becomes the Bodegas, or place of deposit for the mountains six months in the year, for in the *invierno* the roads are flooded, and canoes take the place of mules from Savaneta to Babahoyo. Even in the dry season the dampness of this wilderness is so great that the traveler's sugar and chocolate are melted into one, and envelopes seal themselves. We put up at a *tambo*, or wayside inn, a simple two-storied bamboo hovel, thatched with plantain leaves without and plastered with cobwebs within, yet a palace compared with what sheltered us afterward. The only habitable part was the second story, which was reached by a couple of notched bamboo sticks. A hammock, two earthen kettles, two plates, and a few calabashes constituted the household furniture. The dormitory was well ventilated, for two sides were open. Our lodging, however, cost us nothing; travelers only pay for *yerba* for their beasts. Though this has been the royal road to Quito for three centuries, there is but one *posada* between Guayaquil and Ambato, a distance of one hundred and fifty miles; travelers must carry their own bedding and provisions. *Print Press*

Leaving Savaneta at dawn, and breakfasting at a wayside hut owned by an old negro, we struck about noon the Rio Charriguajaco, dashing down the mountains in hot haste for the Guayas. It was refreshing to look upon living wa-



CHAPTER II

The first part of the chapter is devoted to a general survey of the history of the American people. It begins with the discovery of the continent by Christopher Columbus in 1492, and traces the progress of the various European colonies. It then discusses the struggle for independence, the formation of the Constitution, and the early years of the Republic. The second part of the chapter is devoted to a more detailed study of the American people, their customs, and their institutions. It discusses the various ethnic groups that have contributed to the American population, and the influence of each group on the national character. It also discusses the American system of government, and the role of the various branches of the government. The chapter concludes with a discussion of the American people's place in the world, and their future prospects.



Ascending the Andes.



ters for the first time since leaving the hills of our native country. Fording this stream we know not how many times, and winding through the dense forest in narrow paths often blockaded by laden donkeys that doggedly disputed the passage, we soon found ourselves slowly creeping up the Andes. We frequently met mountaineers on their way to Bodegas with loads of potatoes, peas, barley, fowls, eggs, etc. They are generally accompanied by their wives or daughters, who ride like the men, but with the knees tucked up higher. On the slippery tracks which traverse this western slope, bulls are often used as beasts of burden, the cloven hoofs enabling them to descend with great security. But mules are better than horses or asses. "That a hybrid (muses Darwin) should possess more reason, memory, obstinacy, social affection, powers of muscular endurance, and length of life than either of its parents, seems to indicate that art has here outdone nature."

Toward evening the ascent became rapid and the road horrible beyond conception, growing narrower and rougher as we advanced. Indeed, our way had long since ceased to be a road. In the dense forest, where sunshine never comes, rocks, mud, and fallen trees in rapid alternation macadamize the path, save where it turns up the bed of a babbling brook. In the comparatively level tracts, the equable step of the beasts has worn the soil into deep transverse ridges, called *camellones*, from their resemblance to the humps on a camel's back. In the precipitous parts the road is only a gully worn by the transit of men and beasts for ages, aided by torrents of water in the rainy season. As we ascend, this changes to a rocky staircase, so strait that one must throw up his legs to save them from being crushed, and so steep that horse and rider run the risk of turning a somersault. It is fearful to meet in a narrow defile, or where the road winds around the edge of



a precipice, a drove of reckless donkeys and mules descending the mountain, urged on by the cries and lashes of the muleteers behind. Yet this has been the highway of Ecuadorian commerce for three hundred years. In vain we tried to reach the little village of Camino Real on the crest of the ridge; but the night was advancing rapidly, and crawling up such a road by starlight was not a little dangerous. So we put up at a miserable tambo, Pogyos by name. It was a mud hut of the rudest kind, windowless and unfloored; very clean, if it had been left to nature, but man and beast had rendered it intolerably filthy. Our hostess, a Quichua woman, with tattered garments, and hair disheveled and standing up as if electrified, set a kettle on three stones, and, making a fire under it, prepared for us a calabash of chicken and *locro*. *Locro*, the national dish in the mountains, is in plain English simply potato soup. Sitting on the ground, we partook of this refreshment by the aid of fingers and wooden spoons, enticing our appetites by the reflection that potato soup would support life. The unkempt Indian by our side, grinning in conscious pride over her successful cookery, did not aid us in this matter. Fire is used in Ecuador solely for culinary purposes, not for warmth. It is made at no particular spot on the mud floor, and there is no particular orifice for the exit of the smoke save the chinks in the wall. There is not a chimney in the whole republic. As the spare room in the establishment belonged to the women, we gentlemen slept on the ground outside, or on beds made of round poles. The night was piercingly cold. The wished-for morning came at last, and long before the sun looked over the mountains we were on our march. It was the same terrible road, running zigzag, or "quingo" fashion, up to Camino Real, where it was suddenly converted into a royal highway.

We were now fairly out of the swamps of the lowlands,



and, though under the equator, out of the tropics too. The fresh mountain breeze and the chilly mists announced a change of climate.\* Fevers and dysenteries, snakes and musquitoes, the plantain and the palm, we had left behind. Camino Real is a huddle of eight or ten dwellings perched on the summit of a sierra a thousand feet higher than the top of Mount Washington. The views from this standpoint compensate for all past troubles. The wild chaos of mountains on every side, broken by profound ravines, the heaps of ruins piled up during the lapse of geologic ages, the intense azure of the sky, and the kingly condor majestically wheeling around the still higher pinnacles, make up a picture rarely to be seen. Westward, the mountains tumble down into hills and spread out into plains, which, in the far distant horizon, dip into the great Pacific. The setting sun turns the ocean into a sheet of liquid fire. Long columns of purple light shoot up to the zenith, and as the last point of the sun sinks beneath the horizon, the stars rush out in full splendor; for at the equator day gives place to night with only an hour and twenty minutes of twilight. The mountains are Alpine, yet grander than the Alps; not so ragged as the granite peaks of Switzerland, but with rounder heads. The prospect down this occidental slope is diversified by deep valleys, landslides, and flowering trees. Magnificent are the views eastward,

“Where Andes, giant of the western star,  
Looks from his throne of clouds o’er half the world.”

The majestic dome of Chimborazo was entirely uncovered of clouds, and presented a most splendid spectacle. There it stood, its snow-white summit, unsullied by the foot of man, towering up twice as high as Etna. For many years

\* The altitude of 7000 feet is the usual limit of the rain-line on the west slope of the Andes. The condensation which produces rain takes place at the equator two or three times higher than in our latitude.



it received the homage of the world as the highest point in America; but now the Aconcagua of Chile claims the palm. Still, what a panorama from the top of Chimborazo, could one reach it, for the eye would command ten thousand square miles!

Our road gently winds down the sierra, giving us at every turn sublime ideas of what nature can do in tossing up the thin crust of our globe. But sublimity is at a discount here—there is too much of it. Suddenly we are looking down into the enchanting valley of Chimbo. This romantic and secluded spot is one of those forgotten corners of the earth which, barricaded against the march of civilization by almost impassable mountains, and inhabited by a thriftless race, has been left far behind in the progress of mankind. Distance lends enchantment to the view. We are reminded of the pastoral vales of New England. Wheat takes the place of the sugar-cane, barley of cacao, potatoes of plantains, and turnips of oranges. Bamboo sheds have given way to neatly whitewashed villages, and the fields are fenced with rows of aloe. But, drawing nearer, we find the habitations are in reality miserable mud hovels, without windows, and tenanted by vermin and ragged poverty. There are herds of cattle and fields of grain; yet we shall not find a quart of milk or a loaf of bread for sale. The descent into the valley is very precipitous, and, after a rain, alarmingly slippery. Mules, drawing their legs together, slide down with startling velocity, and follow the windings with marvelous dexterity.

We arrived at Guaranda at 5 P.M. on the third day after leaving Bodegas. This is a desolate town of two thousand souls, dwelling in low dilapidated huts made of the most common building material in the Andes—*adobe*, or sun-dried blocks of mud mingled with straw.\* The

\* From *adoub*, an Egyptian word still used by the Copts; carried by the



streets are rudely paved, and pitch to the centre, to form an aqueduct, like the streets of old Sychar. The inhabitants are in happy ignorance of the outside world. They pass the day without a thought of work, standing on the Plaza, or in front of some public office, staring vacantly into space, or gossiping. A cock-fight will soonest rouse them from their lethargy. They seem to have no purpose in life but to keep warm under their ponchos and to eat when they are hungry. Guaranda is a healthy locality, lying in a deep valley on the west bank of the Chimbo, at an elevation, according to our barometer, of 8840 feet, and having a mean temperature slightly less than that of Quito. It is a place of importance, inasmuch as it is the resting-place before ascending or after descending the still loftier ranges, and much more because it is the capital of the region which yields the invaluable *cinchona*, or Peruvian bark.\* This tree is indigenous to the Andes, where it is found on the western slope between the altitudes of two thousand and nine thousand feet, the species richest in alkalis occupying the higher elevations, where the air is moist. Dr. Weddell enumerates twenty-one species, seven of which are now found in Ecuador, but the only one of value is the *C. succirubra* (the *calisaya* has run out), and this is now nearly extinct, as the trees have been destroyed to obtain the bark. This species is a beautiful tree, having large, broadly oval, deep green, shining leaves, white, fragrant flowers, and red bark, and sometimes, though rarely, attains the height of sixty feet. A tree five feet in circumference

Moors to Spain, thence to America; and from America the word has gone to the Sandwich Islands.

\* This celebrated febrifuge was first taken to Europe about the middle of the seventeenth century, and was named after the Countess of Chinchon, who had been cured of intermittent fever at Lima. Afterward, when Cardinal de Lugo spread the knowledge of the remedy through France, and recommended it to Cardinal Mazarin, it received the name of *Jesuits' Bark*. The French chemists, Pelletier and Caverton, discovered quinine in 1820.



will yield fifteen hundred pounds of green bark, or eight hundred of the dry. The roots contain the most alkaloid, though the branches are usually barked for commerce. The true cinchona barks, containing quinine, quinidine, and cinchonine, are distinguished from the false by their splintery-fibrous texture, the latter being pre-eminently corky. The cascarilleros begin to hunt for bark in August. Dr. Taylor, of Riobamba, found one tree which gave \$3600 worth of quinine. The general yield is from three to five pounds to a quintal of bark. The tree has been successfully transplanted to the United States, and particularly to India, where there are now over a million of plants. It was introduced into India by Markham in 1861. The bark is said to be stronger than that from Ecuador, yielding twice as much alkaloid, or eleven per cent. The quinine of commerce will doubtless come hereafter from the slopes of the Himalayas instead of the Andes. In 1867 only five thousand pounds of bark were exported from Guayaquil. The Indians use the bark of another tree, the *Maravilla*, which is said to yield a much stronger alkaloid than cinchona. It grows near Pallatanga.

We left Guaranda at 5 A.M. by the light of Venus and Orion, having exchanged our horses for the sure-footed mule. It was a romantic ride. From a neighboring standpoint Church took one of his celebrated views of "The Heart of the Andes." But the road, as aforetime, was a mere furrow, made and kept by the tread of beasts. For a long distance the track runs over the projecting and jagged edges of steeply-inclined strata of slate, which nobody has had the energy to smooth down. At many places on the road side were human skulls, set in niches in the bank, telling tales of suffering in their ghastly silence; while here and there a narrow passage was blocked up by the skeleton or carcass of a beast that had borne its last burden. At



nine o'clock we came out on a narrow, grassy ridge called the *Ensellada*, or Saddleback, where there were three straw huts, with roofs resting on the ground, and there we breakfasted on *locro*. During our stay the Indians killed a pig, and before the creature was fairly dead dry grass was heaped upon it and set on fire. This is the ordinary method of removing the bristles.

Still ascending, we lose sight of the valley of the Chimbo, and find ourselves in a wilderness of crags and treeless mountains clothed with the long, dreary-looking paramo grass called *paja*. But we are face to face with "the monarch of the Andes," and we shall have its company the rest of the day. The snowy dome is flooded with the golden light of heaven; delicate clouds of softest hues float around its breast; while, far below, its feet are wrapped in the baser mists of earth. We attained the summit of the pass at 11 A.M. All travelers strive to reach it early in the morning, for in the afternoon it is swept by violent winds which render it uncomfortable, if not dangerous. This part of the road is called the "Arenal," from the sand and gravel which cover it. It is about a league in length, and crosses the side of Chimborazo at an elevation of more than fourteen thousand feet. Chimborazo stands on the left of the traveler. How tantalizing its summit! It appears so easy of access; and yet many a valiant philosopher, from Humboldt down, has panted for the glory and failed. The depth of the snow and numerous precipices are the chief obstacles; but the excessively rarefied air is another hinderance. Even in crossing the Arenal, a native of the lowlands complains of violent headache, a propensity to vomit, and a difficulty of breathing. The Arenal is often swept by snow-storms; and history has it that some of the Spanish conquerors were here frozen to death. The pale yellow gravel is considered by some geologists as the moraine of a



glacier. It is spread out like a broad gravel walk, so that, without exaggeration, one of the best roads in Ecuador has been made by Nature's hand on the crest of the Andes.

It was interesting to trace the different hypsometrical zones by the change of vegetation from Bodegas to this lofty spot. The laws of the decrease of heat are plainly written on the rapid slopes of the Cordilleras. On the hot, steaming lowlands of the coast reign bananas and palms. As these thin out, tree-ferns take their place. Losing these, we found the cinchona bedewed by the cool clouds of Guaranda; and last of all, among the trees, the polylepis. The twisted, gnarled trunk of this tree, as well as its size and silvery foliage, reminded us of the olive, but the bark resembles that of the birch. It reaches the greatest elevation of any tree on the globe. Then followed shrubby fuchsia, calceolaria, eupatoria, and red and purple gentians; around and on the Arenal, a uniform mantle of monocotyledonous plants, with scattered tufts of valeriana, viola, and geranium, all with rigid leaves in the characteristic rosettes of super-alpine vegetation; and on the porphyritic and trachytic sides of Chimborazo, lichens alone. Snow then covers the last effort of vegetable life.\* The change in the architecture of the houses indicated, likewise, a change of altitude. The open bamboo huts, shingled with banana leaves, were followed by warmer *adobe* houses, and these, in turn, by the straw hovels of the mountain-top, made entirely of the long, wiry grass of the paramos.

\* According to Sir J. Hooker, among the flowers which adorn the slopes of the Himalayas, rhododendrons occupy the most prominent place, and primroses next. There are no orchids, neither red gentians, but blue. Organic life ceases 3000 feet lower than on the Andes; yet it is affirmed that flowering plants occur at the height of 18,460 feet, which is equivalent to the summit of Chimborazo in point of temperature! The polylepis (*P. racemosa*) is one of the *Sanguisorbaceæ*; in Quichua it is *Sachaguinoa*.



Leaving the Arenal, we rapidly descended by the usual style of road—stone stairs. But down we went, as all the goods for Quito, “the grand capital,” have done since the Spanish Conquest. The old road from Beirût to Damascus is royal in comparison. The general aspect of the eastern slope is that of a gray, barren waste, overgrown with *paja*; but now and then we crossed deep gulleys, whose sides were lined with mosses and sprinkled with *calceolarias*, lupines, etc. In our descent we had before us the magnificent Valley of Quito, and beyond it the eastern Cordillera. Below us was Riobamba, and far away to the right the deep gorge of the Pastassa. Nevertheless, this is one of the loneliest rides earth can furnish. Not a tree nor human habitation is in sight. Icy rivulets and mule-trains are the only moving objects on this melancholy heath. Even “Drake’s Plantation Bitters,” painted on the volcanic cliffs of Chimborazo, would be a relief.

At last we reached our rude accommodations for the night. It was a solitary mud tambo, glorying in the euphonious name of Chuquipogyo. The court-yard was a sea of mud and manure, for this is the halting-place for all the caravans between Quito and the coast. Our room was a horrid hole, dark, dirty, damp, and cold, without a window or a fire. There was one old rickety bedstead, but as that belonged to the lady in our party, the rest betook themselves to benches, table, and floor. We filled our stomachs with an unpalatable potato soup containing cheese and eggs, and laid down—to wait for the morning. Grass is the only fuel here; but this is not the chief reason why it is so difficult to make good tea or cook potatoes at this wretched tambo. Water boils at 190°, or before it is fairly hot: it is well the potatoes are small. The muleteers slept with their beasts outside, though the night was fearfully cold, for Chuquipogyo lies on the frigid side of



Chimborazo, at an elevation of over twelve thousand feet above the sea. As Johnson said to Boswell, "This is a dolorous place."

Gladly we left this cheerless tambo, though a cold, heavy mist was falling as we rode northward, over the seemingly endless paramo of Sanancajas. Here, as throughout the highlands of Ecuador, ditches are used for fences; so that, should the traveler wander from the path, he finds himself stopped by an impassable gulf. In two hours and a half we reached Mocha, a lifeless pueblo under the shadow of Carguairazo. Slowly descending from our high altitude, we gradually entered a more congenial climate—the zone of wheat and barley, till, finally, signs of an eternal spring were all around us—ripening corn on one side, and blossoming peas on the other.

Late in the afternoon the road led us through a sandy, sterile tract, till suddenly we came in sight of Ambato, beautifully situated in a deep ravine, eight thousand five hundred and fifty feet above the Pacific. The city ranks next to Quito in beauty. It is certainly an oasis, the green foliage of its numerous shade-trees and orchards contrasting with the barren hills around. It is two degrees warmer than Quito, and is famous for its fruit and fine climate. It is the Lynn of Ecuador, the chief articles of manufacture being boots and shoes—cheap, but of poor quality. It was destroyed by an earthquake in 1698. The houses are built of sun-dried brick, and whitewashed. The streets, with gutters in the centre, are at right angles, and paved, and adorned with numerous cypress-looking trees, called *sauce*, a species of willow. The Plaza, which contains a useful if not ornamental fountain, presents a lively scene on Sunday, the great market-day. The inn is a fair specimen of a public house in Spanish America. Around the court-yard, where the beasts are fed, are three or four



rooms to let. They are ventilated only when opened for travelers. The floor is of brick, but alive with fleas; the walls are plastered, but veiled with cobwebs. The furniture, of primitive make and covered with dust, consists of a chair or two, a table, and a bed of boards covered with a thin straw mat. There is not a hotel in Ecuador where sheets and towels are furnished. The landlords are seldom seen; the entire management of the concern is left to a slovenly Indian boy, who is both cook and hostler. No amount of bribery will secure a meal in less than two hours. Ten years ago there was not a posada in the country; now there is entertainment for man and beast at Guayaquil, Guaranda, Mocha, Ambato, Tacunga, Machachi, and Quito. Riobamba has a billiard saloon, but no inn.

Leaving Ambato, we breakfasted at Cunchebamba, an Indian village of half a dozen straw huts. Thence the road for a long distance winds through vast deposits of volcanic *débris*, the only sign of vegetation being hedges of aloe and cactus. Arid hills and dreary plains, covered with plutonic rocks and pumice dust, tell us we are approaching the most terrible volcano on the earth. Crossing the sources of the Pastassa, we entered Latacunga,\* situated on a beautiful plain at the foot of Cotopaxi, seven hundred feet higher than Ambato. Its average temperature is 59°. The population, chiefly Indians, numbers about fifteen thousand. It is the dullest city in Ecuador, without the show of enterprise or business. Not even grass grows in the streets—the usual sign of life in the Spanish towns. It is also one of the filthiest; and though it has been many times thoroughly shaken by earthquakes, and buried under showers of volcanic dust, it is still the paradise of fleas, which have survived every revolution. Ida Pfeiffer says that, after a

\* This is shortened in parlance to Tacunga. The full name, according to La Condamine, is *Llacta-cunga*, *llacta* meaning country, and *cunga*, neck.



night's rest in Latacunga, she awoke with her skin marked all over with red spots, as if from an eruptive disease. We can certify that we have been tattoed without the night's rest. The town has a most stupid and forlorn aspect. Half of it is in ruins. It was four times destroyed between 1698 and 1797. In 1756 the Jesuit church was thrown down, though its walls were five feet thick. The houses are of one story, and built of pumice, widely different from the palaces and temples which are said to have stood here in the palmy days of the Incas. Cotopaxi stands threateningly near, and its rumbling thunder is the source of constant alarm.

From Latacunga to Quito there is a very fine carriage road, the result of one man's administration—Señor G. Garcia Moreno. For many miles it passes over an uncultivated plateau, strewn with volcanic fragments. The farms are confined to the slopes of the Cordilleras, and, as every where else, the tumbling haciendas indicate the increasing poverty of the owner. Superstition and indolence go hand in hand. On a great rock rising out of the sandy plain they show a print of the foot of St. Bartholomew, who alighted here on a visit—surely to the volcanoes, as it was long before the red man had found this valley. Abreast of Cotopaxi the road cuts through high hills of fine pumice interstratified with black earth, and rapidly ascends till it reaches Tiupullo, eleven thousand five hundred feet above the sea. This high ridge,\* stretching across the valley from Cotopaxi to Iliniza, is a part of the great water-shed of the continent—the waters on the southern slope flowing through the Pastassa and Amazon to the Atlantic, those on the north finding their way to the Pacific by the Rio Esmeraldas. At this bleak place we breakfasted on punch and guinea-pig.

\* Sometimes called *Chisinche*.



As soon as we began to descend, the glittering cone of Cotopaxi, and the gloomy plain it has so often devastated, passed out of view, and before us was a green valley exceedingly rich and well cultivated, girt by a wall of mountains, the towers of which were the peaks of Corazon and Rumiñagui. Loathsome lepers by the wayside alone disturbed the pleasing impression. Three hours more of travel brought us to the straggling village of Machachi, standing in the centre of the beautiful plain, at an altitude of nine thousand nine hundred feet. Nature designed this spot for a home of plenty and comfort, but the habitations of the wretched proprietors are windowless adobe hovels, thatched with dried grass, and notorious for their filth.

We must needs make one more ascent, for the ridge of Tambillo hides the goal of our journey. The moment we reached the summit, views unparalleled in the Andes or any where else met our astonished vision whithersoever we looked. Far away to the south stretched the two Cordilleras, till they were lost in the mist which enshrouded Chimborazo and Tunguragua. Turning to the north, we beheld the city of Quito at our feet, and Pichincha and Antisana standing like gallant sentinels on either side of the proud capital. Beautiful were the towering mountains, and almost as delightful now are the memories of that hour. A broad, well-traveled road, gentlemen on horseback clad in rich ponchos, droves of Indians bowed under their heavy burdens, and long lines of laden donkeys hurrying to and fro, indicate our approach to a great city. Winding with the road through green pastures and fields of ripening grain, and crossing the Machángara by an elegant bridge, we enter the city of the Incas.



## CHAPTER III.

Early History of Quito.—Its Splendor under the Incas.—Crushed by Spain.  
—Dying now.—Situation.—Altitude.—Streets.—Buildings.

QUITO is better known than Ecuador. Its primeval history, however, is lost in obscurity. In the language of Prescott, "the mists of fable have settled as darkly round its history as round that of any nation, ancient or modern, in the Old World." Founded, nobody knows when, by the kings of the Quitus, it was conquered about the year 1000 by a more civilized race, the Cara nation, who added to it by conquest and alliance. The fame of the region excited the cupidity of the Incas of Peru, and during the reign of Cacha (1475), Huayna-Capac the Great moved his army from Cuzco, and by the celebrated battle of Hatuntaqui, in which Cacha was killed, Quito was added to the realm of the Incas. Huayna-Capac made Quito his residence, and reigned there thirty-eight years—the most brilliant epoch in the annals of the city. At his death his kingdom was divided, one son, Atahualpa,\* reigning in Quito, and Huascar at Cuzco. Civil war ensued, in which the latter was defeated, and Atahualpa was chosen Inca of the whole empire, 1532. During this war Pizarro arrived at Tumbez. Every body knows what followed. Strangled at Caxamarca, the body of Atahualpa was carried to Quito, the city of his birth, in compliance with his dying wish, and buried there with imposing obsequies. Refounded by Benalcazar

\* The son of his Quito love. The name was first written *Atauhualpa*, meaning fortunate in war; after the fratricide, he was called *Atahualpa*, or game-cock. He was the Boabdil of this occidental Granada. He is called traitor by Peruvian writers, and is not admitted by them into the list of their Incas.



in 1534, Quito was created an imperial city by Charles V. seven years later. It formed part of Peru till 1710; then of Santa Fé till 1722; and again of Peru till its independence. The power of Spain in South America was destroyed at the battle of Ayacucho, Dec. 9, 1824. In 1830 Venezuela separated from Colombia, and Ecuador followed the same year. The first Congress was held in Riobamba; but Quito has ever since been the political focus. The first president was General Flores.

Under the diadem of the Incas, Quito assumed a magnificence which it never saw before and has not displayed since. It was the worthy metropolis of a vast empire stretching from the equator to the desert of Atacama, and walled in by the grandest group of mountains in the world. On this lofty site, which amid the Alps would be buried in an avalanche of snow, but within the tropics enjoys an eternal spring, palaces more beautiful than the Alhambra were erected, glittering with the gold and emerald of the Andes. But all this splendor passed away with the sceptre of Atahualpa. Where the pavilion of the Inca stood is now a gloomy convent, and a wheat-field takes the place of the Temple of the Sun.

The colonial history of this favored spot is as lifeless as the history of Sahara. Not a single event occurred of which even Spain can be proud; not a monument was raised which reflects any credit upon the mother country. Every thing was prescribed by law, and all law emanated from a tribunal five thousand miles distant. There was no relation of private life with which the government did not interfere: what the colonist should plant and what trade he should follow; where he should buy and where he should sell; how much he should import and export; and where and when he should marry, were regulated by the "Council of the Indies" and the Inquisition. In the words



of a native writer, "The great majority of the people knew nothing of sciences, events, or men. Their religion consisted of outward observances, and an imperfect knowledge of the papal bulls; their morality, in asceticism and devotion to their king; their philosophy, in the subtleties of Aristotle; their history, in the history of the mother country; their geography, in the maps of Spanish America and of Spain; their press, in what sufficed to print bill-heads and blank forms; their commerce, in an insignificant coasting trade; their ambition and highest aspirations, in titles of nobility; their amusements, in bull-fights. The arrival of a mail was an event of great moment, and with ringing of bells was received the *cajon de España* which announced the health of the sovereigns. Thus, while Europe was passing through the stormy times of Louis XIV.; while the philosophical writings of the illustrious men of those times found their way into the remotest corners of the globe; while the English colonies of North America conquered their independence; while the Old World was drenched in blood to propagate the ideas which the French Revolution had proclaimed, the Presidency of Quito, walled in by its immense cordilleras and the ocean, and ruled by monkish ignorance and bigotry, knew as little of men and events as we now know of men and events in the moon."\*

From an iron despotism which existed for three centuries, Quito passed to a state of unbridled licentiousness. Without any political experience whatever, the people attempted to lay the foundation of a new system of government and society. With head and hearts perverted by monkish superstition and Spanish tyranny, yet set on fire by the French Revolution, what did they know of liberty!

\* *Geografia de la Republica del Ecuador, por Dr. Villavicencio.* This work abounds with erroneous and exaggerated statements, but it is nevertheless a valuable contribution to Ecuadorian literature.



Endless civil wars have followed independence. "Political ambition," says a late United States minister, "personal jealousies, impracticable theories, official venality, reckless disregard of individual rights and legal obligations, foolish meddling and empirical legislation, and an absolute want of political morality, form the principal features of their republican history."\* To-day they tread on the dust of an ancient race whose government was in every respect a most complete contrast to their own.

At the foot of volcanic Pichincha, only five hours' travel from its smoking crater, lies "the city above the clouds," "the navel of the world," "magnificent Quito." On the north is the plain of Rumibamba, the battle-field where Gonzalo Pizarro routed the first viceroy of Peru, and the scene, two centuries later, of the nobler achievements of La Condamine, which made it the classic ground of astronomy. On the southern edge of the city rises Panecillo, reminding one of Mount Tabor by its symmetrical form, and overlooking the beautiful and well-watered plain of Turubamba. On the east flows the Rio Machángara, and just beyond it stand the Puengasi hills hiding the Chillo valley, while the weary sun goes early to rest behind the towering peaks of Pichincha. So encircled is this sequestered spot, the traveler, approaching by the Guayaquil road, sees only a part of it, and is disappointed; and even when standing on Panecillo, with the entire city spread out before him, he is not wholly satisfied. Buried between treeless, sombre sierras, and isolated from the rest of the world by impassable roads and gigantic cordilleras, Quito appears to us of the commercial nineteenth century as useless as the old feudal towns perched on the mountains of Middle Europe.

\* *Four Years among Spanish Americans*, by Hon. F. Hassaurek: a truthful work, to which we refer the reader for details, especially concerning Ecuadorian life and manners.

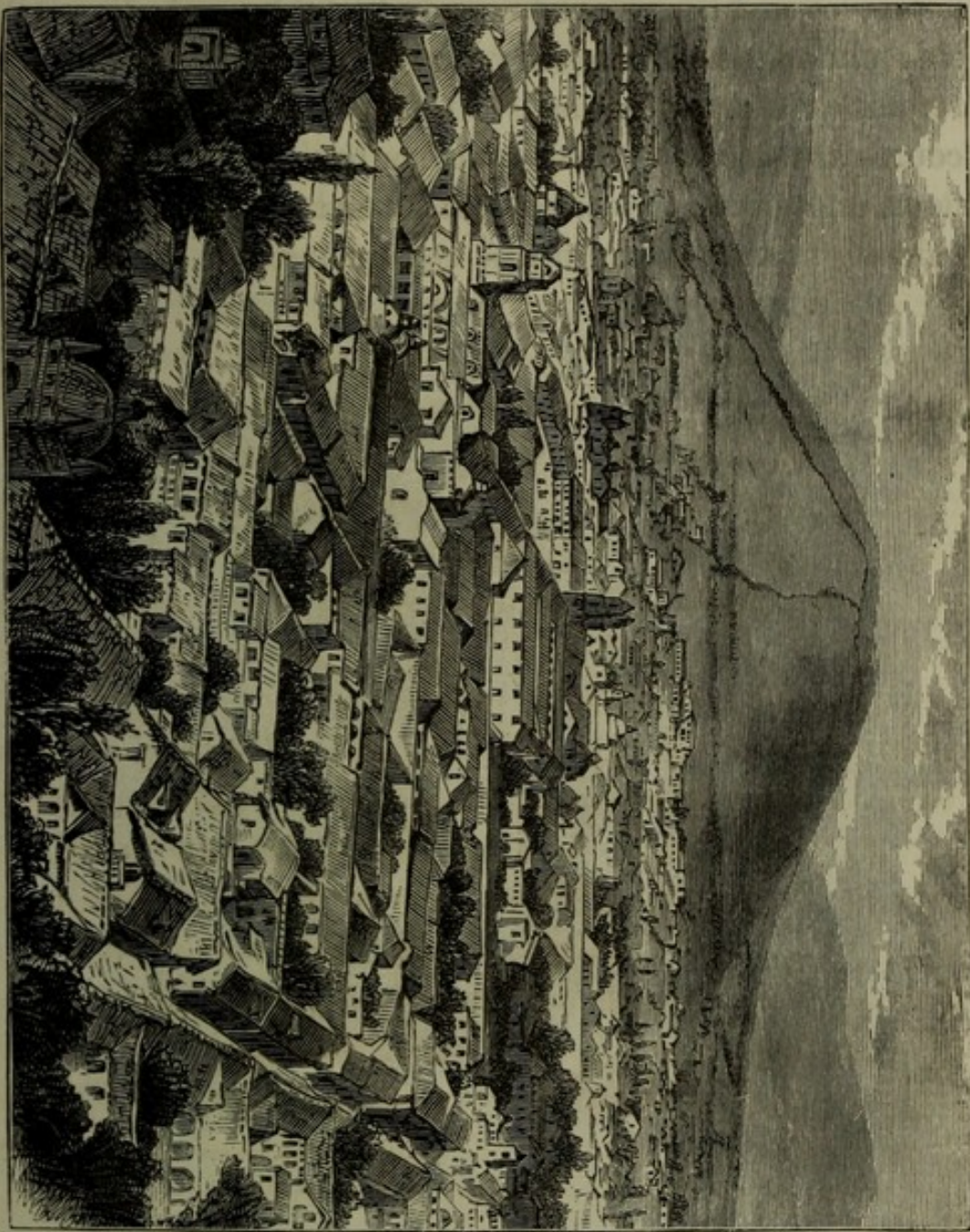


Not a chimney rises above the red-tiled roofs, telling of homely hearths beneath. No busy hum greets the ear; there are bugles instead of spindles, and jingling church bells in place of rattling carriages. The wandering eye does not look for a railroad or a telegraph, for even the highways, such as they are, seem deserted, and, save the music made for soldiers and saints, all is silent. The very mountains, too, with their snow-mantled heads, and their sides scarred by volcanic eruptions and ruptured by earthquake shocks, have a melancholy look. In the words of a great artist, "They look like a world from which not only the human, but the spiritual presences had perished, and the last of the archangels, building the great Andes for their monuments, had laid themselves down to eternal rest, each in his snow-white shroud."

But let us enter. Passing the ruined chapel "Del Señor del buen pasaje," and crossing by a substantial stone bridge the little Machángara hastening to pay tribute to the Pacific, we leave behind us the dirty, dilapidated suburbs of the capital. Soon we cross another bridge—the Bridge of Buzzards—spanning a deep ravine, and gallop through the Plaza de Santo Domingo. Very different are the sights and sounds from the stir and style of Central Park. The scene has a semi-oriental cast—half Indian, half Egyptian, as if this were the confluence of the Marañon and Nile. Groups of men—not crowds, for there is plenty of elbow-room in Ecuador—in gay ponchos stand chatting in front of little shops, or lean against the wall to enjoy the sunshine; beggars in rags or sackcloth stretch forth their leprous hands for charity; monks in white, and canons in black, walk in the shade of immense hats; shoeless soldiers saunter to and fro; Indians from the mountains in every variety of costume cluster around heaps of vegetables for sale; women in red, brown, and blue frocks are peddling



Quito, from the North.



oranges and alligator pears, or bearing huge burdens on their heads; children, guiltless of clothing, and obtuse donkeys, wander whithersoever they will; and water-carriers, filling their jars at the fountain, start off on a dog-trot.

We cross the Plaza diagonally, pass down the Calle de San Fernando, up the Calle del Algodon, and through the busy Calle del Correo, till we reach the *Casa Frances*, opposite the mansion of the late General Flores. This is our



hotel—owned by a Frenchman, but kept by an Indian. We ride under the low archway, bowing with ill grace, like all republicans unaccustomed to royalty, tie our beasts in the court-yard, ascend to our spacious quarters on the second floor, and, ordering coffee, seat ourselves in the beautiful balcony to talk of Quito and Quitonians.



Water-carriers.

Quito, though not the highest city on the globe, is two thousand feet higher than the Hospice of Great St. Bernard on the Alps, which is the only permanent place of abode in Europe above six thousand five hundred feet. When Mr. Hassaurek was appointed United States Minister to Ecuador, he thanked Mr. Lincoln for conferring upon him the *highest* gift in his power. The mean result of our numerous observations with Green's standard barometer places



the Grand Plaza nine thousand five hundred and twenty feet above the sea, or fifty feet lower than the calculation of Humboldt. Water boils at  $194^{\circ}.5$ . Cuzco and Potosi may surpass it in altitude, but there is not a city in the world which can show at once such a genial climate, such magnificent views, and such a checkered history. It is unique likewise in its latitude, lying only fifteen miles below the equator; no other capital comes within three hundred miles of the equinoctial line.



Street in Quito.

Whatever may have been the plan of Quito in the days of Huayna-Capac, it is evident that the Spanish founders were guided more by the spurs of Pichincha than by as-



tronomy. The streets make an angle of forty-five degrees with the meridian, so that not a single public building faces any one of the four cardinal points of the compass. Two deep ravines come down the mountain, and traverse the city from west to east. They are mostly covered by arches, on which the houses rest; but where they are open, they disclose as fit representatives of the place of torment as the Valley of Hinnom. The outline of the city is as irregular as its surface. It incloses one square mile. Twenty streets, all of them straiter than the apostolic one in Damascus, cross one another very nearly at right angles. None of them are too wide, and the walks are painfully narrow; but, thanks to Garcia Moreno, they are well paved. The inequality of the site, and its elevation above the Machángara, render the drainage perfect.\* The streets are dimly lighted by tallow candles, every householder being obliged to hang out a lantern at 7 P.M., unless there is moonshine. The candles, however, usually expire about ten o'clock. There are three "squares"—Plaza Mayor, Plaza de San Francisco, and Plaza de Santo Domingo. The first is three hundred feet square, and adorned with trees and flowers; the others are dusty and unpaved, being used as market-places, where Indians and donkeys most do congregate. All the plazas have fountains fed with pure water from Pichincha.

Few buildings can boast of architectural beauty, yet Quito looks palatial to the traveler who has just emerged

\* The following quotation, however, is true to the letter, and will apply equally well to Guayaquil and to Madrid—the mother of them both: "There is another want still more embarrassing in Quito than the want of hotels—it is the want of water-closets and privies, which are not considered as necessary fixtures of private residences. Men, women, and children, of all ages and colors, may be seen in the middle of the street, in broad daylight, making privies of the most public thoroughfares; and while thus engaged, they will stare into the faces of passers-by with a shamelessness that beggars description."—*Hassaurek*.



from the dense forest on the coast, "crossing bridgeless rivers, floundering over bottomless roads, and ascending and descending immense mountains." He is astonished to find such elegant edifices and such a proud aristocracy in this lofty lap of the Andes. The Indian habitations which girdle the city have no more architectural pretensions than an Arab dwelling. They are low mud hovels, the scene within and without of dirt and disorder.

As we approach the Grand Plaza, the centre of the city, the buildings increase in size, style, and finish. The ordinary material is adobe, not only because it is cheap, but also because it best resists earthquake shocks. Fear of a *terremoto* has likewise led to a massiveness in construction which is slightly ludicrous when we see the poverty which it protects; the walls are often two or three feet thick. The ground floor is occupied by servants, whose rooms—small enough to be called niches—surround the paved court-yard, which is entered from the street by a broad doorway. Within this court is sometimes a fountain or flower-plot. Around it are arches or pillars supporting a gallery, which is the passage-way to the apartments of the second story. All the rooms are floored with large square bricks. \*With few exceptions, the only windows are folding glass doors leading to balconies overhanging the pavement. The tiled roofs project far over into the street, and from these project still further uncouth water-spouts, such as used to be seen in Rio Janeiro, but have now been banished to the antiquarian museum. Only three or four private residences rise above two stories. The shops are small affairs—akin to the cupboards of Damascene merchants; half a dozen modern ladies can keep out any more customers. The door serves as entrance, exit, window, and show-case. The finest structures cluster around the plazas. Here are the public buildings, some of them dating back



to the times of Philip II. They are modeled after the old Spanish style; there is scarcely a fragment of Gothic architecture. They are built of large brick, or a dark volcanic stone from Pichincha.

The Government House, which serves at once as "White House" and Capitol, is an imposing edifice fronting the



Palacio de Gobierno—Capitol.

Grand Plaza, and adorned with a fine colonnade. On its right rises the cathedral; on the left stands the unpretending palace of the nuncio. The former would be called beautiful were it kept in repair; it has a splendid marble porch, and a terrace with carved stone balustrade. The view above was taken from this terrace. The finest façade is presented by the old Jesuit church, which has an elaborate front of porphyry. The Church of San Francisco,



built by the treasures of Atahualpa, discovered by an Indian named Catuna, is the richest. It is surmounted by two lofty towers, and the interior is a perfect blaze of gilding. The monastery attached to it is one of the largest in the world, but the greater part of it is in ruins, and one of the wings is used as a barrack. Those unsightly, unadorned convents, which cling to every church save the cathedral, have neutralized nearly all architectural effect.



## CHAPTER IV.

Population of Quito.—Dress.—Manners.—Character.—Commerce.—Agriculture.—Manufactures.—Arts.—Education.—Amusements.—Quito Ladies.

QUITONIANS claim for their capital eighty thousand inhabitants; but when we consider that one fourth of the city is covered with ecclesiastical buildings, and that the dwelling-houses are but two stories high, we see that there is not room for more than half that number. From thirty thousand to forty thousand is the estimate of the venerable Dr. Jameson, who has resided here for a generation.\* Census taking is as difficult as in Constantinople; the people hide themselves to escape taxation. The women far outnumber the men. The white population—a stiff aristocracy of eight thousand souls—is of Spanish descent, but not more than half a dozen can boast of pure blood. The coarse black hair, prominent cheek-bones, and low foreheads, reveal an Indian alliance. This is the governing class; from its ranks come those uneasy politicians who make laws for other people to obey, and hatch revolutions when a rival party is in power. They are blessed with fair mental capacity, quick perception, and uncommon civility; but they lack education and industry, energy and perseverance. Their wealth, which is not great, consists mainly in *haciendas*, yielding grain, cotton, and cattle. The Aguirre family is one of the noblest and wealthiest in the city; their

\* Spanish rhetoric is given to exaggeration. “All their geese are swans.” A Peruvian assured us that Cuzco contained 200,000 souls. It is, in fact, about as large as Quito; Gibbon says 20,000.



mansion is on the Grand Plaza, facing the Capitol. The pure Indians of Quito number perhaps 10,000; not all those seen in the city are citizens, as many *serranos*, or mountaineers, come in to sell produce. They are the serfs that do the drudgery of the republic; they are the tillers of the soil, and beasts of burden. Many sell themselves for money in advance, and then are ever kept in debt. Excepting a few Zambos (the children of Indians and Negroes), and a very few foreigners and Negroes, the remainder, constituting the bulk of the population, are Cholos—the offspring of whites and Indians. They are not strictly half-breeds, for the Indian element stands out most prominent. Though a mixed race, they are far superior to their progenitors in enterprise and intelligence. They are the soldiers, artisans, and tradesmen who keep up the only signs of life in Quito. “I know not the reason,” says Darwin, “but men of such origin seldom have a good expression of countenance.” This may be true on the pampas, but Quito, where there is every imaginable mixture of Indian and Spaniard, is wonderfully free from ugly features. It may be owing to the more peaceful and civilized history of this mountain city.

As to dress, black is the color of etiquette, but is not so national as in Madrid. The upper class follow *la mode de Paris*, gentlemen adding the classic cloak of Old Spain. This modern toga fits an Ecuadorian admirably; it favors habits of inactivity, preventing the arms from doing any thing, and covers a multitude of sins, especially pride and poverty. The *poncho*, so peculiar to the West Coast and to the Gauchos of Buenos Ayres, is a piece of cloth of divers colors, with a slit in the centre, through which the head is passed. It is the only variable article of the wardrobe. It is an excellent riding habit, and is made of heavy woolen for mountain travel, and of silk or cotton for warmer al-



titudes. No gentleman will be seen walking in the streets of Quito under a poncho. Hence citizens are divided into men with ponchos, and gentlemen with cloaks. The pañuelon is the most essential article of female gear. It answers to the mantilla of the mother country, though it is not worn so gracefully as on the banks of the Tagus. Andean ladies are not troubled with the distressing fluctuations in the style of hats; a bonnet in Quito is as much out of place as a turban in New York. When the daughter of our late minister resident appeared in the cathedral with one, the innovation was the subject of severe remark. The Spanish hair is the glory of the sex. It is thick and black (red, being a rarity, is considered a beauty), and is braided in two long tresses. A silk dress, satin shoes, and fancy jewelry complete the visible attire of the belles of Quito.

The ordinary costume of the Indians and Cholos consists of a coarse cotton shirt and drawers, and silk, cotton, or woolen poncho of native manufacture, the females adding a short petticoat, generally of a light blue or "butter-nut" color, belted around the waist with a figured woolen belt woven by themselves. The head, arms, legs, and feet are often bare, but, by those who can afford it, the head is covered with a straw or white felt broad-brim, and the feet protected by sandals, called *alpargates*, made of the fibres of the aloe. They are very fond of bracelets and necklaces. Infants are usually swathed from neck to feet with a broad strip of cloth, so that they look like live mummies.

Quitonians put us to shame by their unequalled courtesy, cordiality, and good-nature, and are not far below the grave and decorous Castilian in dignified politeness.\*

\* "I must express my admiration at the natural politeness of almost every Chileno. We met, near Mendoza, a little and very fat negress, riding astride on a mule. She had a *goître* so enormous that it was scarcely possi-



Rudeness, which some Northerners fancy is a proof of equality and independence, we never met with, and duels and street quarrels are almost unknown. We detected none of the touchy sensitiveness of the punctilious Spanish *hidalgos*. Their compliments and promises are without end; and, made in the magnificent and ceremonious language of Spain,\* are overwhelming to a stranger. Thus a fair Quitonian sends by her servant the following message to another lady: "Go to the Señorita Fulana de Tal, and tell her that she is my heart and the dear little friend of my soul; tell her that I am dying for not having seen her, and ask her why she does not come to see me; tell her that I have been waiting for her more than a week, and that I send her my best respects and considerations; and ask her how she is, and how her husband is, and how her children are, and whether they are all well in the family; and tell her she is my little love, and ask her whether she will be kind enough to send me that pattern which she promised me the other day."† This highly important message the servant delivers like a parrot, not omitting a single compliment, but rather adding thereto.

A newly-arrived foreigner is covered with promises: houses, horses, servants, yea, every thing is at his disposal. But, alas! the traveler soon finds that this ceremony of words does not extend to deeds. He is never expected to call for the services so pompously proffered. So long as he is able to avoid gazing at her for a moment; but my two companions almost instantly, by way of apology, made the common salute of the country by taking off their hats. Where would one of the lower or higher classes in Europe have shown such feeling politeness to a poor and miserable object of a degraded race?"—*Darwin's Naturalist's Voyage*.

\* The Spanish tongue is the manly son of the Latin, as the Italian is the fair daughter; a language in which, as Charles V. said, "God ought alone to be addressed in prayer." It is spoken in America with an Andalusian rather than Toledan pronunciation.

† We are indebted to Mr. Hassaurek for this capital illustration. Every lady, married or unmarried, is addressed *Señorita*, or Miss.



he stays in Quito he will not lose sight of the contrast between big promise and beggarly performance. This outward civility, however, is not hypocritical; it is mere mechanical prattle; the speaker does not expect to be taken at his word. The love of superlatives and the want of good faith may be considered as prominent characteristics. "The readiness with which they break a promise or an agreement (wrote Colonel Hall forty years ago) can only be equaled by the sophistical ingenuity with which they defend themselves for having done so." The Quitonians, who are sensible of their shortcomings, have this standing apology: "Our vices we owe to Spain; our virtues to ourselves."\*

Such is the mutual distrust, partnerships are almost unknown; we do not remember a single commercial firm, save a few made up of brothers, or father and son. With this moral debility is joined the procrastinating spirit of the oriental. *Mañana* (to-morrow), like the *Boukra* of the Arabs, is the universal winding up of promises. And very often, if one promises a thing to-morrow, he means the day after that. It is impossible to start a man into prompt compliance; he will not commence a piece of work when you wish nor when he promises. No amount of cajolery, bribery, or threats will induce a Quitonian to do any thing or be any where in season. If there were a railroad in Ecuador, every body would be too late for the first train. There are only one or two watch-tinkers in the great city, and, as may be inferred, very few watches are in running order. As a consequence, the people have very little idea of time. But this is not the sole reason for their

\* "When speaking of these countries, the manner in which they have been brought up by their unnatural parent, Spain, should always be borne in mind. On the whole, perhaps, more credit is due for what has been done, than blame for that which may be deficient."—*Darwin's Journal of Researches*, p. 158.



dilatoriness; they are indifferent. Nobody seems to want to make money (though all are in sad need of it); nobody is in a hurry; nobody is busy save the tailors, who manifest a commendable diligence. Contempt for labor, a Spanish inheritance, and lack of energy, are traits which stand out in *alto relieve*.

One can form his own judgment of the spiritless people from the single statement which we have from Dr. Jamieson, that during the last forty years not ten Quitonians have visited the grand crater of Pichincha, though it is possible to ride horseback to its very edge. Plenty of gentlemen by profession walk the streets and cathedral terrace, proud as a Roman senator under his toga, yet not ashamed to beg a cup of coffee at the door of a more fortunate fellow-citizen. Society is in a constant struggle between ostentation and want.

Nature has done more for Ecuador than for Ecuadorians. She laid out this beautiful valley for an Elysian field; "de Quito al Cielo" (from Quito to Heaven) is not an empty adage; and it is painful to look upon tottering walls and impassable roads, upon neglected fields and an idle population—poor as poverty in the lap of boundless natural wealth. The only really live man in the republic is the president, Señor G. Garcia Moreno, a man of wide views and great energy, standing in these respects head and shoulders above his fellow-citizens. Quito and Quito Valley owe nearly all their improvements to this one man.

It is easy to say what would be the industry of a people who spend much of their time repeating traditions of treasures buried by the Incas, and stories of gold deposits in the mountains. Of commerce there is scarcely enough to deserve the name. Quito is an ecclesiastical city, and is nearly supported by Guayaquil. Without capital, without energy, without business habits, Quitonians never embark



in grand commercial schemes and industrial enterprises. There is not a highway for commerce in any direction, only a natural path (called by the innocent natives a road), which rises to the altitude of fourteen thousand feet, by which the beasts of burden pick their way over the Cordillera. And this is open only six months in the year. Should a box designed for Quito arrive at Guayaquil at the beginning of the rainy season, it must tarry half a year till *Nature* makes the road passable.

The unstable condition of the country does not encourage great undertakings; all business is periodically paralyzed by revolution. Merchants generally buy their goods in Lima, to which city and Guayaquil the fabrics of England and France are brought by foreigners in foreign ships. The shops of Quito, as we have remarked, are very small, without windows, and with only one wooden door. The door is double, and is fastened by a ponderous padlock. They are open from 7 A.M. till sunset, excepting between nine and ten and between three and four, when the stores are closed for breakfast and dinner; the merchants never trusting their clerks, even when they have any, which is not usually the case. They have no fixed price, but get what they can. The majority know nothing of wholesale, and refuse to sell by the quantity, fearing a cheat. An Indian woman will sell you a real's worth of oranges any number of times, but she would object to parting with a dollar's worth—her arithmetic can not comprehend it.

In the *portals* or arcades of the Aguirre mansion and the nuncio's palace are the stalls of the haberdashers. Articles are not wrapped in paper; customers must get them home the best way they can. Ladies of the higher class seldom go out shopping, but send for samples. It is considered disgraceful to either sex to be seen carrying any thing through the streets of Quito. The common people buy



only for immediate wants—a dose of medicine, or a handful of potatoes at a time. Nearly all liquids, kerosene as well as wine, are sold by the bottle.

There was no bank in Quito in 1867, but an attempt has just been made to establish one. The paper money of Guayaquil is often at nine per cent. discount in the capital. The currency is silver adulterated with one third of copper. The smallest coin, the *calé*, is worth about two and a half cents. Above that are *medios* (five cents), *reals* (ten cents), two, four, and eight *reals*. Eight *reals* make a soft dollar (\$0 80); ten *reals*, a hard dollar (\$1 00). There is no copper coin—oranges and loaves of bread are sometimes used to make change; and nearly all the gold in circulation are New Granada *condors* and Peruvian *onzas*. Many of the silver pieces have large holes cut in the centre, so that they resemble rings. Government set the example (and the people followed) on the plea that it would prevent the exportation of coin. The plan has succeeded, for it does not pass out of the valley.

Nearly the only sign of progress is the late introduction of the grape and silk-worm; and these give so much promise of success that the threadbare nobility have already begun to count their coming fortunes. Husbandry is more pastoral than agricultural. Thousands of cattle are raised on the *paramos*, but almost wholly for beef. “A dislike to milk (observes Humboldt), or at least the absence of its use before the arrival of Europeans, was, generally speaking, a feature common to all nations of the New Continent, as likewise to the inhabitants of China.” Some cheese (mostly unpressed curd) and a little butter are made, but in the patriarchal style. Only one American churn is in operation; the people insist upon first boiling the milk and then stirring with a spoon. Custom is omnipotent here, and its effects hereditary. Milking is done at any hour of



the day, or whenever milk is wanted. The operation is a formidable one to these bull-fighting people. Stopping at a hacienda near Pelileo for a drink of milk, we were eyewitness of a comical sight. A mild-looking cow was driven up to the door; the woman, evidently the bravest member of the household, seized the beast by the horns; a boy tied the hind legs with a long rope, and held on to one end of it at a respectful distance; while the father, with outstretched arms, milked into a calabash.

Agricultural machinery is not in use. The first threshing-machine Quito ever saw was made in 1867 by some California miners, but it remained unsold when we last saw it. The spade is not known; the nearest approach to it is a crowbar flattened at one end. Hoes are clumsy and awkward. Yankee plows are bought more as curiosities than for use. Many a crooked stick is seen scratching the land, as in Egypt, which the cattle drag by their horns. Sometimes a number of sharp-nosed hogs are tied together and let into a field, and driven from place to place till the whole is rooted up. Corn is planted by making holes in the ground with a stick, and dropping in the seed. The soil and climate of Ecuador, so infinitely varied, offer a home to almost every useful plant. The productions of either India could be naturalized on the lowlands, while the highlands would welcome the grains and fruits of Europe. But intertropical people do not subdue nature like the civilized men of the North; they only pick up a livelihood.

Spanish Americans, like Castilians on the banks of the Tagus, have a singular antipathy to trees. When Garcia Moreno made a park of the dusty Plaza Mayor, he was ridiculed, even threatened. To plant a fruit or shade tree (a thing of foresight and forethought for others) in a land where people live for self, and from hand to mouth, is con-



sidered downright folly in theory and practice. A large portion of the valley, left treeless, is becoming less favorable for cultivation.

Yet, as it is, the traveler is charmed by the emerald verdure of the coast, and by "evergreen Quito"—more beautiful than the hanging gardens of Babylon—suspended far above the ordinary elevation of the clouds. In the San Francisco market we find wheat, barley, maize, beans, peas, potatoes, cabbages, beets, salads, pine-apples, chirimoyas, guavas, oranges, lemons, pears, quinces, peaches, apricots, melons, and strawberries—the last all the year round. Most of these are exotics; the early discoverers found not a cereal grain of the Old World, not an orange or apple, no sugar-cane or strawberries.\*

There is but little manufacturing industry in the interior of Ecuador, but much more than on the coast. The chief articles manufactured are straw hats, shoes, baskets, carpets, embroidery, tape, thread, ponchos, coarse woolen and cotton cloth, saddles, sandals, soap, sugar, cigars, aguardiente, powder, sweetmeats, carved images, paints, and pottery. Wines, crockery, glassware, cutlery, silks, and fine cloth are imported. There are three cotton mills in the country; one in Chillo (established by Señors Aguirre in 1842), another in Otovalo (built by Señor Parija in 1859), and a third in Cuenca (1861). The machinery of the Chillo factory came from England; that of Otovalo from Patterson, N. J. The latter was utterly destroyed in the late great earthquake, and the proprietor killed. The cotton is inferior to that of New Orleans; it is not "fat," as mechanics say; the seeds yield only two per cent. of oil. But it is whiter than American cotton, though coarse, and can

\* The vase is still shown in which Father Rixi brought the first wheat from Europe. It was sown in what is now the San Francisco Plaza, the chief market-place of the city.



be used only for very ordinary fabrics. The average length is five eighths of an inch. One pod will produce on an average three pennyweights. The mills of Chillo and Otavalo consume 425,000 pounds annually. The first sugar-mill was erected by the Aguirres in 1840 at Nanegal.

Quito is more than a century behind this age of steam and lightning. To form an adequate idea of the mechanic and fine arts in that "city of the kings," we must transport ourselves to the Saxon period of European civilization. Both the material and the construction of the houses would craze Sir Christopher Wren. With fine quarries close at hand, they must build with mud mixed with stones, or plastered on wattles, like the Druses of Mount Lebanon. Liv-



Indian Dwellings.

ing on the equatorial line and on the meridian so accurately measured by the highest mathematics of France and Spain, Quitonians must needs leave out every right angle or straight line in the walls, and every square beam and rafter. Except on the grand road from Quito to Ambato, commenced by President Moreno, there is not a wheelbarrow to be seen; paving-stones, lime, brick, and dirt, are



usually carried on human backs. Saint Crispin never had the fortitude to do penance in the shoes of Quito, and the huge nails which enter into the hoofs of the quadrupedants remind one of the Cyclops. There are not six carts in Quito. If you wish to move, you must coax a dozen Indians, who care little for your money or your threats. Horse-hire, peonage, and most mechanical work must be paid for in advance. Carriages—antique vehicles, of which there are two or three in the city—are drawn by mules. The first was introduced by Señor Aguirre so late as 1859, and he was fined by the police for the privilege of riding in it. Quitonians are not a traveling people, and they are painfully ignorant of their own country. The most enterprising merchant ignores every thing but Quito and the road to Guayaquil.

We can not praise the musical talent of Spanish Americans; their intonation is too nasal, while in their jumpings and chirpings they take after the grasshopper. A resident Englishman, who has traveled in many countries, and sings the songs of nearly every nation, told us he could not remember one of Ecuador. Pianos they have brought over the mountains at great expense; but they are more at home with the guitar. The embroidery and lace, wood carving and portrait painting of Quito, are commendable; but the grandeur of the Andes, like the beauty of the Alps, was never sketched by a native.

Ecuador boasts of one University and eleven colleges; yet the people are not educated. Literature, science, philosophy, law, medicine, are only names. Nearly all young gentlemen are doctors of something; but their education is strangely dwarfed, defective, and distorted; and their knowledge, such as they have, is without power, as it is without practice. The University of Quito has two hundred and eighty-five students, of whom thirty-five are pur-



suings law, and eighteen medicine. There are eleven professors. They receive no fees from the students, but an annual salary of \$300. The library contains eleven thousand volumes, nearly all old Latin, Spanish, and French works. The cabinet is a bushel of stones cast into one corner of a lumber-room, covered with dust, and crying out in vain for a man in the University to name them. The College of Tacunga has forty-five students; a fine chemical and philosophical apparatus, but no one to handle it; and a set of rocks from Europe, but only a handful from Ecuador. The College of Riobamba has four professors, and one hundred and twenty students. In the common schools, the pupils study in concert aloud, Arab fashion. There are four papers in the republic; two in Guayaquil, one in Cuenca, and one in Quito. *El Nacional*, of the capital, is an official organ, not a newspaper; it contains fourteen duodecimo pages, and is published occasionally by the Minister of the Interior. Like the *Gazeta* of Madrid, it is one of the greatest satires ever deliberately published by any people on itself. There is likewise but one paper in Cuzco, *El Triunfo del Pueblo*.

The amusements of Quito are few, and not very amusing. Indo-Castilian blood runs too slowly for merry-making. There are no operas or concerts, no theatres or lectures, no museums or menageries. For dramas they have revolutions; for menageries, bull-baitings. A bull-bait is not a bull-fight. There is no coliseum or amphitheatre; no *matador* gives the scientific death-wound. Unlike their fraternity in the ring of Seville, where they are doomed to die, the animals are only doomed to be pothered; they are "scotched, not killed." They are teased and tormented by yelling crowds, barking dogs, brass bands, red ponchos, tail-pulling, fire-crackers, wooden lances, and such like. The Plaza de Toros is the Plaza de San Francisco. This sport



is reserved for the most notable days in the calendar: Christmas, New Year's, Inauguration-day, and Independence-day—the 10th of August.

Cock-fights come next in popularity, and are *bona fide* fights. Often the roosters are so heroic that both leave their blood in the arena, and never crow again. Little knives are fastened to the natural spurs, with which the fowls cut each other up frightfully. The interesting scene takes place on Sundays and Thursdays, near the Church of Santa Catalina, and is regulated by a municipal tribunal. The admission fee of five cents, and the tax of two per cent. on bets, yield the city a monthly revenue of \$100.

Other pastimes are carnivals and masquerades. Carnival is observed by pelting one another with eggs and sprinkling with water. Whoever invented this prelude to Lent should be canonized. Masquerades occur during the holidays, when all classes, in disguise or fancy dress, get up a little fun at each other's expense. The monotony of social life is more frequently disturbed by fashionable funerals than by these amusements; and, as the principal families are inter-related, the rules of condolence keep the best part of society in mourning, and the best pianos and guitars silent for at least six months in the year.

A word about the ladies of Quito. We concur in the remark of our minister, Mr. Hassaurek, that "their natural dignity, gracefulness, and politeness, their entire self-possession, their elegant but unaffected bearing, and the choiceness of their language, would enable them to make a creditable appearance in any foreign drawing-room." Their natural talents are of a high order; but we must add that the señoras are uneducated, and are incapable of either great vices or great virtues. Their minds, like the soil of their native country, are fertile, but uncultivated; and their hearts, like the climate, are of a mean temperature. Pray-



er-books and French novels (imported, as wanted, for there is not a book-store in the city) are the alpha and the omega of their literature; Paris is considered the centre of civilization. They are comely, but not beautiful; Venus has given her girdle of fascination to few. Sensible of this, they paint.

Holinski gives his impressions by contrasting the fair Quitonians with the fairer Guayaquilians: "*Les yeux vifs et ardent, le pied fine et mignon, les teintes chaudes et dorées*" distinguish the latter. In the ladies of the high capital there is nothing of this: "*Les yeux ne lancent pas de flammes, le pied est sans gentillesse, l'épiderme ne reflète pas les rayons du soleil.*" The ladies on the coast take all possible pains to preserve the small size of the foot; a large foot is held in horror. Von Tschudi once overheard some ladies extolling in high terms the beauty of an English lady; all their praise, however, ending with this exclamation, "But what a foot! Good heavens! it is like a great boat!" Gibbon is continually talking of beautiful señoras and señoritas on the Andes; surely the lieutenant is in sport.\*

The ladies of Quito give few entertainments for lack of ready money. They spend much of their time in needlework and gossip, sitting like Turkish sultanas on divans or the floor. They do not rise at your entrance or departure. They converse in a very loud, unmusical voice. We never detected bashfulness in the street or parlor. They go to mass every morning, and make visits of etiquette on Sundays. They take more interest in political than in domestic affairs. Dust and cobwebs are unmistakable signs of indifference. Brooms are rarities; such as exist are besoms

\* "The young ladies of Cuzco are, in general, very beautiful, with regular features, fresh olive complexions, bright eyes full of intelligence, furnished with long lashes, and masses of black hair plaited in two tails."—*Markham*.



made of split stick. Since our return, we have sent to a Quitonian gentleman, by request, a package of broom-corn seed, which, we trust, will be the forerunner of a harvest of brooms and cleaner floors in the high city. Not only the lords, but also the ladies, are inveterate smokers. Little mats are used for spittoons.



Washerwomen.

Perhaps Quitonian ladies have too many Indian servants about them to keep tidy; seven or eight is the average number for a family. These are married, and occupy the ground floor, which swarms with nude children. They are cheap, thievish, lazy, and filthy. No class, pure-blood or half-breed, is given to ablution, though there are two public baths in the city. Washerwomen repair to the Machán-gara, where they beat the dirty linen of Quito over the



smooth rocks. We remember but two or three table-cloths which entirely covered the table, and only one which was clean. There are but two daily meals; one does not feel the need of more; they are partaken at nine and three, or an hour earlier than in Guayaquil. When two unwashed, uncombed cooks bend over a charcoal fire, which is fanned by a third unkempt individual, and all three blinded by smoke (for there is no chimney), so that it is not their fault if capillaries and something worse are mingled with the stew, with onions to right of them, onions to left of them, onions in front of them, and *achote* already in the pot in spite of your repeated anathemas and expostulations—*achote*, the same red coloring matter which the wild Indians use for painting their bodies and dyeing their cloth—and with several aboriginal wee ones romping about the kitchen, keen must be the appetite that will take hold with alacrity as the dishes are brought on by the most slovenly waiter imagination can body forth.\* The aim of Ecuadorian cookery is to eradicate all natural flavor; you wouldn't know you were eating chicken except by the bones. Even coffee and chocolate somehow lose their fine Guayaquilian aroma in this high altitude, and the very pies are stuffed with onions. But the beef, minus the garlic, is most excellent, and the *dulce* unapproachable.

\* We noticed at Riobamba a custom which formerly prevailed also at Quito. As soon as the guests have finished, and before they have risen, the Indian waiter kneels devoutly down beside the table, and offers thanks in a very solemn, touching tone.



## CHAPTER V.

Ecuador.—Extent.—Government.—Religion.—A Protestant Cemetery in Quito.—Climate.—Regularity of Tropical Nature.—Diseases on the Highlands.

THE republic of Ecuador looks like a wedge driven into the continent between the Marañon and the Putumayo. It has 600 miles of Pacific coast, and an area of about two hundred thousand square miles, including the Galápagos Islands. Peru, however, claims the oriental half, drawing her northern boundary from Tumbes through Canélos and Archidona; and she is entitled to much of it, for she has established a regular line of steamers on the Marañon, while the Quito government has not developed an acre east of the Andes. Ecuador is hung between and upon two cordilleras, which naturally divide it into three parts: the western slope, the Quitonian valley, and the Napo region. The fluvial system is mainly made up of the Napo, Pastassa, and Santiago, tributaries of the Marañon, and the Mira, Esmeraldas, and Guayaquil, flowing westward into the Pacific. There are no lakes proper, but the natives enumerate fifty-five lagunes, the largest of which, Capucuy, is not over five miles long.

Villavicencio tells the world that his country has a total population of 1,308,042. But Dr. Jameson believes it does not exceed 700,000. The government is based on the Constitution of 1845, amended in 1853. The president is chosen by a plurality of votes, holds his office for four years, and has a salary of \$12,000. He can not be re-elect-



ed,\* nor can he exercise his functions more than twenty-five miles from the capital. But the law is often set aside by those in power. During the administration of Garcia Moreno, prominent citizens were shot or banished by his order, without trial by jury. To every plea for mercy the stern president replied, that as he could not save the country according to the Constitution, he should govern it according to his own views of public necessity.

Congress assembles on the 15th of September every other year, and consists of eighteen senators and thirty representatives. The chambers are small, and literally barren of ornament. The members sit in two rows facing each other, have no desks, and give an affirmative vote by a silent bow. Politics has less to do with principles and parties than with personalities. Often it has a financial aspect; and the natural expression on learning of a revolution is, "Somebody is out of money." The party in feathers its nest as fast as possible; there is scarcely a public officer who is not open to bribery. The party out plots a premature resurrection to power by the ladders of corruption, slander, and revolution.† Revolution has so rapidly followed revolution that history has ceased to count them; and it may be said of them what Milton wrote of the wars of the Saxon Heptarchy, "that they are not more worthy of being recorded than the skirmishes of crows and kites." The Grand Plaza, the heart where all the great arteries of circulation meet and diverge, is where the high tides of Quito affairs ebb and flow.

\* Since this was written, Garcia Moreno has been re-elected to the presidency, and the Constitution revised. Assassinated August 6, 1875.

† Government has more than once paid its debts by repudiation. Congress lately voted to pay only seven per cent. of the claims against the state which are dated prior to a certain year. Among the sufferers is the venerable Dr. Jameson, a distinguished foreigner, who has served this country faithfully for forty years, first as assayer, then as director of the mint, and always by his scientific position.



The Supreme Court consists of five judges. Criminal cases only are tried by jury; and an attorney is not permitted to question a witness. There are no penitentiaries: second-class criminals are made to work for the public, while political offenders are banished to the banks of the Napo, or to Peru. Here, as in no other country, every man's house is his castle. No search-warrants are allowed; a policeman can be shot dead on the threshold. The person and property of a foreigner are safe; and no native in the employ of a foreigner can be taken by the government for military purposes. All, except pure Indians, can vote if over twenty-one, and can read and write. A man's signature is without value if it lacks his flourish—a custom of Spanish origin.

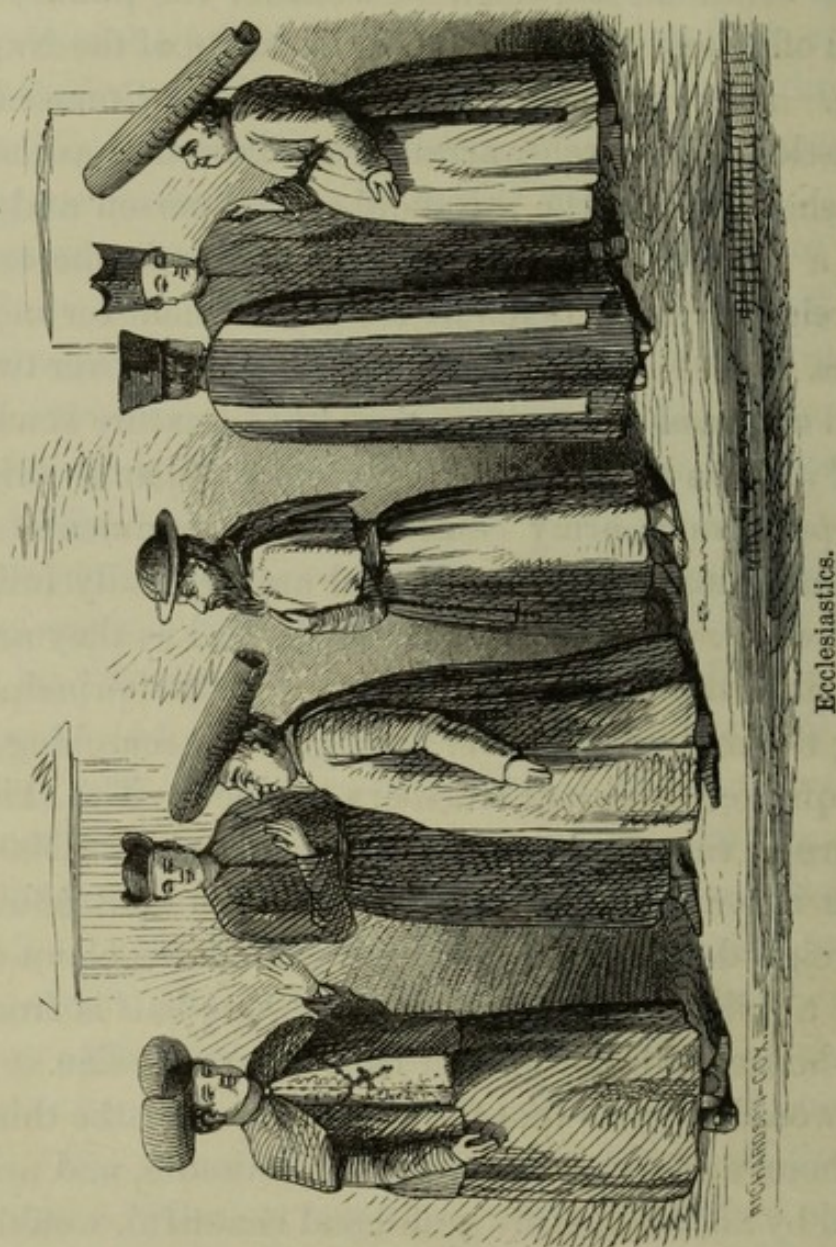
The permanent army consists of two regiments. The soldiers are mostly half-breeds, and are generally followed by their wives. They are poorly paid; and as they are impressed into the service, they carry out the principle by helping themselves wherever they go. In marching, they have a quicker step than Northern soldiers. The chief expenditure of the republic is for the army, about \$500,000; the next is for the payment of the national debt, \$360,000. The foreign debt is £1,470,374. Ecuadorians claim a revenue of a million and a half, of which one half is from the custom-house, and one fiftieth from the post-office.

One would suppose that the people who breathe this high atmosphere, and enjoy this delightful climate, and are surrounded by all that is truly grand and beautiful, would have some corresponding virtues. But we find that Nature, here as every where, has mingled base and noble elements. The lofty mountains, bearing in their steadfastness the seal of their appointed symbol—"God's righteousness is like the great mountains"—look down upon one of the lowest and most corrupt forms of republican government on earth;\*

\* Asking the late Chilian minister for his view of the rank of the different



their snowy summits preach sermons on purity to Quitonian society, but in vain ; and the great thoughts of God written all over the Andes are unable to lift this proud capital out



Ecclesiastics.

of the mud and mire of mediæval ignorance and superstition. The established religion is the narrowest and most intolerant form of Romanism. Mountains usually have a

South American states, he gave us this order : Chile, Brazil, Argentine Republic, Venezuela, New Granada, Central America, Mexico, Peru, Bolivia, Ecuador.



more elevating, religious influence than monotonous plains. The Olympian mythology of the Greek was far superior to the beastly worship on the banks of the Nile. And yet at the very feet of glorious Chimborazo and Pichincha we see a nation bowing down to little images of the rudest sculpture with a devotion that reminds us of the Middle Ages.

The belief is called *La Fe*, or the only true one. The oath of a Protestant is not regarded in courts of law. One fourth of Quito is covered by convents and churches. The convents alone number fifty-seven, and are very extensive, sometimes spreading over eight or nine acres. The Church revenue amounts to \$800,000. There are more than four hundred priests, monks, and nuns in the capital. The native ecclesiastics are notorious for their ignorance and immorality. "It is a very common thing (says Dr. Terry) for a curate to have a whole flock of orphan nephews and nieces, the children of an imaginary brother." There is one ex-president who has the reputation of tying a spur on the leg of a game-cock better even than a curate. The imported Jesuits are the most intelligent and influential clergy. They control the universities and colleges, and education generally. Active and intellectual, though not learned, they have infused new life into the fat indolence of the Spanish system. Men of this world rather than the next, they have adopted a purely mundane policy, abjured the gloomy cowl, raised gorgeous temples, and say, "He that cometh unto us shall in no wise lose heaven." Their chief merit, however, is the discovery of the turkey and quinine.

The Protestant in Quito is annoyed by an everlasting jingling of bells and blowing of bugles night and day. The latter are blown every third hour. The bells are struck by boys, not rung. A bishop, returning from a visit to London, was asked if there were any good bells in England. "Very fine," he replied, "but there is not a man



there who knows how to ring them." Foreign machinery is sprinkled with holy water to neutralize the inherent heresy; but a miller, for example, will charge more for his flour after the baptism.

Lotteries are countenanced by both Church and State, and in turn help support them; we saw one "grand scheme" carried out on the cathedral terrace and defended by bayonets.

At half past nine in the morning all Quito is on its knees, as the great bell of the cathedral announces the elevation of the Host. The effect is astonishing. Riders stop their horses; foot-passengers drop down on the pavement; the cook lets go her dishes and the writer his pen; the merchant lays aside his measure and the artisan his tool; the half-uttered oath (*carájo!*) dies on the lips of the Cholo; the arm of the cruel Zambo, unmercifully beating his donkey, is paralyzed; and the smart repartee of the lively donna is cut short. The solemn stillness lasts for a minute, when the bell tolls again, and all rise to work or play. Holidays are frequent. Processions led by a crucifix or wooden image are attractive sights in this dull city, simply because little else is going on. Occasionally a girl richly dressed to represent the humble mother of God is drawn about in a carriage, and once a year the figures of the Virgin belonging to different churches are borne with much pomp to the Plaza, where they bow to each other like automats.

"This is a bad country to live in, and a worse one to die in," said Dr. Jameson. But times have changed, even in fossil Quito. Through the efforts of our late minister, Hon. W. T. Coggeshall, the bigoted government has at last consented to inclose a quarter of an acre outside the city for the subterranean burial of heretics. The cemetery is on the edge of the beautiful plain of Iñaquito, and on the right of the road leading to Guápulo. "What a shame,"



said a Quitonian lady of position, "that there should be a place to throw Protestant dogs!"

On St. Nathaniel's day died Colonel Phineas Staunton, Vice-Chancellor of Ingham University, New York. An artist by profession, and one of very high order, Colonel Staunton joined our expedition to sketch the glories of the Andes, but he fell a victim to the scourge of the lowlands one week after his arrival in Quito. We buried him at noonday\* in the new cemetery, "wherein was never man laid," and by the act consecrated the ground. Peace to his ashes; honor to his memory. That 8th of September, 1867, was a new day in the annals of Quito. On that day the imperial city beheld, for the first time in three centuries, the decent burial of a Protestant in a Protestant cemetery. Somewhere, mingled with the ashes of Pichincha, is the dust of Atahualpa, who was buried in his beloved Quito at his own request after his murder in Caxamarca. But dearer to us is that solitary grave; the earth is yet fresh that covers the remains of one of nature's noblemen.

Turn we now to a more delightful topic than the politics and religion of Quito. The climate is perfect. Fair Italy, with her classic prestige and ready access, will long be the land of promise to travelers expatriated in search of health. But if ever the ancients had reached this Andean valley, they would have located here the Elysian Fields, or the seat

\* This was a new thing under the sun. Quitonians "bury at dead of night, with lanterns dimly burning." The dirges sung as the procession winds through the streets are extremely plaintive, and are the most touching specimens of Ecuadorian music. The corpse, especially of a child, is often carried in a chair in a sitting posture. The wealthy class wall up their dead in niches on the side of Pichincha, hypothetically till the resurrection, but really for two years, when, unless an additional payment is made, the bones are thrown into a common pit and the coffin burnt. To prevent this, a few who can afford it embalm the deceased. One of the most distinguished citizens of Quito keeps his mummified father at his hacienda, and annually dresses him up in a new suit of clothes!



of "the blessed, the happy, and long-lived" of Anacreon.\* No torrid heat enervates the inhabitant of this favored spot; no icy breezes send him shivering to the fire. Nobody is sun-struck; nobody's buds are nipped by the frost. Stoves and chimneys, starvation and epidemics, are unknown. It is never either spring, summer, or autumn, but each day is a combination of all three. The mean annual temperature of Quito is  $58^{\circ}.8$ , the same as Madrid, or as the month of May in Paris. The average range in twenty four hours is about  $10^{\circ}$ . The coldest hour is 6 A.M.; the warmest between 2 and 3 P.M. The extremes in a year are  $45^{\circ}$  and  $70^{\circ}$ ; those of Moscow are  $-38^{\circ}$  and  $89^{\circ}$ . It is a prevalent opinion that since the great earthquake of 1797 the temperature has been lower. "It was suddenly reduced (says the *Encycl. Metropolitana*) from  $66^{\circ}$  or  $68^{\circ}$  to  $40^{\circ}$  or  $45^{\circ}$ "—a manifest error. The natives say that since the *terremote* of 1859 the seasons have not commenced so regularly, nor are they so well defined; there are more rainy days in summer than before. It remains to be seen whether the late convulsion has affected the climate.

The mean diurnal variation of the barometer is only .084. So regular is the oscillation, as likewise the variations of the magnetic needle, that the hour may be known within fifteen minutes by the barometer or compass. Such is the clock-like order of Nature under the equator, that even the rains, the most irregular of all meteorological phenomena in temperate zones, tell approximately the hour of the day. The winds, too, have an orderly march—the ebb and flow of an aerial ocean. No wonder watch-tinkers can

\* In the mountain-town of Caxamarca, farther south, there were living in 1792 seven persons aged 114, 117, 121, 131, 132, 141, and 147. One of them, when he died, left behind him eight hundred living descendants to mourn his loss. We confess, however, that we saw very few old persons in Quito. Foreigners outlive the natives, because they live a more regular and temperate life.



not live where all the forces in nature keep time. Nobody talks about the weather; conversation begins with benedictions or compliments.

The greatest variations of the thermometer occur in autumn, and the greatest quantity of rain falls in April.\* While on the western side of the Andes, south of the equator, the dry season extends from June to January, on the eastern side of the Cordillera the seasons are reversed, the rain lasting from March to November. The climate of the central valley is modified by this opposition of seasons on either side of it, as also by the proximity of snowy peaks. Nine such peaks stand around Quito within a circle of thirty miles. The prevailing winds in summer are from the northeast; in the winter the southwest predominate.

There are only three small drug-stores in the great city of Quito. The serpent is used as the badge of apothecary art. Physicians have no offices, nor do they, as a general rule, call upon their patients. When an invalid is not able to go to the doctor, he is expected to die. Yellow fever, cholera, and consumption are unknown; while intermittent fevers, dysentery, and liver complaints, so prevalent on the coast, are uncommon. The ordinary diseases are catarrhal affections and typhoid fever. Cases of inflammation of the lungs are rare; more coughing may be heard during a Sunday service in a New England meeting-house than in six months in Quito. The diseases to which the monks of St. Bernard are liable are pulmonary, and the greater number become asthmatic. Asthma is also common in Quito, while phthisis increases as we descend to the sea. Individuals

\* The mean annual fall of rain at Quito is 70 inches.

“	“	“	“	Charleston is 45.9 inches.
“	“	“	“	New York is 42.23 “
“	“	“	“	Albany is 40.93 “
“	“	“	“	Montreal is 36 “
“	“	“	“	Madrid is 10. “



are often seen with a handkerchief about the jaws, or bits of plaster on the temples; these are afflicted with headache or toothache, resulting from a gratified passion for sweetmeats, common to all ages and classes. Digestive disorders are somewhat frequent (contrary to the theory in Europe), but they spring from improper food and sedentary habits. The *cuisine* of the country does not tempt the stomach to repletion, and the climate is decidedly peptic. So the typhoid fever of Quito is due to filth, poor diet, and want of ventilation. Corpulency, especially among the men, is astonishingly rare.

According to Dr. Lombard, mountain districts favor the development of diseases of the heart; and contagious diseases are not arrested by the atmosphere of lofty regions. This is true in Quito. But while nervous diseases are rare in the inhabited highlands of Europe, in Quito they are common. Sleep is said to be more tranquil and refreshing, and the circulation more regular at high altitudes; but our experience does not sustain this. Goître is quite common among the mountains. It is a sign of constitutional weakness, for the children of goïtred parents are usually deaf and dumb, and the succeeding generation idiots. Boussingault thinks it is owing to the lack of atmospheric air in the water; but why is it nearly confined to the women? In the southern provinces about Cuenca, cutaneous affections are quite frequent. In the highlands generally, scrofulous diseases are more common than in the plains. There are three hospitals for lepers; one at Cuenca with two hundred patients, one at Quito with one hundred and twelve patients, and one at Ambato. Near Riobamba is a community of dwarfs.

D'Orbigny made a *post-mortem* examination of some Indians from the highest regions, and found the lungs of extraordinary dimensions, the cells larger and more in num-



ber. Hence the unnatural proportion of the trunk, which is plainly out of harmony with the extremities. The expanded chest of the mountaineers is evidently the result of larger inspirations to secure the requisite amount of oxygen, which is much less in a given space at Quito than on the coast. This is an instance, observes Prichard, of long-continued habit, and the result of external agencies modifying the structure of the body, and with it the state of the most important functions of life. We tried the experiment of burning a candle one hour at Guayaquil, and another part of the same candle for the same period at Quito. Temperature at Guayaquil,  $80^{\circ}$ ; at Quito,  $62^{\circ}$ . The loss at Guayaquil was 140 grains; at Quito, 114, or 26 grains less at the elevation of 9500 feet. Acoustics will also illustrate the thinness of the air. M. Godin found (1745) that a nine-pounder could not be heard at the distance of 121,537 feet; and that an eight-pounder at Paris, at the distance of 102,664 feet, was louder than a nine-pounder at Quito at the distance of 67,240 feet.

According to Dr. Archibald Smith, the power of muscular exertion in a native of the coast is greatly increased by living at the height of 10,000 feet. But it is also asserted by observing travelers that dogs and bulls lose their combativeness at 12,000 feet, and that hence there can never be a good bull-fight or dog-fight on the Sierras. This is literally true: the dogs seem to partake of the tameness of their masters. Cats do not flourish at all in high altitudes; and probably the lion, transplanted from the low jungle to the table-lands, would lose much of his ferocity. Still, cock-fights seem to prosper; and the battle of Pichincha was fought on an elevation of nearly 11,000 feet. Bolivar and the Spaniards, also, fought like tigers on the high plain of Junin.\*

\* Gibbon states that the temperature of the blood of a young bull in Cuzco was  $100^{\circ}$ ; air,  $57^{\circ}$ . At the base of the Andes a similar experiment resulted



The sickness felt by some travelers at great elevations—violent headache and disposition to vomit—is called *veta*; and the difficulty of breathing from the rarity of the air is termed *puna*. Gerard complained of severe headache and depression of spirits at the height of 15,000 feet on the Himalayas; Dr. Barry, in ascending Mont Blanc (15,700 feet), speaks of great thirst, great dryness and constriction of skin, loss of appetite, difficult breathing, tendency to syncope, and utter indifference. Baron Müller, in his ascent of Orizava (17,800 feet), found great difficulty in breathing, and experienced the sensation of a red-hot iron searing his lungs, and agonizing pains in the chest, followed by fainting-fits and torrents of blood from his mouth; Humboldt, in scaling Chimborazo, suffered from nausea akin to sea-sickness, and a flow of blood from the nose and lips; while Herndon, on the slope of Puy-puy (15,700 feet), said he thought his heart would break from his breast with its violent agitation. Though ascending the Andes to the height of 16,000 feet, and running up the last few rods, we experienced nothing of this except a temporary difficulty in respiration. We were exhilarated rather than depressed. The experience of Darwin on the Portillo ridge (14,000 feet) was only “a slight tightness across the head and chest.” “There was some imagination even in this (he adds); for, upon finding fossil shells on the highest ridge, I entirely forgot the *puna* in my delight.” De Saussure says truly: “The strength is repaired as speedily as it has been exhausted. Merely a cessation of movement for three or four minutes, without even seating one’s self, seems to restore the strength so perfectly that, on resuming progress, one feels able to climb at a single stretch to the very peak of the mountain.”

in 101° for the blood, air 78°. The lieutenant jocosely adds: “The Spaniards have forced the hog so high up on the Andes that he suffers every time he raises his bristles, and dies out of place.”—*Puna* has been attributed to the presence of arsenical vapor.



## CHAPTER VI.

Astronomic Virtues of Quito.—Flora and Fauna of the Valley of Quito.—  
Primeval Inhabitants of the Andes.—Quichua Indians.

QUITO, with a position unparalleled for astronomical purposes, has no observatory. The largest telescope in the city is about five feet long, but the astute professor of natural philosophy in the Jesuit College who has charge of it had not the most distant idea that an eclipse of the sun would occur on the 29th of August, and an eclipse of the moon fifteen days later. In ancient days this "holy city" had within it the Pillar of the Sun, which cast no shadow at noon, and a temple was built for the god of light. The title of the sovereign Inca was the Child of the Sun; but there was very little knowledge of astronomy, for, being the national religion, it was beyond the reach of scientific speculation.

The atmosphere of Quito is of transparent clearness. Humboldt saw the poncho of a horseman with the naked eye at a horizontal distance of ninety thousand feet. The sky is of a dark indigo color; the azure is less blended with white because of the extreme dryness of the air. The stars stand out with uncommon brilliancy, and the dark openings between them the great German compared to "tubes through which we look into the remotest depths of space." It is true at Quito, as Humboldt noticed at Cumana, that the stars do not twinkle when they are more than fifteen degrees high; "the soft planetary light" of the stars overhead is not mere rhetoric.

Living under the equatorial line, Quitonians enjoy the



peculiar privilege of beholding the stars of both hemispheres, the guiding stars of Ursa Major as well as the Magellanic Clouds and Southern Cross, not omitting that black spot near the latter, "the unappropriated region in the skies reserved by Manager Bingham for deposed American presidents."

The zodiacal light here appears in all its glory. This strange phenomenon has long puzzled philosophers, and they are still divided. It is generally considered to be produced by a continuous zone of infinitesimal asteroids. The majority place this zone beyond the orbit of the earth, and concentric with the sun. But Rev. George Jones, of Philadelphia, who has spent several years in observing this light, including eight months in Quito, considers it geocentric, and possibly situated between the earth and its satellite. At New York only a short pyramidal light, and this only at certain seasons, is to be seen; but here, an arch twenty degrees wide, and of considerable intensity, shoots up to the zenith, and Mr. Jones affirms that a complete arch is visible at midnight when the ecliptic is at right angles to the spectator's horizon. We have not been so fortunate as to see it pass the zenith; and Professor Barnard contends that it never does pass. We may remark that the main part of the zodiacal light shifts to the south side of the celestial equator as we cross the line. To us the most magnificent sight in the tropical heavens is the "Milky Way," especially near Sobieski's Shield, where it is very luminous. We observed that this starry tract divided at  $\alpha$  Centauri, as Herschel says, and not at  $\beta$ , as many maps and globes have it. The brightest stars in the southern hemisphere follow the direction of a great circle passing through  $\epsilon$  Orionis and  $\alpha$  Crucis.

Another thing which arrests the attention of the traveler is the comparatively well-defined boundary-line between



day and night. The twilight at Quito lasts only an hour and a half; on the coast it is still shorter. Nor is there any "harvest moon," the satellite rising with nearly equal intervals of forty-eight minutes.

From the stars we step down to the floral kingdom on the Andes, using as our ladder of descent the following sentence from Humboldt, at the age of seventy-five: "If I might be allowed to abandon myself to the recollections of my own distant travels, I would instance among the most striking scenes of nature the calm sublimity of a tropical night, when the stars—not sparkling, as in our Northern skies—shed their soft and planetary light over the gently heaving ocean; or I would recall the deep valleys of the Cordilleras, where the tall and slender palms pierce the leafy veil around them, and wave on high their feathery and arrow-like branches."

Father Velasco praises Ecuador as "the noblest portion of the New World." Nature has doubtless gifted it with capabilities unsurpassed by those of any other country. Situated on the equinoctial line, and embracing within its limits some of the highest as well as lowest dry land on the globe, it presents every grade of climate, from the perpetual summer on the coast and in the Orient to the everlasting winter of the Andean summits, while the high plateau between the Cordilleras enjoys an eternal spring. The vegetable productions are consequently most varied and prolific. Tropical, temperate, and arctic fruits and flowers are here found in profusion, or could be successfully cultivated. As the Ecuadorian sees all the constellations of the firmament, so Nature surrounds him with representatives of every family of plants. There are places where the eye may embrace an entire zone, for it may look up to a barley-field and potato-patch, and down to the sugar-cane and pineapple.



Confining our attention to the Quito Valley, we remark that the whole region from Pichincha to Chimborazo is as treeless as Palestine. The densest forest is near Baños. The most common tree is the "Aliso" (*Betula acuminata*). Walnut is the best timber. There are no pines or oaks.\* The slopes of the mountains, between twelve and fifteen thousand feet, are clothed with a shrub peculiar to the high altitudes of the Andes, called *Chuquiragua*. This is a very valuable shrub; the twigs are used for fuel, and the yellow buds as a febrifuge. The castor-oil-tree grows naturally by the road side, sometimes to the height of twelve feet.

A very useful as well as the most ordinary plant in the valley is the American aloe, or "Century Plant."† It is the largest of all herbs. Not naturally social, it imparts a melancholy character to the landscape as it rises solitary out of the arid plain. Most of the roads are fenced with aloe hedges. While the majority of tropical trees have naked stems with a crown of leaves on the top, the aloe reverses this, and looks like a great chandelier as its tall peduncle, bearing greenish-yellow flowers, rises out of a graceful cluster of long, thick, fleshy leaves. When cultivated, the aloe flowers in much less time than a century; but, exhausted by the efflorescence, it soon dies. Nearly every part serves some purpose; the broad leaves are used by the poorer class instead of paper in writing, or for thatching their huts; sirup flows out of the leaves when tapped, and, as

\* On the Himalayas are oaks, birches, pines, chestnuts, maples, junipers, and willows; no tree-ferns, bamboos, or palms.

† The *Agava Americana* of botanists, *cabulla* of Ecuadorians, *maguey* of Venezuelans, and *metl* of Mexicans. It is an interesting fact, brought to light by the researches of Carl Neuman, that the Chinese in the fifth century passed over to America by way of the Aleutian Islands, and penetrated as far south as Mexico, which they called the land of *fusung*, that being the celestial name of the aloe. Terzozomoc, the high-priest of the ancient Mexicans, gave aloe leaves, inscribed with sacred characters, to persons who had to journey among the volcanoes, to protect them from injury.



they contain much alkali, a soap (which lathers with salt water as well as fresh) is also manufactured from them; the flowers make excellent pickles; the flower-stalk is used in building; the pith of the stem is used by barbers for sharpening razors; the fibres of the leaves and the roots are woven into sandals and sacks; and the sharp spines are used as needles. A species of yucca, resembling the aloe, but with more slender leaves and of a lighter green, yields the hemp of Ecuador.

The "crack fruit" of Quito, and, in fact, of South America, is the *chirimoya*.<sup>\*</sup> Its taste is a happy mixture of sweetness and acidity. Hanke calls it "a masterwork of Nature," and Markham pronounces it "a spiritualized strawberry." It grows on a tree about fifteen feet high, having a broad, flat top, and very fragrant flowers. The ripe fruit, often attaining in Peru the weight of sixteen pounds, has a thick green skin, and a snow-white pulp containing about seventy black seeds. Other pomological productions are alligator pears, guavas, guayavas, granadillas, cherries (a small black variety), peaches (very poor), pears (equally bad), plums, quinces, lemons, oranges (not native), blackberries, and strawberries (large, but flavorless).<sup>†</sup> The cultivation of the grape has just commenced. Of vegetables there are onions (in cookery, "the first, and last, and midst, and without end"), beets, carrots, asparagus, lettuce, cabbages, turnips, tomatoes (indigenous, but inferior to ours), potatoes (also indigenous, but much smaller than their descendants),<sup>‡</sup>

<sup>\*</sup> Bollaert derives the name from *chiri* (cold) and *muhu* (seed).

<sup>†</sup> Dr. Jameson has found the following species of *Rubus* in the valley of Quito: *macrocarpus*, *stipularis*, *glabratus*, *compactus*, *glaucus*, *rosæflorus*, *loxensis*, *urticæfolius*, *floribundus*, and *nubigenus*. The common strawberry, *Fragaria vesca*, grows in the valley, as also the *Chilensis*.

<sup>‡</sup> Lieutenant Gilliss praises the potatoes of Peru, but we saw no specimens in Ecuador worthy of note. The "Irish potato" is a native of the Andes. It was unknown to the early Mexicans. It grows as far south on this continent as lat. 50°. The Spaniards carried the potato to Europe from Quito early in



red peppers, peas (always picked ripe, while green ones are imported from France!), beans, melons, squashes, and mushrooms. The last are eaten to a limited extent; Terra del Fuego, says Darwin, is the only country in the world where a cryptogamic plant affords a staple article of food.

The most important grains are barley, red wheat, and corn, with short ears, and elongated kernels of divers colors. Near the coast three crops of corn a year are obtained; at Quito it is of slower growth, but fuller. The sugar-cane is grown sparingly in the valley, but chiefly on the Pacific coast. Its home is Polynesia. Quito consumes about one hundred and fifty barrels of flour daily. The best sells for four dollars a quintal. The common fodder for cattle is alfalfa, an imported lucerne. There is no clover except a wild, worthless, three-leaved species (*Trifolium amabile*). Nearly all in the above list are cultivated for home consumption only, and many valuable fruits and vegetables which would grow well are unknown to Quitonians. As Bates says of the Brazilians, the incorrigible nonchalance and laziness of the people alone prevent them from surrounding themselves with all the luxuries of a temperate as well as tropical country.

It would be an endless task to speak of the flowers. It must suffice to state that a *Synopsis Plantarum Æquatoriensium*, the life-work of the venerable Professor Jameson, of the University of Quito, has just been published by the tardy government. Botanists will find in these two small volumes many new species unknown to American

the sixteenth century. From Spain it traveled to Italy, Belgium, and Germany. Sir Walter Raleigh imported some from Virginia in 1586, and planted them on his estate near Cork, Ireland. It is raised in Asiatic countries only where Europeans have settled, and for their consumption. It is successfully grown in Australia and New Zealand, where there is no native esculent farinaceous root. Von Tschudi says there is no word in Quichua for potato. It is called *papa* by the Napos.



science, and others more correctly described by one who has dwelt forty years among the Andes. The last zone of vegetation nearest the snow-line consists chiefly of yellow-flowering *Compositæ*. In fact, this family includes one fourth of the plants in the immediate vicinity of Quito. The next most numerous family is the *Labiata*, and then follow *Leguminosæ* and *Gentians*. Although the *Rosaceæ* is represented, there is not one species of the genus *Rosa* not even in the whole southern hemisphere. The magnificent *Befaria*, found in the lower part of the valley, is called "the Rose of the Andes." Fuchsias may be considered characteristic of South America, since they are so numerous; only one or two kinds occur in any other part of the world. Flowers are found in Quito all the year round, but the most favorable months are December and May. Yellow is the predominating color. The higher the altitude, the brighter the hues of any given species. Thus the *Gentiana sedifolia* is a small, light blue flower in the lowlands, but on the Assuay it has bright blue petals three times as large and sensitive. This accords with Herschel's statement: "The chemical rays of the spectrum are powerfully absorbed in passing through the atmosphere, and the effect of their greater abundance aloft is shown in the superior brilliancy of color in the flowers of Alpine regions."

America is plainly the continent of vegetation; and wherever the vegetable element predominates, the animal is subordinated. We must not look, therefore, for a large amount or variety of animal life in the Ecuadorian forests. Time was when colossal megatheroids, mastodons, and glyptodons browsed on the foliage of the Andes and the Amazon; but now the terrestrial mammals of this tropical region are few and diminutive. They are likewise old-fashioned, inferior in type as well as bulk to those of the eastern hemisphere, for America was a finished continent



long before Europe. "It seems most probable (says Darwin) that the North American elephants, mastodons, horse, and hollow-horned ruminants migrated, on land since submerged near Behring's Straits, from Siberia into North America, and thence, on land since submerged in the West Indies, into South America, where for a time they mingled with the forms characteristic of that southern continent, and have since become extinct.\* The rise of the Mexican table-land split up the New World into two well-defined zoological provinces. A few species, as the puma, peccari, and opossum, have crossed the barrier; but South America is characterized by possessing a family of monkeys, the llama, tapir, many peculiar rodents, and several genera of edentates.

The tapir, the largest native quadruped, is sometimes found on the mountains, but never descends into the Quito Valley. A link between the elephant and hog, its true home is in the lowlands. The tapir and peccari (also found on the Andean slopes) are the only indigenous pachyderms in South America, while the llama† and deer (both abounding in the valley) are the only native ruminants; there is not one native hollow-horned ruminant on the continent. The llama is the only native domesticated animal; indeed, South America never furnished any other animal serviceable to man: the horse, ox, hog, and sheep (two, four, and

\* *Journal of Researches*, p. 132.

† The llama, or "mountain-camel," is a beautiful animal, with long, slender neck and fine legs, a graceful carriage, pointed ears, soft, restless eyes, and quivering lips. It has a gentle disposition; but when angry it will spit, and when hurt will shed tears. We have seen specimens entirely white; but it is generally dark brown, with patches of white. It requires very little food and drink. Since the introduction of horses, asses, and mules, the rearing of llamas has decreased. They are more common in Peru. The llama, guáñaco, alpaca, and vicuña were "the four sheep of the Incas:" the first clothing the common people, the second the nobles, the third the royal governors, the fourth the Incas. The price of sheep's wool in Quito was formerly four cents a pound; it is now twelve.



six-horned), are importations. Of these animals, which rendered such important aid in the early civilization of Asia and Europe, the genera even were unknown in South America four centuries ago; and to-day pure Indians with difficulty acquire a taste for beef, mutton, and pork. The llama is still used as a beast of burden; but it seldom carries a quintal more than twelve miles a day. The black bear of the Andes ascends as high as Mont Blanc, and is rarely found below three thousand five hundred feet. The puma, or maneless American lion, has an immense range, both in latitude and altitude, being found from Oregon to the Straits of Magellan, and nearly up to the limit of eternal snow. It is as cowardly as the jaguar of the lowlands is ferocious. It is a very silent animal, uttering no cry even when wounded. Its flesh, which is very white, and remarkably like veal in taste, is eaten in Patagonia. Squirrels, hares, bats (a small species), opossums, and a large guinea-pig (*Cuye del Monte*), are found in the neighborhood of Quito.

As only about sixty species of birds are common to North and South America, the traveler from the United States recognizes few ornithic forms in the Valley of Quito. Save the hummers, beautiful plumage is rare, as well as fine songsters. But the moment we descend the Eastern Cordillera into the interior of the continent, we find the feathered race in robes of richest colors. The exact cause of this brilliant coloring in the tropics is still a problem. It can not be owing to greater light and heat, for the birds of the Galápagos Islands, directly under the equator, are dull.\*

\* Mr. Gould, however, holds that the difference of coloration is due to the different degrees of exposure to the sun's rays, the brilliantly-colored species being inhabitants of the edges of the forest. Birds from Ucayali, in the centre of the continent, are far more splendid than those which represent them in countries nearer the sea, owing to the clearer atmosphere inland. But it is a fact, at least exceptional to this theory, that the "Cock of the Rock"



The males, both of birds and butterflies, are the most gaudily dressed. In the highlands the most prominent birds are the condor and the humming-bird. These two extremes in size are found side by side on the summit of Pichincha. The condor appears in its glory among the mountains of Quito. Its ordinary haunt is at the height of Etna. No other living creature can remove at pleasure to so great a distance from the earth; and it seems to fly and respire as easily under the low barometric pressure of thirteen inches as at the sea-shore. It can dart in an instant from the dome of Chimborazo to the sultry coast of the Pacific. It has not the kingly port of the eagle, and is a cowardly robber: a true vulture, it prefers the relish of putrescence and the flavor of death. It makes no nest, but lays two eggs on a jutting ledge of some precipice, and fiercely defends them. The usual spread of wings is nine feet. It does not live in pairs like the eagle, but feeds in flocks like its loathsome relative, the buzzard. It is said to live forty days without food in captivity, but at liberty it is very voracious. The usual method of capture is to kill an old mare (better than horse, the natives say), and allow the bird to gorge himself, when he becomes so sluggish as to be easily lassoed. It is such a heavy sleeper, it is possible to take it from its roost. The evidences in favor of and against its acute smelling powers are singularly balanced. For reasons unknown, the condor does not range north of Darien, though it extends its empire through clouds and storms to the Straits of Magellan. In the Inca language it was called *cuntur*, and was anciently an object of worship. The condor, gallinazo, turkey-buzzard, and caracara eagle (says Darwin) "in their habits well supply the place (*Rupicola*) on the western side of the Andes (Esmeraldas) is of a richer, deeper color than the species on the eastern slope (Napo). In keeping with Mr. Gould's theory is the statement by Mr. Bates, that the most gaudy butterflies (the males) flutter in the sunshine.



of our carrion crows, magpies, and ravens—a tribe of birds widely distributed over the rest of the world, but entirely absent in South America.” The condor appears on the gold coins of New Granada and Chile. Of *Trochilidæ* there are hosts. The valley swarms with these “winged jewels” of varied hues, from the emerald green of Pichincha to the white of Chimborazo. They build long, purse-like nests by weaving together fine vegetable fibres and lichens, and thickly lining them with silk-cotton. In this delicate cradle, suspended from a branch, the female lays two eggs, which are hatched in about twelve days. The eggs are invariably white, with one exception, those of a species on the Upper Amazon, which are spotted. The young have much shorter bills than their parents. The humming-bird is exclusively American: the nearest form in the Old World is the nectarinia, or sunbird. Other birds most commonly seen in the valley are: *Cyanocitta turcosa* (Jay), *Pæcilothraupis atricrissa*, *Pheuticus chrysogaster*, *Chlorospingus superciliaris*, *Buthraupis chloronata*, *Tanagra Darwini*, *Dubusia selysia*, *Buarremon latinuchus*, and *B. assimilis*. The only geese in the valley are a few imported from Europe by Señor Aguirre, of Chillo, and these refuse to propagate.

Reptiles are so rare in the highlands the class can hardly be said to be represented. During a residence of nearly three months in the Quito Valley we saw but one snake.\* Nevertheless, we find the following sentence in such a respectable book as Bohn’s Hand-book of Modern Geography: “The inhabitants of Quito are dreadfully tormented by reptiles, which it is scarcely possible to keep out of the beds!” Of frogs there are not enough to get up a choir,

\* *Herpetodryas carinatus*, which we observed also at Guayaquil and on the Marañon. We procured two or three species from the natives, and several new forms from Pallatanga, on the west slope.



and of fishes there is but one solitary species, about a finger long.\* The entomology of Quito is also brief, much to the satisfaction of travelers from the insectiferous coast. Musquitoes and bedbugs do not seem to enjoy life at such an altitude, and jiggers† and flies are rare. Fleas, however, have the hardihood to exist and bite in the summer months, and if you attend an Indian fair you will be likely to feel something "gently o'er you creeping." But fleas and lice are the only blood-thirsty animals, so that the great Valley of Quito is an almost painless paradise. Of beetles and butterflies there are a few species, the latter belonging for the most part to the familiar North American genera *Pyrameis* and *Colias*. At Vinces, on the coast, we found the pretty brown butterfly, *Anartia Jatrophae*, which ranges from Texas to Brazil. A light-colored coleopter is eaten roasted by the inhabitants. The cochineal is raised in the southern part of the valley, particularly in Guananda, at the foot of Tunguragua, where the small, flat-leaved cactus (*Opuntia tuna*), on which the insect feeds, is extensively cultivated. The male is winged, but the female is stationary, fixed to the cactus, and is of a dark brown color. It takes seventy thousand to make a pound, which is sold in the valley for from sixty cents to \$3. The best cochineal comes from Teneriffe, where it was introduced from Honduras in 1835. The silk-worm is destined to work a revolution in the finances of Ecuador; Quito silk gained a gold medal at the Paris Exhibition. No bees are hived in the republic; the people seem to be content

\* *Antelopus lævis* at Ambato, and *A. longirostris*, a new species from Antisana Hacienda, were the only frogs noticed. The little fish is *Pimelodes cyclopum* (preñadilla of the Spaniards, *imba* of the Indians), the same that was thrown out in the eruptions of Imbabura and Caraguairazo.

† The jigger, chigoe, or nigua (*Pulex penetrans* of science) is a microscopic flea that buries itself under the skin and lays a myriad eggs; the result is a painful tumor. Jiggers are almost confined to sandy places.



with treacle. The Italian species would undoubtedly thrive here. The bees of Ecuador, like all the bees of the New World, are inferior to those of the Old World. Their cells are not perfectly hexagonal, and their stings are undeveloped. They are seldom seen feeding on flowers. Mollusca in the Quito Valley are not great in number or variety. They belong principally to the genera *Bulimus*, *Cyclostoma*, and *Helix*. The first is as characteristic of the Southern Continent as *Helix* of the North and *Achatina* of Africa.

From the animal creation we mount by a short step to the imbruted Indian. When and by whom the Andes were first peopled is a period of darkness that lies beyond the domain of history. But geology and archæology are combining to prove that Sorata and Chimborazo have looked down upon a civilization far more ancient than that of the Incas, and perhaps coeval with the flint-flakes of Cornwall, and the shell-mounds of Denmark. On the shores of Lake Titicaca are extensive ruins which antedate the advent of Manco Capac, and may be as venerable as the lake-dwellings of Geneva. Wilson has traced six terraces in going up from the sea through the province of Esmeraldas toward Quito; and underneath the living forest, which is older than the Spanish invasion, many gold, copper, and stone vestiges of a lost population were found. In all cases these relics are situated below high-tide mark, in a bed of marine sediment, from which he infers that this part of the country formerly stood higher above the sea. If this be true, vast must be the antiquity of these remains, for the upheaval and subsidence of the coast is exceedingly slow.

Philology can aid us little in determining the relations of the primeval Quitonians, for their language is nearly obscured by changes introduced by the Caras, and afterward by the Incas, who decreed that the Quichua, the lan-



guage of elegance and fashion three hundred years ago, should be the universal tongue throughout the empire.\* Quichua is to-day spoken from the equator to 28° S. (except by the Aymará people), or by nearly a million and a half. We found it used, corrupted, however, by Spanish, at the mouth of the Napo. There are five dialects, of which the purest is spoken in Cuzco, and the most impure in Quito. The Indians of the northern valley are descendants of the ancient Quitus, modified by Cara and Peruvian blood. They have changed little since the invasion of Pizarro. They remember their glory under the Incas, and when they steal any thing from a white man, they say they are not guilty of theft, as they are only taking what originally belonged to them. Some see in their sacred care of Incarial relics a lingering hope to regain their political life. We noticed that the pure mountaineers, without a trace of Spanish adulteration, wore a black poncho underneath, and we were informed by one well acquainted with their customs that this was in mourning for the Inca. We attended an Indian masquerade dance at Machachi, which seemed to have an historical meaning. It was performed in full view of that romantic mountain which bears the name of the last captain of Atahualpa. There is a tradition that after the death of his chief, Rumiñagui burned the capital, and, retiring with his followers to this cordillera, threw himself from the precipice. The masquerade at Machachi was evidently intended to keep alive the mem-

\* "History (says Prescott) furnishes few examples of more absolute authority than such a revolution in the language of an empire at the bidding of a master." The pronunciation of Quichua requires a harsh, explosive utterance. Gibbon says the sound of it to him resembled Welsh or Irish; that of Aymará, English. The letters *b*, *d*, *f*, *g*, and *o* are wanting in the ancient tongue of Quito; *p* was afterward changed to *b*, *t* to *d*, *v* to *f*, *c* to *g*, and *u* to *o*; thus Chim-pu-razu is now Chimborazo. A few words bear a striking analogy to corresponding Sanscrit words; as *Ynti*, the Inca for sun, and *Indra*, the Hindoo god of the heavens.



ory of the Incas. Three Indians, fantastically adorned with embroidered garments, plumed head-dresses, and gold and silver tinsel, representing Atahualpa and his generals, danced to music of the rudest kind, one individual pounding on a drum and blowing on a pipe at the same time. Before them went three clowns, or *diablos*, with masks, fit caricatures of the Spaniards. Like all other Indian feasts, this ended in getting gradually and completely drunk. During the ceremony a troop of horsemen, gayly dressed, and headed by one in regimentals with a cocked hat, galloped twice around the Plaza, throwing oranges at the people; after which there was a bull-bait.

The features of the Quichuans have a peculiar cast, which resembles, in D'Orbigny's opinion, no other American but the Mexican, and some ethnologists trace a striking similarity to the natives of Van Diemen's Land. They have an oblong head (longitudinally), somewhat compressed at the sides and occiput; short and very slightly arched forehead; prominent, long, aquiline nose, with large nostrils; large mouth, but not thick lips; beautiful enduring teeth; short chin, but not receding; cheek-bones not prominent; eyes horizontal, and never large; eyebrows long; thick, straight, coarse, yet soft jet black hair; little or no beard; a long, broad, deep, highly-arched chest; small hands and feet; short stature, seldom reaching five feet, and the women still shorter; a mulatto color (olive-brown says D'Orbigny, bronze says Humboldt), and a sad, serious expression. Their broad chests and square shoulders remind one of the gorilla; but we find that, unlike the anthropoid ape, they have very weak arms; their strength lies in their backs and legs. They have shrewdness and penetration, but lack independence and force. We never heard one sing.\* Always submissive to your face, taking

\* Their favorite musical instrument is the *rondador*, a number of reeds of



off his hat as he passes, and muttering, "Blessed be the altar of God," he is nevertheless very slow to perform. Soured by long ill treatment, he will hardly do any thing unless he is compelled. And he will do nothing well unless he is treated as a slave. Treat him kindly, and you make him a thief; whip him, and he will rise up to thank you and be your humble servant. A certain curate could never trust his Indian to carry important letters until he had given him twenty-five lashes. Servile and timid, superstitious and indolent, the Quichuans have not half the spirit of our North American Indians. It has passed into a proverb that "the Indian lives without shame, eats without repugnance, and dies without fear." Abject as they are, however, they are not wholly without wit. By a secret telegraph system, they will communicate between Quito and Riobamba in one hour. When there was a battle in Pasto, the Indians of Riobamba knew of it two hours after, though eighty leagues distant.

The civilization of South America three centuries ago was nearly confined to this Andean family, though they had attained only to the bronze period. In the milder character of their ancient religion and gentleness of disposition they are strongly distinguished from the nations that encircled the vale of Anahuac, the centre of civilization on the northern continent. But little of this former glory is now apparent. The Incas reached an astronomical knowledge which astonished the Spaniards, but the Quichuans of to-day count vaguely by moons and rains. Great is the contrast between the architecture of this century and that in the days of Huayna-Capac. There are few Incarial relics, however, in the Valley of Quito, for the Incas ruled there only half a century. The chief

different lengths tied in a row. The "plaintive national songs" which Markham heard at Cuzco are not sung in Ecuador.



monuments are the tolas or mounds (mostly at Cuenca), containing earthen vessels and bronze hatchets and earrings; the *Inga-pirreca*, or oval fortress, and the *Intihu-aicu*, or temple of the sun, near Cañar; the *Inga-chungana*, a massive stone resembling a sofa, where the Inca reposed to enjoy the delightful prospect over the Valley of Gulán; and remnants of causeways and roads.

## H



## CHAPTER VII.

Geological History of South America.—Rise of the Andes.—Creation of the Amazon.—Characteristic Features of the Continent.—Andean Chain.—The Equatorial Volcanoes.

THREE cycles ago an island rose from the sea where now expands the vast continent of South America. It was the culminating point of the highlands of Guiana. For ages this granite peak was the sole representative of dry land in our hemisphere south of the Canada hills. In process of time, a cluster of islands rose above the thermal waters. They were the small beginnings of the future mountains of Brazil, holding in their laps the diamonds which now sparkle in the crown of Dom Pedro II. Long protracted eons elapsed without adding a page to the geology of South America. The Creator seems to have been busy elsewhere. Decorating the north with the gorgeous flora of the carboniferous period, till, in the language of Hugh Miller, "to distant planets our earth must have shone with a green and delicate ray," he rubbed the picture out, and ushered in the hideous reptilian age, when monstrous saurians, footed, paddled, and winged, were the lords of this lower world. All the great mountain chains were at this time slumbering beneath the ocean. The city of New York was sure of its site; but huge dinotheria wallowed in the mire where now stand the palaces of Paris, London, and Vienna.

At length the morning breaks upon the last day of creation, and the fiat goes forth that the proud waves of the Pacific, which have so long washed the table-lands of Guiana and Brazil, shall be stayed. Far away toward the



setting sun the white surf beats in long lines of foam against a low, winding archipelago—the western outline of the coming continent. Fierce is the fight for the mastery between sea and land, between the denuding power of the waves and the volcanic forces underneath. But slowly—very slowly, yet surely—rises the long chain of islands by a double process; the submarine crust of the earth is cooling, and the rocks are folded up as it shrivels, while the molten material within, pressed out through the crevices, overflows and helps to build up the sea-defiant wall. A man's life would be too short to count even the centuries consumed in this operation. The coast of Peru has risen eighty feet since it felt the tread of Pizarro: supposing the Andes to have risen at this rate uniformly and without interruption, seventy thousand years must have elapsed before they reached their present altitude. But when we consider that, in fact, it was an intermittent movement—alternate upheaval and subsidence—we must add an unknown number of millennia.

Three times the Andes sank hundreds of feet beneath the ocean level, and again were slowly brought up to their present height. The suns of uncounted ages have risen and set upon these sculptured forms, though geologically recent, casting the same line of shadows century after century. A long succession of brute races roamed over the mountains and plains of South America, and died out ages ere man was created. In those pre-Adamite times, long before the Incas ruled, the mastodon and megatherium, the horse and the tapir, dwelt in the high valley of Quito; yet all these passed away before the arrival of the aborigines: the wild horses now feeding on the pampas of Buenos Ayres were imported from Europe three hundred and thirty-three years ago.\*

\* At Paita, the most western point of South America, there is a raised



And now the Andes\* stand complete in their present gigantic proportions, one of the grandest and most symmetrical mountain chains in the world. Starting from the Land of Fire, it stretches northward and mounts upward until it enters the Isthmus of Panama, where it bows gracefully to either ocean, but soon resumes, under another name, its former majesty, and loses its magnificence only where the trappers chase the fur-bearing animals over the Arctic plains. Nowhere else does Nature present such a continuous and lofty chain of mountains, unbroken for eight thousand miles, save where it is rent asunder by the Magellanic Straits, and proudly tossing up a thousand pinnales into the region of eternal snow. Nowhere in the Old World do we see a single well-defined mountain chain, only a broad belt of mountainous country traversing the heart of the continent.

The moment the Andes arose, the great continental valley beach three hundred feet high. The basal slate and sandstone rocks, dipping S. of E., are covered by conglomerate, sand, and a gypseous formation, containing shells of living species. Additional to those described by D'Orbigny we found here *Cerithium læviuscula*, *Ostrea gallus*, and *Ampullina Ortoni*, as determined by W. M. Gabb, Esq., of Philadelphia. Darwin found shells in Chile 1300 feet above the sea, covered with marine mud. President Loomis, of Lewisburg University, Pa., informs the writer that in 1853, after nearly a day's ride from Iquique, he came to a former sea-beach. "It furnished abundant specimens of *Patellæ* and other shells, still perfect, and identical with others that I had that morning obtained at Iquique with the living animal inhabiting them." This beach is elevated 2500 feet above the Pacific. The same observer says that near Potosi there is one uninterrupted mass of lava, having a columnar structure, not less than one hundred miles in length, fifty miles wide, and eight hundred feet thick. It overlies a bed of saliferous sandstone which has been worked for salt. Fifty feet within a mine, and in the undisturbed rock which forms its roof, the doctor found fragments of dicotyledonous trees with the bark on, undecomposed, uncharred, and fibrous.

\* The name Andes is often derived from *anta*, an old Peruvian word signifying metal. But Humboldt says: "There are no means of interpreting it by connecting it with any signification or idea; if such connection exist, it is buried in the obscurity of the past." According to Col. Tod, the northern Hindoos apply the name Andes to the Himalayan Mountains.



ley of the Amazon was sketched out and moulded in its lap. The tidal waves of the Atlantic were dashing against the Cordilleras, and a legion of rivulets were busily plowing up the sides into deep ravines; the sediment produced by this incessant wear and tear was carried eastward, and spread out stratum by stratum, till the shallow sea between the Andes and the islands of Guiana and Brazil was filled up with sand and clay. Huge glaciers (thinks Agassiz), afterward descending, moved over the inclined plane, and ground the loose rock to powder.\* Eddies and currents, throwing up sand-banks as they do now, gradually defined the limits of the tributary streams, and directed them into one main trunk, which worked for itself a wide, deep bed, capable of containing its accumulated flood. Then and thus was created the Amazon.

In South America Nature has framed her works on a gigantic scale. Where else combined do we see such a series of towering mountains, such a volume of river-water, and such wide-spreading plains? We have no proper conception of Andine grandeur till we learn that the top of the tallest mountain in North America is nearly a mile beneath the untrodden dome of Chimborazo; nor any just view of the vast dimensions of the Amazonian Valley till we find that all the United States could be packed in it without touching its boundaries; nor any adequate idea of the Amazon itself till we ascertain that it drains a million square miles more than the Mississippi.

South America is a triangular continent, with its axis, the Andes, not central, as in Europe, but lying on its extreme western edge, and in harmony with the well-known law that the highest mountains and the grandest volcanoes face the broadest ocean. The highlands of Brazil and

\* On this point see Chapter XVII.



Guiana have neither volcanic nor snow-clad peaks.\* Like all the dry land which first appeared, these primitive mountains on the Atlantic border trend east and west. The result of this position is a triple river system—the Orinoco, Amazon, and La Plata, draining three immense plains—the llanos of Venezuela, the sylvas of Brazil, and the pampas of the Argentine Republic. The continuity and extent of these vast depressions are more remarkable even than the height and length of the mountain chains.†

Such are the characteristic features of South America; they are not repeated in any other continent.‡ Not one feature could be changed without destroying those peculiarities of soil and climate which so remarkably distinguish South America. Its position on the equator places it in the path of the vapory trade winds, which continually sweep over it westward till they strike the Andes, which, like a great condenser, roll a thousand streams eastward again to feed the mighty Amazon. So effectual is that barrier, not a drop of moisture passes it, and the trade wind is not felt again on the Pacific till you are one hundred

\* “The interior plateau of Brazil (says Dr. Lund) is composed of horizontal strata of the transition period, which are nowhere covered with the secondary or tertiary formations.” The highest point in Brazil is 5755 feet. Darwin speaks of “some ancient submarine volcanic rocks (in the province of La Plata) worth mentioning, from their rarity on this eastern side of the continent.” With the exception of the coast of Venezuela, the eastern system is little exposed to earthquakes.

† These three plains constitute four fifths of all South America east of the Andes. The west slope of the Ecuadorian Andes is about 275 feet per mile; on the east it is 125 feet.

‡ There is, however, a striking coincidence between the mountain and river systems of the northern and southern continents of this hemisphere. Thus,

The Andes represent the Rocky Mountains.

“ Highland of Guiana represent the Canadian Mountains.

“ “ Brazil “ Appalachian “

“ Amazon “ Saskatchewan.

“ La Plata “ Mississippi.

“ Orinoco “ Mackenzie.



and fifty miles from the coast. Were the Andes on the Atlantic side, South America would be turned into a vast Sahara. As it is, the interest which attaches to this continent, save a few relics of the Incas, is exclusively that of pure nature. Nowhere does Nature affect us more deeply with the feeling of her grandeur; nowhere does she exhibit wilder freaks or more startling contrasts; nowhere do we find such a theatre for the free development of vegetable and animal life.

The long and lofty chain of the Andes is certainly one of the grandest results of the plications and uplifts of the earth's crust. While the waves of the Pacific, from Panama to Patagonia, submissively kiss the feet of the Andes, and the showers that swell the Amazon fall within sight of the mariner on that peaceful ocean, the Rocky Mountains are situated five hundred miles from the sea. The space west of the Andes does not contain 20,000 square leagues, while the country east of it equals 424,600. While the compact Andes have an average width of only sixty miles,\* the straggling mountain system beyond the Mississippi has the breadth of the Empire State; but the mean elevation of the latter would scarcely reach the bottom of the Quito Valley. The mountains of Asia may surpass the Cordilleras in height, but, situated beyond the tropics, and destitute of volcanoes, they do not present that inexhaustible variety of phenomena which characterizes the latter. The outbursts of porphyry and trachytic domes, so characteristic of the high crests of the Cordilleras, impart a physiognomy quite distinct from that presented by the mountains of Europe. The Andes offer, in the least space, the greatest possible variety of impressions.† There is near Huanca, Peru,

\* The width of the chain south of the equator varies with that of the continent.

† "No mountains which I have seen in Hungary, Saxony, or the Pyrenees



a coal-bed lifted up to the enormous height of 14,700 feet, and on the side of Chimborazo there is a salt spring 13,000 feet above the sea. Marine shells have not been found in Europe above the summit of the Pyrenees, or 11,700 feet; but the Andes can show some a thousand feet higher. A strange sight, to see shells once crawling on the bottom of the ocean now resting at an elevation twice the height of Mount Washington!

Beneath the Southern Cross, out of a sea perpetually swept by fearful gales, rise the rocky hills of Terra del Fuego. It is the starting-point of that granite chain which winds around the earth in a majestic curve, first northwesterly to the Arctic Sea, thence by the Aleutian and Japanese Isles to Asia, crossing the Old World southwesterly from China to South Africa.

Skirting the bleak shores of Patagonia in a single narrow sierra, the Andes enter Chile, rising higher and higher till they culminate in the gigantic porphyritic peak of Aconcagua. At the boundary-line of Bolivia, the chain, which has so far followed a precise meridional direction, turns to the northwest, and, at the same time, separates into two Cordilleras, inclosing the great table-land of Desaguadero. This wonderful valley, the Thibet of the New World, has four times the area of New York State, and five times the elevation of the Catskill Mountain House. At one end of the valley, perched above the clouds, is silvery Potosí, the highest city in the world; at the other stands the once golden capital of Cuzco. Between them is Lake Titicaca\*

are as irregular as the Andes, or broken into such alternate substances, manifesting such prodigious revolutions of nature."—*Helms*. "More sublime than the Alps by their *ensemble*, the Andes lack those curious and charming details of which Nature has been so lavish in the old continent."—*Holinski*.

\* This lake is the largest fresh-water accumulation in South America. It has diminished within the historic period. Its surface is 12,795 feet above the Pacific, or higher than the highest peaks of the Pyrenees.



(probably an ancient crater), within which is an island celebrated as the cradle of the strange empire of Peru, which, though crushed by Pizarro in its budding civilization, ranks as the most extraordinary and extensive empire in the annals of American history. The Cordillera, of which Sahama, Sorata, and Illimani are the pinnacles, so completely inclose this high valley that not a drop of water can escape except by evaporation. At the silver mines of Pasco the Andes throw off a third cordillera, and with this triple arrangement and a lower altitude, enter the republic of Ecuador. There they resume the double line, and surpass their former magnificence. Twenty volcanoes, presided over by the princely Chimborazo and Cotopaxi, rise out of a sublime congregation of mountains surrounding the famous valley of Quito. In New Granada there is a final and unique display of Andine grandeur: the Cordilleras combine just above the equator into one dizzy ridge, and then spread out like a fan, or, rather, like the graceful branches of the palm. One sierra bends to the east, holding in its lap the city of Bogota, and, rolling off a thousand streams to swell the Orinoco, terminates in the beautiful mountains of Caracas; the central range culminates in the volcanic Tolima,\* but is soon lost in the Caribbean Sea; the western chain turns to the left, humbling itself as it threads the narrow isthmus, and expands into the level table-land of Mexico. You may cross Mexico from ocean to ocean in a carriage, but no wheeled vehicle ever crossed South America.

We will now speak more particularly of the Andes of the equator. The mountain chain is built up of granite, gneissoid, and schistose rocks, often in vertical position, and

\* This is the loftiest summit of the Andes in the northern hemisphere, being 18,200 feet. It is also remarkable for being situated farther from the sea (120 miles) than any other active volcano.

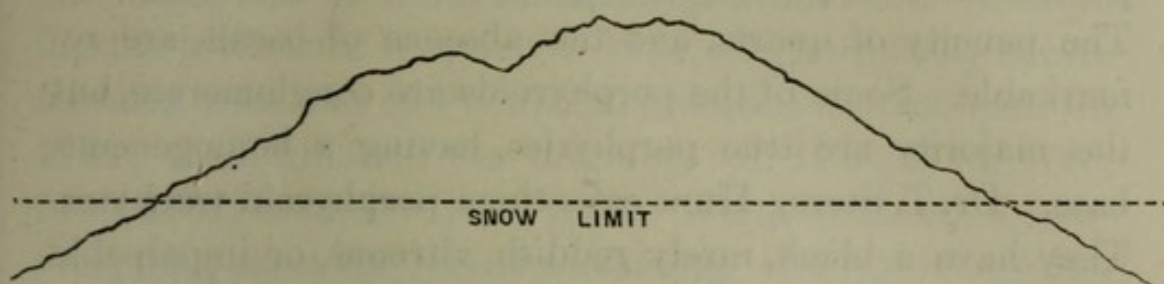


capped with trachyte and porphyry.\* Large masses of *solid* rock are rarely seen; every thing is cracked, calcined, or triturated. While in Bolivia the Eastern Cordillera shows a succession of sharp, ragged peaks, in contrast with the conical summits of the Cordillera of the coast, there is no such distinction in the Andes of the equator.† The Eastern Cordillera has a greater mean height, and it displays more volcanic activity. Twenty volcanic mountains surround the valley, of which twelve are in the oriental chain. Three of the twenty are now active (Cotopaxi, Sangai, and Pichincha), and five others are known to have erupted since the Conquest (Chiles, Imbabura, Guamani, Tunguragua, and Quirotoa). The truncated cone of Cotopaxi, the jagged, Alpine crest of ruined Altar, and the dome of Chimborazo, are the representative forms of the volcanic summits. The extinct volcanoes usually have double domes or peaks, while the active peaks are slender cones. Antisana and Cayambi are fashioned after Chimborazo, though the latter is table-topped rather than convex; Caraguairazo, Quirotoa, Ilizniza, Sincholagua, Rumiñagui, and Corazon, resemble Altar; Tunguragua, Sangai, Llanganati, Cotocachi, Chiles, and Imbabura, imitate Cotopaxi; Pichincha, Atacatzo, and Guamani are irregular. The Ecuadorian volcanoes have rarely ejected liquid lava, but chiefly water, mud, ashes, and fragments of trachyte and porphyry. Cotopaxi alone produces

\* "As a general rule, whenever the mass of mountains rises much above the limit of perpetual snow, the primitive rocks disappear, and the summits are trachyte or trappean porphyry."—*Humboldt*. In general, "the great Cordilleras are formed of innumerable varieties of granites, gneiss, schists, hornblende, chloritic slates, porphyries, etc., and these rocks alternate with each other in meridional bands, which in the ridges frequently present the appearance of a radiated or fan-shaped structure, and under the plains are more or less vertical."—*Evan Hopkins, F.G.S.*

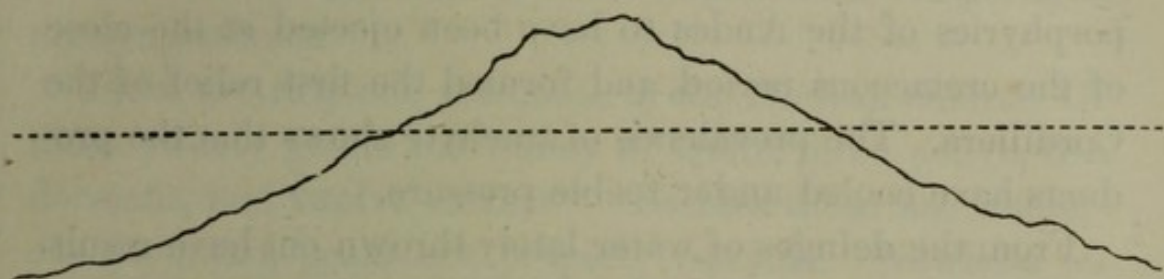
† Von Tschudi makes the incorrect statement that "throughout the whole extent of South America there is not a single instance of the Western Cordillera being intersected by a river." Witness the Esmeraldas.





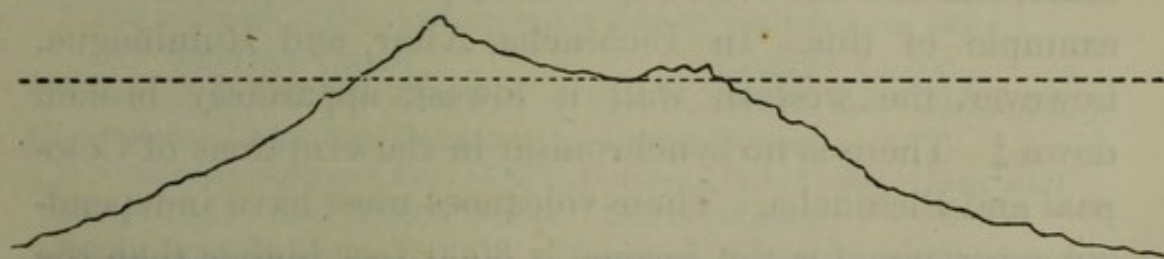
10,000 ft.

Chimborazo.



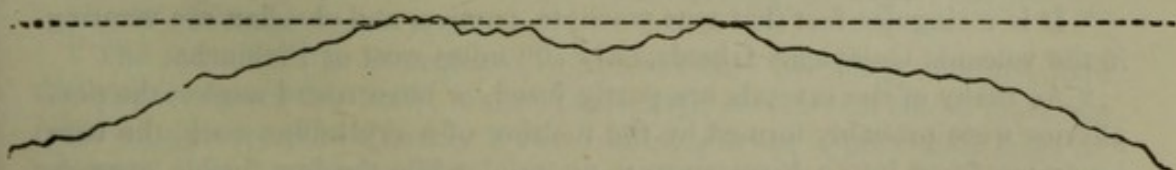
10,000 ft.

Cotopaxi.



10,000 ft.

Caraguairazo.



10,000 ft.

Pichincha.



pure, foam-like pumice, and glossy, translucent obsidian.\* The paucity of quartz, and the absence of basalt, are remarkable. Some of the porphyroids are conglomerate, but the majority are true porphyries, having a homogeneous base. Dr. T. Sterry Hunt calls them porphyroid trachytes. They have a black, rarely reddish, vitreous, or impalpable base, approaching obsidian, with a specific gravity of 2.59 in pure specimens, and holding crystals or crystalline grains of glassy feldspar, and sometimes of pyroxene and hematite. They differ from the Old World porphyries in containing no quartz, and seldom mica.† D'Orbigny considers the porphyries of the Andes to have been ejected at the close of the cretaceous period, and formed the first relief of the Cordillera. The prevalence of trachyte shows that the products have cooled under feeble pressure.

From the deluges of water lately thrown out have resulted deep furrows in the sides; and from the prevalence of the east wind, which is always met by the traveler on the crest of either Cordillera, there is a greater accumulation of ashes, and less snow on the west slope. Cotopaxi is a fine example of this. In Pichincha, Altar, and Rumiñagua, however, the western wall is lowest, apparently broken down.‡ There is no synchronism in the eruptions of Cotopaxi and Pichincha. These volcanoes must have independent reservoirs, for the former is 3000 feet higher than the latter, and only thirty miles distant. The reputed eruptions of Pichincha are dated 1534, 1539, 1566, 1575, 1588, and 1660; that of 1534 resting on the assertions of Checa,

\* It is a singular fact that true trachyte, pumice, and obsidian are wanting in the volcanic Galápagos Islands, only 700 miles west of Pichincha.

† As many of the crystals are partly fused, or have round angles, the porphyries were probably formed by the melting of a crystalline rock, the base becoming fused into a homogeneous material, while the less fusible crystals remain imbedded.—*Dr. Hunt.*

‡ In the Galápagos volcanoes the south wall is lowest, while the craters in Mexico and Sandwich Islands are lowest on the northeast.



Garcilazo, and Herrera, indorsed by Humboldt. Excepting the traditional eruption in 1534, which probably is confounded with that of Pichincha, Cotopaxi did not open till 1742; then followed the eruptions of 1743, 1744, 1746, 1766, 1768, 1803, 1851, and 1855. We must mention, however, that, since the recent awakening of Pichincha, Cotopaxi has been unusually silent. There is also a remarkable coincidence (which may not be wholly accidental) in the renewed activity of Pichincha, and the great eruption of Mauna Loa, both occurring in March, 1868. It is generally believed by the natives that Cotopaxi and Tunguragua are sympathetic.

There are fifty-one volcanoes in the Andean chain. Of these, twenty girdle the Valley of Quito, three active, five dormant, and twelve extinct.\* Besides these are numerous mountain peaks not properly volcanic. Nowhere on the face of the earth is there such a grand assemblage of mountains. Twenty-two summits are covered with perpetual snow, and fifty are over ten thousand feet high.† All

\* The altitudes of the most important Ecuadorian volcanoes are :

WESTERN CHAIN.	EASTERN CHAIN.
<i>Chimborazo</i> , 21,420 feet (Humboldt).	<i>Cayambi</i> , 19,648 feet (Humboldt);
<i>Caraguairazo</i> , 19,183 feet (Humboldt).	19,358 (Wisse).
It is variously estimated from 15,673	<i>Antisana</i> , 19,148 feet (Humboldt);
feet to 19,720 feet; 18,000 feet is	19,279 (Wisse).
not far from the truth.	<i>Cotopaxi</i> , 18,880 feet (Humboldt),
<i>Iliniza</i> , 17,370 feet (Wisse); 16,300	18,862 (Wisse).
(Hall).	<i>Altar</i> , 17,400 feet.
<i>Cotocachi</i> , 16,440 feet (Humboldt);	<i>Sangai</i> , 17,120 feet (Wisse).
16,409 (Wisse).	<i>Tunguragua</i> , 16,579 feet (Humboldt).
<i>Pichincha</i> , 15,922 feet (Humboldt);	<i>Sincholagua</i> , 16,434 feet (Humboldt).
15,827 (Orton).	

† The snow-limit at the equator is 15,800 feet. No living creature, save the condor, passes this limit; naked rocks, fogs, and eternal snows mark the reign of uninterrupted solitude. The following is the approximate limit of perpetual snow in different latitudes :

0°.....15,800 feet.	40°.....8,300 feet.
27°.....13,800 “	54°.....3,700 “
33°.....12,780 “	70°.....3,300 “



of these would be visible from a single stand-point—the summit of Cotopaxi. The lofty peaks shoot up with so much method as almost to provoke the theory that the Incas, in the zenith of their power, planted them as signal monuments along the royal road to Cuzco. The eastern series is called the *Cordillera real*, because along its flank are the remnants of the splendid highway which once connected Quito and the Peruvian capital.\* It can also boast of such tremendous volcanoes as Cotopaxi and Sangai. The Western Cordillera contains but one active volcano; but then it can point to peerless Chimborazo and the deep crater of Pichincha. These twenty volcanic mountains rise within a space only two hundred miles long and thirty miles wide. It makes one tremble to think of the awful crevice over which they are placed.†

The limit appears to descend more rapidly going south of the equator than in going north.

\* We traveled over a portion of this ancient road in going from Riobamba to Cajabamba. It is well paved with cut blocks of dark porphyry. It is not graded, but partakes of the irregularity of the country. Designed, not for carriages, but for troops and llamas, there are steps when the ascent is steep.

† Grand as the Andes are, how insignificant in a general view! How slightly they cause our globe to differ from a perfect sphere! Cotopaxi constitutes only  $\frac{1}{1100}$  of the earth's radius; and on a globe six feet in diameter, Chimborazo would be represented by a grain of sand less than  $\frac{1}{20}$  of an inch in thickness.



## CHAPTER VIII.

The Volcanoes of Ecuador.—Western Cordillera.—Chimborazo.—Iliniza.—Corazon.—Pichincha.—Descent into its Crater.

COMING up from Peru through the cinchona forests of Loja, and over the barren hills of Assuay, the traveler reaches Riobamba, seated on the threshold of magnificence—like Damascus, an oasis in a sandy plain, but, unlike the Queen of the East, surrounded with a splendid retinue of snowy peaks that look like icebergs floating in a sea of clouds.

On our left is the most sublime spectacle in the New World. It is a majestic pile of snow, its clear outline on the deep blue sky describing the profile of a lion in repose. At noon the vertical sun, and the profusion of light reflected from the glittering surface, will not allow a shadow to be cast on any part, so that you can easily fancy the figure is cut out of a mountain of spotless marble. This is Chimborazo—yet not the whole of it—you see but a third of the great giant. His feet are as eternally green as his head is everlastingly white; but they are far away beneath the bananas and cocoa-palms of the Pacific coast.

Rousseau was disappointed when he first saw the sea; and the first glimpse of Niagara often fails to meet one's expectations. But Chimborazo is sure of a worshiper the moment its overwhelming grandeur breaks upon the traveler. You feel that you are in the presence-chamber of the monarch of the Andes. There is sublimity in his kingly look, of which the ocean might be proud.

"All that expands the spirit, yet appals,  
Gathers around this summit, as if to show  
How earth may pierce to heaven, yet leave vain man below."



Well do we remember our disappointment as we stood before that wonder of the world—St. Peter's. We mounted the pyramid of steps and looked up, but were not overcome by the magnificence. We read in our guide-book that the edifice covers eight acres, and to the tip-top of the cross is almost five hundred feet; that it took three hundred and fifty years and twelve successive artists to finish it, and an expenditure of \$50,000,000, and now costs \$30,000 per annum to keep it in repair; still we did not appreciate its greatness. We pushed aside the curtain and walked in—walked a day's journey across the transept and up and down the everlasting nave, and yet continued heterodox. We tried hard to believe it was very vast and sublime, and knew we ought to feel its grandeur, but somehow we did not. Then we sat down by the Holy of Holies, and there we were startled into a better judgment by the astounding fact that the Cathedral of St. Paul—the largest edifice in Great Britain—could stand upright, spire, dome, body, and all, inside of St. Peter's! that the letters of the inscription which run around the *base* of the dome, though apparently but an inch, are in reality six feet high! Then, for the first time, the scales fell from our eyes; the giant building began to grow; higher and higher still it rose, longer and deeper it expanded, yet in perfect proportions; the colossal structure, now a living temple, put on its beautiful garments and the robe of majesty. And that dome! the longer we looked at it the vaster it grew, till finally it seemed to be a temple not made with hands; the spacious canopy became the firmament; the mosaic figures of cherubim and seraphim were endowed with life; and as we fixed our eyes on the zenith where the Almighty is represented in glory, we thought we had the vision of Stephen. Long we gazed upward into this heaven of man's creation, and gazed again till we were lost in wonder.



But the traveler needs no such steps to lift him up to the grand conception of the divine Architect as he beholds the great white dome of Chimborazo. It looks lofty from the very first. Now and then an expanse of thin, sky-like vapor would cut the mountain in twain, and the dome, islanded in the deep blue of the upper regions, seemed to belong more to heaven than to earth. We knew that Chimborazo was more than twice the altitude of Etna. We could almost see the great Humboldt struggling up the mountain's side till he looked like a black speck moving over the mighty white, but giving up in despair four thousand feet below the summit. We see the intrepid Bolivar mounting still higher; but the hero of Spanish-American independence returns a defeated man. Last of all comes the philosophic Boussingault, and attains the prodigious elevation of nineteen thousand six hundred feet—the highest point reached by man without the aid of a balloon; but the dome remains unsullied by his foot. Yet none of these facts increase our admiration. The mountain has a tongue which speaks louder than all mathematical calculations.

There must be something singularly sublime about Chimborazo, for the spectator at Riobamba is already nine thousand feet high, and the mountain is not so elevated above him as Mont Blanc above the vale of Chamouni, when, in reality, that culminating point of Europe would not reach up even to the snow-limit of Chimborazo by two thousand feet.\* It is only while sailing on the Pacific that one sees Chimborazo in its complete proportions. Its very magni-

\* But Chimborazo is steeper than the Alp-king; and steepness is a quality more quickly appreciated than mere massiveness. "Mont Blanc (says a writer in *Frazer's Magazine*) is scarcely admired, because he is built with a certain regard to stability; but the apparently reckless architecture of the Matterhorn brings the traveler fairly on his knees, with a respect akin to that felt for the leaning tower of Pisa, or the soaring pinnacles of Antwerp."



tude diminishes the impression of awe and wonder, for the Andes on which it rests are heaved to such a vast altitude above the sea, that the relative elevation of its summit becomes reduced by comparison with the surrounding mountains. Its altitude is 21,420 feet, or forty-five times the height of Strasburg Cathedral; or, to state it otherwise, the fall of one pound from the top of Chimborazo would raise the temperature of water  $30^{\circ}$ . One fourth of this is perpetually covered with snow, so that its ancient name, Chimpurazu—the mountain of snow—is very appropriate.\* It is a stirring thought that this mountain, now mantled with snow, once gleamed with volcanic fires. There is a hot spring on the north side, and an immense amount of débris covers the slope below the snow-limit, consisting chiefly of fine-grained, iron-stained trachyte and coarse porphyroid gray trachyte; very rarely a dark vitreous trachyte. Chimborazo is very likely not a solid mountain: trachytic volcanoes are supposed to be full of cavities. Bouguer found it made the plumb-line deviate  $7''$  or  $8''$ .

The valleys which furrow the flank of Chimborazo are in keeping with its colossal size. Narrower, but deeper than those of the Alps, the mind swoons and sinks in the effort to comprehend their grim majesty. The mountain appears to have been broken to pieces like so much thin crust, and the strata thrown on their vertical edges, revealing deep, dark chasms, that seem to lead to the confines of the lower world. The deepest valley in Europe, that of the Ordesa in the Pyrenees, is 3200 feet deep; but here are rents in the side of Chimborazo in which Vesuvius could be put away out of sight. As you look down into the fathomless fissure, you see a white fleck rising out of the gulf,

\* "White Mountain" is the natural and almost uniform name of the highest mountains in all countries; thus Himalaya, Mont Blanc, Hoemus, Sierra Nevada, Ben Nevis, Snowdon, Lebanon, White Mountains of United States, Chimborazo, and Illimani.



and expanding as it mounts, till the wings of the condor, fifteen feet in spread, glitter in the sun as the proud bird fearlessly wheels over the dizzy chasm, and then, ascending above your head, sails over the dome of Chimborazo.\* Could the condor speak, what a glowing description could he give of the landscape beneath him when his horizon is a thousand miles in diameter. If

“Twelve fair counties saw the blaze from Malvern’s lonely height,”

what must be the panorama from a height fifteen times higher!

Chimborazo was long supposed to be the tallest mountain on the globe, but its supremacy has been supplanted by Mount Everest in Asia, and Aconcagua in Chile.† In mountain gloom and glory, however, it still stands unrivalled. The Alps have the avalanche, “the thunderbolt of snow,” and the glaciers, those icy Niagaras so beautiful and grand. Here they are wanting.‡ The monarch of the Andes sits motionless in calm serenity and unbroken silence. The silence is absolute and actually oppressive. The road from Guayaquil to Quito crosses Chimborazo at the elevation of fourteen thousand feet. Save the rush

\* Humboldt’s statement that the condor flies higher than Chimborazo has been questioned; but we have seen numbers hovering at least a thousand feet above the summit of Pichincha. Baron Müller, in his ascent of Orizaba, saw two falcons flying at the height of full 18,000 feet; Dr. Hooker found crows and ravens on the Himalayas at 16,500 feet; and flocks of wild geese are said to fly over the peak of Kintschinghow, 22,756 feet.

† Mount Everest is 29,000 feet, and Aconcagua 23,200. Schlagintweit enumerates thirteen Himalayan summits over 25,000 feet, and forty-six above 20,000. We have little confidence in the estimates of the Bolivian mountains. Chimborazo has nearly the same latitude and altitude as the loftiest peak in Africa, Kilima Njaro.

‡ Humboldt ascribes the absence of glaciers in the Andes to the extreme steepness of the sides, and the excessive dryness of the air. Dr. Loomis, above quoted, mentions indications of glacial action—moraines, and polished and striated rocks—on the crest of the Cordillera, between Peru and Bolivia, lat. 21° S.



of the trade wind in the afternoon, as it sweeps over the Andes, not a sound is audible; not the hum of an insect, nor the chirp of a bird, nor the roar of the puma, nor the music of running waters. Mid-ocean is never so silent. You can almost hear the globe turning on its axis. There was a time when the monarch deigned to speak, and spoke with a voice of thunder, for the lava on its sides is an evidence of volcanic activity. But ever since the morning stars sang together over man's creation, Chimbo has sat in sullen silence, satisfied to look "from his throne of clouds o'er half the world." There is something very suggestive in this silence of Chimborazo. It was once full of noise and fury; it is now a *completed* mountain, and thunders no more. How silent was Jesus, a completed character! The reason we are so noisy is that we are so full of wants; we are *unfinished* characters. Had we perfect fullness of all things, the beatitude of being without a want, we should lapse into the eternal silence of God.

Chimborazo is a leader of a long train of ambitious crags and peaks; but as he who comes after the king must not expect to be noticed, we will only take a glimpse of these lesser lights as we pass up the Western Cordillera, and then down the Eastern.

The first after leaving the monarch is Caraguairazo. The Indians call it "the wife of Chimborazo." They are separated only by a very narrow valley. One hundred and seventy years ago the top of this mountain fell in, and torrents of mud flowed out containing multitudes of fishes. It is now over seventeen thousand feet high, and is one of the most Alpine of the Quitionian volcanoes, having sharp pinnacles instead of the smooth trachytic domes—usually double domes—so characteristic of the Andean summits. And now we pass in rapid succession numerous picturesque mountains, some of them extinct volcanoes, as Iliniza, pre-



senting two pyramidal peaks, the highest seventeen thousand feet above the sea, and Corazon, so named from its heart-shaped summit, till we reach Pichincha, whose smoking crater is only five miles distant in a straight line from the city of Quito, or eleven by the traveled route.

The crown of this mountain presents three groups of rocky peaks. The most westerly one is called Rucu-Pichincha, and alone manifests activity. To the northeast of Rucu is Guagua-Pichincha, a ruined flue of the same fiery furnace; and between the two is Cundur-guachana.\* Pichincha is the only volcano in Ecuador which has not a true cone-crater. Some violent eruption beyond the reach of history or tradition has formed an enormous funnel-shaped basin 2500 feet deep,† 1500 in diameter at the bottom, and expanding upward to a width of three fourths of a mile. It is the *deepest* crater on the globe. That of Kilauea is 600 feet; Orizaba, 500; Etna, 300; Hecla, 100. Vesuvius is a portable furnace in comparison. The abyss is girt with a ragged wall of dark trachyte, which rises on the inside at various angles between  $45^{\circ}$  and perpendicularity. As we know of but one American besides the members of our expedition (Mr. Farrand, a photographer) who has succeeded in entering the crater of this interesting volcano, we will give a brief sketch of our visit.

Leaving Quito in the afternoon by the old arched gateway at the foot of Panecillo, and crossing a spur of the mountain, we stopped for the night at the Jesuit hacienda, situated in the beautiful valley of Lloa, but nearly ruined by the earthquake of 1859. On the damp walls of this monastery, perched 10,268 feet above the ocean, we found several old paintings, among them a copy of the *Visitation*

\* Pichincha, in the Inca language, signifies "the boiling mountain;" Rucu means old; Guagua, young; and Cundur-guachana, the condor's nest.

† More accurately, 2527 feet; Wisse and Moreno made it 2460.



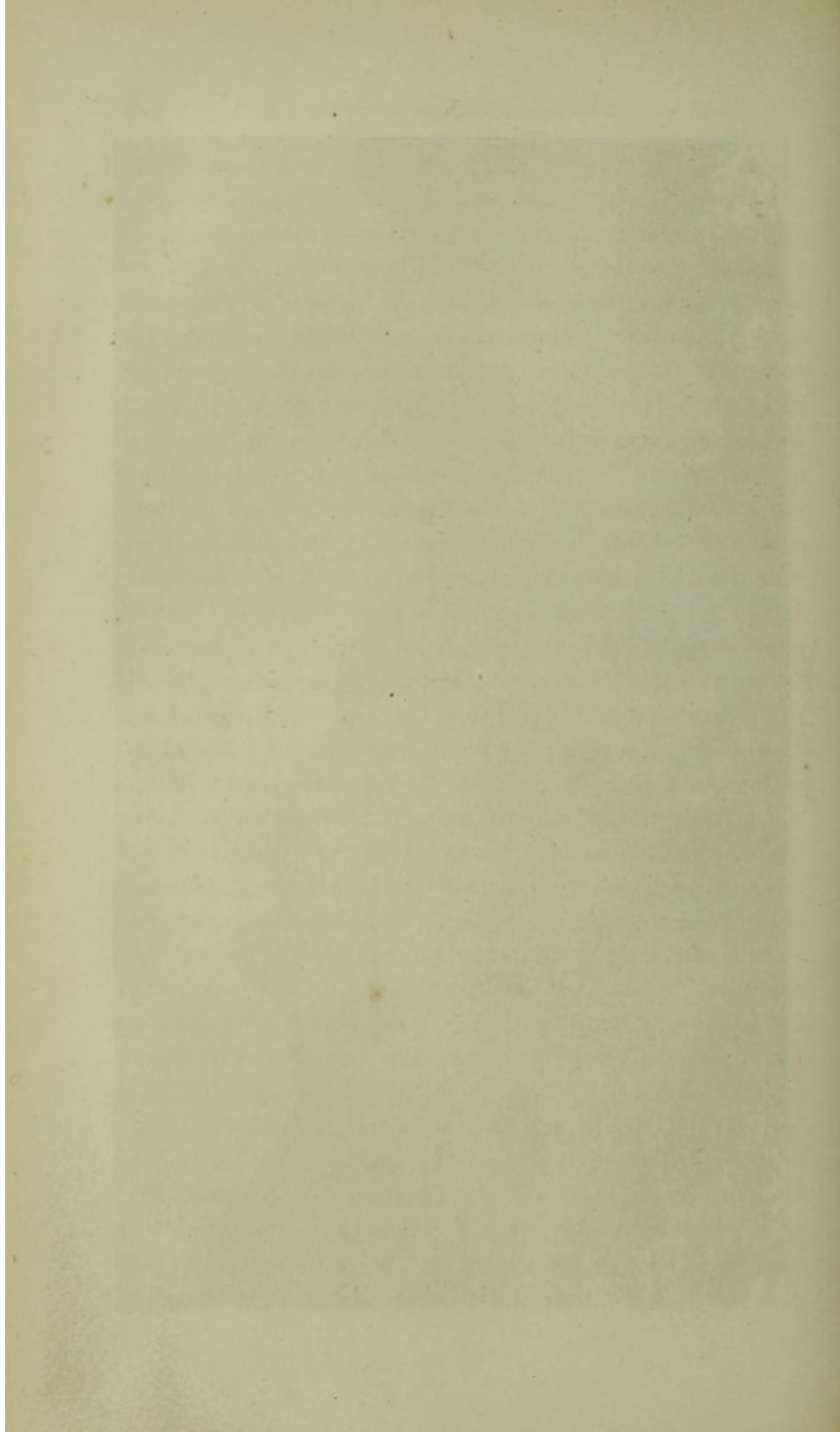
by Rubens. The sunset views in this heart of the Andes were surpassingly beautiful. Mounting our horses at break of day, and taking an Indian guide, we ascended rapidly, by a narrow and difficult path, through the forest that belts the volcano, up to the height of 12,000 feet, emerging gradually into a thicket of stunted bushes, and then entered the dreary paramo. Splendid was the view of the Eastern Cordillera. At least six dazzling white volcanoes were in sight just across the Valley of Quito, among them table-topped Cayambi, majestic Antisana, and princely Cotopaxi, whose tapering summit is a mile above the clouds. Toiling upward, we reached the base of the cone, where vegetation ceased entirely; and, tying our horses to some huge rocks that had fallen from the mural cliff above, started off on hands and feet for the crater. The cone is deeply covered with sand and cinders for about two hundred feet, and the sides are inclined at an angle of about  $35^{\circ}$ . At ten o'clock we reached the brim of the crater, and the great gulf burst suddenly into view. We can never forget the impression made upon us by the sight. We speak of many things here below as awful, but that word has its full meaning when carried to the top of Pichincha. There you see a frightful opening in the earth's crust nearly a mile in width and half a mile deep, and from the dark abyss comes rolling up a cloud of sulphurous vapors. Monte Somma in the time of Strabo was a miniature; but this crater is on the top of a mountain four times the height of the Italian volcano. Imagination finds it difficult to conceive a spectacle of more fearful grandeur or such solemn magnificence. It well accords with Milton's picture of the bottomless pit. The united effect of the silence and solitude of the place, the great depth of the cavity, the dark precipitous sides, and the column of smoke standing over an unseen crevice, was to us more impressive than thundering Cotopaxi or fiery





Crater of Pichincha.







Vesuvius. Humboldt, after standing on this same brink, exclaimed, "I have never beheld a grander or more remarkable picture than that presented by this volcano;" and La Condamine compared it to "the Chaos of the poets." Below us are the smouldering fires which may any moment spring forth into a conflagration; around us are black, ragged cliffs—fit boundary for this gateway to the infernal regions. They look as if they had just been dragged up from the central furnace of the earth. Life seems to have fled in terror from the vicinity; even lichens, the children of the bare rocks, refuse to clothe the scathed and beetling crags. For some moments, made mute by the dreadful sight, we stood like statues on the rim of the mighty caldron, with our eyes riveted on the abyss below, lost in contemplating that which can not be described. The panorama from this lofty summit is more pleasing, but equally sublime. Toward the rising sun is the long range of the Eastern Cordillera, hiding from our view the great valley of the Amazon. To right and left are the peaks of another procession of august mountains from Cotacachi to Chimborazo. We are surrounded by the great patriarchs of the Andes, and their speaker, Cotopaxi, ever and anon sends his muttering voice over the land. The view westward is like looking down from a balloon. Those parallel ridges of the mountain chain, dropping one behind the other, are the gigantic staircase by which the ice-crowned Chimborazo steps down to the sea. A white sea of clouds covers the peaceful Pacific and the lower parts of the coast. But the vapory ocean, curling into the ravines, beautifully represents little coves and bays, leaving islands and promontories like a true ocean on a broken shore. We seem raised above the earth, which lies like an opened map below us; we can look down on the upper surface of the clouds, and, were it night, down too upon the lightnings.



The crater of Pichincha has a sharp, serrated edge, which, happily for Quito, is broken down on the west side, so that in the next eruption the volcano will doubtless pour its contents into the wilds of Esmeraldas. The highest pinnacle is 15,827 feet; so that the mountain just enters the region of perpetual winter. Water boils at  $185^{\circ}$ . The summit is generally bare, though snow is always found in the clefts of the rocks. It is not compact or crystalline, but resembles a conglomerate of little hailstones.\* Out of the mingled snow and pumice-dust rise a few delicate flowers, particularly the violet *Sida Pichinchensis*, the same which we had observed on the side of Chimborazo. Think of gay flowers a thousand feet higher than the top of Mont Blanc!

The first to reach the brink of the crater were the French Academicians in 1742. Sixty years after, Humboldt stood on the summit. But it was not till 1844 that any one dared to enter the crater. This was accomplished by Garcia Moreno, now President of Ecuador, and Sebastian Wisse, a French engineer. Humboldt pronounced the bottom of the crater "inaccessible, from its great depth and precipitous descent." We found it accessible, but exceedingly perilous. The moment we prepared to descend

\* The snow on the top of Mont Blanc is like dry dust; in Lapland, in open places, it consists of hexagonal crystals, and is called by the inhabitants "sand-snow." The French and Spanish mathematicians, Bouguer, La Condamine, and Ulloa, in their story of ascending Pichincha, give a long and dreadful account of their sufferings from cold and rarefied air: "whilst eating, every one was obliged to keep his plate over a chafing-dish of coals, to prevent his food from freezing." The traveler nowadays finds only a chilling wind. This rise of temperature, coupled with the fact that La Condamine (1745), Humboldt (1802), Boussingault (1831), and Wisse (1863) give to Quito a decreasing altitude, inclines us to believe, with Boussingault, that the Andes are sinking. Since the activity of the volcano in 1868, the summit has been so warm that the snow has totally disappeared. Ice-cream has in consequence risen in price in Quito, as snow must be brought from Sincholagua, four days' journey.



our guide ran away. We went on without him, but when halfway down were stopped by a precipice.

On the 22d of October, 1867, we returned to Pichincha with another guide, and entered the crater by a different route. Manuel, our Indian, led us to the south side, and over the brink we went. We were not long in realizing the danger of the undertaking. Here the snow concealed an ugly fissure or covered a treacherous rock (for nearly all the rocks are crumbling); there we must cross a mass of loose sand moving like a glacier down the almost vertical side of the crater; and on every hand rocks were giving way, and, gathering momentum at each revolution, went thundering down, leaping over precipices, and jostling other rocks, which joined in the race, till they all struck the bottom with a deep rumbling sound, shivered like so many bombshells into a thousand pieces, and telling us what would be our fate if we made a single misstep. We followed our Indian in single file, keeping close together, that the stones set free by those in the rear might not dash those below from their feet; feeling our way with the greatest caution, clinging with our hands to snow, sand, rock, tufts of grass, or any thing that would hold for a moment; now leaping over a chasm, now letting ourselves down from rock to rock; at times paralyzed with fear, and always with death staring us in the face; thus we scrambled for two hours and a half, till we reached the bottom of the crater.

Here we found a deeply-furrowed plain, strewn with ragged rocks, and containing a few patches of vegetation, with half a dozen species of flowers. In the centre is an irregular heap of stones, two hundred and sixty feet high by eight hundred in diameter. This is the cone of eruption—its sides and summit covered with an imposing group of vents, seventy in number, all lined with sulphur and



exhaling steam, black smoke, and sulphurous gas. The temperature of the vapor just within the fumarole is  $184^{\circ}$ , water boiling beside it at  $189^{\circ}$ . The central vent, or chimney, gives forth a sound like the violent bubbling of boiling water. As we sat on this fiery mount, surrounded by a circular rampart of rocks, and looked up at the immense towers of dark dolerite which ran up almost vertically to the height of twenty-five hundred feet above us, musing over the tremendous force which fashioned this awful amphitheatre—spacious enough for all the gods of Tartarus to hold high carnival—the clouds which hung in the thin air around the crest of the crater pealed forth thunder after thunder, which, reverberating from precipice to precipice, were answered by the crash of rocks let loose by the storm, till the whole mountain seemed to tremble like a leaf. Such acoustics, mingled with the flash of lightning and the smell of brimstone, made us believe that we had fairly got into the realm of Pluto. It is the spot where Dante's *Inferno* ought to be read.

Finishing our observations, and warming our dinner over the steaming crevices, we prepared to ascend. The escape from this horrid hole was more perilous than the entrance, and on reaching the top we sang, with grateful hearts, to the tune of "Old Hundred,"

"Praise God, from whom all blessings flow."

We doubt whether that famous tune and glorious doxology were ever sung so near to heaven.

The second line,

"Praise him all creatures here below,"

had a strange meaning fifteen thousand feet high.

There have been five eruptions of Pichincha since the Conquest. The last was in 1660; that of 1566 covered



Quito three feet deep with ashes and stones, while boiling water and bitumen descended in torrents. In 1867 the column of smoke did not rise above the crest of the crater, but the volcano has lately been showing signs of activity, such as it has not exhibited since the last grand eruption two centuries ago. On the 19th of March, 1868, detonations were audible at Quito, and three days after there were more thunderings, with a great column of vapor visible from Chillo, twelve miles to the east. These phenomena were accompanied by an unusual fall of rain. Since the great earthquake of August 16th, Pichincha has continued to send forth dense columns of black smoke, and so much fine sand that it is not possible to reach the crater. The solid products of Pichincha since the Conquest have been chiefly pumice, coarse-grained and granular trachyte, and reddish porphyroid trachyte. The roads leading to Quito cut through hills of pumice-dust. On the plain of Iñaquito and in the valley of Esmeraldas are vast erratic blocks of trachyte, some containing twenty-five cubic yards, having sharp angles, and in some cases a polished, unstriated surface. M. Wisse does not consider them to have been thrown out of Pichincha, as La Condamine and others have judged. It is true, as he says, that they could not have come out of the present cone at a less angle than  $45^{\circ}$ , for they would have hit the sides of the high rocky rampart and rolled back again; and at a higher angle they would not have reached their present location. But we see no reason why they could not be the upper portion of the solid trachyte cone blown into the air at the great eruption which cleared out this enormous crater. There is a *rumipamba*, or "field of stones," around each of the Quitonian volcanoes.

Leaving Pichincha, we travel northward along the battlemented Andes, passing by the conical mountains of



Yana-ureu and Cotocachí. Yana-ureu, or "black mountain," is a mass of calcined rocks. Cotocachí (from *cota*? and *cachí*, salt) is always snow-clad. On its side is Cuy-cocha, one of the highest lakes in the world (10,200 feet), and formed by the subsidence of a part of the volcano.



## CHAPTER IX.

The Volcanoes of Ecuador.—Eastern Cordillera.—Imbabura.—Cayambi.—Antisana.—Cotopaxi.—Llanganati.—Tunguragua.—Altar.—Sangai.

NEAR the once busy city of Otobato, utterly destroyed in the late earthquake, the two Cordilleras join, and, turning to the right, we go down the eastern range. The first in order is Imbabura,\* which poured forth a large quantity of mud, with thousands of fishes, seven years before the similar eruption of Caraguairazo. At its feet is the beautiful lake of San Pablo, five miles in circumference, and very deep. It contains the little black fish (*Pimelodes cyclopus*) already referred to as the only species in the valley, and the same that was cast out by Imbabura and Caraguairazo. Next comes the square-topped Cayambi—the loftiest mountain in this Cordillera, being nineteen thousand five hundred feet. It stands exactly on the equator, a colossal monument placed by the hand of Nature to mark the grand division of the globe. It is the only snowy spot, says Humboldt, which is crossed by the equator. Beautiful is the view of Cayambi from Quito, as its enormous mass of snow and ice glows with crimson splendor in the farewell rays of the setting sun. No painter's brush could do justice to the prismatic tints which hover around the higher peaks. But this flood of glory is soon followed by the pure whiteness of death. "Like a gigantic ghost shrouded in sepulchral sheets, the mountain now hovers in the background of the landscape, towering ghastly through the twilight until darkness closes upon the scene."

\* From *imba* (fish), and *bura*, to produce. Its name can not be older than 1691, unless the mountain made similar eruptions before. It has frequently ejected water.



Ten miles farther south is the bare-headed Guamani range, over which passes the road to the wild Napo country.\* The view from the crest is magnificent; but, like every grand panorama, eludes description. As we look eastward over the beginnings of the mighty forest which stretches unbroken to the Atlantic, the vast ridges, trending north and south, and decreasing in height as they increase in distance, seem like the waves of a great ocean rolling toward the mountains.

Near by stands Antisana in his snowy robe. This volcano ranks next to Chimborazo in dignity. It has a double dome, and an elevation of 19,000 feet. Snow of Dian purity covers it for over 3000 feet; but, judging from the enormous streams of lava on its sides, it must have been a fierce volcano in ages past. The lava streams are worthy of the great mountain from which they flowed. One of them (called "Volcan d'Ansango") is ten miles long and five hundred feet deep, with an average slope of  $15^{\circ}$ . It is a magnificent sight, as seen from the surrounding paramo—a stream of dark, ragged rocks coming down out of the clouds and snows which cover the summit. The representative products of Antisana are a black, cellular, vitreous trachyte, a fine-grained, tough porphyroid trachyte, and a coarse reddish porphyroid trachyte. An eruption, as late as 1590, is recorded in *Johnston's Phys. Atlas*. Humboldt saw smoke issuing from several openings in March, 1802.

We ascended this volcano to the height of sixteen thousand feet. On its side is the celebrated hacienda of Antisana, which, more than sixty years ago, sheltered the great Humboldt from the sleet and rain and blast of this lofty region. It was a welcome refuge to us, for we had well nigh perished with cold on the dreary paramo. It is one of

\* The culminating point of Guamani is *Sara-urcu*, a volcano which threw out a vast quantity of ashes in 1843 and 1856.



the highest human habitations in the world, being thirteen thousand three hundred feet above the sea, or a thousand feet higher than the Peak of Teneriffe.\* The mean temperature is the same as that of Quebec, so that thirteen thousand feet in elevation at the equator is equal to  $47^{\circ}$  in latitude.† Here is an extensive corral, inclosing thousands of cattle, owned by a rheumatic old gentleman, Señor Valdevieso, who supplies the beef-market of Quito.‡ A desire for beef has alone brought man and his beast to this chilly altitude. It is difficult to get a quart of milk, and impossible to find a pound of butter at this hacienda. The predominant colors of the cattle are red and black. They feed on the wild paramo grass, and the beef is not only remarkably cheap, but superior in quality. The lasso is used in catching the animals, but not so skillfully as by the Gauchos of Rio Plata. It is a singular fact that cattle have followed men over the whole earth, from the coast of Africa to the highlands of Antisana. The same species is attacked by crocodiles and condors.

The atmospheric pressure is here so small that they frequently bleed at the nose and mouth when hunted. We have already given our experience in ascending high altitudes. We may add that while the pulse of Boussingault beat 106 pulsations at the height of 18,600 feet on Chimborazo, ours was 87 at 16,000 feet on Antisana. De Saussure says that a draught of liquor which would inebriate

\* M. d'Abbadie professes to have visited a village in Abyssinia (Arquiage) which is 12,450 feet above the sea. Potosi stands 13,500 feet.

† This agrees with Humboldt's calculation that a difference of elevation of 278 feet produces the same effect on the annual temperature as a change of one degree of latitude. According to the experiments of Captain Pullen, the minimum temperature of the great depths of the ocean is  $35^{\circ}$ , and it commences soon after passing 12,000 feet.

‡ The great dépôts of cattle in Ecuador are at the two extremes of elevation, the lowlands of St. Elena and the highlands of Antisana. On the slope of Cayambi is another extensive cattle estate.



in the lowlands no longer has that effect on Mont Blanc. This appears to be true on the Andes; indeed, there is very little drunkenness in Quito. So the higher we perch our inebriate asylums, the better for the patients.

Near the hacienda is a little lake called Mica, on which we found a species of grebe, with wings so short it could not fly. Its legs, also, seem fitted only for paddling, and it goes ashore only to lay its eggs. It peeps like a gosling. Associated with them were penguins (in appearance); they were so shy we could not secure one. The query is, How came they there? Was this a centre of creation, or were the fowls upheaved with the Andes? They could not have flown or walked to this lofty lake, and there are no water-courses leading to it; it is surrounded with a dry, rolling waste, where only the condor lives. We turn to Darwin for an answer.\*

The ragged Sincholagua† and romantic Rumiñagui follow Antisana, and then we find ourselves looking up at the most beautiful and most terrible of volcanoes. This is the far-famed Cotopaxi, or more properly Cutu-pacsi, meaning "a brilliant mass." Humboldt calls it the most regular and most picturesque of volcanic cones. It looks like a huge truncated cone rising out of the Valley of Quito, its sides deeply furrowed by the rivers of mud and water which have so often flowed out. The cone itself is about

\* The grebe is considered by Messrs. Cassin and Lawrence to be the *Podiceps occipitalis*, Lesson (*P. calipareus et Chilensis* of Garnot), which occurs in large flocks on the coast of Chile and in the Straits of Magellan. It is quite different from the *P. micropterus* of Lake Titicaca. At Morococha, Peru, 15,600 feet above the sea, Herndon found snipes and ducks.

† In Brigham's *Notes on the Volcanic Phenomena of the Hawaiian Islands*, this volcano is put down as active, but there has been no eruption in the memory of man. Its lithology is represented in our collection by porous, gray, granular trachyte, fine-grained, compact trachyte, and dark porphyroid trachyte. The derivation of Sincholagua is unknown. Rumiñagui means the face of a rock. Cotopaxi, Sincholagua, and Rumiñagui, and Cotopaxi, Pichincha, and Guamani, form equilateral triangles.



six thousand feet high. The east side is covered with snow, but the west is nearly bare, owing to the trade winds, which, sweeping across the continent, carry the ashes westward. Cotopaxi is the loftiest of active volcanoes, though its grand eruptions are a century apart, according to the general rule that the higher a volcano the less frequent its eruptions, but all the more terrible when they do occur. Imagine Vesuvius on the summit of Mont Blanc, and you have the altitude of Cotopaxi.

The top just reaches the middle point of density in the atmosphere, for at the height of three miles and a half the air below will balance that above. The crater has never been seen by man; the steepness of the sides and the depth of the ashes covering them render it inaccessible. The valiant Col. Hall tried it with scaling ladders, only to fail. The telescope reveals a parapet of scoria on the brim, as on Teneriffe. Humboldt's sketch of the volcano, so universally copied, is overdrawn. It makes the slope about  $50^{\circ}$ , while in truth it is nearer  $30^{\circ}$ . The apical angle is  $122^{\circ} 30'$ .\*

Cotopaxi is slumbering now; or, as Mr. Coan says of Hilo, it is "in a state of solemn and thoughtful suspense." The only signs of life are the deep rumbling thunders and a cloud of smoke lazily issuing from the crater.† Sometimes at night the smoke looks like a pillar of fire, and fine ashes and sand often fall around the base, to the great annoyance of the farmers. On the south side is a huge rock of porphyry, called the Inca's Head. Tradition has it that this was the original summit of the volcano, torn off and

\* MM. Zurcher and Margalli make the slope  $55^{\circ}$ ! and Guzman,  $69^{\circ} 30'$ !! The slope of Mauna Loa is  $6^{\circ} 30'$ ; of Etna,  $9^{\circ}$ ; of Teneriffe,  $12^{\circ} 30'$ ; of Vesuvius,  $35^{\circ}$ . While cinder-cones may have an angle of  $40^{\circ}$ , lava-cones seldom exceed  $10^{\circ}$ .

† Even this has now (August, 1869) ceased, save an occasional grumble, and the Tacungans are trembling with fear of another eruption.



hurled down by an eruption on the very day Atahualpa was murdered by Pizarro. The last great eruption occurred in 1803, though so late as 1855 it tossed out stones, water, and sand. Heaps of ruins, piled up during the lapse of ages, are scattered for miles around the mountain, among them great boulders twenty feet square. In one place (Quinchevar) the accumulation is 600 feet deep. Between Cotopaxi and Sincholagua are numerous conical hills covering the paramo, reminding one of the mud volcanoes of Jorullo.

Pumice and trachyte are the most common rocks around this mountain, and these are augitic or porphyroid. Obsidian also occurs, though not on the immediate flank, but farther down near Chillo. In plowing, thousands of pieces as large as "flints" are turned up. The natives know nothing about their origin or use; the large specimens were anciently polished and used for mirrors. But Cotopaxi is the great pumice-producing volcano. The new road up the valley cuts through a lofty hill formed by the successive eruptions; the section, presenting alternate layers of mud, ashes, and pumice, is a written history of the volcano.\* The cone itself is evidently composed of similar beds superimposed, and holding fragments of porphyry and trachyte. What is Vesuvius, four thousand feet high, to Cotopaxi, belching forth fire from a crater fifteen thousand feet higher, and shooting its contents three thousand feet

\* Compare the following sections:

COTOPAXI (near Tiupullo).		VESUVIUS (at Pompeii).	
Soil .....	1 ft. 0 in.	Soil .....	3 ft. 0 in.
Fine yellow pumice .....	5 " 0 "	Brown incoherent tuff .....	1 " 6 "
Compact black ashes, with		Small scoræ and white la-	
seams of pumice .....	10 " 0 "	pilli .....	0 " 3 "
Fine yellow pumice .....	1 " 6 "	Brown earthy tuff .....	4 " 9 "
Compact black ashes .....	12 " 0 "	Whitish lapilli .....	0 " 1 "
Fine yellow pumice .....	2 " 0 "	Gray solid tuff .....	0 " 3 "
Compact black ashes, with seams of		Pumice and white lapilli...	0 " 3 "
pumice.			



above its snow-bound summit, with a voice of thunder heard six hundred miles!

Leaving this terrible "safety-valve" to the imprisoned fires under our feet, we travel along the wooded flanks and savage valleys of the Llanganati Mountains, whose lofty blue ridge is here and there pointed with snow.\* It is universally believed that the Incas buried an immense quantity of gold in an artificial lake on the sides of this mountain during the Spanish invasion, and many an adventurous expedition has been made for it. The inhabitants will tell you of one Valverde, a Spaniard, who, from being very poor, had suddenly become very rich, which was attributed to his having married an Indian girl whose father showed him where the treasure was hidden, and accompanied him on various occasions to bring away portions of it; and that Valverde returned to Spain, and on his death-bed bequeathed the secret of his riches to the king. But since Padre Longo suddenly disappeared while leading an expedition, the timid Ecuadorians have been content with their poverty.†

And now we have reached the perfect cone of Tunguragua, the rival of Cotopaxi in symmetry and beauty.‡ It stands 16,500 feet above the Pacific, its upper part covered with a splendid robe of snow, while the sugar-cane grows in the romantic town of Baños, 10,000 feet below the summit. A cataract, 1500 feet high, comes down at three bounds from the edge of the snow to the warm valley beneath; and at Baños a hot ferruginous spring and a stream

\* Immediately south of Cotopaxi, the Cordillera consists of paramos sown with lakes and morasses, and is rarely covered with snow. Llanganati is probably from *llánga*, to touch: they touch the sources of nearly all the Ecuadorian rivers.

† The story is doubtless due to the fact that the eastern streams, which issue from the foot of this cordillera, are auriferous.

‡ From Tungurí, the ankle-joint, alluding to its apical angle. It is a little steeper than Cotopaxi, having a slope of 43°.



of ice-water flow out of the volcano side by side. Here, too, the fierce youth of the Pastassa, born on the pumice slopes of Cotopaxi, dashes through a deep tortuous chasm and down a precipice in hot haste, as if conscious of the long distance before it, ere it reaches the Amazon and the ocean. Tunguragua was once a formidable mountain, for we discovered a great stream of lava reaching from the clouds around the summit to the orange-groves in the valley, and blocking up the rivers which tumble over it in beautiful cascades. It has been silent since 1780; but it can afford to rest, for then its activity lasted seven years.\*

Close by rises beautiful Altar, a thousand feet higher. The Indians call it Capac-urcu, or the "Chief." They say it once overtopped Chimborazo; but, after a violent eruption, which continued eight years, the walls fell in. Its craggy crest is still more Alpine than Caraguairazo; eight snowy peaks shoot up like needles into the sky, and surround an altar to whose elevated purity no mortal offering will ever attain. The trachyte which once formed the summit of this mountain is now spread in fragments over the plain of Riobamba.

Leaving this broken-down volcano, but still the most picturesque in the Andes, we travel over the rough and rugged range of Cubillin, till our attention is arrested by terrific explosions like a naval broadside, and a column of smoke that seems to come from the furnace of the Cyclops. It is Sangai, the most active volcano on the globe. From its unapproachable crater, three miles high, it sends forth a constant stream of fire, water, mud, and ashes.†

\* Spruce asserts that he saw smoke issuing from the western edge in 1857; and Dr. Terry says that in 1832 smoke ascended almost always from the summit. Dr. Taylor, of Riobamba, informs the writer that smoke is now almost constantly visible. The characteristic rock is a black vitreous trachyte resembling pitchstone, but anhydrous.

† La Condamine (1742) adds "sulphur and bitumen."



No intermission has been noticed since the Spaniards first saw it three hundred years ago. Stromboli is the only volcano that will compare with it. Its ashes are almost always falling on the city of Guayaquil, one hundred miles distant, and its explosions, generally occurring every hour or two, are sometimes heard in that city. Wisse, in 1849, counted 267 explosions in one hour.

We have now completed the series. What an array of snow-clad peaks wall in the narrow Valley of Quito—Nature's Gothic spires to this her glorious temple! If ever there was a time when all these volcanoes were active in concert, this secluded vale must have witnessed the most splendid pyrotechnics conceivable. Imagine fifty mountains as high as Etna, three of them with smoking craters, standing along the road between New York and Washington, and you will have some idea of the ride down this gigantic colonnade from Quito to Riobamba. If, as Ruskin says, the elements of beauty are in proportion to the increase of mountainous character, Ecuador is artistically beautiful to a high degree.

Here, amid these Plutonic peaks, are the energies of volcanic action best studied. The constancy of the volcanic fires is a striking fact. First we have the deluges of submarine lavas, which were poured out long before the Andes lifted their heads above the waters; then alternate porphyritic strata, feldspathic streams, and gypseous exhalations; then, at a later day, floods of basaltic lava; next the old tertiary eruptions; and, lastly, the vast accumulations of boulders, gravel, ashes, pumice, and mud of the present day, spread over the Valley of Quito and the west slope of the Cordilleras to an unknown depth beneath the sea. The incessant eruptions of Sangai, and the frequent earthquakes, show that the subterranean energy which heaved the Andes is not yet expended.



## CHAPTER X.

The Valley of Quito.—Riobamba.—A Bed of "Fossil Giants."—Chillo Hacienda.—Otovalo and Ibarra.—The Great Earthquake of 1868.

THE Valley of Quito has about the same size and shape as the basin of Salt Lake, but it is five thousand feet higher.\* The two cordilleras inclosing it are tied by the mountain-knots of Assuay and Chisinchi, so that the valley is subdivided into three basins, those of Cuenca, Ambato, and Quito proper, which increase in beauty and altitude as we travel north. There are several subordinate transversal dikes and some longitudinal ridges, but all the basins lie parallel to the axes of the cordilleras—a characteristic feature of the Andes. The deep valleys on the outside flanks are evidently valleys of erosion, but the basins between the cordilleras were created with them.

The first is fifty miles long. It contains the cities of Loja and Cuenca,† the former distinguished for its cinchona forests, the latter for Inca graves and mines of precious metals. The middle basin (130 miles in length) is covered with vast quantities of volcanic débris, the outpourings of Cotopaxi, Tunguragua, and Altar, on one side, and of Chimborazo and Caraguairazo on the other. Nothing relieves

\* Compare the table-lands in the Old World:

Thibet.....	11,500 feet.
South Africa.....	6,000 "
Mysore (India).....	2,880 "
Spain .....	2,240 "
Bavaria .....	1,770 "

† The altitude of Loja is 6768 feet; of Cuenca, 8640 feet.



the barrenness of the landscape but hedges of century plant, cactus, and wild heliotrope, which border the roads. Whirlwinds of sand are often seen moving over the plain. The mean temperature is  $61^{\circ}.5$ . Here exist, we can not say thrive, the cities of Riobamba, Ambato, and Tacunga, already noticed. Riobamba,\* properly Rayobamba, the plain of lightning, was founded at the beginning of this century, or shortly after the destruction of the old city. Excepting the ecclesiastical buildings, the houses are of one story, built of stone plastered with mud, sometimes of adobe or bamboo, and the windows are grated like those of a prison. As in all Spanish-American towns, the main church fronts the great Plaza where the weekly fairs are held. Save on fair-day, the city is lifeless. Nothing is exported to the coast except a few eggs and fowls, lard and potatoes. Such is the power of habit, an Indian will take a hen to Bodegas and sell it for four reals (50 cents) when he could get three for it in Riobamba, and six on the road. Another instance of this dogged adherence to custom was related to us by Dr. Taylor: The Indians were accustomed to bring the curate of a certain village a bundle of alfalfa every day. A new curate, having no use for so much, ordered them not to bring any more. He was besieged by five hundred of his wild parishioners, and had he not been a powerful man, they would have killed him. They told him they were accustomed to bring the curate that much of alfalfa, and should continue.

Old Riobamba (Cajabamba) is situated twelve miles to the west. This has been the scene of some of the most terrible paroxysms that ever shook the Andes. In 1797 a part of Mount Cicalfa was thrown down, crushing the city at its foot; hills arose where valleys existed; rivers disap-

\* According to Villavicencio, *Rio* (or *Ric*) is Quichua for road; *bamba* is plain.



peared, and others took their places; and the very site of the city was rent asunder. The surviving inhabitants could not tell where their houses had stood, and property was so mingled that litigation followed the earthquake. Judging from the numerous sculptured columns lying broken and prostrate throughout the valley, the city must have had a magnificence now unknown in Ecuador. Around a coat of arms (evidently Spanish) we read these words: *Malo mori quam fedari*, "I would rather die than be disgraced." In the spring of 1868 another convulsion caused a lake to disappear and a mountain to take its place.

Near Punín, seven miles southwest of Riobamba, we discovered in a deep ravine numerous fossil bones, belonging chiefly to the mastodon, and extinct species of the horse, deer, and llama. They were imbedded in the middle of an unstratified cliff, four hundred feet high, of very compact silt or trachytic clay, free from stones, and resting on a hard quartzose sandstone. In the bed of the stream which runs through the ravine (charged with nitrate of soda) are some igneous rocks. The bones were drifted to this spot and deposited (many of them in a broken state) in horizontal layers along with recent shells. We have, then, this remarkable fact, that this high valley was tenanted by elephantine quadrupeds, all of which passed away before the arrival of the human species, and yet while the land, and probably the sea also, were peopled with their present molluscan inhabitants. This confirms the statement of Mr. Lyell, that the longevity of mammalian species is much inferior to that of the testacea. It is interesting to speculate on the probable climate and the character of the vegetation in this high valley when these extinct mammals lived. The great pachyderm would have no difficulty in thriving at the present day at Quito, on the score of temperature or altitude. The mammoth once



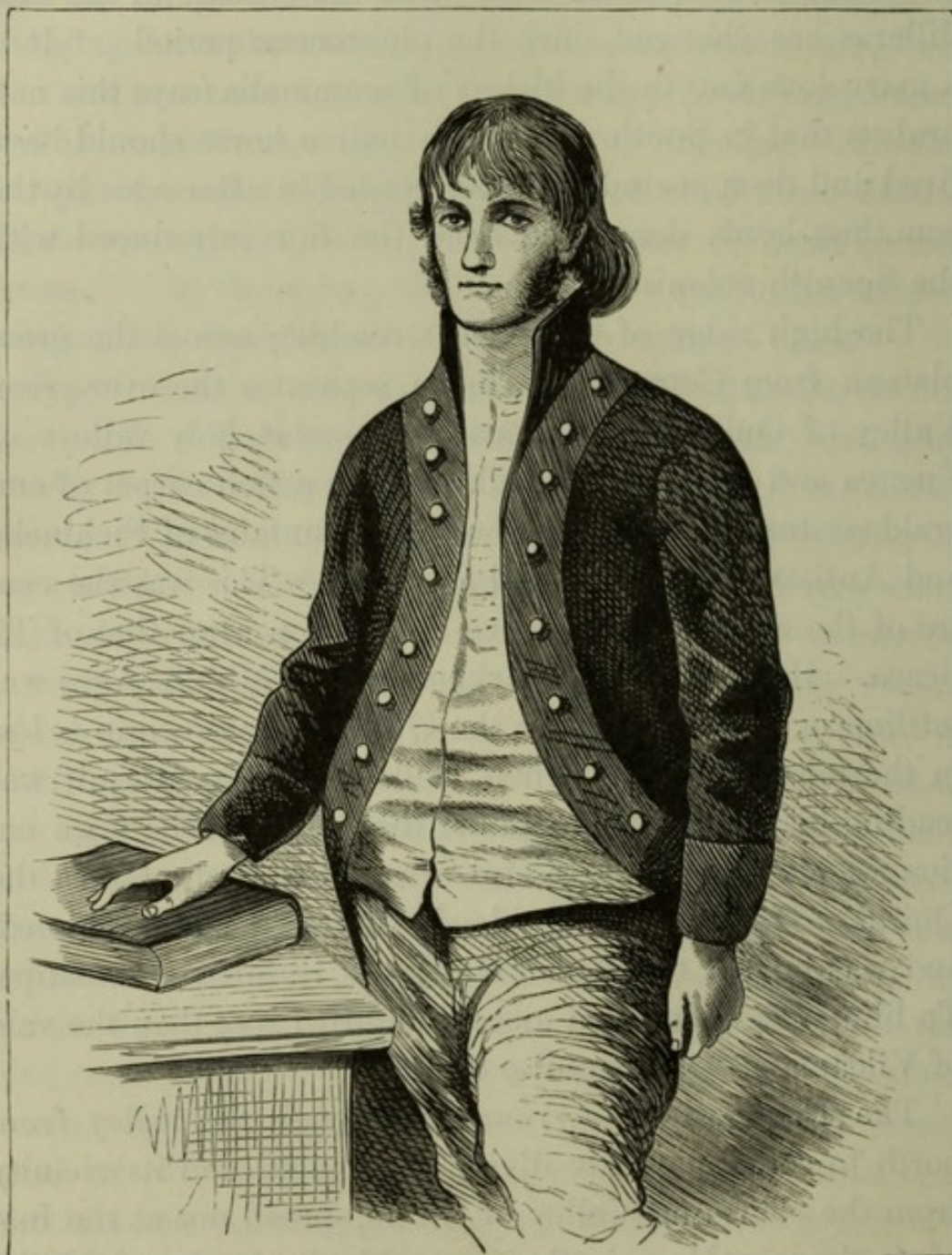
flourished in Siberia; and Gibbon met an elephant on the high table-lands of Bolivia that had walked over the Cordillera at the pass of Antarangua, sixteen thousand feet above the sea. Darwin thinks that the climate of the Cordilleras has changed since the pleistocene period. "It is a marvelous fact in the history of mammalia (says this naturalist) that in South America a native horse should have lived and disappeared, to be succeeded in after ages by the countless herds descended from the few introduced with the Spanish colonists."

The high ridge of Chisinchi, stretching across the great plateau from Cotopaxi to Iliniza, separates the ever-green Valley of Quito from the arid and melancholy valleys of Cuenca and Ambato. It rolls out like a rich carpet of emerald verdure between the towering mountains of Pichincha and Antisana, Cotacachi and Cayambi. This was the centre of the most ancient native civilization after that of Titicaca. Here, while the darkness of the Middle Ages was settling over Europe, dwelt the Quitus, whose origin is lost in the mists of fable. Then, while Peter the Hermit was leading his fanatic host against the Saracens, the Cara nation waged a more successful crusade, and supplanted the Quitus. Here, too, in the bloody days of Pizarro, reigned, and was buried, the last of the Incas, ill-fated Atahualpa. To him, indeed, it was a more delightful spot than the vale of Vilcamayu—the paradise of Peru.

The Puengasi Hills, running through the valley from north to south, partially divide the capital and its vicinity from the charming Valley of Chillo, spread out at the foot of Antisana. Here is the venerable hacienda of Chillo, where Humboldt and Bonpland resided for some time. It is owned by the Aguirres, who are grand-nephews of Don Carlos Montufar, the companion of the famous travelers. The hacienda contains two valuable paintings—an original



"Crucifixion" by Titian, and a portrait of the great German from life, as he appeared in 1802. This latter relic interested us exceedingly, and, through the kindness of Sr.



Humboldt in 1802.

Aguirre, we were allowed to photograph it. It represents Humboldt in his prime, a traveler on the Andes, dressed after the court-fashion of Berlin; very different from the



usual portrait—an old man in his library, his head, thinly covered with gray hair, resting on his bosom.

Thirty miles north of Quito, near the volcanic Imbabura, is the ruined city of Otovalo, a thousand feet lower than the capital. It was well built, and contained 7000 inhabitants. Quichua was the prevailing language. Its chief trade was in saddles, ponchos, straw hats, and fruit. Here was the cotton factory, or *quinta*, of Sr. Pareja. Three miles from Otovalo was the enterprising Indian village of Cotocachí, at the mountain of the same name. It was noted for its hand-loom products. A heap of ruins now marks the locality. It is a doomed spot, suffering more than any other town in 1859.

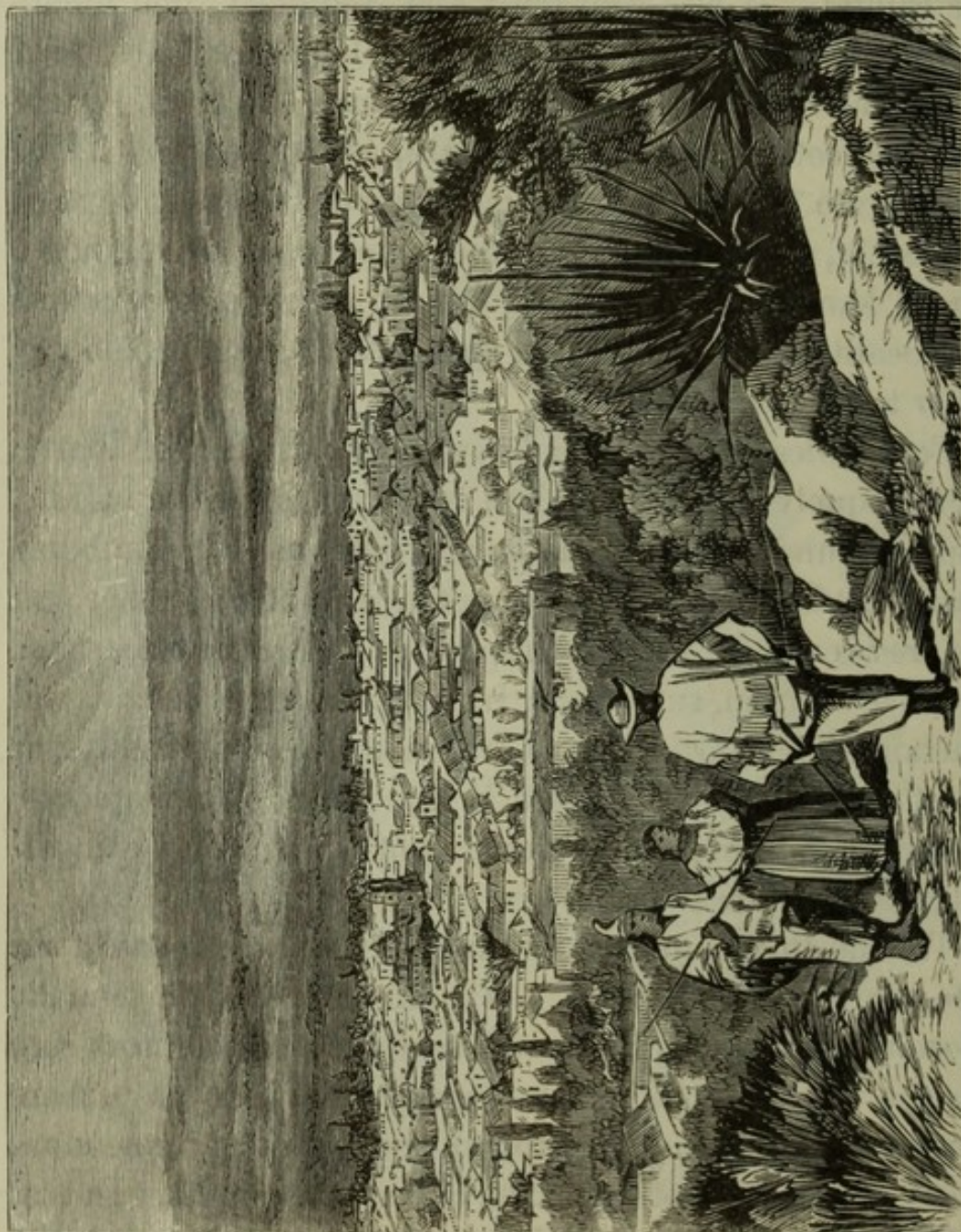
Four miles northwest of Otovalo was the city of Ibarra, picturesquely seated on a plain 2000 feet lower than Quito, and surrounded with orchards and gardens. It numbered nearly 10,000 souls. It was not a commercial place, but the residence of landed proprietors. The neighborhood produced cotton, sugar, and fruit. A league distant was Carranqui, the birthplace of Atahualpa. And, finally, the great valley fitly terminates in the plain of Atuntaqui,\* where the decisive battle was fought which ushered in the reign of the Incas.

This northern province of Imbabura was the focus of the late terrible earthquake. At half past one on Sunday morning, August 16, 1868, with scarcely a premonitory sign (save a slight trembling at 3 P.M. the previous day), there was an upheaving of the ground, and then one tremendous shock and rocking of the earth, lasting one minute. In that brief moment the rich and flourishing province became a wilderness, and “Misericordia!” went up, like the sound of many waters, from ten villages and cities. Otovalo, Ibarra,

\* Atuntaqui received its name from the big drum which was kept here in the days of Huayna-Capac, to give the war-signal.



Cotocachí, and Atantaqui are heaps of ruins. At Otovalo 6000 perished. After the first shock, not a wall a yard high remained. Houses, in some instances, seemed to have been cut from their foundation, and thrown ten feet distant.



The large stone fountain in the Plaza was thrown many yards. The cotton factory, which was built on the edge of a ravine, was by one stroke reduced to fragments. Such was the force of the concussion, the looms smashed each



other, the carding-machines were thrown on their sides, and the roof, with part of the machinery, was found in the river below. The proprietor was killed. Throughout this whole region roads were broken up, and vast chasms created crossing the country in all directions. One is 2000 yards long, 500 yards broad, and 80 yards deep. Large fissures were opened on the sides of Cotocachí and Imbabura, from which issued immense torrents of water, mud, and bituminous substances, carrying away and drowning hundreds of cattle. A caravan of mules going to Chillo with cotton bales was found four days after grazing on a narrow strip of land, on each side of which was a fearful chasm, while the muleteers were killed.

At Quito comparatively little damage was done. Fifteen lives were lost, and the churches, convents, and many private houses are in a state of dilapidation. Domes and arches, which are much used because of the scarcity of timber, were first to fall.

In the fierceness of the shock, and the extent of the territory shaken, the earthquake of August, 1868, is without a parallel in the New World. The destruction of life (50,000 officially reported in Ecuador alone) has not been equaled in any other earthquake during this century. The tremor was felt over four republics, and from the Andes to the Sandwich Islands. The water-wave was felt on the coast of New Zealand sixteen hours after it had set a United States gunboat on the sand-hills of Arica. In some respects it is surpassed only by the Lisbon earthquake, which reached from Sweden to the West Indies, and from Barbary to Scotland. The loss of property seems to have been greatest in Peru, and the loss of life greatest in Ecuador. The commotion seemed to be most violent along the Western Cordillera, though it was felt even on the Napo.

There are few places where the crust of our planet is



long at rest. Brazil, Egypt, Russia, and Greenland are comparatively free from earthquakes. But had we delicate instruments scattered throughout the world, upheaval and subsidence would doubtless be detected in every part of the so-called *terra firma*. The sea, and not the land, is the true image of stability.

“Time writes no wrinkle on thy azure brow :  
Such as creation’s dawn beheld, thou rollest now.”

Earthquakes have occurred in every period of geological history, and are independent of latitude. The first well-known earthquake came in the year 63, and shattered Pompeii and Herculaneum sixteen years before they were overwhelmed by the first recorded eruption of Vesuvius. The most celebrated earthquake, and perhaps the most terrible manifestation of force during the human period, was in 1755. The shock, which seemed to originate in the bed of the Atlantic, pervaded one twelfth of the earth’s surface. Unhappy Lisbon stood in its path.

An earthquake is a vertical vibration, having an undulatory progression. An example of the simple bounding movement occurred in 1797, when the city of Riobamba, in the Quito Valley, was buried under part of a mountain shaken down by the violent concussion, and men were tossed several hundred feet. We saw one massive structure which had nearly turned a somersault. The ordinary vibrations seldom exceed two feet in height. The wave-movement has a rate of from twenty to thirty miles a minute, depending on the elasticity of the rock and the elevations on the surface. When two undulations cross each other, a rotatory or twisting motion is produced. The waves are generally transmitted along the lines of primary mountain chains, which are doubtless seated on a fracture. The Lisbon waves moved from southwest to northeast, or parallel to the mountain system of the Old World; those



of the United States, in 1843, ran parallel to the volcanic chain in Mexico. In South America they roll along the Andes. That of 1797 left its tracks along a westerly line from Tunguragua through Peliléo and Guáno. It is a little singular, that while the late trembling at Quito seemed to come from the north, the great shock in Peru preceded that in Ecuador by three days. Though the origin of earthquakes is deep-seated, the oscillation is mostly superficial, as deep mines are little disturbed. The most damage is done where the sedimentary plains abut against the hard, upturned strata of the mountains. The shock is usually brief. That of Caracas lasted fifty seconds, that of Lisbon six minutes; but Humboldt witnessed one in South America which continued a quarter of an hour.

Several hypotheses have been advanced to account for earthquakes. Rogers ascribes them to billowy pulsations in the molten matter upon which the flexible crust of the earth floats. Mallet thinks they may be viewed as an uncompleted effort to establish a volcano. Dana holds that they are occasioned by the folding up of the rocks in the slow process of cooling and consequent contraction of the earth's crust. In this process there would occur enormous fractures to relieve the tension; tilted strata would slip, and caverns give way. All this no doubt takes place; but the sudden, paroxysmal heavings incline us to refer the cause to the same eruptive impulse which makes Vesuvius and Cotopaxi discharge pent-up subterranean vapor and gas. The most destructive earthquakes occur when the overlying rocks do not break and give vent to the imprisoned gas. There is some connection between volcanoes and earthquakes; the former are, to a certain extent, "safety-valves." The column of smoke from the volcano of Pasto suddenly disappeared just before the great earthquake at Riobamba. In the spring of 1868 Pichincha and Cotopaxi showed signs



of increasing activity, but in the summer became quiet again. Cotacachí and Sangai, 200 miles apart, were awaked simultaneously; the former, silent for centuries, sent forth dense masses of earth and volcanic matter to a distance of many miles, covering thousands of acres; the latter thundered every half hour instead of hourly, as before. Still, the greatest earthquakes do not occur in the vicinity of active volcanoes. Lisbon and Lima (where, on an average, forty-five shocks occur annually, and two fearful ones in a century) are far distant from any volcanic vent; likewise Northern India, South Africa, Scotland, and the United States.

An earthquake is beyond the reach of calculation. Professor Perrey, of Dijon, France, is endeavoring to prove that there is a periodicity in earthquakes, synchronous with that in the tides of the ocean, the greatest number occurring at the time of new and full moon.\* If this theory be sustained, we must admit the existence of a vast subterranean sea of lava. But all this is problematical. Earthquakes appear independently of the geology of a country, though the rate of undulation is modified by the mineral structure. Earthquake waves seem to move more rapidly through the comparatively undisturbed beds of the Mississippi Valley than through the contorted strata of Europe. Meteorology is unable to indicate a coming earthquake, for there is no sure prophecy in sultry weather, sirocco wind,

\* Professor Quinby, of the University of Rochester, has, at our request, calculated the position of the moon at the late earthquake: "August 16th, 1868, 1 A.M., the moon was on meridian  $137^{\circ} 21'$  east of that of Quito, or  $42^{\circ} 39'$  past the lower meridian of Quito, assuming the longitude of Quito west of Greenwich to be  $79^{\circ}$ , which it is very nearly. This is but little after the vertex of the tidal wave should have passed the meridian of Quito, on the supposition that the interior of the earth is a liquid mass. The age of the moon at that time was 27.36 days, *i. e.*, it was only about two days before new moon." At the time of the earthquake, 8 A.M., March 22, 1859, the moon was on meridian  $25^{\circ} 48'$  east of that of Quito, and was 17.6 days old. Shocks have since occurred, March 20th at 3 A.M., and April 10th at 8 A.M., 1869.



and leaden sky. The Lisbon shock came without a warning. Sudden changes of the weather, however, often occur after an earthquake. Since the great convulsion of 1797 the climate of the Valley of Quito is said to be much colder. A heavy rain often follows a violent earthquake in Peru.

No amount of familiarity with earthquakes enables one to laugh during the shock, or even at the subterranean thunders which sound like the clanking of chains in the realm of Pluto. All animated nature is terror-stricken. The horse trembles in his stall; the cow moans a low, melancholy tune; the dog sends forth an unearthly yell; sparrows drop from the trees as if dead; crocodiles leave the trembling bed of the river and run with loud cries into the forest; and man himself becomes bewildered and loses all capacity. When the earth rocks beneath our feet (the motion resembling, in the words of Darwin, "that felt by a person skating over thin ice which bends under the weight of his body"), something besides giddiness is produced. We feel our utter insignificance in the presence of a mysterious power that shakes the Andes like a reed. But more: there is an awful sensation of insecurity. "A moment (says Humboldt) destroys the illusion of a whole life: our deceptive faith in the repose of nature vanishes, and we feel transported, as it were, into a region of unknown destructive forces." A judgment day seems impending, and each moment is an age when one stands on a world convulsed.



## CHAPTER XI.

“The Province of the Orient,” or the Wild Napo Country.—The Napos, Zaparos, and Jívaros Indians.—Preparations to cross the Continent.

ON the eastern slope of the Ecuadorian Andes, between the Marañon and its tributary the Putumayo, lies the Napo country. This almost unknown region has the area of New York and New England together. The government of Quito, by a sonorous decree in 1854, baptized it “La Provincia del Oriente.” Peru likewise claims it, but neither republic has done any thing to colonize it. A dense primeval forest, broken only by the rivers, covers the whole territory, and is the home of wild races untouched by civilization.\* There is not a road in the whole province. A footpath, open only in the dry season, and barely passable then, connects Quito and the Rio Napo. Congress lately promised to put Canélos in communication with the capital; but the largest villages in this vast and fertile region—Archidona, Canélos, and Macás—still remain isolated from the outer world.† Ecuador once appointed a functionary under the high-sounding title of “Governor of the Orient,” with a salary of \$700; but now the Indians are not troubled with any higher official than an *alcalde*.

\* The boundary-line between Ecuador and Peru is about as indefinite as the eastern limit of Bolivia, Brazilians claiming “as far west as the cattle of the empire roam.”

† Quito might be made more accessible on the Atlantic than on the Pacific side. But Ecuadorians dote on Guayaquil, and refuse to connect themselves directly with the great nations of the East. We believe there is a glorious future for Quito, when it will once more become a city of palaces. But it will not come until a road through the wilderness and a steamer on the Napo open a short communication with the wealth of Amazonia and the enterprise of Europe.



The country is very thinly inhabited. The chief tribes are the semi-Christianized Napos (sometimes called Quijos), dwelling on the north bank of the Napo; the peaceful but uncivilized Záparos, living between the Napo and Pastassa, and the warlike Jívaros, spread over the unexplored region between the Pastassa and Santiago.

These oriental tribes would probably be assigned by D'Orbigny to the Antisian branch of the Alpine races of South America. Dwelling amid the darkness of primeval forests, and on the gloomy banks of mountain torrents, they have acquired modifications of character, physical and moral, which distinguish them from the natives of the high and open regions, or the steaming lowlands of the Amazon. In color, however, they do not appear to us to be entitled to the name of "white men;" they approach nearer to the bronze complexion of the Quichuans than the yellow cast of the Brazilians. We see no evidence of that "bleaching process" resulting from a life under the dense canopy of foliage of which the learned French naturalist speaks, neither did we perceive the force of his statement that the color of the South American bears a very decided relation to the humidity of the atmosphere.

The features of the Napo Indians are Quichuan, especially the low forehead, squarely-built face, and dull expression; but in stature they exceed the mountaineers. From a skull in our possession we take the following measurements, adding for comparison the dimensions of an ancient Peruvian cranium in Dr. Morton's collection:

	Napo.	Peruvian.
Longitudinal diameter.....	6½ in.	6.1 in.
Parietal " .....	5⅞ "	6. "
Frontal " .....	4 "	4.7 "
Vertical " .....	4½ "	5.5 "
Capacity.....	83⅛ cub. in.	83 cub. in.
Facial angle .....	70°	81°



From this it will be seen that the capacity of this individual Napo is 8 cubic inches greater than the average bulk (75 cubic inches) of the old Peruvians; a trifle less than the average North American (84); 10 cubic inches less than the European (94); and the same as the average Polynesian and native African. He has a rounded head, somewhat prominent vertex, not an excessive protuberance of brain behind—a line through the meatus dividing it into very nearly equal parts; but a narrow front as viewed from above, small vertical diameter, quadrangular orbits, vertical teeth, and low facial angle. These characters place him between the Toltecan and the more barbarous tribes of the New World.

The Napos are nominally subject to the Ecuadorian government, which is represented by three or four petty *alcaldes*; but the Jesuit missionaries, who have established a bishopric and three curacies, generally control affairs—spiritual, political, and commercial. The Indians of each village annually elect one of their number governor, who serves without salary, and whose only show of authority is a silver-headed cane about four feet long. He is attended by half a dozen “justices,” whose duty it is to supply the curate, *alcalde*, and any traveling *blanco* who may happen to be in town with daily food at a reasonable rate.

The religion of the Napos is a mixture of Paganism and Christianity. In common with all the other orient tribes, they believe in good and evil principles, and in metempsychosis. They swear in the name of the devil. They bury their dead horizontally, in a coffin made of a part of a canoe, with a lid of bamboo. They are very kind to the aged. Monogamy is the rule: the usual age of wedlock is sixteen or seventeen. The parents negotiate the marriage, and the curate’s fee is one *castellano* (\$3 50). When a person dies they hold an Irish “wake” over the body, and then



take the widow to the river and wash her. They have seven semi-religious feasts in a year. To us they appeared to be nothing more than meaningless drunken frolics. Attired in their best, with head-dresses consisting of a circlet of short, richly-colored feathers from the breast of the toucan, surmounted with the long tail-feathers of the macaw, and with necklaces of beads, seeds, and monkeys' teeth, they keep up a constant monotonous tapping on little drums, and trot around a circle like dogs on a treadmill, stopping only to drink chicha. This is kept up for three weeks, when they all start off, with wives and children, for the forest to hunt monkeys for meat.

Chicha, the favorite drink of all the Andean Indians, is here brewed from yuca, not from corn and barley as in the Quito Valley. So true is it, as Humboldt remarks, that almost every where man finds means of preparing some kind of beverage from the vegetable kingdom. The Chilotans, Darwin informs us, make chicha from a species of *Bromelia*. In every zone, too, we find nations in a low degree of civilization living almost exclusively upon a single animal or plant. Thus the Laplander has his reindeer, the Esquimaux his seal, the Sandwich Islander his tararoot, the Malay his sago-palm, the Napo Indian his yuca.

Yuca is the staple food in this region. It is more commonly roasted, but is sometimes ground into flour. The manufacture of chicha is primitive, and not a little disgusting. A "bee," usually old women, sit around a wooden trough; each one takes a mouthful of yuca root, and, masticating it, throws it into the trough. The mass is then transferred to large earthen jars containing water, and left to ferment. The liquor is slightly acid, but not intoxicating unless taken in excess. This is done on feast-days, when the poor Indian keeps his stomach so constantly distended for weeks that the abdominal protrusion is not only



unsightly, but alarming to a stranger. Chicha-drinking is a part of the worship of these simple aborigines. They seem to think that the more happy they make themselves while paying their devotions to the Creator, the better he is satisfied. The Jesuits have found it impossible to change this method of praise. Here, as among all rude nations, an ancient custom is one half the religion. In eating meat (usually monkey, sea-cow, and peccari), we observed that they did not tear or bite it, but, putting one end of a long piece in the mouth, cut off what they could not get in, as Darwin noticed among the Fuegians. They keep no domestic animals except fowls.

As to dress, they make use of a coarse cotton cloth, called *lienzo*, woven by the more enlightened Indians of Quito, dyeing it a dull brown by means of achote juice. The men wear a strip of this around the loins, and the women a short skirt. On feast-days, or when musquitoes are thick, the men add a little poncho and pantaloons. They do not properly tattoo, but color the skin with achote or anatto. This substance, which serves so many purposes in this part of the world, is the red powder which covers the seeds contained in the prickly bur of the *Bixa orellana*. The pigment is an article of commerce on the Amazon, and is exported to Europe, where it is used for coloring butter, cheese, and varnish. They have no fixed pattern; each paints to suit his fancy. Usually, however, they draw horizontal bands from the mouth to the ears, and across the forehead; we never saw curved lines in which higher savages, like the Tahitians, tattoo.

The Napos have the provoking apathy of all the New World aborigines. As Humboldt observed of another tribe, "their poverty, stoicism, and uncultivated state render them so rich and so free from wants of every kind, that neither money nor other presents will induce them to



turn three steps out of their ways." They maintain a passive dignity in their bearing not seen in the proudest pope or emperor. They seldom laugh or smile, even under the inspiration of chicha, and months of intercourse with them did not discover to us the power of song, though Villavicencio says they do sometimes intone fragments of prose in their festival orgies. They manifest little curiosity, and little power of mimicry, in which wild men generally excel the civilized.\* The old Spartans were never so laconic. In conversation each says all he has to say in three or four words till his companion speaks, when he replies in the same curt, ejaculatory style. A long sentence, or a number of sentences at one time, we do not remember of hearing from the lips of a Napo Indian.†

The women do most of the work, while their lazy lords drink up the chicha and swing in their hammocks, or possibly do a little hunting.‡ They catch fish with bone hooks, seines, spears, and by poisoning the water with *barbasco*.§ This last method is quite common throughout equatorial America. Mashing the root, they throw it into the quiet coves of the river, when almost immediately the fish rise to the surface, first the little fry and then the larger specimens. The poison seems to stupefy rather than kill,

\* All savages appear to possess to an uncommon degree the power of mimicry.—*Darwin*.

† Gibbon observes of his Indian paddlers on the Mamoré: "They talk very little; they silently pull along as though they were sleeping, but their eyes are wandering all the time in every direction."

‡ Some of these feminines, however, have a method of retaliation which happily does not exist farther north. They render their husbands idiotic by giving them an infusion of *floripondio*, and then choose another consort. We saw a sad example of this near Riobamba, and heard of one husband who, after being thus treated, unconsciously served his wife and her new man like a slave. *Floripondio* is the seed of the *Datura sanguinea*, which is allied to the poisonous *stramonium* used by the priests of Apollo at Delphi to produce their frantic ravings.

§ *Jacquinia armillaris*, an evergreen bush. The Indians on the Tapajos use a poisonous liana called *timbó* (*Paullinia pinnata*).



for we observed that some individuals behaved in a most lively manner shortly after they were caught. The Indians drink the water with impunity.

The Napos are not brave; their chief weapons for hunting are spears of chonta wood, and blowpipes (*bodaqueras*) made of a small palm having a pith, which, when removed, leaves a polished bore, or of two separate lengths of wood, each scooped out with patient labor and considerable skill by means of the incisor teeth of a rodent. The whole is smeared with black wax, a mouth-piece fitted to the larger end, and a sight made of bone imbedded in the wax. Through this tube, about ten feet long, they blow slender arrows cut from the leaf-stalks of a palm. These are winged with a tuft of silk-cotton (common cotton would be too heavy), and poisoned with *urarí*, of which we shall speak hereafter. This noiseless gun is universally used on the Upper Amazon.\*

The Zaparos in physiognomy somewhat resemble the Chinese, having a middle stature, round face, small eyes set angularly, and a broad, flat nose. Their language is of simple construction, but nasal and guttural. They have no words for numbers above three, but show their fingers; above ten they know nothing. They take to themselves single names, not double. They reckon time by moons and the ripening of certain fruits. Their name for God is *Piátzo*, but we could not learn that it conveyed any distinct idea. They believe the evil spirit, "Mungia," is a black spectre dwelling in the woods. They think the souls of the good and brave enter beautiful birds and feed on delicious fruits, while cowardly souls become dirty reptiles. Polygamy is common. They bury in the sitting posture,

\* It is there called *zarabatana* or *gravatana*; by the Peruvians *pucuna*. It corresponds to the *sumpitan* of Borneo. It is difficult to acquire the use of the blow-gun, but the natives will kill at the distance of 150 feet. One which we brought home sent the slender arrow through the panel of a door.



with the hammock of the deceased wrapped around him. The very old men are buried with the mouth downward. They make use of a narcotic drink called *Ayahuasca*, which produces effects similar to those of opium. The Zaparos are pacific and hospitable, but there is little social life among them; they never cluster into large villages, but inhabit isolated ranchos. Nomadic in their habits, they wander along the banks of the Napo, between the Andes and the Marañon. They manufacture, from the twisted fibre of the chambiri-palm,\* most of the twine and hammocks seen in Eastern Ecuador. Their government is patriarchal.

The Jívaros, or "Red Indians" *par excellence*, are the most numerous and the most spirited of the oriental tribes. They are brave and resentful, yet hospitable and industrious. While the Napos and Zaparos live in rude, often temporary huts of split bamboo, the warlike Jívaros erect houses of hard wood with strong doors. Blood relations live together on the communal principle, the women keeping the rear half of the house, which is divided by a partition. Many Jívaros approach the Caucasian type, the beard and lighter skin hinting a percentage of Spanish blood; for this tribe was never conquered by the Incas, nor did it brook Spanish avarice and cruelty, but in one terrible conflict (1599) the intruder was swept out of existence. The wives of the El Dorado adventurers spent the rest of their days in the harems of the Jívaros. These Indians have the singular custom and art of compressing the heads of their notable captives; taking off the skin entire and drying it over a small mould, they have a hideous mummy which preserves all the features of the original face, but on a re-

\* This thorny palm is called *tucum* in Brazil. The fibres of the budding top are used. A woman will twist a hundred yards of twine a day, and make a living by selling hammocks for twenty-five cents a piece.



duced scale.\* They also braid the long black hair of their foes into girdles, which they wear as mementoes of their prowess. They use chonta-lances with triangular points, notched and poisoned, and shields of wood or hide. They have a telegraphic system which enables them to concentrate their forces quickly in time of war; large drums are placed on the tops of the hills, and a certain number of strokes, repeated along the line, rapidly convey intelligence to the most distant habitation.

An odd custom prevails among these wild Indians when an addition is made to the family circle. The woman goes into the woods alone, and on her return washes herself and new-born babe in the river; then the husband immediately takes to his bed for eight days, during which time the wife serves him on the choicest dainties she can procure.† They have also the unique practice of exchanging wives. The Jívaro speech is sonorous and energetic. They do not use salt; so that they distinguish the Napo tribes as the "Indians who eat salt." The chief articles manufactured by them are cotton goods and blowpipes. They trade mostly at Canélos and Macás, generally purchasing iron implements, such as hatchets and knives.

Canélos consists of about seventy families of Quichua-speaking Indians, and lies on the south bank of the Bobonaza. A trail connects it with Baños, at the foot of Tunguragua. Canélos was founded in 1536, and derives its name from its situation in the Canéla, or American cinnamon forest. The bark of the tree has the flavor of the

\* Bates (ii., 132) speaks of a similar custom among the ancient Mundurucus: "They used to sever the head with knives made of broad bamboo, and then, after taking out the brain and fleshy parts, soak it in bitter vegetable oils, and expose it several days over the smoke of a fire, or in the sun."

† A like custom existed among some Brazilian and Guiana tribes. It also prevailed to some extent among the ancient Cantabrians and Corsicans, the Congos and Tartars, and in the Southern French provinces.



Ceylon aromatic ; but, according to Dr. Taylor, it is cassia. Macás, in the days of Spanish adventure a prosperous city under the name of "Sevilla de Oro," is now a cluster of huts on the banks of the Upano. Its trade is in tobacco, vanilla, canela, wax, and copal. The Spaniards took the trouble to transplant some genuine cinnamon-trees from Ceylon to this locality, and they flourished for a time.

On the 30th of October we left Quito on our march across the continent, by the way of the Napo wilderness. The preparations for our departure, however, commenced long before that date. To leave Quito in any direction is the work of time. But to plunge into that *terra incognita* "el Oriente," where for weeks, perhaps months, we should be lost to the civilized world and cut off from all resources, east or west, demanded more calculation and providence than a voyage round the world.

We were as long preparing for our journey to the Amazon as in making it. In the first place, not a man in Quito could give us a single item of information on the most important and dangerous part of our route. Quitonians are not guilty of knowing any thing about trans-Andine affairs or "oriental" geography. From a few petty traders who had, to the amazement of their fellow-citizens, traversed the forest and reached the banks of the Napo, we gleaned some information which was of service. But on the passage down the Napo from Santa Rosa to the Marañon, a distance of over five hundred miles, nobody had any thing to say except the delightful intelligence that in all probability, if we escaped the fever, we would be murdered by the savages. The information we received was about as definite and reliable as Herndon obtained respecting any tributary to the Lower Amazon : "It runs a long way up ; it has rapids ; savages live upon its banks ; every thing grows there." From M. Gillette, a Swiss gentleman trad-



ing at Pará in Moyabamba hats, we learned about the movements of the Peruvian steamer on the Marañon; but how long it would take us to cross the mountains and the forest, and descend the river, we must find out by trial.

The commissary department was of primal importance. As, from all we could learn, we could not depend upon obtaining supplies from the Indians or with our guns,\* it was necessary to take provisions to last till we should reach the Marañon. But how long we should be in the forest and on the river, or what allowance to make for probable delays, it was impossible to prophesy. The utmost caution and forethought were therefore needed, for to die of starvation in the wilderness was, for all practical purposes, equivalent to falling into the hands of cannibals. As it turned out, however, we made a most fortunate hit, for on arriving at Pebas—the first village on the Marañon—we found we had just enough solid food left to have one grand jubilee dinner.

For the benefit of future travelers, and for the curiosity of others, we give the bill of fare we provided for this journey—stomachs, five; time, forty-two days:

Flour.....	100 lbs.	Sugar.....	90 lbs.	Soda.....	1 lbs.
Corn meal.....	27 “	Chocolate.....	25 “	Tea.....	2 “
Pea flour.....	30 “	Dried meat†.....	47 “	Ham.....	10 “
Mashka.....	47 “	Salt.....	10 “	Tamarinds.....	9 “
Crackers.....	100 “	Lard.....	10 “	Eggs.....	170.
Rice.....	50 “	Cream tartar. ...	1½ “	Anisado.....	pts. 5.

To this we added by purchase from the Indians a few chickens and eggs, five gallons of sirup, and a peck of rice;

\* The scarcity of game is well illustrated by the fate of Pizarro and his comrades. In returning from their expedition to the Napo country, they nearly perished with hunger, living on lizards, dogs, horses, saddles, sword-belts, etc., and reached Quito looking more like spectres than men.

† “Jerked beef,” as it is called in South America, consists of thin strips cut off the carcass after skinning and dried in the sun. The butchers do not distinguish between sirloin and round.



and on the river we helped ourselves to a little wild game, as fish, peccari, deer, and turtles' eggs. But these made only a drop in the commissary bucket; had we depended upon finding provisions on the road, we must have perished from sheer hunger. Game, in the dry season, is exceedingly scarce. Our provisions were packed in kerosene cans, a part of which were soldered up to keep out moisture (for the Valley of the Napo is a steaming vapor-bath) and to keep out the hands of Indians. More than once have these treacherous yet indispensable guides robbed the white man of his food, and then left him to his fate; we lost not a pound by theft. A four-gallon keg of aguardiente,\* from which we dealt out half a gill daily to each man, kept our Indians in good humor.

As we must ascend to the cold altitude of fifteen thousand feet, and then descend to the hot Valley of the Amazon, we were obliged to carry both woolen and cotton garments, besides rubber ponchos to shield them from the rain by day, and to form the first substratum of our bed at night. Two suits were needed in our long travel afoot through the forest; one kept dry for the nightly bivouac, the other for day service. At the close of each day's journey we doffed every thread of our wearing apparel, and donned the reserved suit, for we were daily drenched either from the heavens above or by crossing swollen rivers and seas of mud. Then, too, as boots would not answer for such kind of travel, we must take *alpárgates*, a native sandal made of the aloe fibre, and of these not a few, for a pair would hardly hold together two days. Two bales of *lienzo*, besides knives, fish-hooks, thread, beads, looking-glasses, and other trinkets, were also needed; for the Napo

\* This is the rum of the Andes, corresponding to the *cachaça* of Brazil. It is distilled from sugar-cane. When double-distilled and flavored with anise, it is called *anisado*.



Indians must be paid in such currency. There *lienzo*, not gold and silver, is the cry. On this we made a small but lawful profit, paying in Quito eighteen cents per yard, and charging on the river twenty-five.

An extensive culinary apparatus, guns and ammunition, taxidermal and medicinal chests, physical instruments, including a photographic establishment, rope, macheta, axe, saw, nails, candles, matches, and a thousand *et cætera*, completed our outfit. Among the essential *et cætera* were generous passports and mandatory letters from the President of Ecuador and the Peruvian Chargé d'Affaires, addressed to all authorities on the Napo and the Marañon. They were obligingly procured for us by Señor Hurtado, the Chilean minister (then acting for the United States), through the influence of a communication from our own government, and were of great value to the expedition.\*

\* The following is a copy of the President's order :

#### REPUBLICA DEL ECUADOR.

Ministeria de Estado }  
en el Despacho del Interior. }

Quito á 18 de Octubre, }  
de 1867. }

#### APERTORIA.

A las autoridades del transito hasta el Napo, i á los demas empleados civiles i militares de la provincia del Oriente :

El Sor. James Orton, ciudadano de los EE. UU. de América, profesor de la Universidad de Rochester en Nueva-York, i jefe de una comision científica del Instituto de Smithsonian de Washington, vá á la provincia de Oriente con el objeto de esplorarla en cumplimiento de su encargo. S.E. el Presidenta de la República ordena á U.U. presten al espresado Sor. Orton i su comitiva cuantas consideraciones merecen sus personas, i los ausilios i co-operacion que necesiten para verificar su viaje i hacer sus estudios i observaciones.

Dios gue. á U.U.

R. CARVAJAL.



## CHAPTER XII.

Departure from Quito.—Itulcachi.—A Night in a Bread-tray.—Crossing the Cordillera.—Guamani.—Papallacta.—Domiciled at the Governor's.—An Indian Aristides.—Our Peon Train.—In the Wilderness.

FORTY miles east-southeast of Quito, on the eastern slope of the Eastern Cordillera, and on the western edge of the great forest, is the Indian village of Papallacta. From the capital to this point there is a path just passable for horses; but thence to the Napo travelers must take to their feet. Through the intervention of the curate of Papallacta, who has great influence over his wild people, but who has wit enough to reside in Quito instead of his parish, we engaged the Indian governor to send over thirteen beasts and three peons to carry our party and baggage to Papallacta. Wednesday morning the quadrupeds were at the door of our hotel, five of them *bestias de silla*. These horses, judging by size, color, shape, and bony prominences, were of five different species. The saddles, likewise, differed from one another, and from any thing we had ever seen or desired to see. One of them was so narrow and deep none of us could get into it; so, filling up the cavity with blankets, we took turns in riding on the summit. By noon, October 30th, we had seen our Andean collections in the hands of arrieros bound for Guayaquil, whence they were to be shipped by way of Panama to Washington, and our baggage train for Napo headed toward the rising sun. So, mounting our jades, we defiled across the Grand Plaza and through the street of St. Augustine, and down the Carniceria to the Alameda, amid the *vivas* and *adeos* of our Qui-



tonian friends, who turned out to see the largest expedition that ever left the city for the wild Napo country since the days of Pizarro. Few there were who expected to hear of our safe arrival on the shores of the Atlantic.

Crossing the magnificent plain of Iñaquito, we reached in an hour the romantic village of Guápulo. Here is an elegant stone church dedicated to the Virgin of Guadalupe, to which the faithful make an annual pilgrimage. Thence the road led us through the valley of the Guailbamba (a tributary to the Esmeraldas), here and there blessed with signs of intelligent life—a mud hut, and little green fields of cane and alfalfa, and dotted with trees of wild cherry and myrtle, but having that air of sadness and death-like repose so inseparable from a Quitonian landscape. The greater part of this day's ride was over a rolling country so barren and dreary it was almost repulsive. What a pity the sun shines on so much useless territory!

Just before sunset we arrived at Itulcachi, a great cattle estate at the foot of the eastern chain of mountains. The hacienda had seen better days, and was poorly fitted to entertain man or beast. The major-domo, however, managed to make some small potato soup, and find us shelter for the night. In the room allotted us there were three immense kneading-troughs and two bread-boards to match, for a grist-mill and bakery were connected with the establishment. In default of beds, we made use of this furniture. Five wiser men have slept in better berths, but few have slept more soundly than we did in the bread-trays of Itulcachi.

The following day we advanced five miles to Tablon, an Indian hamlet on the mountain side. Here we waited over night for our cargo train, which had loitered on the road. This was the only spot in South America where we found



milk to our stomachs' content; Itulcachi, with its herds of cattle, did not yield a drop. Our dormitory was a mud hovel, without an aperture for light or ventilation, and in this dark hole we all slept on a heap of barley. Splendid was the view westward from Tablon. Below us were the beautiful valleys of Chillo and Puembo, separated by the isolated mountain of Ilaló; around them, in an imposing semicircle, stood Cayambi, Imbabura, Pichincha, Corazon, Iliniza, Rumiñagui, Cotopaxi, Sincholagua, and Antisana. As the sun went down in his glory behind the western range, the rocky head of Pichincha stood out in bold relief, and cast a long shadow over the plain. At this halting-place we made the mortifying discovery that the bare-legged Indian who had trotted by our side as a guide and body-servant, and whom we had ordered about with all the indifference of a surly slaveholder, was none other than his Excellency Eugenio Mancheno, governor of Papallacta! After this we were more respectful.

The next morning, our baggage having come up, we pushed up the mountain through a grand ravine, and over metamorphic rocks standing on their edges with a wavy strike, till we reached a polylepis grove, 12,000 feet above the sea. We lunched under the wide-spreading branches of these gnarled and twisted trees, which reminded us of the patriarchal olives in the Garden of Gethsemane, and then, ascending over the monotonous paramo, we stood at the elevation of 15,000 feet on the narrow summit of the Guamani ridge. Some priest had been before us and planted a cross by the roadside, to guide and bless the traveler on his way.

Of the magnificent prospect eastward, over the beginning of the Amazonian Valley, which this lofty point commands, we have already spoken. There was a wild grandeur in the scene—mountain behind mountain, with deep



intervening valleys, all covered with one thick, unbroken mass of foliage. A tiny brook, the child of everlasting snows still higher up, murmured at our feet, as if to tell us that we were on the Atlantic slope, and then dashed into the great forest, to lose itself in the mighty Amazon, and be buried with it in the same ocean grave. The trade-wind, too, came rushing by us fresh from that sea of commerce which laves the shores of two worlds. Guamani gave us also our finest view of Antisana, its snow-white dome rising out of a wilderness of mountains, and presenting on the north side a profile of the human face divine.

And now we rapidly descended by a steep, narrow path, and over paramo and bog, to a little tambo, where we had the luxury of sleeping on a bed of straw. Here we made the acquaintance of two Indians from the Napo, who were on the way to Quito with the mail—probably half a dozen letters. A strip of cloth around the loins, and a short cape just covering the shoulders, were all their habiliments. We noticed that they never sat down, though a bench was close by them; they would squat for an hour at a time. The day following we took our last horseback ride in South America. It was short, but horrible. Through quagmire and swamp, and down a flight of rocky stairs, in striking imitation of General Putnam's famous ride—over rocks, too, made wondrously slippery by a pitiless rain, but which our unshod Indian horses descended with great dexterity, only one beast and his rider taking a somerset—thus we traveled two hours, reaching Papallacta at 11 A.M.

We put up at the governor's. This edifice, the best in town, had sides of upright poles stuccoed with mud, a thatched roof, and ground floor, on which, between three stones, a fire was built for cookery and comfort. Three or four earthen kettles, and as many calabashes and wooden spoons, were the sum total of kitchen utensils. A large



flat stone, with another smaller one to rub over it, was the mill for grinding corn; and we were astonished to see how quickly our hostess reduced the grains to an impalpable meal. The only thing that looked like a bed was a stiff rawhide thrown over a series of round poles running lengthwise. This primitive couch, and likewise the whole house, the obsequious governor gave up to us, insisting upon sleeping with his wife and little ones outside, though the nights were cold and uncomfortable. Parents and children were of the earth, earthy—unwashed, uncombed, and disgustingly filthy. We found the governor one day taking lice for his lunch. Sitting behind his little boy, he picked out the little parasites with his nails, and crushed them between his teeth with a look of satisfaction. Eating lice is an old Indian custom, and universal in the Andes. In Inca times it was considered an infallible remedy against sore eyes. We have seen half a dozen women sitting on the ground in a row, picking out vermin from each other's heads. We thought the arrangement was a little unfair, for the first in the series had no lice to eat, and the animals were left to roam undisturbed in the capillary forest of the last.

Papallacta is a village of thirty dwellings, situated in a deep valley on the north slope of Antisana, nearly surrounded by an amphitheatre of sandstone and basaltic precipices. Here, too, is the terminus of the fourth great lava stream from the volcano; it is not mentioned by Humboldt. Papallacta is a thousand feet higher than Quito, yet vegetation is more tropical. Its name signifies "the potato country," but not a potato could we find here. Though Mancheno was governor, he was not really the greatest man in Papallacta. This was Carlos Caguatijo; he was the ruling man, for he could read, write, and speak Spanish, while the governor knew nothing but Quichua. Car-



los, moreover, was a good man; he had an honest, Quaker-like air about him, and his face reminded us of George Washington's. In all his transactions we noticed no attempt to prevaricate or deceive; what he promised he performed to the letter. It was refreshing to meet one such upright soul in Ecuador, though we found him not of Caucasian blood, nor dwelling under the tiled roofs of the proud capital. The old man was the spiritual father of Papallacta, and, in the absence of the curate, officiated in the little church. With him, therefore, and not with our host the governor, we negotiated for peons to take us through the wilderness.

The journey from Papallacta to the Napo occupied us thirteen days, including four days of rest. It was performed on foot, for the "road" is a trail. But the untraveled reader can have little idea of a trail in a tropical forest: fording bridgeless rivers, wading through interminable bogs, fens, marshes, quagmires, and swamps, and cutting one's way through dense vegetation, must be done to be understood. Half the year there is no intercourse between Quito and its Oriental province, for the incessant heavy rains of summer swell every rivulet into a furious torrent, and the path is overgrown and rendered impassable even by an Indian. The only time for travel is between November and April, for then, though it rains nearly every day, the clouds drop down in showers, not floods. But even then the traveler must sometimes wait two or three weeks beside a swollen river in imminent danger of starving, and throughout the journey entertain the comforting prospect that his Indians may eat up his provisions to lighten their load, or suddenly desert him as they did Dr. Jamieson. There are other routes across South America much more feasible than the one we chose; these will be described in Chapter XXIII. But they all yield in interest

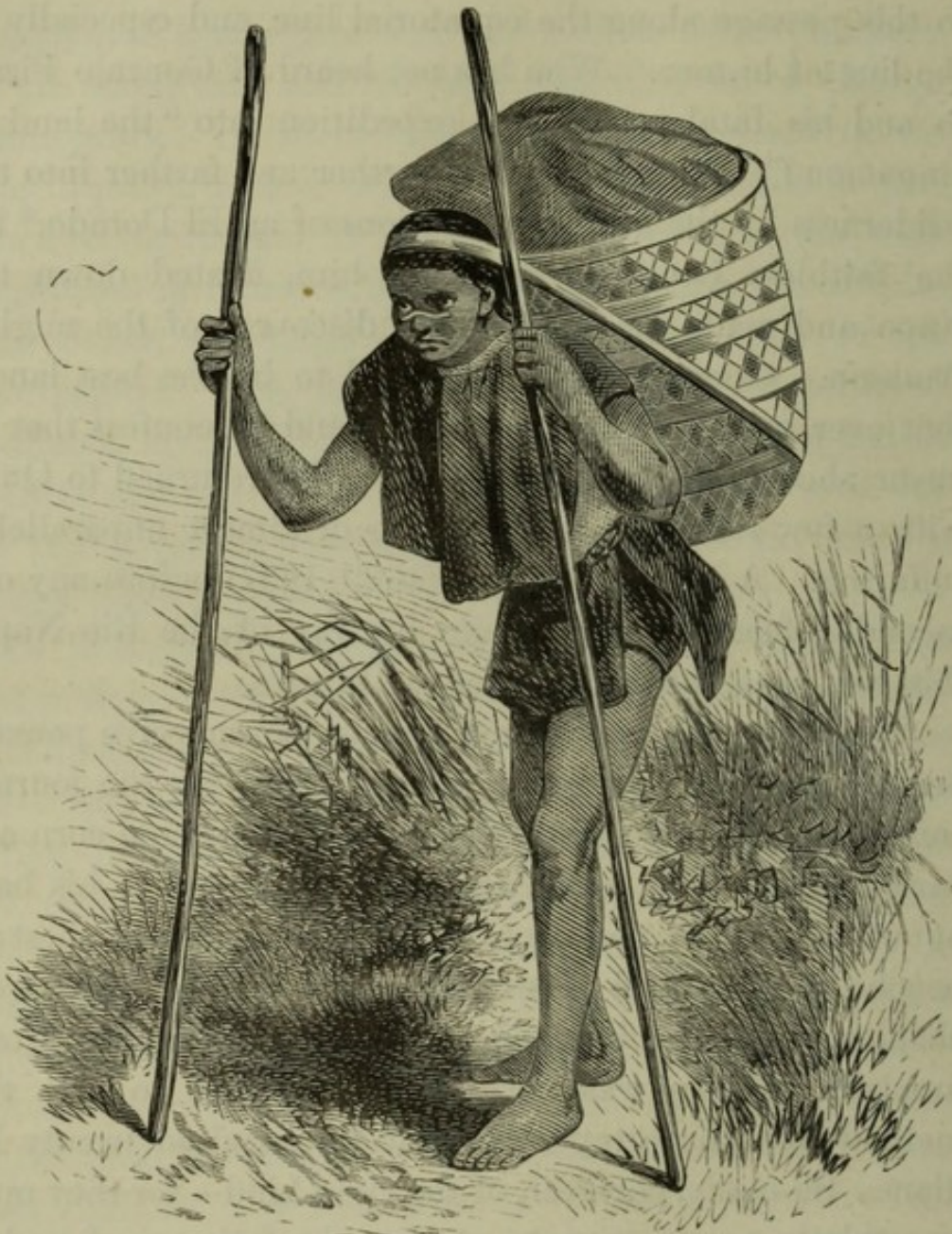


to this passage along the equatorial line, and especially in the line of history. Who has not heard of Gonzalo Pizarro and his fatal yet famous expedition into "the land of cinnamon?" How he was led farther and farther into the wilderness by the glittering illusions of an El Dorado,\* till the faithless Orellana, deserting him, floated down the Napo and made the magnificent discovery of the mighty Amazon. Gonzalo, "who was held to be the best lancer that ever went to these countries—and all confess that he never showed his back to the enemy"—returned to Quito with a few survivors to tell a tale of almost unparalleled suffering. A century elapsed (1539–1637) before any one ascended from Pará to Quito by way of the Rio Napo; this was accomplished by Pedro Teixeira.

An Indian will carry three arrobas (seventy-five pounds) besides his own provisions, his provisions for the journey consisting of about twenty-five pounds of roasted corn and barley-meal. The trunk or bundle is bound to his back by withes, which pass across the forehead and chest; a poncho or a handful of leaves protects the bare back from chafing. All our luggage (amounting to nearly fifteen hundred pounds) was divided and packed to suit this method of transportation, so that we required twenty Indians. So many, however, of the right kind—for they must be athletic young men to endure the fatigues of such a journey—could not be furnished by the little village of Papallacta, so we were obliged to wait a few days till more Indians could be summoned from a neighboring town. When these arrived, the little world of Papallacta, men, women, and children, assembled in front of the governor's house, while Don Carlos sat by our side on a raised seat by

\* The king of this fabulous land was said to wear a magnificent attire fragrant with a costly gum, and sprinkled with gold dust. His palace was of porphyry and alabaster, and his throne of ivory.





Napo Peon.

the doorway. A long parley ensued, resulting in this: that we should pay one hundred Ecuadorian dollars for the transfer of our baggage to Archidona; while Carlos solemnly promised for the young men that they should start the next morning, that they should arrive at Archidona within a stipulated time, and that they should not depend upon us for an ounce of food. The powerful influence of the curate, which we had secured, and the proclamation



from the president, which Carlos read aloud in the ears of all the people, together with the authoritative charge of Carlos himself, had the desired effect; not a transportation company in the United States ever kept its engagement more faithfully than did these twenty peons—and this, too, though we paid them in advance, according to the custom of the country. Upon a blanket spread at our feet the money was counted out, and Carlos slowly distributed it with a grave and reverend air, to every Indian five dollars.\*

Tuesday morning, November 5th, the peons promptly shouldered their burdens, and we, shod with *alpargates*, and with Alpine staff in hand (more needed here than in Switzerland), followed after, leaving the governor to sleep inside his mansion, and to eat his lice unmolested. On a little grassy knoll just outside the town our train halted for a moment—the Indians to take their fill of chicha, and bid their friends good-by, and we to call the roll and take an inventory. Our leader was Isiro, a bright, intelligent, finely-featured, stalwart Indian. He could speak Spanish, and his comrades acknowledged his superiority with marked deference. Ten women and children followed us for two days, to relieve the men of their burdens. Their assistance was not needed in the latter part of the journey, for our keen appetites rapidly lightened the provision cans. Starting again, we plunged at once into the forest, taking a northeasterly course along the left bank of a tributary

\* We give below the autograph of this wisest man in all the Oriente:

“Recibio del Señor James Orton la suma de centos (100) pesos por vente (20) peones hasta Archidona.

Carlos Casualiso



to the Coca. The ups and downs of this day's travel of twelve miles were foreshadowings of what might come in our "views afoot" in South America. We encamped at a spot the Indians called Maspa. Herndon says: "The (Peruvian) Indians take no account of time or distance; they stop when they get tired, and arrive when God pleases."\* But our Napo companions measured distance by hours quite accurately, and they always traveled as far as we were willing to follow. In ten minutes they built us a booth for the night; driving two crotchets into the ground, they joined them with a ridge-pole, against which they inclined a number of sticks for rafters. These they covered with palm-leaves, so adroitly put together that our roof was generally rain-proof. After ablution and an entire change of garments, we built a fire, using for fuel a green tree called *sindicaspi* (meaning the wood that burns), a special provision in these damp forests where every thing is dripping with moisture. The fall of a full-grown tree under the strokes of a Yankee axe was a marvel in the eyes of our Indians. Our second day's journey was far more difficult than the first, the path winding up steep mountains and down into grand ravines, for we were crossing the outlying spurs of the Eastern Cordillera. Every where the track was slippery with mud, and often we sank two feet into the mire. How devoutly we did wish that the Ecuadorian Congress was compelled to travel this horrid road once a year! At 10 o'clock we reached a lone habitation called Guila, where wooden bowls are made for the Quito market. Here we procured a fresh Indian to take the place of one of our peons who had given out under his burden. We advanced this day sixteen miles in ten hours, sleeping under an old bamboo hut beside a babbling brook bearing the euphonious name of Pachamama.

\* "Distance is frequently estimated by the time that a man will occupy in taking a chew of coca," or  $37\frac{1}{2}$  minutes.—*Herndon*.



## CHAPTER XIII.

Baeza.—The Forest.—Crossing the Cosanga.—Curi-urcu.—Archidona.—Appearance, Customs, and Belief of the Natives.—Napo and Napo River.

EIGHT hours' hard travel from Pachamama brought us to Baeza. This "Antigua Ciudad," as Villavicencio calls it, was founded in 1552 by Don Egilio Ramirez Dávalos, and named after the quite different spot where Scipio the Younger routed Asdrubal a thousand years before. It consists of two habitations, the residence of two families of Tumbaco Indians, situated in a clearing of the forest on the summit of a high ridge running along the right bank of the Coca. This point, about one hundred miles east of Quito, is important in the little traffic of the Oriente. All Indian trains from the capital to the province pass through Baeza, where the trail divides; one branch passing on easterly to San José, and thence down through Abila and Loreto to Santa Rosa; the other leading to the Napo through Archidona. Here we rested one day, taking possession of one half of the larger hut—a mere stockade with a palm-leaf roof, without chairs, chimney, or fire-place, except any place on the floor. We swung our hammocks, while our Indians stretched themselves on the ground beneath us. The island of Juan Fernandez is not a more isolated spot than Baeza. A dense forest, impenetrable save by the trails, stretches away on every side to the Andes and to the Atlantic, and northerly and southerly along the slope of the entire mountain chain. The forest is such an entangled mass of the living and the fallen, it is difficult to say which is the predominant spirit—life or death. It is the cemetery, as well as the birthplace, of a world of vegetation. The trees are more lofty than on the



Lower Amazon, and straight as an arrow, but we saw none of remarkable size. A perpetual mist seems to hang on the branches, and the dense foliage forms dark, lofty vaults, which the sunlight never enters. The soil and air are always cool, and never dry. Every thing is penetrated with dampness. All our watches stopped, and remained immovable till we reached Pará. It is this constant and excessive humidity which renders it so difficult to transport provisions or prepare an herbarium. The pending branches of moss are so saturated with moisture that sometimes the branches are broken off to the peril of the passing traveler. Yet the climate is healthy. The stillness and gloom are almost painful; the firing of a gun wakes a dull echo, and any unlooked-for noise is startling. Scarce a bird or a flower is to be seen in these sombre shades. Nearly the only signs of animal life visible thus far were insects, mostly butterflies, fireflies, and beetles. The only quadruped seen on our journey to the Napo was a *Cercoleptes* caught by the Indians. The silence is almost perfect; its chief interruption is the crashing fall of some old patriarch of the forest, overcome by the embrace of loving parasites that twine themselves about the trunk or sit upon the branches. The most striking singularity in these tropical woods is the host of lianas or air-roots of epiphytous plants, which hang down from the lofty boughs, straight as plumb-lines, some singly, others in clusters; some reaching half way to the ground, others touching it and striking their rootlets into the earth. We found lianas over one hundred feet long. Sometimes a toppling tree is caught in the graceful arms of looping *sipô*s, and held for years by this natural cable. It is these dead trunks, standing like skeletons, which give a character of solemnity to these primeval woods. The wildest disorder is seen along the mountain torrents, where the trees, prostrated by the undermining



current, lie mingled with huge stones brought down by the force of the water. In many places the crowns of stately monarchs standing on the bank interlock and form a sylvan arch over the river.

We left Baeza by the southerly trail for Archidona. From Papallacta we had traveled east, or parallel to the streams which flow down from the mountains. We were now to cross them (and their name is legion), as also the intervening ridges; so that our previous journey was nothing to that which followed. Sometimes we were climbing up an almost vertical ascent, then descending into a deep, dark ravine, to ford a furious river; while on the lowlands the path seemed lost in a jungle of bamboos, till our Indian "bushwhackers" opened a passage with their machetas, and we crept under a low arcade of foliage. This day we enjoyed something unusual in our forest trail—a distant view. The path brought us to the verge of a mountain, whence we could look down on the savage valley of the Cosanga and upward to the dazzling dome of Antisana; it was our farewell view of that glorious volcano. At the distance of twelve miles from Baeza we reached the banks of the Rio Cosanga, camping at a spot called Chiniplaya. This is the river so much dreaded by Indians and whites traversing the Napo wilderness. It is fearfully rapid—a very Tigris from its source to its junction with the Coca. The large, smooth boulders strewn along its bed show its power. Here, sixty miles from its origin in the glaciers of Antisana, it is seventy-five feet wide, but in the wet season it is one hundred yards. The day following we threaded our difficult way, a *via dolorosa*, fifteen miles up the left bank of the Cosanga, where we crossed and camped on the opposite side. The Indians had thrown a log over the deepest part of the river, and the rest we forded without much danger; but that very night the rain raised the river to such



a magnitude that the little bridge was carried off. Had we been one day later, we might have waited a week on the other side of the impassable gulf. Between this point where we forded and Chiniplaya, fifteen miles below, the barometer indicated a fall of five hundred feet. The roar of the rushing waters is like that of the sea. In the beautiful language of Darwin (*Journal*, p. 316): "The sound spoke eloquently to the geologist; the thousands and thousands of stones, which, striking against each other, made the one dull, uniform sound, were all hurrying in one direction. It was like thinking on time, when the minute that now glides past is irrecoverable. So was it with these stones. The ocean is their eternity, and each note of that wild music told of one more step toward their destiny."

On account of the heavy rain and the sickness of a peon, whom finally we were obliged to leave behind, we rested one day; but on the morrow we traveled fourteen miles, crossing the lofty Guacamayo ridge,\* fording at much risk the deep Cochachimbamba, and camping at a spot (the Indians have a name for almost any locality in the forest) called Guayusapugaru. The next day we must have advanced twenty miles, besides crossing the furious Hondachi. This river was very much swollen by the rains, and it was only by the aid of a rope that we made the passage. One stout Indian was carried down stream, but soon recovered himself.

As we had lowered our altitude since leaving Papallacta seven thousand feet, the climate was much warmer, and vegetation more prolific. Nowhere else between the Andes and the Atlantic did we notice such a majestic forest. The tree-ferns, ennobled by the tropical sun and soil, have a

\* Humboldt speaks of this as an active volcano, "from which detonations are heard almost daily." We heard nothing. It is possible that he meant Guamani.



palm-like appearance, but with rougher stems and a usual height of fifty feet. Plants akin to our "scouring rush" rise twenty-five feet. We saw to-day the "water tree," or *huadhuas* of the natives, a kind of bamboo, which sometimes yields between the joints two quarts of clear, tasteless water. Late in the evening we reached an old rancho called *Curi-urcu* ("the mountain of gold"); but we had traveled so far ahead of our cargo-train we did not see it again till the next morning. We were obliged, therefore, to sleep on the ground in our wet clothes, and put up with hard commons—half parched corn, which our Indian guides gave us, and unleavened cakes or flour-paste baked on the coals. Thence, after a short day's journey of ten miles, we arrived at Archidona, by a path, however, that was slippery with a soft yellow clay. We were a sorry-looking company, soaked by incessant rains, exhausted by perspiration, plastered with mud, tattered, and torn; but we were kindly met by the Jesuit bishop, who took us to his own habitation, where one Indian washed our feet, and another prepared a most refreshing drink of *guayusa* tea. We then took up our quarters at the Government House, opposite the bishop's, sojourning several days on account of our swollen feet, and also on account of a swollen river which ran between us and the Napo. Here we made a valuable collection of birds, lizards, fishes, and butterflies.

Archidona is situated in a beautiful plain on the high northern bank of the Misagualli, two thousand feet above the Atlantic. The site is a cleared spot in the heart of an almost boundless forest; and it was a relief, not easily conceived, to emerge from beneath the dense leafy canopy into this open space and look up to the sky and to the snowy Andes. The climate is uniform and delightful, the mean annual temperature being seventy-seven degrees. Sandflies, however, resembling our "punkies," abound; and the



natives are constantly slapping their naked sides, eating the little pests as the Papallactans do their lice.\* Archidona is the largest village in the Napo country, containing about five hundred souls. The houses are of split bamboo and palm-thatch, often hid in a plantation of yuca and plantain. The central and most important structure is the little church; its rude belfry, portico, chancel, images, and other attempts at ornament remind us of the fitting words of Mrs. Agassiz, that "there is something touching in the idea that these poor, uneducated people of the forest have cared to build themselves a temple with their own hands, lavishing upon it such ideas of beauty and taste as they have, and bringing at least their best to their humble altar." Founded by Dávalos in 1560, Archidona has been a missionary station for two hundred years. The people are child-like and docile, but the bishop confessed there was no intellectual advance. Every morning and evening, at the tinkling of a little bell, all Archidona assembled in the open porch, where the bishop taught them to sing and pray. It was a novel sight to see these children of the forest coming out of the woods on all sides and running up to the temple—for these natives, whenever they move, almost invariably go on a run. The men are tall and slim and of a dark red color, and their legs are bent backward at the knees. The governor was the only portly individual we saw. The women are short, with high shoulders, and are very timid; they seldom stand erect, and with the knees bent forward they run sneakingly to church. Their eyes have a characteristic, soft, drooping look. They carry their babes generally on the hip; not on the back, as in Quito. The men are hatless, shirtless, and shoeless; their only gar-

\* The Chasuta Indians, Herndon says, eat musquitoes that they catch on their bodies with the idea of restoring the blood which the insect has abstracted.



ments are short drawers, about six inches long, and little ponchos, both of lienzo, dyed a dark purple with achote—the red seeds of the bixa, which the cooks of Quito use to color their soups. All paint their bodies with the same pigment. The women wear a frock reaching from the waist to the knees; it is nothing more than a yard or two of lienzo wound around the body. The Archidonians are the most Christianized of all the Napo Indians, but they can not be called religious. Their rites (they can hardly be said to have a creed) are the *a, b, c*, of Romanism, mingled with some strange notions—the relics of a lost paganism. They are very superstitious, and believe, as before remarked, in the transmigration of souls. Maniacs they think are possessed by an evil demon, and therefore are treated with great cruelty. Negroes (of whom a few specimens have come up the Napo from Brazil) are held to be under the ban of the Almighty, and their color is ascribed to the singeing which they got in the flames of hell. They do not believe in disease; but, like the Mundurucus on the Tapajos, say that death is always caused by the sorceries of an enemy. They usually bury in the church or in the tambo of the deceased. Celibacy and polygamy, homicide and suicide, are rare.

The only sign of industry in Archidona is the manufacture of pita thread from the aloe. It is exported to Quito on human backs. The inhabitants also collect copal at the headwaters of the Hondachi, and use it for illumination. It can be bought in Archidona for three or four cents a pound. The gum exudes from a lofty leguminous tree having an oak-like bark. It resembles the animé of Madagascar rather than the copal of India, which flows from an entirely different tree. Guayusa, or “Napo tea,” is another and celebrated production of Archidona. It is the large leaf of a tall shrub growing wild. An infusion of



guayusa, like the *maté* of Paraguay (which belongs to the same genus *Ilex*), is so refreshing it supplies for a long time the place of food. The Indians will go to Quito on this beverage alone, its virtues being similar to those of *coca*, on the strength of which the posts of the Incas used to travel incredible distances. It is by no means, however, such a stimulant. It is a singular fact, observes Dr. Jameson, that tea, coffee, cacao, *maté*, and guayusa contain the same alkaloid caffeine. The last, however, contains only one fifteenth as much of the active principle as tea, and no volatile oil. Herndon found guayusa on the Ucayali.

At Archidona we took a new set of peons for Napo, as the Papallactans do not travel farther. The distance is sixteen miles, and the path is comparatively good, though it crosses two rivers, the Misagualli and Tena. On this journey we found the only serpent seen since leaving Quito. This solitary specimen was sluggish and harmless, but exceedingly beautiful. It was the *Amphisbæna fuliginosa*, or "slow-worm." It lives in the chambers of the Saüba ants. We met a procession of these ants, each carrying a circular piece of a leaf vertically over its head. These insects are peculiar to tropical America, and are much dreaded in Brazil, where they soon despoil valuable trees of their foliage. They cut the leaves with their scissor-like jaws, and use them to thatch the domes at the entrance of their subterranean dwellings.

At Napo we took possession of the governor's house. Each village in the Napo province was obliged to build an edifice of split bamboo for that dignitary; and, as he no longer exists, they are left unoccupied. They generally stand on the highest and best site in the town, and are a god-send to travelers. Immediately on our arrival, the Indian governor and his staff of justices called to see what we wanted, and during our stay supplied us with chickens,



eggs, plantains, yucas, and fuel. His excellency would always come, silver-headed cane in hand, though the justices had only six eggs or a single fowl to bring us. The alcalde also paid us his respects. He is an old blanco (as the whites are called), doing a little traffic in gold dust, lienzo, and pita, but is the highest representative of Ecuador in the Napo country. Here, too, we met, to our great delight, Mr. George Edwards, a native of Connecticut, who has settled himself, probably for life, in the depths of this wilderness. He was equally rejoiced to see the face and hear the speech of a countryman. His industry and upright character have won for him the respect and good-will of the Indians, and he is favorably known in Quito. The government has given him a tract of land on the Yusupino, two miles west of Napo village. Here he is cultivating vanilla, of which he has now three thousand plants, and also his patience, for six years elapse after transplanting before a pod appears. He has been so long in the country (thirteen years) his English would now and then run off into Spanish or Quichua.

Napo is prettily situated on the left bank of the Rio Napo, a dense forest inclosing it on every side. The maximum number of inhabitants is eighty families; but many of these are in town only in festival seasons. It was well for us that we reached the Napo during the feasts; otherwise we might not have found men enough to man our canoes down the river. There are three or four blancos, petty merchants, who follow the old Spanish practice of compulsory sales, forcing the Indians to take lienzo, knives, beads, etc., at exorbitant prices, and making them pay in gold dust and pita. This kind of commerce is known under the name of *repartos*. It is hard to find an Indian whose gold or whose labor is not claimed by the blancos. The present and possible productions of this region are:



bananas, plantains, yucas,\* yams, sweet potatoes, rice, beans, corn, lemons, oranges, chirimoyas, anonas (a similar fruit to the preceding), pine-apples, palm cabbages, guavas, guayavas, castor-oil beans, coffee, cacao, cinnamon, India-rubber, vanilla (two kinds),† chonta-palm nuts, sarsaparilla, con-trayerva (a mint), tobacco (of superior quality), and guayusa; of woods, balsam, red wood, Brazil wood, palo de cruz, palo de sangre, ramo caspi, quilla caspi, guayacan (or "holy wood," being much used for images), ivory palm, a kind of ebony, cedar, and aguana (the last two used for making canoes); of dyewoods, sarne (dark red), tinta (blue), terriri, and quito (black); of gums, estoraque (a balsam) and copal, besides a black beeswax, the production of a small (Trigona) bee, that builds its comb in the ground; of manufactures, pita, hammocks, twine, calabashes, aguardiente (from the plantain), chicha (from the yuca),‡ sugar and molasses (from the cane, which grows luxuriantly), and manati-lard; of minerals, gold dust. The gold, in minute spangles, is washed down by the rivers at flood time, chiefly from the Llanganati Mountains. The articles desired in exchange are lienzo, thread, needles, axes, hoes, knives, fish-hooks, rings, medals, crosses, beads, mirrors, salt, and poison. Quito nearly monopolizes the trade; though a few canoes go down the Napo to the Marañon after salt and poison. The salt comes from near Chasuta, on the Huallaga;§ the *urari* from the Ticuna Indians. It takes about twenty

\* Sometimes called *yuca dulce*, or sweet yuca, to distinguish it from the *yuca brava*, or wild yuca, the mandioca of the Amazon, from which farina is made. The yuca is the beet-like root of a little tree about ten feet high. It is a good substitute for potatoes and bread.

† Vanilla belongs to the orchid family, and is the only member which possesses any economical value. It is a graceful climber and has a pretty star-like flower.

‡ In Peru, the liquor made from yuca is called *masato*.

§ Rock-salt is found on both sides of the Andes. "The general character of the geology of these countries would rather lead to the opinion that its origin is in some way connected with volcanic heat at the bottom of the sea." —Darwin's *Observations*, pt. iii., p. 235.



days to paddle down to the Marañon, and three months to pole up. The Napo is navigable for a flat-bottomed steamer as far as Santa Rosa,\* and it is a wonder that Anglo-Saxon enterprise has not put one upon these waters. The profits would be great, as soon as commercial relations with the various tribes were established.† Four yards of coarse cotton cloth, for example, will exchange for one hundred pounds of sarsaparilla. *Urari* is sold at Napo for its weight in silver. By a decree of the Ecuadorian Congress, there will be no duty on foreign goods entering the Napo for twenty years. The Napo region, under proper cultivation, would yield the most valuable productions of either hemisphere in profusion. But agriculture is unknown; there is no word for plow. The natives spend most of their time in idleness, or feasting and hunting. Their weapons are blow-guns and wooden spears; our guns they call by a word which signifies "thunder and lightning." Laying up for the future or for commerce is foreign to their ideas. The houses are all built of bamboo tied together with lianas, and shingled with leaves of the sunipanga palm. The Indians are peaceful, good-natured, and idle. They seldom steal any thing but food. Their only stimulants are chicha, guayusa, and tobacco. This last they roll up in plantain leaves and smoke, or snuff an infusion of it through the nose from the upper bill of a toucan. "The Peruvians (says Prescott, quoting Garcilasso) differ from every other Indian nation to whom tobacco was known by using it only for medicinal purposes in the form of snuff." There is no bread on the Napo; the nearest ap-

\* "The Napo (Herndon was told) is very full of sand-banks, and twenty days from its mouth (or near the confluence of the Curaray) the men have to get overboard and drag the canoes!"—*Report*, p. 229.

† The chief difficulty throughout the Upper Amazon is in getting the Indians to concentrate along the bank. But honorable dealing would accomplish this in time.



proach to flour is yuca starch. There are no clocks or watches; time is measured by the position of the sun. The mean temperature at Napo village is about one degree warmer than that of Archidona. Its altitude above the sea is 1450 feet. The nights are cool, and there are no mosquitoes; but sand-flies are innumerable. Jiggers also have been seen. There are no well-defined wet and dry seasons; but the most rain falls in May, June, and July. The lightning, Edwards informed us, seldom strikes. Dysentery, fevers, and rheumatism are the prevailing diseases; and we saw one case of goître. But the climate is considered salubrious. Few twins are born; and there are fewer children than in Archidona—a difference ascribed by some to the exposure of the Napo people in gold washing; by others to the greater quantity of guayusa drunk by the Archidonians.

The Napo is the largest river in the republic. From its source in the oriental defiles of Cotopaxi and Sincholagua to its embouchure at the Marañon, its length is not far from eight hundred miles, or about twice that of the Susquehanna.\* From Napo village to the mouth of the river our barometer showed a fall of a thousand feet. At Napo the current is six miles an hour; between Napo and Santa Rosa there are rapids; and between Santa Rosa and the Marañon the rate is not less than four miles an hour. At Napo the breadth is about forty yards; at Coca the main channel is fifteen hundred feet wide; and at Camindo it

\* Its actual source is the Rio del Valle, which runs northward through the Valle Vicioso. Its longest tributary, the Curaray, rises only a few miles to the south in the Cordillera de los Mulatos. The two rivers run side by side 4° of longitude before meeting. Coca, the northern branch, originates in the flanks of Cayambi. The Napo and its branches are represented incorrectly in every map we have examined. The Aguarico is confounded with the Santa Maria and made too long, and the Curaray is represented too far above the mouth of the Napo. There are no settlements between Coca and Camindo.



is a full Spanish mile. Below Coca the river throws out numerous canals, which, isolating portions of the forest-clad lowlands, create numerous picturesque islands. Around and between them the river winds, usually making one bend in every league. The tall trees covering them are bound together by creeping plants into a thick jungle, the home of capybaras and the lair of the jaguar. The islands, entirely alluvial, are periodically flooded, and undergo a constant round of decay and renovation. Indeed, the whole river annually changes its channel, so that navigation is somewhat difficult. The Indians, on coming to a fork, were frequently at a loss to know which was the main channel. Then, too, the river is full of snags and *plaias*, or low, shelving sand-banks, rising just above the water-level—the resort of turtles during the egg season. It was interesting to trace the bed of the river as we floated down; on the rapid slope of the Cordilleras rushing over or rolling along huge boulders, which farther on were rapidly reduced in size, till, in time, boulders were broken into pebbles, pebbles turned into sand, and sand reduced to impalpable mud.\* The *plaias* are not auriferous. Below Coca there is a wilderness of lagunes, all connected with the river, the undisturbed retreat of innumerable waterfowl. The only spot on the Napo where the underlying rocks are exposed is near Napo village. There it is a dark slate, gently dipping east. Farther west, in fact, throughout this side of the Andes, the prevailing rock is mica-schist. But the entire Napo country is covered with an alluvial bed, on the average ten feet thick.

\* From specimens of sand which we obtained at different points in descending the river, we find that at Coca it contains 17.5 per cent. of pure quartz grains, the rest being colored dark with augite; at the mouth of the Napo there is 50 per cent. of pure quartz, the other half being light-colored and feldspathic.



## CHAPTER XIV.

Afloat on the Napo.—Down the Rapids.—Santa Rosa and its mulish Alcalde.—Pratt on Discipline.—Forest Music.—Coca.—Our Craft and Crew.—Storm on the Napo.

WE embarked November 20th on our voyage down the river. It is no easy matter to hire or cajole the Indians for any service. Out of feast-time they are out of town, and during the festival they are loth to leave, or are so full of chicha they do not know what they want. We first woke up the indolent alcalde by showing him the President's order, and then used him to entice or to compel (we know not his motive power) eight Indians, including the governor, to take us to Santa Rosa. We paid them about twenty-four yards of lienzo, the usual currency here. They furnished three canoes, two for baggage and one covered with a palm-leaf awning for ourselves. The canoes were of red cedar, and flat-bottomed; the paddles had oval blades, to which short, quick strokes were given perpendicularly to the water entering and leaving. But there was little need of paddling on this trip.

The Napo starts off in furious haste, for the fall between Napo village and Santa Rosa, a distance of eighty miles, is three hundred and fifty feet. We were about seven hours in the voyage down, and it takes seven days to pole back. The passage of the rapids is dangerous to all but an Indian. As Wallace says of a spot on the Rio Negro, you are bewildered by the conflicting motions of the water. Whirling and boiling eddies burst as if from some subaqueous explosion; down currents are on one side of the canoe, and an up current on the other; now a cross stream



at the bows and a diagonal one at the stern, with a foaming Scylla on your right and a whirling Charybdis on the left. But our nervousness gave way to admiration as our popero, or pilot, the sedate governor, gave the canoe a sheer with the swoop of his long paddle, turning it gracefully around the corner of a rock against which it seemed we must be dashed, and we felt like joining in the wild scream of the Indians as our little craft shot like an arrow past the danger and down the rapids, and danced on the waters below.

In four hours we were abreast the little village of Aguanó; on the opposite bank we could see the tambos of the gold washers. At 5 P.M. we reached the deserted site of Old Santa Rosa, the village having been removed a few years ago on account of its unhealthy location. It is now overgrown with sour orange and calabash trees, the latter bearing large fruit shells so useful to the Indians in making pilches or cups. In pitch darkness and in a drizzling rain we arrived at New Santa Rosa, and swung our hammocks in the Government House.

Santa Rosa, once the prosperous capital of the Provincia del Oriente, now contains about two hundred men, women, and children. The town is pleasantly situated on the left bank of the river, about fifteen feet above the water level. A little bamboo church, open only when the missionary from Archidona makes his annual visit, stood near our quarters. The Indians were keeping one of their seven feasts in a hut near by, and their drumming was the last thing we heard as we turned into our hammocks, and the first in the morning. The alcalde, Pablo Sandoval, is the only white inhabitant, and he is an Indian in every respect save speech and color. His habitation is one of the largest structures on the Napo; the posts are of chonta-palm, the sides and roof of the usual material—split bamboo and





Papaya-tree.

palm leaves. It is embowered in a magnificent grove of plantains and papayas. In the spacious vestibule is a bench, on which the Indian governor and his staff seat themselves every morning to confer with the alcalde. In one corner stands a table (the only one we remember seeing on the Napo); on the opposite side are heaped up jars, pots, kettles, hunting and fishing implements, paddles, bows and arrows. Between the posts swing two chambiri hammocks. From Santa Rosa to Pará the hammock answers for chair, sofa, *tête-à-tête*, and bed. When a stranger enters, he is invited to sit in a hammock; and at Santa Rosa we were always pre-

sented with a cup of guayusa; in Brazil with a cup of coffee. Sandoval wore nothing but shirt and pantaloons; the dignity of the barefooted functionary was confined to his Spanish blood. He had lived long among the Zaparos; and from him, his daughter, and a Zaparo servant, we obtained much valuable information respecting that wild and little-known tribe.

At Santa Rosa we procured Indians and canoes for the Marañon. This was not easily done. The Indians seemed reluctant to quit their feasts and go on such a long voyage,



and the alcalde was unwilling they should go, and manufactured a host of lies and excuses. He declared there was but one large canoe in town, and that we must send to Suno for another, and for men to man it. There were indeed few Indians in Santa Rosa, for while we were disputing a large number went off with shoutings down the river, to spend weeks in the forest hunting monkeys.\* It was a stirring sight to see these untamed red men in the depths of the Napo wilderness starting on a monkey crusade; but it was still more stirring to think of paddling our own canoe down to Brazil. After some time lost in word-fighting, we tried the virtues of authority. We presented the president's order, which commanded all civil and military powers on the Napo to aid, and not to hinder, the expedition; then we put into his hand an official letter from the alcalde of Napo (to whom Pablo was subordinate), which, with a flourish of dignified Spanish, threatened Santa Rosa with the doom of Sodom and Gomorrah if any impediment was placed in our way.

To all this Edwards, who had kindly accompanied us down the river thus far, added, with frightful gestures, that he purposed to report him to the Quito government. After this bombardment Sandoval was another man, and the two canoes and four Indians we wanted were forthcoming. We had to wait, however, two days for the Indians to prepare their chicha for the journey and to cover the canoes with palm awnings. The price of a canoe for the Marañon is twenty-five varas of lienzo, and the same for each Indian. Unfortunately we had only fifty varas left; but, through the influence of the now good-natured alcalde, we induced the Indians to take the balance in coin. After many de-

\* Monkeys form an article of food throughout tropical America. The meat is tough, but keeps longer than any other in that climate. The Indians told Gibbon that "the tail is the most delicate part when the hair is properly singed."



lays, we put our baggage into one canoe, and ourselves into the other, and pushed off into the rapid current of the Napo. We had three styles of valediction on leaving. Our Indian quartet, after several last drinks of chicha, bade their friends farewell by clasping hands, one kissing the joined hands, and then the other. Sandoval muttered *adios* in reply to ours, meaning, no doubt, good riddance, while we shouted a hearty good-bye to Edwards as he pushed his way up stream to continue his lonely but chosen Indian life on the banks of the Yusupino.

The Napo at Santa Rosa runs at least five miles an hour, and we were soon picking our way—now drifting, now paddling—through a labyrinth of islands and snags. The Indians, so accustomed to brutal violence from the hands of the whites, had begged of us, before our departure, that we would not beat them. But shortly after we left, one of them, who was literally filled with chicha, dropped his paddle and tumbled into a heap at the bottom of the canoe, dead drunk. Pratt, our gigantic Mississippi boatman, whom we had engaged at Quito as captain and cook down the river, and who was an awful Goliath in the eyes of the red-skins, seized the fellow and gave him a terrible shaking, the like of which was never seen or heard of in all Napo. At once the liquor left the muddled brain of the astonished culprit, and, taking his paddle, he became from that hour the best of the crew. This was the only case of discipline on the voyage. Always obsequious, they obeyed us with fear and trembling. None of them could speak Spanish, so we had provided ourselves with a vocabulary of Quichua. But some English words, like the imperative *paddle!* were more effective than the tongue of the Incas. Indeed, when we mixed up our Quichua with a little Anglo-Saxon, they evidently thought the latter was a terrible anathema, for they sprang to their places without delay.



In seven hours we arrived at Suno, a collection of half a dozen palm booths, five feet high, the miserable owners of which do a little fishing and gold-washing. They gave us possession of their largest hut, in which they had been roasting a sea-cow, and the stench was intolerable. Nevertheless, one of our number bravely threw down his blanket within, and went to sleep; two swung their hammocks between the trees, and the rest slept in the canoe. Here, for the first time since leaving Guayaquil, we were tormented by mosquitoes. Bats were also quite numerous, but none of them were blood-thirsty; and we may add that nowhere in South America were we troubled by those diabolical imps of imaginative travelers, the leaf-nosed species. So far as our experience goes, we can say, with Bates, that the vampire, so common on the Amazon, is the most harmless of all bats. It has, however, a most hideous physiognomy. A full-grown specimen will measure twenty-eight inches in expanse of wing. Bates found two species on the Amazon—one black, the other of a ruddy hue, and both fruit-eaters.

The nocturnal music of these forests is made by crickets and tree-toads. The voice of the latter sounds like the cracking of wood. Occasionally frogs, owls, and goat-suckers croak, hoot, and wail. Between midnight and 3 A.M. almost perfect silence reigns. At early dawn the animal creation awakes with a scream. Pre-eminent are the discordant cries of monkeys and macaws. As the sun rises higher, one musician after another seeks the forest shade, and the morning concert ends at noon. In the heat of the day there is an all-pervading rustling sound, caused by the fluttering of myriad insects and the gliding of lizards and snakes. At sunset parrots and monkeys resume their chatter for a season, and then give way to the noiseless flight of innumerable bats chasing the hawk-moth



and beetle. There is scarcely a sound in a tropical forest which is joyous and cheering. The birds are usually silent; those that have voices utter a plaintive song, or hoarse, shrill cry. Our door-yards are far more melodious on a May morning. The most common birds on the Napo are macaws, parrots, toucans, and ciganas. The parrots, like the majority in South America, are of the green type. The toucan, peculiar to the New World, and distinguished by its enormous bill, is a quarrelsome, imperious bird. It is clumsy in flight, but nimble in leaping from limb to limb. It hops on the ground like a robin, and makes a shrill yelping—*pia-po-o-co*. Ecuadorians call it the *predicador*, or preacher, because it wags its head like a priest, and seems to say, "God gave it you." The feathers of the breast are of most brilliant yellow, orange, and rose colors, and the robes of the royal dames of Europe in the sixteenth century were trimmed with them. The cigana or "gypsy" (in Peru called "chansu") resembles a pheasant. The flesh has a musky odor, and it is for this reason, perhaps, that they exist in such numbers throughout the country. The Indians never eat them. In no country as in the Amazonian Valley is there such a variety of insects; nowhere do we find species of larger size or greater beauty. It is the richest locality for butterflies; Bates found twelve hundred species in Brazil alone, or three times as many as in all Europe. The splendid metallic-blue, and the yellow and transparent-winged, are very abundant on the Napo; some rise high in the air; others, living in societies, look like fluttering clouds. Moths are comparatively rare. The most conspicuous beetle on the river is a magnificent green species (*Chrysophora chrysochlora*), always found arboreal, like the majority of tropical coleopters; they look like emerald gems clinging to the branches. There are two kinds of bees, the black and yellow, which the Napos name re-

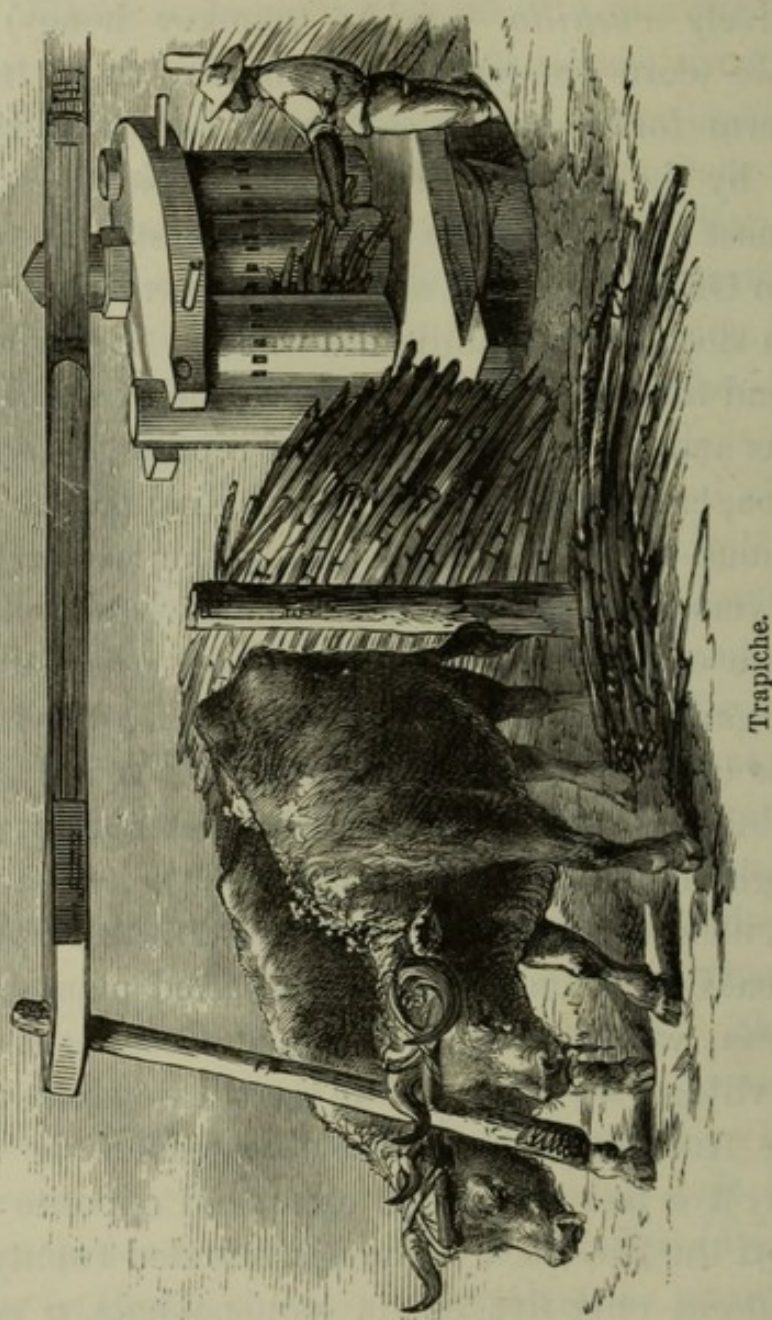


spectively *cushillo mishke* (monkey honey) and *sara mishke* (corn honey). It is singular these Indians have no term for bees, but call them honey, and distinguish them by their color. The black species is said to make the most honey, and the yellow the best. The quadrupeds of the Oriente are few and far between in the dry season. Not a sloth nor armadillo did we see. But when the rains descend the wilderness is a menagerie of tigers and tapirs, pumas and bears, while a host of reptiles, led by the gigantic boa, creep forth from their hiding-places. The most ferocious carnivores are found in the mountains, and the most venomous serpents haunt the lowlands. Darwin says that we ought not to expect any closer similarity between the organic beings on the opposite sides of the Andes than on the opposite shores of the ocean. We will remark that we obtained a peccari, a number of birds not accustomed to high flights, and five reptilian species, on the Pacific slope, identical with species found on the Napo.

Breakfasting on fried yucas, roasted plantains, fish, and guayusa, we set sail, arriving at Coca at 2 P.M. This little village, the last we shall see till we come within sight of the Amazon, is beautifully located on the right bank, twenty-five feet above the river, and opposite the confluence of the Rio Coca. Though founded twenty years ago, it contains only five or six bamboo huts, a government-house, church, alcalde's residence, and a *trapiche* for the manufacture of aguardiente and sirup from the cane.\* The alcalde was a worthless blanco, who spent most of his time swinging in a hammock slung between the posts of his veranda, and playing with a tame parrot when not drunk or asleep. This spot is memorable in history. Pizarro having reached it from Quito by way of Baeza and

\* The *trapiche* or sugar-mill of the Andes is a rude affair. The cane is pressed between cogged wooden cylinders worked by bullocks, and the juice is received in troughs made of hollowed logs.





the Coca, halted and built a raft or canoe (Prescott says a brig), in which Orellana was sent down the river to reconnoitre, but who never returned. Up to this point the Napo has an easterly course; but after receiving the Coca, it turns to the southeast. We remained here two days to construct a more comfortable craft for our voyage to the Amazon, a distance of at least five hundred miles. The canoe is the only means of navigation known to the Indians. But the



idea of spending fifteen days cooped, cribbed, and cramped in a narrow canoe, exposed to a tropical sun and furious rains, was intolerable.

Our Santa Rosa canoes were about thirty feet long. These were placed about five feet apart and parallel, and then firmly secured by bamboo joists. Over these we spread a flooring of split bamboo, and planted four stout chonta sticks to support a palm-thatched roof. A rudder (a novel idea to our red-skinned companions), and a box of sand in the stern of one of the boats for a fire-place, completed our rig. The alcalde, with a hiccough, declared we would be forever going down the river in such a huge craft, and the Indians smiled ominously. But when our gallant ship left Coca obediently to the helm, and at the rate of six miles an hour when paddles and current worked together, they shouted "*bueno!*" Our trunks and provision-cans were arranged along the two sides of the platform, so that we had abundance of room for exercise by day and for sleeping under mosquito-tents at night. A little canoe, which we bought of the alcalde, floated alongside for a tender, and was very serviceable in hunting, gathering fuel, etc. In the "forecastle"—the bows of the large canoes which projected beyond our cabin—sat three Indians to paddle. The fourth, who was the governor of Santa Rosa, we honored with the post of steersman; and he was always to be seen on the poop behind the kitchen, standing bolt upright, on the alert and on the lookout. On approaching any human habitation, the Indians blew horns to indicate that they came as friends. These horns must have come from Brazil, as there are no bovines on the Napo. Whenever they enter an unknown lagoon they blow their horns also to charm the *yacu-mama*, or mother-of-waters, as they call the imaginary serpent.

At different points down the river they deposited pots



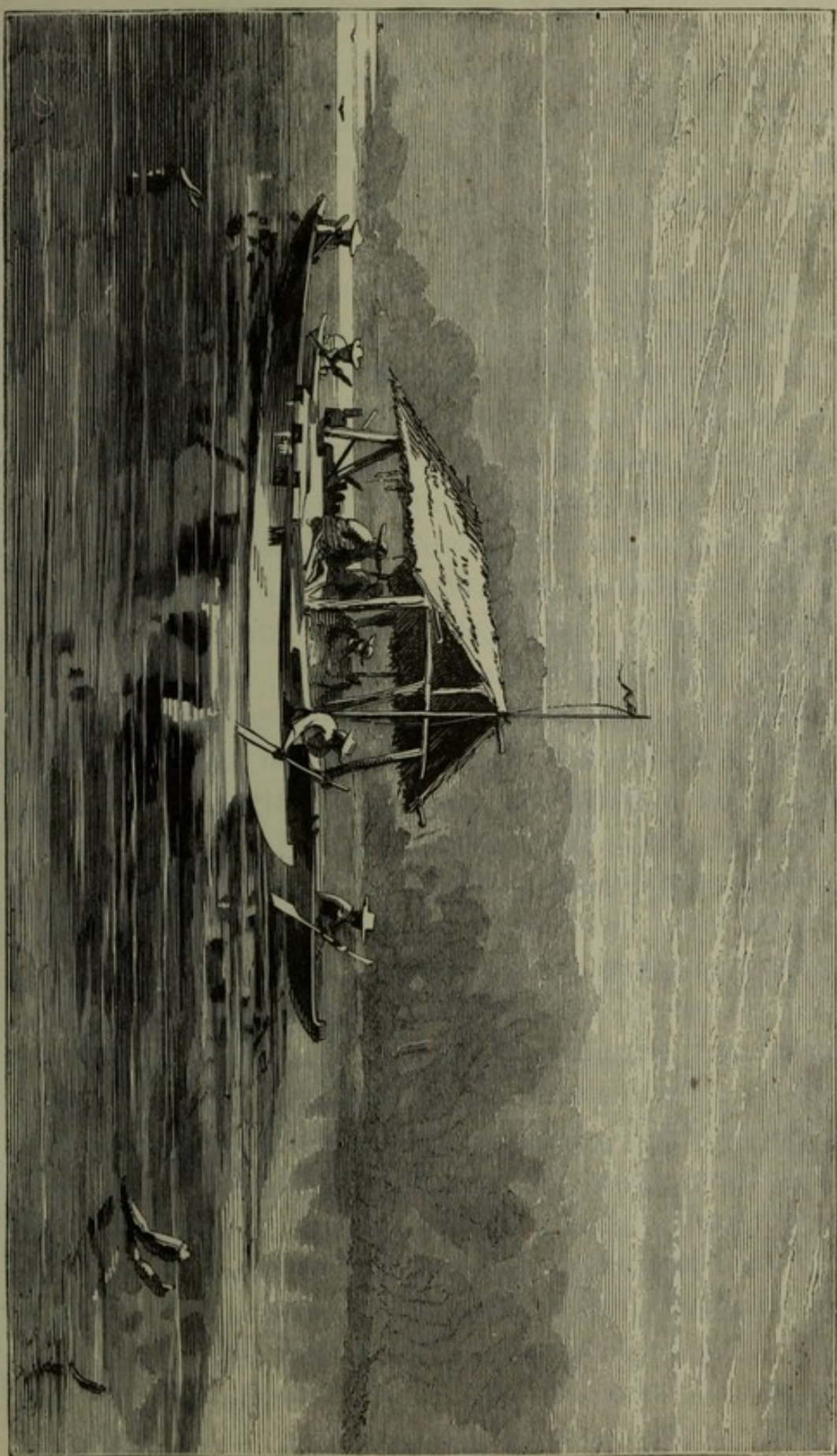
of chicha for use on their return. The mass breeds worms so rapidly, however, as Edwards informed us, that after the lapse of a month or two it is a jumble of yuca scraps and writhing articulates. But the owner of the heap coolly separates the animal from the vegetable, adds a little water, and drinks his chicha without ceremony. During leisure hours the Indians busied themselves plaiting palm leaves into ornaments for their arms and heads. Not a note did they whistle or sing. Yet they were always in good humor, and during the whole voyage we did not see the slightest approach to a quarrel. At no time did we have the least fear of treachery or violence.

The Napos are not savages. Their goodness, however, as Bates says of the Cucáma tribe, consists more in the absence of active bad qualities than in the possession of good ones. Of an apathetic temperament and dull imagination, we could not stir them into admiration or enthusiasm by any scientific wonder; the utmost manifestation of surprise was a cluck with the tongue.\* Upon presenting the governor with a vest, he immediately cut off the buttons, and, dividing the cloth into four parts, shared it with his fellows.† When it rained they invariably took off their ponchos, but in all our intercourse with these wild men we never noticed the slightest breach of modesty. They strictly maintained a decent arrangement of such apparel as they possessed. A canoe containing a young Indian, his bride, and our governor's wife and babe, accompanied us down to the Marañon. They were going after a load of salt for Sandoval. The girl was a graceful paddler, and

\* Bates says the Mundurucus express surprise by making a clicking sound with their teeth, and Darwin observes that the Fuegians have the habit of making a chuckling noise when pleased.

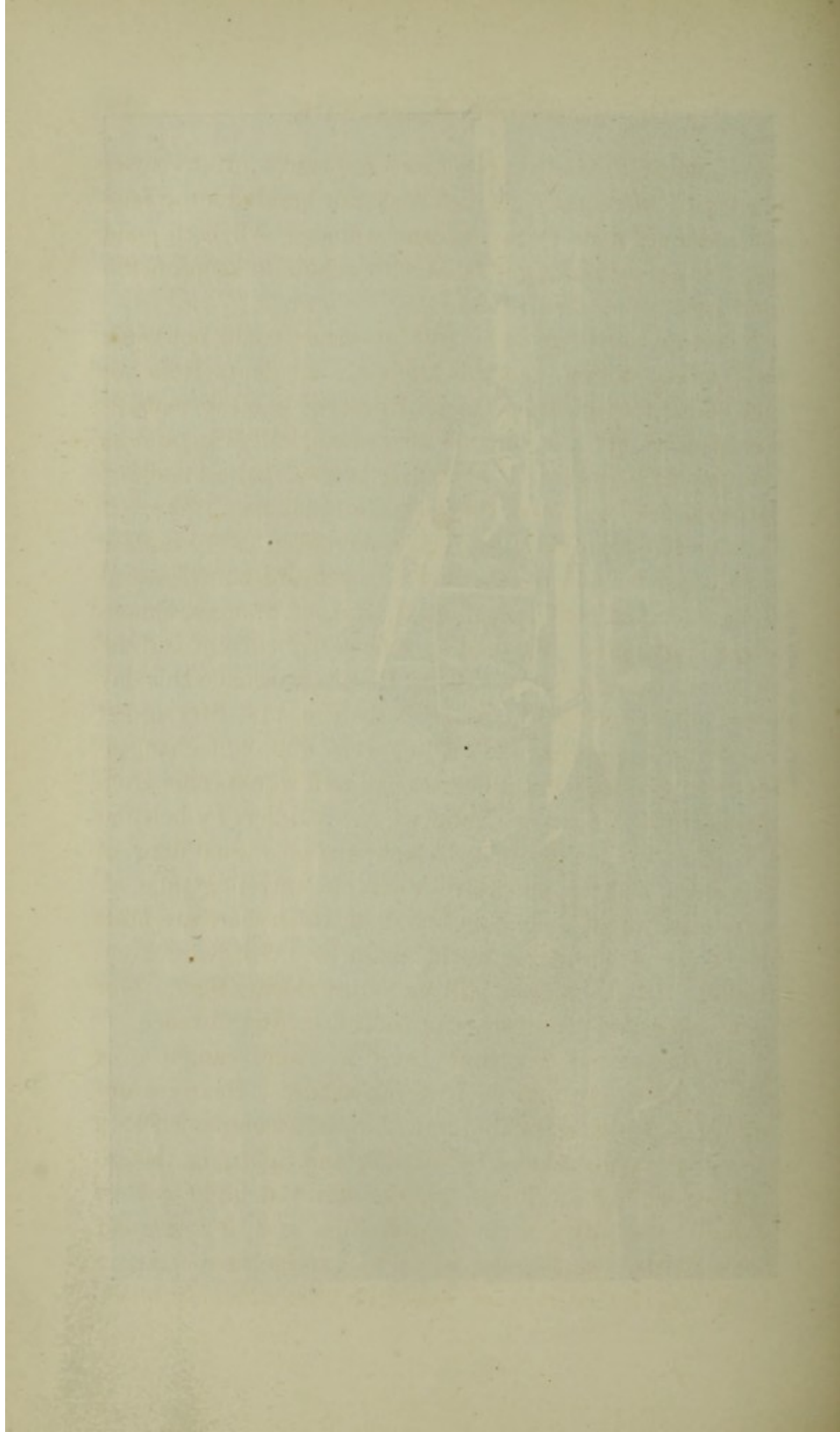
† The like perfect equality exists among the Fuegian tribes. "A piece of cloth given to one is torn into shreds and distributed, and no one individual becomes richer than another."—*Darwin*.





Our Craft on the Napo.







had some well-founded pretensions to beauty. Her coarse, black hair was simply combed back, not braided into plaits as commonly done by the Andean women. All, both male and female, painted their faces with achote to keep off the sand-flies.

Pratt managed the helm (the governor could not work the Yankee notion) and the kitchen. At Santa Rosa we had added to our Quito stock of provisions some manati-lard (bottled up in a joint of a bamboo) and sirup, and at Coca we took in three fowls, a bag of rice, and a bunch of bananas. So we fared sumptuously every day. We left Coca on Thanksgiving Day, November 28th, and to imitate our distant friends, we sacrificed an extra meal—fricasseed chicken, jerked beef, boiled yucas, bananas, oranges, lemonade, and guayusa. Favored by a powerful current and the rhythmic paddling of our Santa Rosans, we made this day sixty miles; but our average daily run was fifty miles. The winds (doubtless the trades) were almost unchangeably from the east; but an occasional puff would come from the northwest, when we relieved our paddlers by hoisting a blanket for a sail. Six o'clock was our usual hour of departure, and ten or twelve hours our traveling time, always tying up at a plaia or island, of which there are hosts in the Napo, but never to the main land, for fear of unfriendly Indians and the still more unwelcome tiger. Our crew encamped at a respectful though hailing distance.

On the second day from Coca we were caught in a squall, and to save our roof we ran ashore. Nearly every afternoon we were treated to a shower, accompanied by a strong wind, but seldom by thunder and lightning, though at Coca we had a brilliant thunder-storm at night. They always came after a uniform fashion and at a regular hour, so that we learned when to expect them. About noon the eastern horizon would become suddenly black,



and when this had spread to the zenith we heard the rush of a mighty wind sweeping through the forest, and the crash of falling trees, and then down fell the deluge. The Indians have a saying that "the path of the sun is the path of the storm." These storm-clouds moved rapidly, for in half an hour all was quiet on the Napo. At Quito, two hundred miles west, the usual afternoon shower occurs two hours later. To-day we enjoyed our last glimpse of the Andes. Far away across the great forest we had traversed we could see the beautiful cone of Cotopaxi and the flat top of Cayambi standing out in proud pre-eminence. Long will it be ere we forget this farewell view of the magnificent Cordillera.



## CHAPTER XV.

Sea-Cows and Turtles' Eggs.—The Forest.—Peccaries.—Indian Tribes on the Lower Napo.—Anacondas and Howling Monkeys.—Insect Pests.—Battle with Ants.—Barometric Anomaly.—First View of the Amazon.—Pebas.

THE thirtieth of November was an exciting day on the monotonous Napo. We fell in with numerous sea-cows sporting in the middle of the stream. They were greatly disturbed by the sight of our huge craft, and, lifting their ugly heads high out of the water, gave a peculiar snort, as if in defiance, but always dived out of sight when fired upon. The sea-cow is called *vaca marina* by the Spaniards, *peixe boy* by the Brazilians, and *manati* in the West Indies. It has no bovine feature except in its upper lip. The head and skin remind one of a large seal. In many respects it may be likened to a hippopotamus without tusks or legs. It has a semicircular flat tail, and behind the head are two oval fins, beneath which are the breasts, which yield a white milk. The flesh resembles pork, with a disagreeable, fishy flavor.

To-day we anchored at several plaias to hunt turtles' eggs. Our Indians were very expert in finding the nests. Guided approximately by the tracks of the *tortugas*, as the turtles are called, they thrust a stick into the sand, and wherever it went down easily they immediately commenced digging with their hands, and invariably "struck" eggs. In four nests, whose contents we counted, there were one hundred and thirty-two, one hundred and fourteen, one hundred and twelve, and ninety-seven; but we have heard of one hundred and sixty eggs in a single nest. The tur-



tles lay in the night, and in pits about two feet deep, which they excavate with their broad, webbed paws. The eggs are about an inch and a half in diameter, having a thin, leathery shell, a very oily yolk, and a white which does not coagulate. The Indians ate them uncooked. We used them chiefly in making corn griddles.

Here, as throughout its whole course, the Napo runs between two walls of evergreen verdure. On either hand are low clay banks (no rocks are visible), and from these the forest rises to a uniform height of seventy or eighty feet. It has a more cheerful aspect than the sombre, silent wilderness of Baeza. Old aristocrats of the woods are overrun by a gay democracy of creepers and climbers, which interlace the entire forest, and, descending to take root again, appear like the shrouds and stays of a line-of-battle ship. Monkeys gambol on this wild rigging, and mingle their chatter with the screams of the parrot. Trees as lofty as our oaks are covered with flowers as beautiful as our lilies. Here are orchids of softest tints;\* flowering ferns, fifty feet high; the graceful bamboo and wild banana; while high over all countless species of palm wave their nodding plumes. Art could not arrange these beautiful forms so harmoniously as nature has done.

The tropics, moreover, are strangers to the uniformity of association seen in temperate climes. We have so many social plants that we speak of a forest of oaks, and pines, and birches; but there variety is the law. Individuals of the same species are seldom seen growing together. Every

\* Some orchid is in flower all the year round. The finest species is the *odontoglossum*, having long, chocolate-colored petals, margined with yellow. "Such is their number and variety (wrote Humboldt) that the entire life of a painter would be too short to delineate all the magnificent Orchideæ which adorn the recesses of the deep valleys of the Peruvian Andes." For many curious facts respecting the structure of these flowers, see Darwin's *Fertilization of Orchids*.





Hunting 'Turtles' Eggs.



THE  
HISTORY  
OF  
THE  
CITY  
OF  
NEW  
YORK  
FROM  
THE  
FIRST  
SETTLEMENT  
TO  
THE  
PRESENT  
TIME  
BY  
JOHN  
B. HOGAN  
IN TWO VOLUMES  
VOL. I  
NEW YORK  
PUBLISHED BY  
JOHN B. HOGAN  
1898



tree is surrounded by strangers that seemingly prefer its room to its company ; and, such is the struggle for possession of the soil, it is difficult to tell to which stem the different leaves and flowers belong. The peculiar charm of a tropical forest is increased by the mystery of its impenetrable thicket. Within that dense, matted shrubbery, and behind that phalanx of trees, the imagination of the traveler sees all manner of four-footed beasts and creeping things. Tropical vegetation is of fresher verdure, more luxuriant and succulent, and adorned with larger and more shining leaves than the vegetation of the north. The leaves are not shed periodically—a character common, not only to the equator, but also to the whole southern hemisphere. Yet there is a variety of tints, though not autumnal. The leaves put on their best attire while budding instead of falling—passing, as they come to maturity, through different shades of red, brown, and green. The majority of tropical trees bear small flowers. The most conspicuous trees are the palms, to which the prize of beauty has been given by the concurrent voice of all ages. The earliest civilization of mankind belonged to countries bordering on the region of palms. South America, the continent of mingled heat and moisture, excels the rest of the world in the number and perfection of her palms. They are mostly of the feathery and fan-like species ; the latter are inferior in rank to the former. The peculiarly majestic character of the palm is given not only by their lofty stems, but also in a very high degree by the form and arrangement of their leaves. How diverse, yet equally graceful, are the aspiring branches of the jagua and the drooping foliage of the cocoa, the shuttlecock-shaped crowns of the ubussú and the plumes of the jupati, forty feet in length. The inflorescence always springs from the top of the trunk, and the male flowers are generally yellowish. Unlike the oak, all



species of which have similar fruit, there is a vast difference in the fruits of the palm: compare the triangular cocoa-nut, the peach-like date, and grape-like assai. The silk-cotton tree is the rival of the palm in dignity; it has a white bark and a lofty flat crown. Among the loveliest children of Flora we must include the mimosa, with its delicately pinnated foliage, so endowed with sensibility that it seems to have stepped out of the bounds of vegetable life. The bamboo, the king of grasses, forms a distinctive feature in the landscape of the Napo, frequently rising eighty feet in length, though not in height, for the fronds curve downward. Fancy the airy grace of our meadow grasses united with the lordly growth of the poplar, and you have a faint idea of bamboo beauty.

The first day of winter (how strangely that sounds under a vertical sun!) was Sunday; but it was folly to attempt to rest where punkies were as thick as atoms, so we floated on. It was only by keeping in mid-river and moving rapidly enough to create a breeze through our cabin, that life was made tolerable. A little after noon we were again obliged to tie up for a storm. Not a human being nor a habitation have we seen since leaving Coca; and to-day nothing is visible but the river, with its islands, and plaïas, and the green palisades—the edges of the boundless forest. Not a hill over one hundred feet high are we destined to see till we reach Obidos, fifteen hundred miles eastward. Were it not for the wealth of vegetation—all new to trans-tropical eyes—and the concerts of monkeys and macaws, oppressively lonely would be the sail down the Napo between its uninhabited shores. But we believe the day, though distant, will come when its banks will be busy with life. Toward evening three or four canoes pulled out from the shore and came alongside. They were filled with the lowest class of Indians we have seen in South America.



The women were nearly nude; the man (there was only one) had on a sleeveless frock reaching to the knees, made from the bark of a tree called *llanchama*. All were destitute of eyebrows; their hair was parted in the middle, and their teeth and lips were dyed black. They had rude pottery, peccari meat, and wooden lances to sell. Like all the Napo Indians, they had a weakness for beads, and they wore necklaces of tiger and monkey teeth. They were stupid rather than brutal, and probably belonged to a degraded tribe of the great Zaparo family. With Darwin, "one's mind hurries back over past centuries, and then asks, could our progenitors have been men like these?—men whose very signs and expressions are less intelligible to us than those of the domesticated animals; men who do not possess the instinct of those animals, nor yet appear to boast of human reason, or, at least, of arts consequent on that reason. I do not believe it is possible to describe or paint the difference between savage and civilized man. It is the difference between a wild and tame animal; and part of the interest in beholding a savage is the same which would lead every one to desire to see the lion in his desert, the tiger tearing his prey in the jungle, or the rhinoceros wandering over the wild plains of Africa."

On the morrow our falcon-eyed Indians whispered "*cuche*" long before we saw any thing.\* Williams went ashore and came upon a herd of peccaries, killing two. The peccari is a pugnacious, fearless animal. It is not frightened by the noise of fire-arms, and when wounded is a dangerous foe; but captured when young, it is easily tamed. It has a higher back than the domestic hog, and cleaner habits; an odoriferous gland on the loins, and three-toed hind feet. We preserved the skins for science and a ham for the table; the rest we gave to our crew and fellow-voyagers,

\* In the Quichua of Quito the peccari is called *saino*.



who devoured every thing, even the viscera. They sat up late that night, around their camp-fire, cooking peccari meat: part they parboiled in a pot, and some they roasted, skewered on sticks which slanted over the flames; the rest they cured with smoke, for lack of salt. The meat, though rank, is palatable, but not equal to macaw, which we served up the next day.\*

We had now passed the mouth of the Aguarico, leaving behind us the Christian Quitus and the peaceful Zaparos. Henceforth the right bank of the Napo is inhabited by the Mazanes and Iquitos; while on the left are the wilder Santa Marias, Anguteros, Oritos, and Orejones. The Orejones, or "Big Ears," enlarge those appendages to such an extent that they are said to lie down on one ear and cover themselves with the other. This practice is now going out of fashion. These Indians received their name, Orejones, or Oregones, from the Spaniards, on account of this singular custom of inserting disks of wood in the ears to enlarge them; the like practice prevailed among the tribes on the Columbia River, Oregon. They trade in hammocks, poisons, and provisions. The Anguteros, or Putumayos, have a bad reputation. They are reported to have killed and robbed sarsaparilla traders coming up stream. Nevertheless, we kept watch only one night during the voyage, though we always anchored to an island, and between Coca and the Amazon we did not see twenty-five men. Equally rare were the savage brutes—not a jaguar showed himself, and only one anaconda. The anaconda, or water-boia (*Eunectes murinus*†), is larger and more formidable

\* The Uaupes on the Napo, according to Wallace, will not eat peccari meat. "Meat putrifies in this climate (of the Tapajos) in less than twenty-four hours, and salting is of no use unless the pieces are cut in thin slices and dried immediately in the sun."—*Bates*.

† The specific name was strangely given for its habit, when young, of darting upon mice. Anaconda is a Ceylonese word.



than the boa-constrictor which lives on the land. It has a hideous appearance, broad in the middle, and tapering abruptly at both ends. We did not learn from the natives that anacondas over twenty feet long had been seen on the Napo, but specimens twice that size are found on the Amazon. Land boas do not often exceed fifteen feet in length.

Gangs of the large howling monkeys often entertained us with their terrific, unearthly yells, which, in the truthful language of Bates, "increased tenfold the feeling of inhospitable wildness which the forest is calculated to inspire." They are of a maroon color (the males wear a long red beard), and have under the jaw a bony goitre—an expansion of the os hyoides—by means of which they produce their loud, rolling noise. They set up an unusual



A Howler.

chorus whenever they saw us, scampering to the tops of the highest trees, the dams carrying the young upon their backs. They are the only monkeys which the natives have not been able to tame. Vast numbers of screaming parrots and macaws flew over our heads, always going in pairs and at a great height. Groups of "gypsy-birds" were perched on the trees overhanging the river, and black



ducks, cormorants, and white cranes floated on the water or stalked along the plaïas.

But one form of life superabounded. From the rising of the sun to the going down thereof clouds of ubiquitous sand-flies filled our cabin, save when the wind was high. As soon as the sand-flies ceased, myriads of mosquitoes began their work of torture, without much preparatory piping, and kept it up all night.\* These pests were occasionally relieved or assisted by piums—minute flies that alight unnoticed, and squatting close to the skin, suck their fill of blood, leaving dark spots and a disagreeable irritation. Our hands were nearly black with their punctures. We also made the acquaintance of the montúca, a large black fly whose horny lancets make a gash in the flesh, painless but blood-letting. All these insects are most abundant in the latter part of the rainy season, when the Marañon is almost uninhabitable. The apostrophe of Midshipman Wilberforce was prompted by sufferings which we can fully appreciate: "Ye greedy animals! I am ashamed of you. Can not you once forego your dinner, and feast your mind with the poetry of the landscape?" Right welcome was the usual afternoon squall, which sent these pests "kiting" over the stern.

On Wednesday we fell in with a petty sarsaparilla trader, with two canoes, bound for the Marañon. He was sick with fever. Sarsaparilla (written *salsaparrilha* in Brazil, and meaning "bramble vine") is the root of a prickly, climbing plant found throughout the whole Amazonian forest, but chiefly on dry, rocky ground. On the morning of the seventh day from Coca we passed the mouth of the Curaray, the largest tributary of the Napo. It rises on the slopes of the Llanganati mountains, and is considered au-

\* Sand-flies are called by the natives *mosquitoes*, and what we call mosquitoes they call *sancudos*.



riferous. It is probably derived from *curi*, gold. Seeing a hut on the banks, we sent an Indian to purchase provisions; he returned with a few yucas and eggs. The day following we were attacked from a new quarter. Stopping to escape a storm, a party went ashore to cut down a tree of which we desired a section. It fell with its top in the river, just above our craft; when lo! to our consternation, down came countless hosts of ants (*Ecitons*). Myriads were, of course, swept down stream, but myriads more crawled up the sides of our canoes, and in one minute after the tree fell our whole establishment, from hold to roof, was swarming with ants. We gave one look of despair at each other, our provisions and collections, and then commenced a war of extermination. It was a battle for life. The ants, whose nest we had so suddenly immersed in the Napo, refused to quit their new lodgings. As we were loosely dressed, the tenacious little creatures hid themselves under our clothing, and when plucked off would leave their heads and jaws sticking in the skin. At last the deck was cleared by means of boots, slippers, and towels; but, had the ants persevered, they might have taken possession of the boat.

To-day we saw a high bank (called in Quichua *pucaurcu*, or red hill) consisting of fine laminated clays of many colors—red, orange, yellow, gray, black, and white. This is the beginning of that vast deposit which covers the whole Amazonian Valley. It rests upon a bed of lignite, or bituminous shale, and a coarse, iron-cemented conglomerate. The latter is not visible on the Napo, but crops out particularly at Obidos and Pará. The Indians prepare their paints from these colored clays.

Our Santa Rosans seemed to have little tact in fishing; still their spears and our hooks gathered not a few representatives of ichthyic life in the Napo. The species most



common belong to the genus *Pimelodus*, or cat-fish tribe. Below the Curaray the sand bars yielded turtles' eggs of a different kind from those found above, the *tracajá*. They were smaller and oval, and buried only six or eight inches deep, thirty in a nest.

December 9.—Passed early this morning the mouth of the Mazan; four huts at the junction. To-day we noticed the anomaly first observed by Herndon. From Papallacta to the Curaray the rise of the mercury was regular, but on the lower Napo there were great fluctuations. At one time both barometer and boiling apparatus, with which we made daily and simultaneous observations, unanimously declared that our canoes were gliding up stream, though we were descending at the rate of five miles an hour. The temperature is decidedly lower and the winds are stronger as we near the Amazon.

December 10.—Our last day on the Napo. In celebration of the event we killed a fine young doe as it was crossing the river. It closely resembled the Virginia deer. At 9 A.M. the Indians shouted in their quiet way—“*Marañon!*” It was as thrilling as *Thalatta* to Xenophon's soldiers. We were not expecting to reach it till night, being deceived by Villavicencio's map, which, in common with all others, locates the Curaray and Mazan too far to the north. We halted for an hour at Camindo, a little fishing hamlet claimed by Peru, and then hastened to get our first sight of the Amazon. With emotions we can not express, we gazed upon this ocean-stream. The march of the great river in its silent grandeur is sublime. In its untamed might it rolls through the wilderness with a stately, solemn air, showing its awful power in cutting away the banks, tearing down trees, and building up islands in a day. Down the river we can look till the sky and water meet as on the sea, while the forest on either hand dwindles in the



perspective to a long black line. Between these even walls of ever-living green the resistless current hurries out of Peru, sweeps past the imperial guns of Tabatinga into Brazil, and plows its way visibly two hundred miles into the Atlantic. *Thm*

At a small island standing where the Napo pays tribute to the monarch of rivers, mingling its waters with the Huallaga and Ucayali, which have already come down from the Peruvian Andes, we bade adieu to our captain and cook, who, in the little canoe, paddled his way westward to seek his fortune in Iquitos. At this point the Marañon (for so the natives call the Upper Amazon) does not appear very much broader than the Napo; but its depth is far greater, and there are few sand-bars.\* The water is always of a turbid yellow; while the Napo, though muddy during our voyage, is usually clear. The forest, moreover, on the banks of the Marañon, is not so striking as on the tributary. The palms are not so numerous, and the uniform height of the trees gives a monotonous, sea-like horizon.

We arrived at Pebas December 12, ten hours after leaving the mouth of the Napo, and a month and a half from Quito. The first individual we met addressed us in good English, and proved to be Mr. Hauxwell, a well-known collector of birds and insects, who has resided thirty years on the Amazon. His house, the largest and best in town, though but a roofed stockade, was generously placed at our disposal, and the fatted calf—an immense turtle—was immediately killed. To us, after the transit of the Andes and the dangers and hardships of the wilderness and the river, it seemed as if we had reached the end of our jour-

\* Herndon makes the mouth of the Napo 150 yards broad, and the soundings six or seven fathoms. This is not a fair representation; for the Napo, like all the other tributaries, empties its waters by several mouths. At Camindo, five miles above the confluence, the Napo is certainly a mile wide.



ney, though we were over two thousand miles from the Atlantic. Pebas is situated on a high clay bluff beside the Ambi-yacu, a mile above its entrance into the Marañon. Excepting Mr. Hauxwell, the Peruvian governor, and two or three other whites, the inhabitants are Indians of the Orejones and Yagua tribes. The exportations are hammocks, sarsaparilla, palo de cruz, and urarí. Palo de cruz is the very hard, dark-colored wood of a small leguminous tree bearing large pink flowers. Urarí is the poison used by all the Amazonian Indians; it is made by the Ticunas on the Putumayo, by boiling to a jelly the juices of certain roots and herbs, chiefly of the *Strychnos toxifera*, though it does not contain any trace of strychnine. Tipped with urarí, the needle-like arrow used in blow-guns will kill an ox in twenty minutes and a monkey in ten. "We have reason to congratulate ourselves (wrote the facetious Sidney Smith) that our method of terminating disputes is by sword and pistol, and not by these medicated pins." But the poison appears to be harmless to man and other salt-eating animals, salt being an antidote.\* We were not troubled with sand-flies after leaving the plaías of the Napo, but the mosquitoes at Pebas were supernumerary. Perhaps, however, it was a special gathering on our account, for the natives have a notion that just before the arrival of a foreigner the mosquitoes come in great numbers.

Many of the Indians are disfigured by dark blotches on the skin, the effect of a cutaneous disease very prevalent in

\* Urarí is mentioned by Raleigh. Humboldt was the first to take any considerable quantity to Europe. The experiments of Virchau and Münster make it probable that it does not belong to the class of tetanic poisons, but that its particular effect is to take away the power of voluntary muscular movement, while the involuntary functions of the heart and intestines still continue. See *Ann. de Chim. et de Phys.*, t. xxxix., 1828, p. 24; and Schömburg's *Reisen in Britisch Guiana*, th. i., s. 441. The frightful poison, *tieuté* of India, is prepared from a Java species of *strychnos*.

Sh. attempt ass. P. res. Ecuador with B. P. P. P. P.



Central Amazonia. Here we first noticed the singular habit among the children of eating clay. This habit is not confined to the Otomacs on the Oronoco, nor to Indians altogether; for negroes and whites have the same propensity—Mr. Hauxwell found it impossible to restrain his own children. Bates ascribes the morbid craving to the meagre diet. This may be true to some extent, but it is certainly strange that the extraordinary desire to swallow earth (chiefly unctuous clays) is found only in the tropics, where vegetation is so rank and fruit so abundant.

*Because of saline &c  
said to cause distention of  
bowels &c Is common in  
Central Am & Mex,*



## CHAPTER XVI.

Down the Amazon.—Steam on the Great River.—Loreto.—San Antonio.—Tabatinga.—Brazilian Steamers.—Scenery on the Amazon.—Tocantins—Fonte Boa.—Ega.—Rio Negro.—Manáos.

WE left Pebas for Tabatinga in the Peruvian steamer "Morona," Captain Raygado. Going up to Jerusalem by railroad, or ascending the Nile by a screw whisking the sacred waters, is not so startling as the sight of a steamer in the heart of South America. There is such a contrast between the primeval wildness of the country and the people and this triumph of civilized life; and one looks forward to the dazzling future of this great valley, when the ships of all nations will crowd the network of rivers for the gold and perfumes, the gems and woods of this western Ophir. The natives call the steamer the "devil's boat," or "big canoe;" but they manifest little curiosity. Our Napo Indians were evidently afraid of it, and stood afar off. The first steamers that broke the deep solitude of the Marañon were the "Huallaga" and "Tirado," brought out in 1853 by Dr. Whittemore, for Peru. They were built in New York, of Georgia pine, costing Peru \$75,000, and reflected no credit on the United States; they lie rotting near Nauta. Peru has now two iron steamers of London make—the "Morona" and "Pastassa"—besides two smaller craft for exploring the tributaries. These steamers are for government service, but three more are building in England with passenger accommodations. The "Morona" has a tonnage of five hundred, and an engine of one hundred and fifty horse-power. The engineers



are English, and the cook is a Chinaman. She makes monthly trips between Yurimaguas, on the Huallaga River, and Tabatinga, on the Brazilian frontier. Her rate down stream is eighteen miles an hour, and from eleven to twelve against the current. These steamers do not pay expenses at present; but they preserve the authority of Peru on the Marañon, and supply with material the government works at Iquitos. They also do a little commerce, taking down sarsaparilla and Moyabamba hats, and bringing up English dry-goods. There were not half a dozen passengers on board.

The only towns of any consequence west of Pebas are Iquitos, Nauta, and Yurimaguas. Peru claims them—in fact, all the villages on the Marañon. Iquitos is the most thriving town on the Upper Amazon. It is situated on an elevated plain on the left bank of the river, sixty miles above the mouth of the Napo. In Herndon's time it was "a fishing village of 227 inhabitants;" it now contains 2000. Here are the government iron-works, carried on by English mechanics. In 1867 there were six engineers, two iron-molders, two brass-molders, two coppersmiths, three blacksmiths, three pattern-makers, two boiler-makers, five shipwrights, three sawyers, besides bricklayers, brick-makers, carpenters, coopers, etc.; in all forty-two. All the coal for the furnaces is brought from England—the lignite on the banks of the Marañon is unfit for the purpose. A floating dock for vessels of a thousand tons has just been built. Nauta lies on the north bank of the Marañon, opposite the entrance of the Ucayali. Its inhabitants, about 1000, trade in fish, sarsaparilla, and wax from Ucayali. Yurimaguas is the port of Moyabamba, a city of 10,000 souls, six days' travel southwest. This vast eastern slope, lying on the branches of the Marañon, is called the *Montaña of Peru*. It is a region of inexhausti-



ble fertility, and would yield ample returns to energy and capital. The villages are open to foreign commerce, free of duty; but at present the voice of civilized man is seldom heard, save on the main fluvial highway between Moyabamba and the Brazilian frontier. The Portuguese are the most adventurous traders. The value of imports to Peru by the Amazonian steamers during 1867 was \$324,533; of exports, \$267,748.

In two hours and a half we arrive at Maucallacta, or "Old Town," an Indian village on the right bank of the river. Here our passports were viséd by the Peruvian governor, and the steamer wooded up. One of the hands on the "Morona" was Manuel Medina, a *mameluco*, who was employed by Bates and Agassiz in their explorations. We left at noon of the following day, and anchored for the night off Caballococha, for the Peruvian steamers run only in the daytime. Caballococha, or "Horse-lake," is a Ticuna town, situated on a level tract of light loam, closely surrounded by the dense forest, and beside a *caño* of clear water leading to a pretty lake. Ecuador claims this town, and likewise all the settlements on the Marañon; but her learned geographer, Villavicencio, with characteristic ignorance of the country, has located it on the *north* bank of the river!

We passed in the afternoon the little tug "Napo," having on board Admiral Tucker, who, with some associates, is exploring the tributaries of the Upper Amazon for the Peruvian government. They had just returned from a voyage of two hundred and fifty miles up the Javari. One of the party had a tame tiger-cat in his arms. We arrived at Loreto early the next morning. This village of twenty houses and a church is prettily situated on the left bank, with a green slope in front. It is the most easterly town of Peru on the Amazon. Here resides Mr.



Wilkens, the Brazilian consul, of German birth, but North American education. The inhabitants are Peruvians, Portuguese, Negroes, and Ticuna Indians. The musquitoes hold high carnival at this place. In two hours we were at San Antonio, a military post on the Peruvian frontier, commanded by a French engineer, Manuel Charon, who also studied in the United States. One large building, and a flag-staff on a high bluff of red clay, were all that was visible of San Antonio; but the "Morona" brought down a gang of Indians (impressed, no doubt) to build a fort for twenty guns. The site is in dispute, a Brazilian claiming it as private property. The white barracks of Tabatinga, the first fortress in Brazil, are in plain sight, the voyage consuming but twenty minutes. Between San Antonio and Tabatinga is a ravine, on either side of which is a white pole, marking the limits of the republic and the empire.

Tabatinga has long been a military post, but, excepting the government buildings, there are not a dozen houses. Numerous Indians, however, of the Ticuna tribe, dwell in the neighboring forest. The commandante was O Ilustrissimo Señor Tenente Aristides Juste Mavignier, a tall, thin, stooping officer, dressed in brown linen. He received us with great civility, and tendered a house and servant during our stay in port. We preferred, however, to accept the hospitalities of the "Morona" till the arrival of the Brazilian steamer. Señor Mavignier was commandante of Manáos when visited by Agassiz, and presented the Professor with a hundred varieties of wood. With the like courtesy, he gave us a collection of reptiles, all of them rare, and many of them new species. He showed us also a live raposa, or wild dog, peculiar to the Amazon, but seldom seen. Tabatinga stands on an eminence of yellow clay, and is defended by twelve guns. The river in front is quite narrow,



only about half a mile wide. Here our passports, which had been signed at Maucallacta and Loreto, were indorsed by the commandante. They were afterward examined at Ega, Manáos, and Pará. The mean temperature of Tabatinga we found to be  $82^{\circ}$ .\* Some rubber and salt fish are exported, but nothing of consequence is cultivated. Grapes, the people say, grow well, but are destroyed by the ants. The only fruit-trees we noticed were the *mamaï* (in Spanish, *papaya*), *aracá*, and *abío*. The papaw-tree bears male and female flowers on different trees, and hence receives the name of *papaya* or *mamaï*, according to one's view of the pre-eminence of the sex. The juice of this tree is used by the ladies of the West Indies as a cosmetic, and by the butchers to render the toughest meat tender. The fruit is melon-shaped, and of an orange-yellow color. Vauquelin discovered in it *fibrine*, till lately supposed to be confined to the animal kingdom.

The Peruvian steamers connect at Tabatinga with the Brazilian line. There are eight imperial steamers on the Amazon: the "Icamiaba," running between Tabatinga and Manáos; the "Tapajos" and "Belem," plying between Manáos and Pará; the "Inca" and "Manáos," between Obidos and Pará; besides two steamers on the Tocantins, one between Pará and Chares, and projected lines for the Negro, Tapajos, and Madeira. The captains get a small salary, but the perquisites are large, as they have a percentage on the freight. One captain pocketed in one year \$9000.

We embarked, December 12, on the "Icamiaba," which promptly arrived at Tabatinga. The commander, formerly a lieutenant in the Imperial Navy, and for twelve years a popular officer on the Upper Amazon, was a polished gentleman, but rigid disciplinarian. As an example of

\* According to Lieutenant Azevedo, the latitude of Tabatinga is  $4^{\circ} 14' 30''$ ; longitude,  $70^{\circ} 2' 24''$ ; magnetic variation,  $6^{\circ} 35' 10''$  N.E.



Brazilian etiquette, we give his full address from one of our letters of introduction :

“ Ilmo. Sr. Capn. de Fragata  
Nuno Alvez Pereira de Mello Cardozo,  
Digno Commandante de Vapor  
Icamiaba.”

The “Icamiaba” was an iron boat of four hundred and fifty tons, with two engines of fifty horse-power each. The engineer was an Austrian, yet the captain gave his orders in English, though neither could speak the language. The saloon, with berths for twenty-five passengers, was above deck, and open at both ends for ventilation. The passengers, however, usually swung their hammocks on the upper deck, which was covered by an awning. This was a delightfully breezy and commanding position; and though every part of the steamer was in perfect order, this was scrupulously neat. Here the table was spread with every tropical luxury, and attentively served by young men in spotless attire. Happy the traveler who sits at the table of Commandante Cardozo. The refreshment hours were: Coffee as soon as the passengers turned out of their hammocks, and sometimes before; breakfast at ten, dinner at five, and tea at eight. Live bullocks, fowls, and turtles were kept on board, so that of fresh meat, particularly beef (the first we had tasted since leaving Quito), there was no lack. At breakfast we counted nine different courses of meat. The Peruvian steamers are limited to turtle and salt fish. Rice and farina are extensively used in Brazil, but we saw very little tapioca. Farina is the flour of the country, and is eaten in hard, dry grains; it will not keep in any other form. It can not be very nutritious, as it contains little gluten. All bread and butter are imported from the United States and England. The captains of Brazilian steamers are their own stewards; and in the midst of other business in port, they stop to negotiate



for a chicken, or a dozen eggs, with an Indian or Negro. The "Icamiaba" left Tabatinga with only three first-class passengers, besides our own party. On no Amazon steamer did we meet with a lady passenger. Madame Godin, who came down the river from the Andes, and Mrs. Agassiz, who ascended to Tabatinga, were among the few ladies who have seen these upper waters. But how differently they traveled! one on a raft, the other on the beautiful "Icamiaba."

Between Tabatinga and Teffé, a distance of five hundred miles, is perhaps the most uncivilized part of the main river. Ascending, we find improvements multiply as we near the mountains of Peru; descending, we see the march of civilization in the budding cities and expanding commerce culminating at Grand Pará. The scenery from the deck of an Amazonian steamer, if described, appears monotonous. A vast volume of smooth, yellow water, floating trees and beds of aquatic grass, low, linear-shaped, wooded islets, a dark, even forest—the shores of a boundless sea of verdure, and a cloudless sky occasionally obscured by flocks of parrots: these are the general features. No busy towns are seen along the banks of the Middle Amazon; only here and there a palm hut or semi-Indian village half buried in the wilderness. We agree with Darwin (speaking of the Plata), that "a wide expanse of muddy water has neither grandeur nor beauty." The real grandeur, however, of a great river like this is derived from reflecting upon its prospective commercial importance and its immense drainage. A lover of nature, moreover, can never tire of gazing at the picturesque grouping and variety of trees, with their mantles of creeping plants; while a little imagination can see in the alligators, ganoid fishes, sea-cows, and tall gray herons, the ichthyosaurus, holoptychius, dinotherium, and brontozoum of ancient days. Here and there the river is



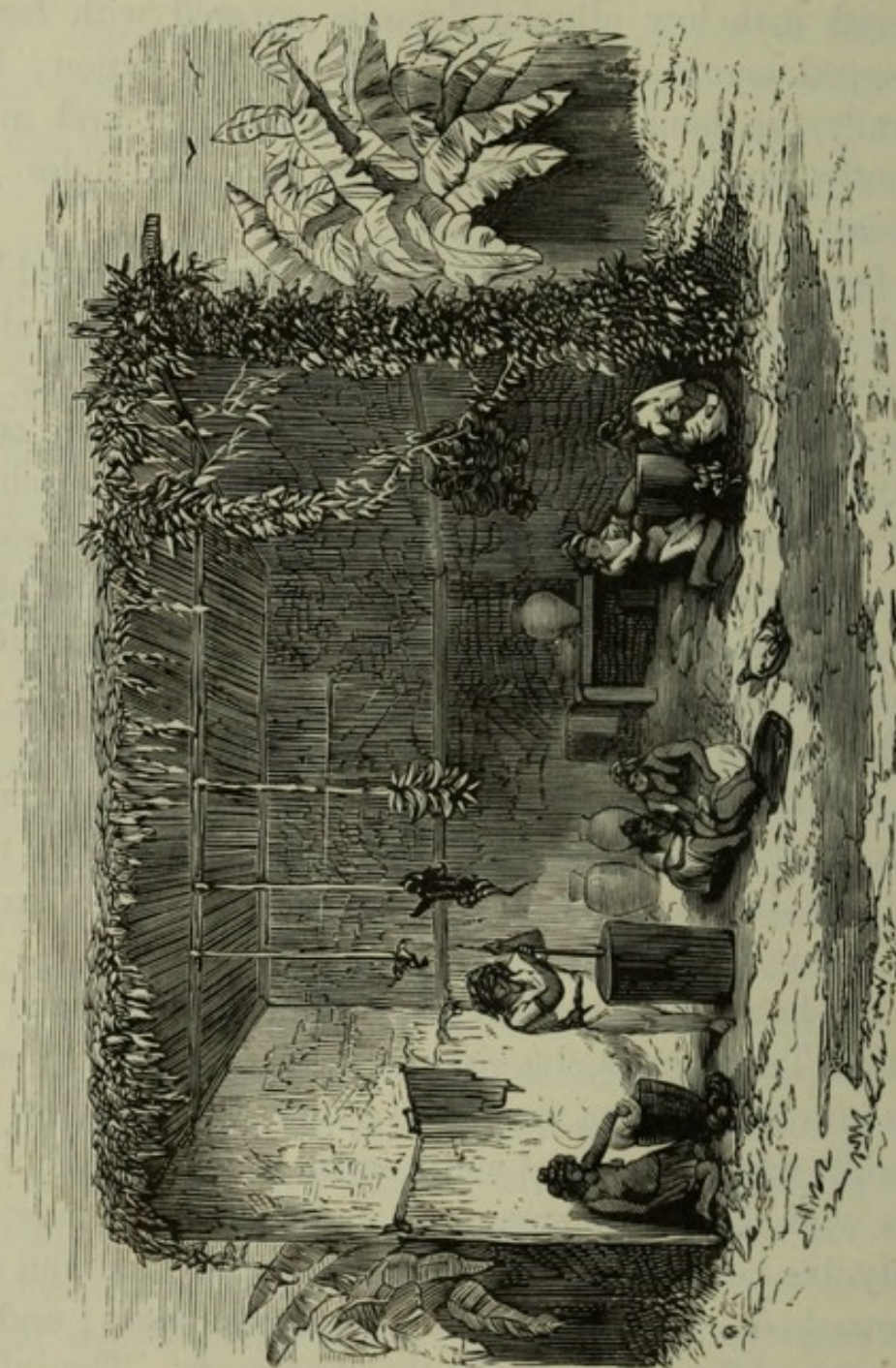
bordered with low alluvial deposits covered with feathery-topped arrow-grass and amphibious vegetation; but generally the banks are about ten feet high and magnificently wooded; they are abrupt, and land-slides are frequent.

A few minutes after leaving Tabatinga we passed the mouth of the Javarí, which forms the natural boundary between Peru and Brazil. Henceforth the river loses the name of Marañon, and is called Solimoens, or, more commonly, simply Amazon. We were ten hours in reaching San Paulo, a wretched Ticuna village of five hundred souls, built on a grassy table-land nearly one hundred feet high. Steps have been cut in the slippery clay bluff to facilitate the ascent. Swamps lie back of the town, rendering it unhealthy. "On damp nights (says the Naturalist on the Amazon) the chorus of frogs and toads which swarm in weedy back-yards creates such a bewildering uproar that it is impossible to carry on a conversation in doors except by shouting."

In ten hours more we had passed the Putumayo and entered the Tunantíns, a sluggish, dark-colored tributary emptying into the Amazon about two hundred miles below the Javarí.\* On the bank of white earth, which strongly contrasts with the tinted stream, is a dilapidated hamlet of twenty-five hovels, built of bamboo plastered with mud and whitewashed. We saw but one two-storied house; and all have ground-floors and double-thatched roofs. The inhabitants are semi-civilized Shumána and Passé Indians and half-breeds; but in the gloomy forest which hugs the town live the wild Caishanas. The atmosphere is close and steaming, but not hot, the mercury at noon standing at 83°. The place is alive with insects and birds. The nights on

\* Herndon says (p. 241), "the Tunantíns is about fifty yards broad, and seems deep with a considerable current."





Kitchen on the Amazon.

the Amazon were invariably cool; on the Lower Amazon, cold, so that we required a heavy blanket.

Taking on board wood, beeves, turtles, salt fish, and water-melons, we left at half past 2 P.M. The Brazilian steamers run all night, and with no slackening of speed. At one o'clock we were awakened by a cry from the watch,



"Stop her!" And immediately after there was a crash; but it was only the breaking of crockery caused by the sudden stoppage. The night was fearfully dark, and for aught we knew the steamer was running headlong into the forest. Fortunately there was no collision, and in a few minutes we were again on our way, arriving at Fonte Boa at 4 A.M. This little village stands in a palm grove, on a high bank of ochre-colored sandy clay, beside a slue of sluggish black water, eight miles from the Amazon.\* The inhabitants, about three hundred, are ignorant, lazy mame-lucos. They dress like the majority of the semi-civilized people on the Amazon: the men content with shirt and pantaloons, the women wearing cotton or gauze chemises and calico petticoats. Fonte Boa is a museum for the naturalist, but the headquarters of mosquitoes, small but persistent. Taking in a large quantity of turtle-oil, the "Icamiaba" turned down the caño, but almost immediately ran aground, and we were two hours getting off. These yearly shifting shoals in the Amazon can not be laid down in charts, and the most experienced pilots often run foul of them. In twelve hours we entered the Teffé, a tributary from the Bolivian mountains. Just before reaching the Great River it expands into a beautiful lake, with a white, sandy beach. On a grassy slope, stretching out into the lake, with a harbor on each side of it, lies the city of Ega. A hundred palm-thatched cottages of mud and tiled frame houses, each with an inclosed orchard of orange, lemon, banana, and guava trees, surround a rude church, marked by a huge wooden crucifix on the green before it, instead of a steeple. Cacao, assaí, and pupunha palms rise above the town, adding greatly to its beauty; while back of all, on the summit of the green slope, begins the pictur-

\* Smyth says the town gets its name from the clearness of the water; but Herndon found it muddy, and, to our eyes, it was dark as the Negro.

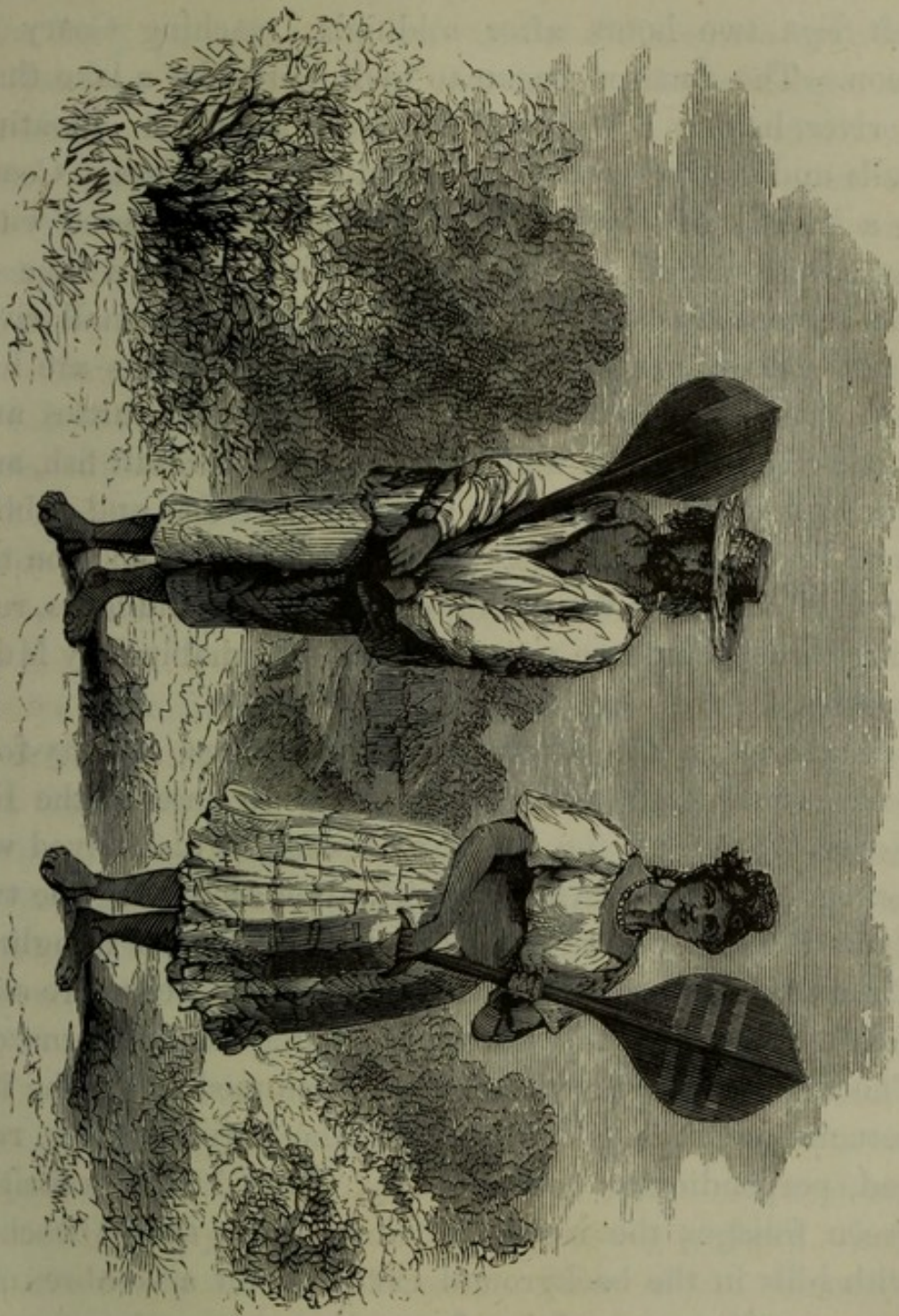


esque forest, pathless, save here and there a faint hunter's track leading to the untrodden interior. The sheep and cattle grazing on the lawn, a rare sight in Alto Amazonas, gives a peaceful and inviting aspect to the scene. The inhabitants, numbering about twelve hundred, are made up of pure Indians, half-castes, negroes, mulattoes, and whites. Ega (also called Teffé) is the largest and most thriving town between Manáos and Iquitos, a distance of twelve hundred miles. It is also one of the oldest settlements on the river, having been founded during the English revolution, or nearly two centuries ago. Tupi is the common idiom. The productions of the country are cacao, sarsaparilla, Brazil nuts, bast for caulking vessels, copaiba balsam, India-rubber, salt fish, turtle-oil, manati, grass hammocks, and tiles. Bates calculates the value of the annual exports at nearly forty thousand dollars. The "Icamiaba" calls here twice a month; besides which there are small schooners which occupy about five months in the round trip between Ega and Pará. "The place is healthy (writes the charming Naturalist on the Amazon), and almost free from insect pests; perpetual verdure surrounds it; the soil is of marvelous fertility, even for Brazil; the endless rivers and labyrinths of channels teem with fish and turtle; a fleet of steamers might anchor at any season of the year in the lake, which has uninterrupted water communication straight to the Atlantic. What a future is in store for the sleepy little tropical village!" Here Bates pursued butterflies for four years and a half, and Agassiz fished for six months.

Ega is the half-way point across the continent, but its exact altitude above the sea is unknown. Herndon's boiling apparatus gave two thousand feet, and, what is worse, the lieutenant believed it. Our barometer made it one hundred feet; but as our instrument, though perfect in itself, behaved very strangely on the Middle Amazon, we do



Natives on the Middle Amazon.



not rely on the calculation. The true height is not far from one hundred and twenty-five feet, or one fifth the elevation of the middle point in the North American continent.\* Taking on board salt fish, turtle-oil, and tiles, we

\* For a discussion of the barometric perturbations on the Amazon, see *American Journal of Science* for Sept., 1868.



left Ega two hours after midnight, reaching Coary at noon. The Amazon began to look more like a lake than a river, having a width of four or five miles. Floating gulls and rolling porpoises remind one of the sea. Coary is a huddle of fifteen houses, six of them plastered without, whitewashed, and tiled. It is situated on a lake of the same name — the expanded outlet of a small river whose waters are dark brown, and whose banks are low and covered with bushes. Here we took in turtles and turtle-oil, Brazil nuts and cocoa-nuts, rubber, salt fish, and wood; and, six hours after leaving, more fish and rubber were received at Cudajá. Cudajá is a lonely spot on the edge of an extensive system of back-waters and lakes, running through a dense unexplored forest inhabited by Múra savages.

At three in the afternoon of Christmas, seventy-four hours' running time from Tabatinga, we entered the Rio Negro. Strong is the contrast between its black-dyed waters and the yellow Amazon. The line separating the two rivers is sharply drawn, the waters meeting, not mingling. Circular patches of the dark waters of the Negro are seen floating like oil amid the turbid waters of the Amazon. The sluggish tributary seems to be dammed up by the impetuous monarch. The banks of the latter are low, ragged, perpendicular beds of clay, covered with a bright green foliage; the Negro is fringed with sandy beaches, with hills in the background clothed with a sombre, monotonous forest containing few palms or leguminous trees. Musquitoes, piums, and montucas never trouble the traveler on the inky stream. When seen in a tumbler, the water of the Negro is clear, but of a light-red color; due, undoubtedly, to vegetable matter. The visible mouth of the river at this season of the year (December) is three miles wide, but from main-land to main-land it can not be less than twenty.



In forty minutes after leaving the Amazon we arrived at Manáos. This important city lies on the left bank of the Negro, ten miles from its mouth and twenty feet above high-water level. The site is very uneven, and consists of ferruginous sandstone. There was originally a fort here, erected by the Portuguese to protect their slave-hunting expeditions among the Indians on the river—hence the ancient name of Barra. On the old map of Father Fritz (1707) the spot is named *Taromas*. Since 1852 it has been called Manáos, after the most warlike tribe. Some of the houses are two-storied, but the majority are low adobe structures, white and yellow washed, floored and roofed with tiles, and having green doors and shutters. Every room is furnished with hooks for hanging hammocks. We did not see a bed between Quito and New York except on the steamers. The population, numbering two thousand,\* is a mongrel set—Brazilians, Portuguese, Italians, Jews, Negroes, and Indians, with divers crosses between them. Laziness is the prominent characteristic. A gentleman offered an Indian passing his door twenty-five cents if he would bring him a pitcher of water from the river, only a few rods distant. He declined. "But I will give you fifty cents." Whereupon the half-clothed, penniless aboriginal replied: "I will give you a dollar to bring me some."† While every inch of the soil is of exuberant fertility, there is always a scarcity of food. It is the dearest spot on the Amazon. Most of the essentials and all of the luxuries come from Liverpool, Lisbon, and New York. Agriculture is at a discount on the Amazon. Brazilians will not work; European immigrants are traders; nothing can be done with Indians; and negroes are

\* Official returns for 1848 give 3614; Bates (1850) reckons 3000.

† Darwin met a similar specimen in Banda Oriental: "I asked two men why they did not work. One gravely said the days were too long; the other that he was too poor."





A Siesta

few in number, the slave-trade being abolished, emancipation begun, and the Paraguayan war not ended. A laboring class will ever be a desideratum in this tropical country. With a healthy climate,\* and a situation at the juncture of

\* It is, however, one of the warmest spots on the river. The average temperature, according to Azevedo and Pinto, is only  $79.7^{\circ}$ ; but the highest



two great navigable rivers, Manáos is destined to become the St. Louis of South America. In commercial advantages it is hardly to be surpassed by any other city in the world, having water communication with two thirds of the continent, and also with the Atlantic. It is now the principal station for the Brazilian line of steamers. Here all goods for a higher or lower point are reshipped. The chief articles of export are coffee (of superior quality), sarsaparilla, Brazil nuts, piassaba, and fish. The Negro at this point is really five or six miles wide, but the opposite shore is masked by low islands, so that it appears to be but a mile and a half.

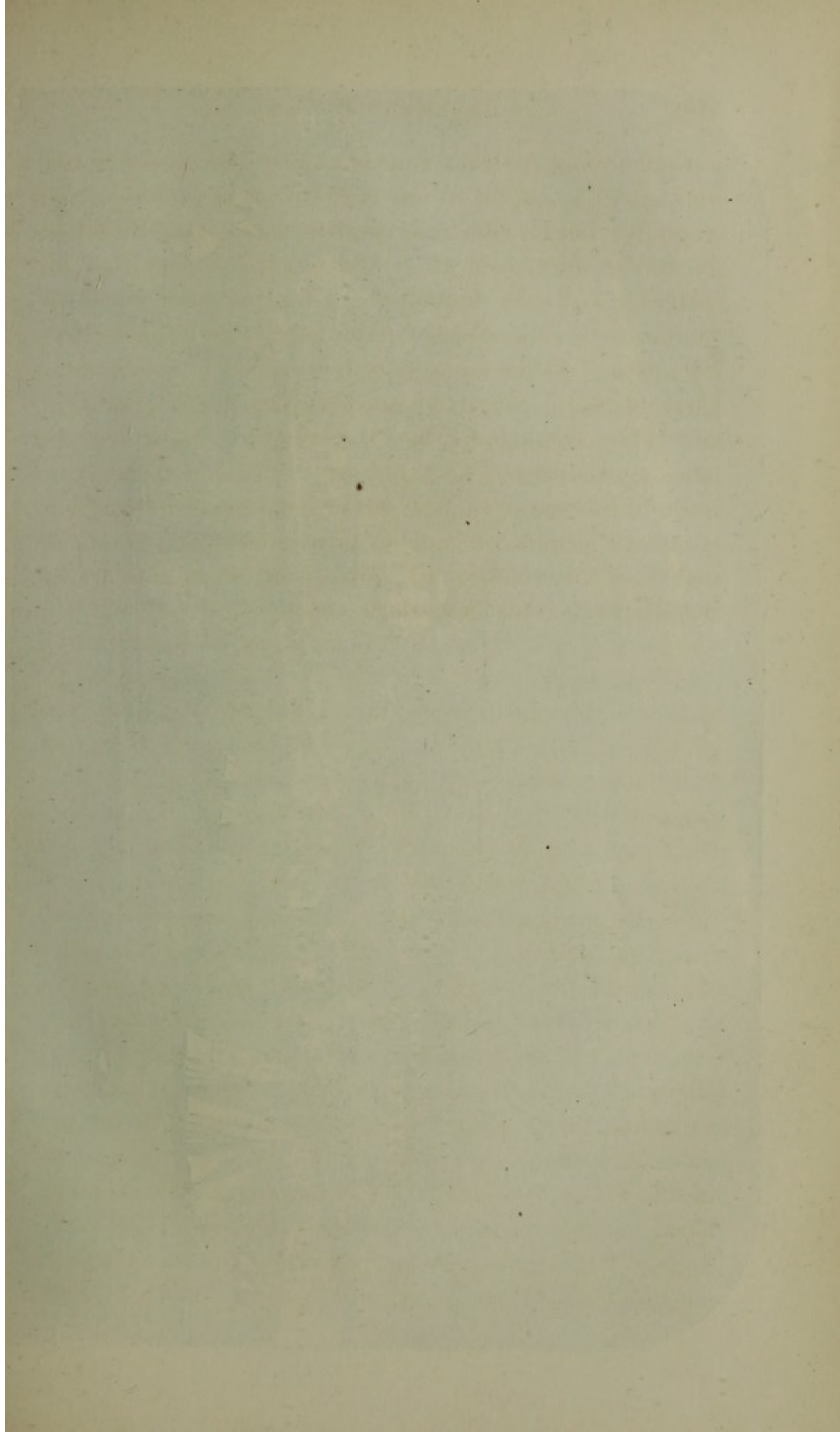
The country around Manáos is quite romantic for the Amazonian Valley. The land is undulating and furrowed by ravines, and the vegetation covering it is marvelously rich and diversified. In the forest, two miles from the city, there is a natural curiosity celebrated by all travelers from Spix and Martius down. A rivulet coming out of the wilderness falls over a ledge of red sandstone ten feet high and fifty feet broad, forming a beautiful cascade. The water is cool, and of a deep orange color. The foundation of a fine stone cathedral was laid in Manáos fourteen years ago, but this generation is not likely to witness the dedication. Life in this Amazonian city is dull enough: commerce is not brisk, and society is stiff; balls are about the only amusements. On Sunday (the holiday) every body who can afford it comes out in Paris fashions. There are carts, but no coaches. We called upon the President at his "Palace"—an odd term for a two-storied, whitewashed edifice. His excellency received us with less formality and more cordiality than we expected to find in the solemn officials of the empire. The first glance at the

point reached on the Amazon in 1862 ( $87.3^{\circ}$ ) was at Manáos, and the extraordinary height of  $95^{\circ}$  has been noted there.

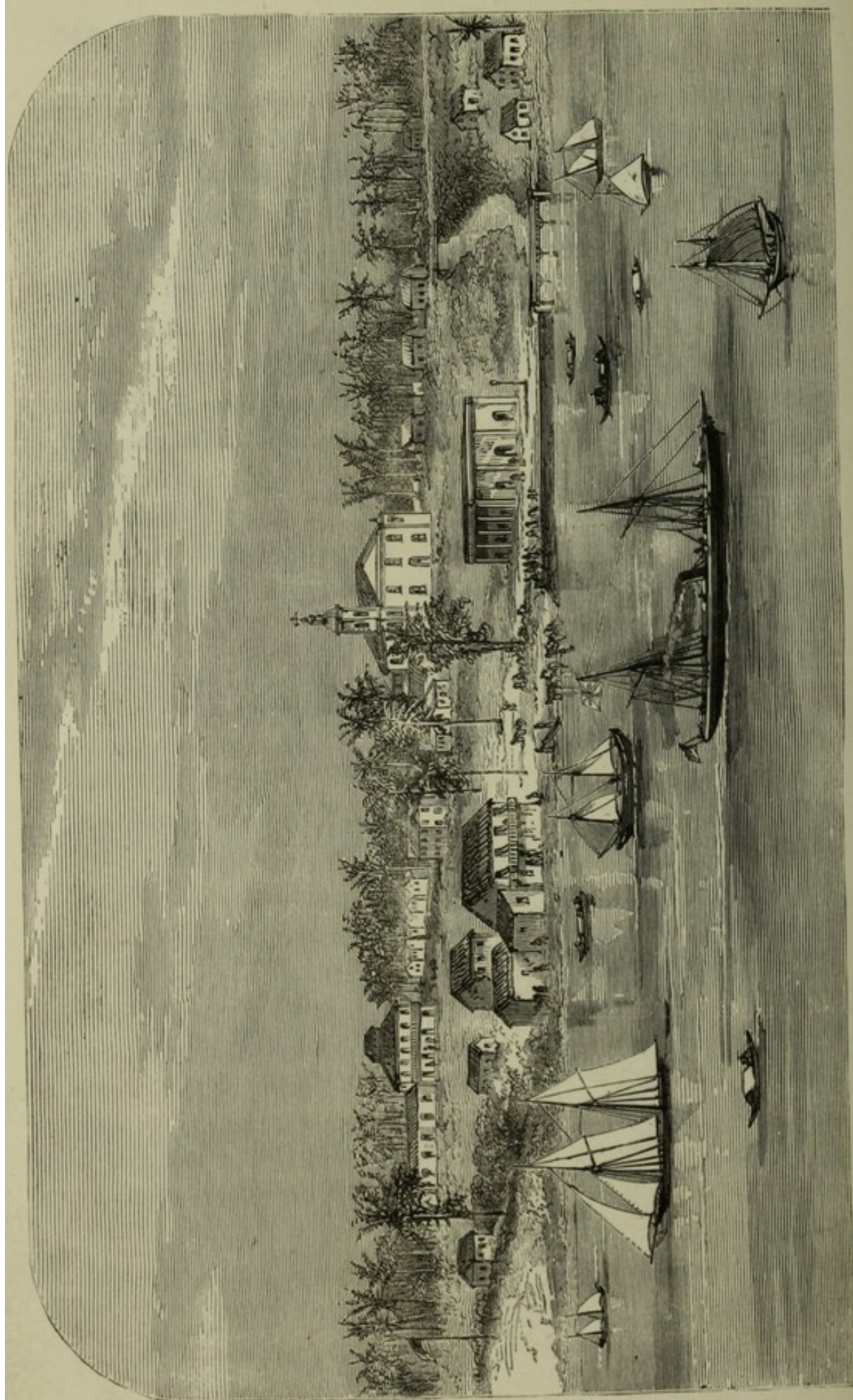


reception-room, with the four chairs for visitors set in two lines at right angles to the chair of state, promised cold etiquette; but he addressed us with considerable familiarity and evident good-will. We found, however, that his authority was quite limited, for a written order which he gave us for a subordinate did not receive the slightest consideration. At the house of a Jew named Levy we met a party of Southerners, Captains Mallory, Jones, Sandedge, and Winn, commanded by Dr. Dowsing, who, since "the late onpleasantness," as Nasby calls it, have determined to settle in this country. The government grants them twenty square leagues of land on any tributary, on condition that they will colonize it. They were about to start for the Rio Branco on an exploring tour.









Manáos.



## CHAPTER XVII.

Down the Amazon.—Serpa.—Villa Nova.—Obidos.—Santarem.—A Colony of Southerners.—Monte Alégre.—Porto do Moz.—Leaving the Amazon.—Breves.—Pará River.—The City of Pará.—Legislation and Currency.—Religion and Education.—Nonpareil Climate.

AT 10 P.M. we left Manáos in the "Tapajos," an iron steamer of seven hundred tons. We missed the snow-white cleanliness and rigid regularity of the "Icamiaba," and Captain José Antunes Rodrigues de Oliveira Catramby was quite a contrast to Lieutenant Nuno. There were only five first-class passengers besides ourselves (and four of these were "dead-heads"), though there were accommodations for sixty-four. Between Manáos and Pará, a distance of one thousand miles, there were fourteen additions. Passing the mouth of the Madeira, the largest tributary to the Amazon, we anchored thirty miles below at Serpa, after nine hours' sailing. Serpa is a village of ninety houses, built on a high bank of variegated clay, whence its Indian name, *Ita-coatiara*, or painted rock. It was the most animated place we had seen on the river. The town is irregularly laid out and overrun with weeds, but there is a busy tile factory, and the port was full of canoes, montarias, and cubertas. The African element in the population began to show itself prominently here, and increased in importance as we neared Pará. The Negroes are very ebony, and are employed as stevedores. The Indians are well-featured, and wear a long gown of bark-cloth reaching to the knees.

Taking on board rubber and salt fish, the "Tapajos" steamed down stream, passing the perpendicular pink-clay



cliffs of Cararaucú, arriving in ten hours at Villa Nova,\* one hundred and fifty miles below Serpa. Villa Nova is a straggling village of mud huts standing on a conglomerate bank. The trade is chiefly in rubber, copaiba, and fish. The location is healthy, and in many respects is one of the most desirable places on the river. Here the Amazon begins to narrow, being scarcely three miles wide; but the channel, which has a rocky bed, is very deep. One hundred miles from Villa Nova is Obidos, airily situated on a bluff of pink and yellow clay one hundred feet above the river. The clay rests on a white calcareous earth, and this on red sandstone. It is a picturesque, substantially-built town, with a population, mostly white, engaged in raising cacao and cattle. Cacao is the most valuable product on the Amazon below Villa Nova. The soil is fertile, and the surrounding forest is alive with monkeys, birds, and insects, and abounds with precious woods and fruits. Obidos is blessed with a church, a school, and a weekly newspaper, and is defended by thirty-two guns. This is the Thermopylæ of the Amazon, the great river contracting to a strait not a mile in width, through which it rushes with tremendous velocity. The depth is forty fathoms, and the current 2.4 feet per second. As Bates remarks, however, the river valley is not contracted to this breadth, the southern shore not being continental land, but a low alluvial tract subject to inundation. Back of Obidos is an eminence which has been named *Mount Agassiz* in honor of the Naturalist. There is no mountain between it and Copaxi save the spurs from the Eastern Cordillera. Five miles above the town is the mouth of the Trombetas, where Orellana had his celebrated fight with the fabulous Amazons.

Adding to her cargo wood, hides, horses, and Paraguayan

\* Otherwise called, on Brazilian maps, Villa Bella da Imperatriz.



prisoners (short, athletic men), the "Tapajos" sailed for Santarem. The river scenery below Obidos loses its wild and solitary character, and is relieved with scattered habitations, factories, and cacao plantations. We arrived at Santarem in seven hours from Obidos, a distance of fifty miles. This city, the largest on the Amazon save Pará, stands on a pretty slope at the mouth of the Rio Tapajos, and five hundred miles from the sea.\* It mainly consists of three long rows of whitewashed, tiled houses, girt with green gardens. The citizens, made up of Brazilians, Portuguese, mulattoes, and blacks, number about two thousand five hundred. The surrounding country, which is an undulating campo, with patches of wood, is sparsely inhabited by Tapajocos. Cattle estates and cacao plantations are the great investments, but the soil is poor. Considerable sarsaparilla of superior quality, rubber, copaiba, Brazil nuts, and farina come down the Tapajos. The climate is delightful, the trade-winds tempering the heat and driving away all insect pests. Leprosy is somewhat common among the poorer class. At Santarem is one of the largest colonies which migrated from the disaffected Gulf States for Brazil. One hundred and sixty Southerners pitched their tents here. Many of them, however, were soon disgusted with the country, and, if we are to believe reports, the country was disgusted with them. On the 1st of January, 1868, only seventy-five remained. The colony does not fairly represent the United States, being made up in great part of the "roughs" of Mobile. A few are contented and are doing well. Amazonia will be indebted to them for some valuable ideas. Bates says: "Butter-making is unknown in this country; the milk, I was told, was too poor." But these Anglo-Saxon immigrants have no difficulty in making but-

\* Herndon makes Santarem 460 miles from the Negro, and 650 from the sea. Bates calls it 400 miles from the Atlantic, and nearly 50 from Obidos.

*Leprosy in Ecuador* \*



ter. Santarem sends to Pará for sugar; but the cavaliers of Alabama are proving that the sugar-cane grows better than in Louisiana, attaining the height of twenty feet, and that it will yield for ten or twelve years without transplanting or cultivation. It is not, however, so sweet or juicy as the Southern cane. Some of the colonists are making tapioca and cashaça or Brazilian rum; others have gone into the pork business; while one, Dr. Jones, expects to realize a fortune burning lime. Here we met the rebel ex-General Dobbins, who had been prospecting on the Tapajos River, but had not yet located himself.

Below Santarem the Amazon vastly increases in width; at one point the southern shore was invisible from the steamer. The waves often run very high. At 10 A.M., eight hours from Santarem, we entered the romantic port of Monte Alégre. The road from the river to the village, just visible inland, runs through a pretty dell. Back of the village, beyond a low, swampy flat, rise the table-topped blue hills of Almeyrim. It was an exhilarating sight and a great relief to gaze upon a mountain range from three hundred to one thousand feet high, the greatest elevations along the Amazon east of the Andes. Agassiz considers these singular mountains the remnants of a plain which once filled the whole valley of the Amazon; but Bates believes them to be the southern terminus of the high land of Guiana. Their geological constitution—a pebbly sandstone—favors the Professor's theory. The range extends ninety miles along the north bank of the river, the western limit at Monte Alégre bearing the local name of Serra Eréré. Mount Agassiz, at Obidos, is a spur of the same table-land. The Amazon is here about five miles wide, the southern shore being low, uninhabited, and covered with coarse grass. Five schooners were anchored in the harbor of Monte Alégre, a sign of considerable trade for



the Amazon. The place exports cattle, cacao, rubber, and fish.

In four hours we reached Prayinha, a dilapidated village of forty houses, situated on a low, sandy beach. The chief occupation is the manufacture of turtle-oil. In ten hours more we were taking in wood at Porto do Moz, situated just within the mouth of the Xingú, the last great tributary to the Amazon. Dismal was our farewell sail on the great river. With the highlands came foul weather. We were treated to frequent and furious showers, accompanied by a violent wind, and the atmosphere was filled with smoke caused by numerous fires in the forest. Where the Xingú comes in, the Amazon is ten miles wide, but it is soon divided by a series of islands, the first of which is Grand Island. Twenty miles below Porto do Moz is Gurupá, where we took in rubber. The village, nearly as inanimate as Pompeii, consists of one street, half deserted, built on an isolated site. Forty miles below Gurupá we left the Amazon proper, turning to the right down a narrow channel leading into the river Pará. The forest became more luxuriant, the palms especially increasing in number and beauty. At one place there was a forest of palms, a singularity, for trees of the same order are seldom associated. The forest, densely packed and gloomy, stands on very low, flat banks of hard river mud. Scarcely a sign of animal life was visible; but, as we progressed, dusky faces peered out of the woods; little shanties belonging to the *seringeros*, or rubber-makers, here and there broke the solitude, and occasionally a large group of half-clad natives greeted us from the shore. A labyrinth of channels connects the Amazon with the Pará; the steamers usually take the Tajapurú. This natural canal is of great depth, and from fifty to one hundred yards in width; so that, hemmed in by two green walls, eighty feet high, we seemed

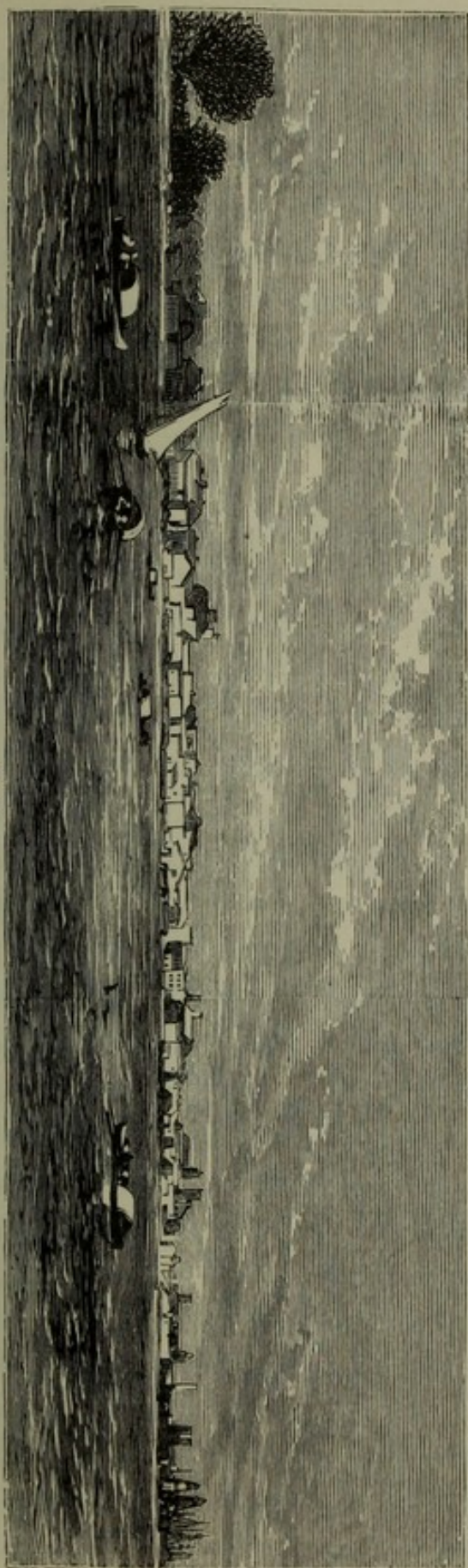


to be sailing through a deep gorge; in some places it was so narrow it was nearly overarched by the foliage. One hundred and twenty-five miles from Gurupá is Breves, a busy little town on the southwest corner of the great island of Marajó. The inhabitants, mostly Portuguese, are engaged in the rubber trade; the Indians in the vicinity manufacture fancy earthen-ware and painted cuyas or calabashes.

Soon after leaving Breves we entered the Pará River, which suddenly begins with the enormous width of eight miles. It is, however, shallow, and contains numerous shoals and islands. It is properly an estuary, immense volumes of fresh water flowing into it from the south. The tides are felt through its entire length of one hundred and sixty miles, but the water is only slightly brackish. It has a dingy orange-brown color. A narrow blue line on our left, miles away, was all that was visible, at times, of the island of Marajó; and as we passed the broad mouth of the Tocantins, we were struck with the magnificent sea-like expanse, for there was scarcely a point of mainland to be seen.

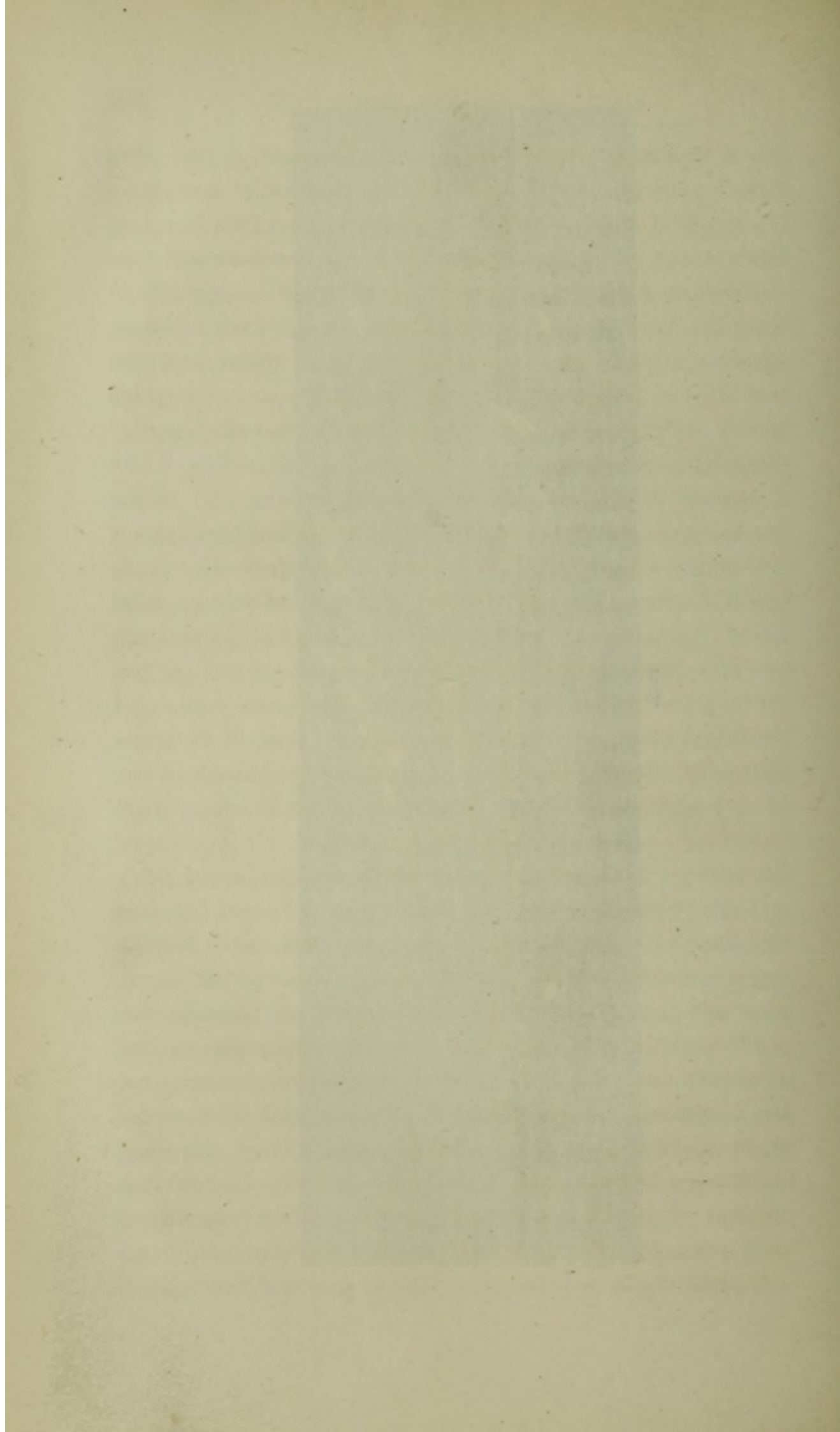
At 4 P.M., eighteen hours from Breves, we entered the peaceful bay of Goajara, and anchored in front of the city of Pará. Beautiful was the view of the city from the harbor in the rays of the declining sun. The towering spires and cupolas, the palatial government buildings, the long row of tall warehouses facing a fleet of schooners, ships, and steamers, and pretty white villas in the suburbs, nestling in luxuriant gardens, were to us, who had just come down the Andes from mediæval Quito, the *ultima thule* of civilization. We seemed to have stepped at once from the Amazon to New York or London. We might, indeed, say *ne plus ultra* in one respect—we had crossed the continent, and Pará was the terminus of our wanderings, the





Pará.







end of romantic adventures, of privations and perils. We were kindly met on the pier by Mr. James Henderson, an elderly Scotchman, whom a long residence in Pará, a bottomless fund of information, and a readiness to serve an Anglo-Saxon, have made an invaluable cicerone. We shot through the devious, narrow streets to the Hotel Diana, where we made our toilet, for our habiliments, too, had reached their *ultima thule*. As La Condamine said on his arrival at Quito: "*Je me trouvais hors d'état de paraître en public avec décence.*"

The same year which saw Shakspeare carried to his grave beside the Avon witnessed the founding of Pará, or, speaking more respectfully, of Santa Maria de Belém do Gram Pará. The city stands on a low elbow of land formed by the junction of the rivers Guamá and Pará, seventy-five miles from the ocean. The great forest comes close up to the suburbs; and, in fact, vegetation is so rapid the city fathers have a hard struggle to keep the jungle out of the streets. The river in front is twenty miles wide, but the vast expanse is broken by numerous islets. Ships of any size will float within one hundred and fifty yards of the shore. All passengers and goods are landed by boats at the custom-house wharf. The city is regularly laid out, there are several public squares, and many of the streets, especially in the commercial part, are well paved. Magnificent avenues, lined with silk-cotton trees, cocoa-palms, and almonds, lead out to beautiful *rocinhas*, or country residences, of one story, but having spacious verandas. The President's house, built in the Italian style, whose marble staircase is a wonder to Brazil; the six large churches, including the cathedral, after patterns from Lisbon; the post-office, custom-house, and convent-looking warehouses on the mole—these are the most prominent buildings. The architecture is superior to that of Quito. The houses,



generally two-storied, are tiled, plastered, and whitewashed or painted; the popular colors are red, yellow, and blue. A few have porcelain facing. The majority have elegant balconies and glass windows, but not all the old projecting lattice casements have disappeared. Some of the buildings bear the marks of the cannonading in the Revolution of 1835. Instead of bedrooms and beds, the largest apartments and verandahs have hooks in the wall for hammocks. A carpeted, cushioned room is seldom seen, and is out of place in the tropics. Coaches and gas are supplanting ox-carts and candles. There are two hotels, but scant accommodations for travelers. Beef is almost the only meat used; the fish are poor and dear; the oysters are horrible. Bananas, oranges, and coffee are the best native productions on the table.

The population of Pará is thirty-five thousand, or double what it was when Wallace and Bates entered it twenty years ago. It is the largest city on the largest river in the world, and the capital of a province ten times the size of New York State. The enterprising, wealthy class consists of Portuguese and pure Brazilians, with a few English, Germans, French, and North Americans. The multitude is an amalgamation of Portuguese, Indian, and Negro. The diversity of races, and the mingled dialects of the Amazon and Europe, make an attractive street scene. Side by side we see the corpulent Brazilian planter, the swarthy Portuguese trader, the merry Negro porter, and the apathetic Indian boatman. Some of the more recent offspring are dressed *à la Adam* before the fall; numbers wear only a shirt or skirt; the negro girls who go about the streets with trays of sweetmeats on their heads are loosely yet prettily dressed in pure white, with massive gilded chains and earrings; but the middle and upper classes generally follow Paris fashions. The mechanic



arts are in the hands of free Negroes and Indians, mulattoes and mamelucos.\* Commerce is carried on almost exclusively by Portuguese and other foreigners. Dry-goods come chiefly from England and France; groceries from Portugal; flour and hardware from the United States. The principal exports are rubber, cacao, coffee,† sugar, cotton, Brazil nuts, sarsaparilla, vanilla, farina, copaiba, tobacco, rum, hides, fish, parrots, and monkeys.‡ Pará exceeds in the number of its indigenous commodities any other port in the world, but the trade at present is insignificant when we consider the vast extent and resources of the country. The city can never have a rival at the mouth of the Amazon, and is destined to become a great emporium. But Brazilian legislation stands in the way. Heavy import duties are charged—from 35 to 45 per cent.; and on the 1st of January, 1868, it was ordered that 15 per cent. must be paid in English gold. The consequence has been that gold has risen from 28 to 30 above par, creating an additional tax. Exportation is equally discouraging. There is a duty of nine per cent. to be paid at the custom-house, and seven



Fruit Peddlers.

\* We are inclined to doubt the assertion of Mansfield that Paraguay is the only country in eastern South America with an industrious peasantry.

† Brazil yields more than one half the quantity of coffee consumed by the world. That of Ceará is the best.

‡ In January, 1868, the current prices were as follows:

Refined Sugar, per arroba....	\$3 00	Tapioca, per arroba.....	\$3 00
Rice	" .... 1 40	Pure rubber "	..... 11 50
Cacao	" .... 3 20	Piassaba cord "	..... 6 50
Coffee	" .... 3 50	Tobacco	" ..... 1 50
Farina	" .... 75	Sarsaparilla "	..... 11 50

The Brazilian arroba is seven pounds heavier than the Spanish.



per cent. more at the consulado. But this is not the sum total. Those who live outside of the province of Pará, say above Obidos, must first pay an import of thirteen per cent. to get their produce into Pará. For example: up the river crude rubber can be bought for twenty-five cents a pound; the trader pays twenty-five cents an arroba (thirty-two pounds) for transportation to Pará from Santarem, exclusive of canoe hire and shipping; thirteen per cent. duty in entering Pará, ten per cent. to the commission merchant, and sixteen per cent. more as export tax; making a total loss on labor of about fifty per cent. Brazil abounds with the most valuable woods in the world, but is prevented from competing with other nations by this system of self-strangulation. In 1867 the import duty on timber was twelve per cent. Though situated on the edge of a boundless forest, Pará consumes large quantities of North American pine. There is not a grist-mill on the Amazon, and only two or three saw-mills. A dozen boards of red cedar (a very common timber) costs 60\$000 per thousand (about thirty dollars) at Santarem. There is no duty on goods going to Peru. The current money, besides foreign gold, consists of copper coins and imperial treasury notes. The basis of calculation is the imaginary *rey*, equivalent to half a mill. The coins in use are the vintem (twenty reys), answering to our cent, the half vintem, and double vintem. The currency has so fluctuated in value that many of the pieces have been restamped. Fifty vintems make a *milrey*, expressed thus: 1\$000. This is the smallest paper issue. Unfortunately, the notes may suddenly fall below par. As a great many counterfeits made in Portugal are in circulation, the government recalls the issue which has been counterfeited, notifying holders, by the provincial papers, that all such bills must be exchanged for a new issue within six months. Those not brought in at the end of that pe-



riod lose ten per cent. of their value, and ten per cent. for each following month, until the value of the note is *nil*. The result has been that many persons trading up the river have lost heavily, and now demand hard money. Change is very scarce in Pará.

The province of Pará is governed by a president chosen at Rio, and every four years sends representatives to the Imperial Parliament. The Constitution of Brazil is very liberal; every householder, without distinction of race or color, has a vote, and may work his way up to high position. There are two drawbacks—the want of intelligence and virtue in the people, and the immense staff of officials employed to administer the government. There are also many formalities which are not only useless, but a hindrance to prosperity. Thus, the internal trade of a province carried on by Brazilian subjects is not exempt from the passport system. A foreigner finds as much trouble in getting his passport *en règle* in Pará as in Vienna. The religion of Pará is Romish, and not so tolerant as in Rio. We arrived during a *feira*. (When did a traveler enter a Portuguese town on any other than a feast day?) That night was made hideous with rockets, fire-crackers, cannon, and bells. “Music, noise, and fireworks,” says Wallace, “are the three essentials to please a Brazilian populace.” The most celebrated shrine in Northern Brazil is Our Lady of Nazareth. The little chapel stands about a mile out of the city, and is now rebuilding for the third time. The image is a doll about the size of a girl ten years old, wearing a silver crown and a dress of blue silk glittering with golden stars. Hosts of miracles are attributed to Our Lady, and we were shown votive offerings and models of legs, arms, heads, etc.; etc., the grateful *in memoriam* of wonderful cures, besides a boat whose crew were saved by invoking the protection of Mary. The facilities for edu- X



cation are improving. There are several seminaries in Pará, of which the chief is the *Lyceo da Capital*. Too many youths, however, as in Quito, are satisfied with a little rhetoric and law. The city supports four newspapers.

Paráenses may well be proud of their delightful climate. Wallace says the thermometer ranges from  $74^{\circ}$  to  $87^{\circ}$ ; our observation made the mean annual temperature  $80.2^{\circ}$ . The mean daily temperature does not vary more than two or three degrees. The climate is more equable than that of any other observed part of the New World.\* The greatest heat is reached at two o'clock, but it is never so oppressive as in New York. The greater the heat, the stronger the sea-breeze; and in three hundred out of three hundred and sixty-five days, the air is farther cooled by an afternoon shower. The rainiest month is April; the driest, October or November. Lying in the delta of a great river, in the middle of the tropics, and half surrounded by swamps, its salubrity is remarkable. We readily excuse the proverb, "*Quem vai para Pará para*" ("He who goes to Pará stops there"); and we might have made it good, had we not been tempted by the magnificent steamer "South America," which came up from Rio on the way to New York. On the moonlit night of the 7th of January, when the ice-king had thrown his white robes over the North, we turned our backs upon the glimmering lights of Pará, and noiselessly as a canoe glided down the great river. As the sun rose for the last time to us upon the land of perpetual verdure, our gallant ship was plowing the mottled waters on the edge of the ocean—mingled yellow patches of the Amazon

\* "The traveler, in going from the equator toward the tropics, is less struck by the decrease of the mean annual temperature than by the unequal distribution of heat in different parts of the year."—*Humboldt*. The great German fixes the mean temperature of the equator at  $81.5^{\circ}$ ; Brewster, at  $82.8^{\circ}$ ; Kirwan,  $83.9^{\circ}$ ; Atkinson,  $84.5^{\circ}$ .



and dark streaks from the Pará floating on the Atlantic green. Far behind us we could see the breakers dashing against the Braganza Banks; a moment after Cape Ma-goary dropped beneath the horizon, and with it South America vanished from our view.



## CHAPTER XVIII.

The River Amazon.—Its Source and Magnitude.—Tributaries and Tints.—Volume and Current.—Rise and Fall.—Navigation.—Expeditions on the Great River.

NEAR the silver mines of Cerro Pasco, in the little Lake of Lauricocha, just below the limit of perpetual winter, rises the “King of Waters.”\* For the first five hundred miles it flows northerly, in a continuous series of cataracts and rapids, through a deep valley between the parallel Cordilleras of Peru. Upon reaching the frontier of Ecuador, it turns to the right, and runs easterly two thousand five hundred miles across the great equatorial plain of the continent.† No other river flows in the same latitude, and retains, therefore, the same climatic conditions for so great a distance. The breadth of the Amazon, also, is well proportioned to its extraordinary length. At Tabatinga, two thousand miles above its mouth, it is a mile and a half wide; at the entrance of the Madeira, it is three miles; below Santarem, it is ten; and if the Pará be considered a part of the great river, it fronts the Atlantic one hundred and eighty miles. Brazilians proudly call it the Mediterranean of the New World. Its vast expanse, presenting

\* Herndon gives, for the altitude of Cerro Pasco, 13,802 feet; Rivero, 14,279. The lieutenant thus describes his first view from the rough hills surrounding this birthplace of the greatest of rivers: “I can compare it to nothing so fitly as looking from the broken and ragged edges of a volcano into the crater beneath.”

† From Lauricocha to its mouth, the Amazon, following the main curves, is 2740 miles long, as estimated by Bates; in a straight line, 2050; from Pará to the head of the Ucayali, 3000. From north to south the tributaries stretch 1720 miles.



below Teffé magnificent reaches, with blank horizons, and forming a barrier between different species of animals; its system of back channels, joining the tributaries, and linking a series of lagunes too many ever to be named; its network of navigable waters stretching over one third of the continent; its oceanic fauna—porpoises and manatis, gulls and frigate-birds—remind the traveler of a great inland sea, with endless ramifications, rather than a river. The side-channels through the forest, called by the Indians *igarapés*, or canoe-paths, are one of the characteristic features



Igarapé, or Canoe-path.



of the Amazon.\* They often run to a great distance parallel to the great river, and intersecting the tributaries, so that one can go from Santarem a thousand miles up the Amazon without once entering it. These natural highways will be of immense advantage for inter-communication.

But extraordinary as is this net-work of natural canals, the tributaries of the Amazon are still more wonderful. They are so numerous they appear on the map like a thousand ribbons streaming from a main mast, and many of the obscure affluents, though large as the Hudson, are unknown to geography. From three degrees north to twenty degrees south, every river that flows down the eastern slope of the Andes is a contributor—as though all the rivers between Mexico and Mount Hooker united their waters in the Mississippi. While the great river of the northern continent drains an area of one million two hundred thousand square miles, the Amazon (not including the Tocantíns) is spread over a million more, or over a surface equal to two thirds of all Europe. Let us journey around the grand trunk and take a glimpse of the main branches.

The first we meet in going up the left bank is the Rio Negro. It rises in the Sierra Tunuhy, an isolated mountain group in the llanos of Colombia, and enters the Amazon at Manáos, a thousand miles from the sea. The upper part, down to the parallel of one degree north, has a very rapid current; at San Gabriel are the first rapids in ascending; between San Gabriel and Barcellos the rate is not over two or three miles per hour; between Barcellos and Manáos it is a deep but sluggish river, and in the annual rise of the Amazon its waters are stagnant for several hundred miles

\* *Igarapé* is sometimes limited to a creek filled with back-water; *paranámirim* is the proper term for a narrow arm of the main river; and *furos* are the diminutive mouths of the tributaries.



up, or actually flow back. Its extreme length is twelve hundred miles, and its greatest breadth is at Barcellos, where it is twelve or fifteen miles. Excepting this middle section, the usual breadth of the Negro below the equatorial line is about one mile. It is joined to the Orinoco by the navigable Cassiquiari,\* a natural canal three fourths of a mile wide, and a portage of only two hours divides the head of its tributary, the Branco, from the Essequibo of Guiana. The Negro yields to commerce coffee, cacao, farina, sarsaparilla, Brazil nuts, pitch, piassaba, and valuable woods. The commerce of Brazil with Venezuela by the Rio Negro amounted in 1867 to \$22,000, of which \$9000 was the value of imports. The principal villages above Manáos are San Miguel and Moroa (which contain about fifty dwellings each), Tireguin, Barcellos, Toma, San Carlos, Coana, San Gabriel, and Santa Isabel.

The next great affluent is the Japurá. It rises in the mountains of New Granada, and, flowing southeasterly a thousand miles, enters the Amazon opposite Ega, five hundred miles above Manáos. Its principal mouth is three hundred feet wide, but it has a host of distributing channels, the extremes of which are two hundred miles apart. Its current is only three quarters of a mile an hour, and it has been ascended by canoes five hundred miles. A natural canal like the Cassiquiari is said to connect it with the Orinoco. The products of the Japurá are sarsaparilla, copiba, rubber, cacao, farina, Brazil nuts, moira-piranga—a hard, fine-grained wood of a rich, cherry-red color—and carajurú, a brilliant scarlet dye.

Parallel to the Japurá is the Putumayo or Issá. Its source is the Lake of San Pablo, at the foot of the volcano

\* The Cassiquiari belongs indifferently to both river systems, the level being so complete at one point between them as to obliterate the line of water-shed.  
—Herschel.



of Pasto; its mouth, as given by Herndon, is half a mile broad, and its current two and three fourths miles an hour.

Farther west are the Napo and Pastassa, starting from the volcanoes of Quito. The former is nearly seven hundred miles long, navigable five hundred. The latter is an unnavigable torrent. One of its branches, the Topo, is one continued rapid; "of those who have fallen into it, only one has come out alive." Another, the Patate, rises near Iliniza, runs through the plain to a little south of Cotopaxi, receives all streams flowing from the eastern side of the western Cordillera from Iliniza to Chimborazo, and unites near Tunguragua with the Chambo, which rises near Sangai. Castelnau and Bates saw pumice floating on the Amazon; it was probably brought from Cotopaxi by the Pastassa.

Crossing the Marañon, and going eastward, we first pass the Huallaga, a rapid river of the size of the Cumberland, coming down the Peruvian Andes from an altitude of eight thousand six hundred feet, and entering the great river nearly opposite the Pastassa. Its mouth is a mile wide, and for a hundred miles up its average depth is three fathoms. In July, August, and September the steamers are not able to ascend to Yurimaguas. Canoe navigation begins at Tinga Maria, three hundred miles from Lima. The fertile plain through which the river flows is very attractive to an agriculturist. Cotton is gathered six months after sowing, and rice in five months. At Tarpoto a large amount of cotton-cloth is woven for export.

The next great tributary from the south is the Ucayali. This magnificent stream originates near ancient Cuzco, and has a fall of .87 of a foot per mile, and a length nearly equal to that of the Negro. For two hundred and fifty miles above its mouth it averages half a mile in width, and has a current of three miles an hour. At Sarayacu it is



twenty feet deep. The Ucayali is navigable for at least seven hundred miles. The "Morona," a steamer of five hundred tons, has been up to the entrance of the Pachitéa in the dry season, a distance of six hundred miles, and in the wet season ascended that branch to Mayro. A small Peruvian steamer has recently ascended the Tambo to within sixty miles of Fort Ramon, or seven hundred and seventy-three miles from Nauta.

Leaving the Ucayali, we pass by six rivers rising in the unknown lands of Northern Bolivia: the Javarí, navigable by steam for two hundred and fifty miles; the sluggish Jutahí, half a mile broad and four hundred miles long; the Juruá, four times the size of our Connecticut, and navigable nearly its entire length; the unhealthy, little-known Teffé and Coary; and the Purus, a deep, slow river, over a thousand miles long, and open to navigation half way to its source. Soldan and Pinto claim to have ascended the Javarí, in a steamer, about one thousand miles, and it is said Chandless went up the Purus one thousand eight hundred miles. The Teffé is narrow, with a strong current. Of all these six rivers, the Purus is the most important. It is probably the Amaru-mayu, or "serpent-river," of the Incas, and its affluents enjoy the privilege of draining the waters of those beautiful Andes which formed the eastern boundary of the empire of Manco Capac, and fertilizing the romantic valley of Paucar-tambo, or "Inn of the Flowery Meadow." The banks of this noble stream are now held by the untamable Chunchos; but the steam-whistle will accomplish what the rifle can not. The Purus communicates with the Madeira, proving the absence of rapids and of intervening mountains.

Sixty miles below the confluence of the Negro, the mighty Madeira, the largest tributary of the Amazon, blends its milky waters with the turbid king of rivers.



It is about two thousand miles in length; one branch, the Beni, rising near Lake Titicaca, drains the fertile valleys of Yungus and Apollo, rich in cinchona, chocolate, and gold; the Mamoré springs from the vicinity of Chuquisaca, within fifteen miles of a source of the Paraguay, traversing the territory of the brave and intelligent Moxos; while the Itinez washes down the gold and diamonds of Matto Grosso. Were it not for the cascade four hundred and eighty miles from its mouth, large vessels might sail from the Amazon into the very heart of Bolivia. When full, it has a three-mile current, and at its junction with the Amazon it is two miles wide and sixty-six feet deep. Five hundred miles from its mouth it is a mile wide and one hundred feet deep. It contains numerous islands, and runs in a comparatively straight course. It received its name from the vast quantity of drift-wood often seen floating down. The value of Brazilian commerce with Bolivia by the Madeira was, in 1867, \$43,000.\*

At Santarem the Amazon receives another great tributary, the Tapajos (or Rio Preto, as the Portuguese call it), a thousand miles long, and, for the last eighty miles, from four to twelve miles in breadth. It rises amid the glittering mines of Matto Grosso, only twenty miles from the head-waters of the Rio Plata, and flows rapidly down through a magnificent hilly country to the last cataract, which is one hundred and sixty miles above Santarem, and is the end of navigation to sailing vessels. Thence to the Amazon it has little current and no great depth. From Santarem to Diamantino it is about twenty-six days' travel. Large quantities of sarsaparilla, rubber, tonka beans, mandioca, and guarana are brought down this river.

\* In the map of Friar Fritz, published in 1707, the Madeira is one of the most insignificant of the tributaries, and the Ucayali and Putumayo are the largest.



Parallel to the Tapajos, and about two hundred miles distant, flows the Xingú. It rises in the heart of the empire, has the length of the Ohio and Monongahela, and can be navigated one hundred and fifty miles. This is the last great tributary of the Amazon proper; if, however, we consider the Pará as only one of the outlets of the great river, we may then add to the list the grand Tocantíns.\* This splendid river has its source in the rich province of Minas (the source, also, of the San Francisco and Uruguay), not six hundred miles from Rio Janeiro—a region possessing the finest climate in Brazil, and yielding diamonds and rubies, the sapphire, topaz and opal, gold, silver, and petroleum. The Tocantíns is sixteen hundred miles long, and ten miles broad at its mouth; but, unfortunately, rapids commence one hundred and twenty miles above Cametá. The Araguaia, its main branch, is, according to Castelnau, one mile wide, with a current of three fourths of a mile an hour.

Here are six tributaries, all of them superior to any river in Europe, outside of Russia, save the Danube, and ten times greater than any stream on the west slope of the

\* We are inclined to hold, with Bates and others, that the Pará River is not, strictly speaking, one of the mouths of the Amazon. "It is made to appear so on many of the maps in common use, because the channels which connect it with the main river are there given much broader than they are in reality, conveying the impression that a large body of water finds an outlet from the main river into the Pará. It is doubtful, however, if there be any considerable stream of water flowing constantly downward through these channels. There is a great contrast in general appearance between the Pará and the main Amazon. In the former the flow of the tide always creates a strong current upward, while in the Amazon the turbid flow of the mighty stream overpowers all tides, and produces a constant downward current. The color of the water is different; that of the Pará being of a dingy orange-brown, while the Amazon has an ochreous or yellowish-clay tint. The forests on their banks have a different aspect. On the Pará, the infinitely diversified trees seem to rise directly out of the water, the forest-frontage is covered with greenery, and wears a placid aspect; while the shores of the main Amazon are encumbered with fallen trunks, and are fringed with a belt of broad-leaved grasses."—*Naturalist on the Amazon*, i., p. 3-5.



Andes. While the Arkansas joins the Mississippi four hundred miles above New Orleans, the Madeira, of equal length, enters the Amazon nine hundred miles from Pará. But, vast as are these tributary streams, they seem to make no impression on the Amazon; they are lost like brooks in the ocean. Our ideas of the magnitude of the great river are wonderfully increased when we see the Madeira coming down two thousand miles, yet its enormous contribution imperceptible half way across the giant river; or the dark waters of the Negro creeping along the shore, and becoming undistinguishable five miles from its mouth. Though the Amazon carries a larger amount of sediment than any other river, it has no true delta, the archipelago in its mouth (for, like our own St. Lawrence, it has its Bay of a Thousand Isles) not being an alluvial formation, but having a rocky base. The great island of Marajó, in physical configuration, resembles the mainland of Guiana. The deltoid outlet is confined to the tributaries, nearly all of them, like "the disemboguing Nile," emptying themselves by innumerable embouchures. To several tributaries the Amazon gives water before it receives their tribute. Thus, by ascending the Negro sixty miles, we have the singular spectacle of water pouring in from the Amazon through the Guariba Channel.

The waters of this great river system are of divers tints. The Amazon, as it leaps from the Andes, and as far down as the Ucayali, is blue, passing into a clear olive-green; likewise the Pastassa, Huallaga, Tapajos, Xingú, and Tocantíns. Below the Ucayali it is of a pale, yellowish olive; the Madeira,\* Purus, Juruá, Jutahí, Javari, Ucayali, Napo, Iça, and Japurá are of similar color. The Negro, Coary, and Teffé are black. Humboldt observes that "a cooler

\* The Madeira has often a milky color which it receives from the white clay along its banks.



atmosphere, fewer mosquitoes, greater salubrity, and absence of crocodiles, as also of fish, mark the region of these black rivers." This is not altogether true. The Amazon throughout is healthy, being swept by the trade-winds. The branches, which are not so constantly refreshed by the ocean breezes, are occasionally malarious; the "white-water" tributaries, except when they have a slack current in the dry season, have the best reputation, while intermittent fevers are nearly confined to the dark-colored streams. Much of the sickness on these tropical waters, however, is due to exposure and want of proper food rather than to the climate. The river system of South America will favorably compare, in point of salubrity, with the river system of its continental neighbor.\*

As we might expect, the volume of the Amazon is beyond all parallel. Half a million cubic feet of water pour through the narrows of Obidos every second, and fresh water may be taken up from the Atlantic far out of sight of land. The fall of the main easterly trunk of the Amazon is about six and a half inches per mile, equivalent to a slope of 21'—the same as that of the Nile, and one third that of the Mississippi. Below Jaen there are thirty cataracts and rapids; at the Pongo de Manseriche, at the altitude of 1164 feet (according to Humboldt), it bids adieu to mountain scenery. Between Tabatinga and the ocean the average current is three miles an hour. It diminishes toward Pará, and is every where at a minimum in the dry season; but it always has the "swing" of an ocean current.

\* The average temperature of the water in the Lower Amazon is  $81^{\circ}$ , that of the air being a little less. The temperature of the Huallaga at Yurimaguas was  $75^{\circ}$  when the air was  $88^{\circ}$  in the shade; in another experiment both the river and air were  $80^{\circ}$ . The Marañon at Iquitos was  $79^{\circ}$  when the air was  $90^{\circ}$ . At the mouth of the Juruá, Herndon found both water and air  $82^{\circ}$ . In the tropics the difference between the temperature of the water and air is proportionally less than in high latitudes.



Though not so rapid as the Mississippi, the Amazon is deeper. There are seven fathoms of water at Nauta (2200 miles from the Atlantic), eleven at Tabatinga, and twenty-seven on the average below Manáos.\*

The Amazon and its branches are subject to an annual rise of great regularity. It does not take place simultaneously over the whole river, but there is a succession of freshets. At the foot of the Andes the rise commences in January; at Ega it begins about the end of February. Coinciding with this contribution from the west, the October rains on the highlands of Bolivia and Brazil swell the southern tributaries, whose accumulated floods reach the main stream in February; and the latter, unable to discharge the avalanche of waters, inundates a vast area, and even crowds up the northern tributaries. As the Madeira, Tapajos, and Purus subside, the Negro, fed by the spring rains in Guiana and Venezuela, presses downward till the central stream rolls back the now sluggish affluents from the south. There is, therefore, a rhythmical correspondence in the rise and fall of the arms of the Amazon, so that this great fresh-water sea sways alternately north and south; while the onward swell in the grand trunk is a progressive undulation eastward. As the Cambridge Professor well says: "In this oceanic river the tidal action has an annual instead of a daily ebb and flow; it obeys a larger orb, and is ruled by the sun and not the moon." As the southern affluents have the greatest volume, the Amazon receives its largest accession after the sun has been in the southern hemisphere. The rise is gradual, increasing to one foot per day. One lowland after another sinks beneath the flood; the forest stands up to its middle in the water, and

\* The assertion of the *Ency. Metropolitana*, that "its current has great violence and rapidity, and its depth is unfathomable," must be received with some allowance.



shady dells are transformed into navigable creeks.\* Swarms of turtles leave the river for the inland lakes; flocks of wading birds migrate to the banks of the Negro and Orinoco to enjoy the cloudless sky of the dry season; alligators swim where a short time before the jaguar lay in wait for the tapir; and the natives, unable to fish, huddle in their villages to spend the "winter of their discontent." The Lower Amazon is at its minimum in September or October. The rise above this lowest level is between seven and eight fathoms. If we consider the average width of the Amazon two miles, we shall have a surface of at least five thousand square miles raised fifty feet by the inundation. An extraordinary freshet is expected every sixth year.

The Atlantic tide is perceptible at Obidos, four hundred and fifty miles above Pará, and Bates observed it up the Tapajos, five hundred and thirty miles distant. The tide, however, does not flow up; there is only a rising and falling of the waters—the momentary check of the great river in its conflict with the ocean. The "bore," or *piroróco*, is a colossal wave at spring tide, rising suddenly along the whole width of the Amazon to a height of twelve or fifteen feet, and then collapsing with a frightful roar.

The Amazon presents an unparalleled extent of water communication. So many and far reaching are its tributaries, it touches every country on the continent except Chile and Patagonia. South America is well nigh quartered by its river system: the Amazon starts within sixty miles of the Pacific; the Tapajos and Madeira reach down to the La Plata; while the Negro mingles its waters with those of the Orinoco. The tributaries also communicate with each other by intersecting canals, so numerous that central Amazonia is truly a cluster of islands. Wagons

\* The flooded lands are called *gapos*. •



and railroads will be out of the question for ages hence in this aquatic basin. No other river runs in so deep a channel to so great a distance. For two thousand miles from its mouth there are not less than seven fathoms of water. Not a fall interrupts navigation on the main stream for two thousand five hundred miles; and it so happens that while the current is ever east (for even the ocean can not send up its tide against it), there is a constant trade-wind westward, so that navigation up or down has always something in its favor. As a general rule, the breeze is not so strong during the rise of the river. There are at least six thousand miles of navigation for large vessels. It was lately said that the Mississippi carries more vessels in a month, and the Yang-tse-Kiang in a day, than the Amazon all the year round. But this is no longer true. Steamers already ascend regularly to the port of Moyabamba, which is less than twenty days' travel from the Pacific coast. The Amazon was opened to the world September 7, 1867; and the time can not be far distant when the exhaustless wealth of the great valley—its timber, fruit, medicinal plants, gums, and dye-stuffs—will be emptied by this great highway into the commercial lap of the Atlantic; when crowded steamers will plow all these waters—yellow, black, and blue—and the sloths and alligators, monkeys and jaguars, toucans and turtles, will have a bad time of it.

Officially free to the world, the great river is, however, for the present practically closed to foreign shipping, as it is difficult to compete with the Brazilian steamers. For, by the contract which lasts till 1877, the company is allowed an annual subsidy of \$4,000,000, which has since been increased by 250 milreys per voyage. In 1867 the steamers and sailing vessels on the Amazon were divided as follows, though it must be remembered that few of the foreign ships, excepting Portuguese, ascended beyond Pará:



Nationality.	No.	Tonnage.	Nationality.	No.	Tonnage.
United States .....	37	39,901½	Holland .....	3	538
Brazil.....	49	28,639	Denmark.....	2	525
England.....	52	13,276½	Holstein.....	3	498
Portugal .....	24	7,871	Norway.....	1	135
France.....	18	5,344	Spain .....	1	90
Prussia .....	4	889½			

The vessels carrying the stars and stripes exported from Pará to the value of 3,235,073\$950, or eight times the amount carried by Brazilian craft, and 50,000 milreys more than England. While, therefore, the Imperial Company has the monopoly of trade on the Amazon, our ships distribute one third of the products to the world. The United States is the natural commercial partner with Brazil; for not only is New York the half-way house between Pará and Liverpool, but a chip thrown into the sea at the mouth of the Amazon will float close by Cape Hatteras. The official value of exports from Pará in 1867 was 9,926,912\$557, or about five millions of dollars, an increase of one million over 1866.

The early expeditions into the Valley of the Amazon, in search of the "Gilded King," are the most romantic episodes in the history of Spanish discovery. To the wild wanderings of these worshipers of gold succeeded the more earnest explorations of the Jesuits, those pioneers of geographical knowledge. Pinzon discovered the mouth of the river in 1500; but Orellana, who came down the Napo in 1541, was the first to navigate its waters. Twenty years later Aguirre descended from Cuzco; in 1637, Texeira ascended to Quito by the Napo; Cabrera descended from Peru in 1639; Juan de Palacios by the Napo in 1725; La Condamine from Jaen in 1744, and Madame Godin by the Pastassa in 1769. The principal travelers who preceded us in crossing the continent this century were Mawe (1828), Pœppig (1831), Smyth (1834), Von Tschudi (1845), Cas-



telnau (1846), Herndon and Gibbon (1851), and Church (1871), who came down through Peru, and a Spanish commission (Almagro, Spada, Martinez, and Isern), who made the Napo transit in 1865. To Spix and Martius (1820), Bates and Wallace (1848-1857), Azevedo and Pinto (1862-1864), and Agassiz (1865), the world is indebted for the most scientific surveys of the river in Brazil.

Such is the Amazon, the mightiest river in the world, rising amid the loftiest volcanoes on the globe, and flowing through a forest unparalleled in extent. "It only wants (wrote Father Acuña), in order to surpass the Ganges, Euphrates, and the Nile in felicity, that its source should be in Paradise." As if one name were not sufficient for its grandeur, it has three appellations: Marañon, Solimoens, and Amazon; the first applied to the part in Peru, the second to the portion between Tabatinga and Manáos, and the third to all below the Rio Negro.\* We have no proper conception of the vast dimensions of the thousand-armed river till we sail for weeks over its broad bosom, be-

\* The upper part of the Marañon, from its source to Jaen, is sometimes called the Tunguragua. Solimoens is now seldom heard; but, instead, Middle Amazon, or simply Amazon. The term Alto Amazonas or High Amazon is also applied to all above the Negro. Marañon, says Velasco, derives its name from the circumstance that a soldier, sent by Pizarro to discover the sources of the Rio Piura, having beheld the mighty stream from the neighborhood of Jaen, and, astonished to behold a sea of fresh water, exclaimed, "*Hac mare an non?*" Orellana's pretended fight with a nation of female warriors gave rise to the Portuguese name of the river, Amazonas (anglicized Amazon), after the mythical women in Cappadocia, who are said to have burnt off their right breasts that they might use the bow and javelin with more skill and force, and hence their name, *Ἀμαζόνες*, from *a* and *μαζος*. Orellana's story probably grew out of the fact that the men wear long tunics, part the hair in the middle, and, in certain tribes, alone wear ornaments. Some derive the name from the Indian word *amassona*, boat-destroyer. The old name, Orellana, after the discoverer, is obsolete, as also the Indian term Parana-tinga, or King of Waters. In ordinary conversation it is designated as *the* river, in distinction from its tributaries. "In all parts of the world (says Humboldt), the largest rivers are called by those who dwell on their banks, *The River*, without any distinct and peculiar appellation."



holding it sweeping disdainfully by the great Madeira as if its contribution was of no account, discharging into the sea one hundred thousand cubic feet of water per second more than our Mississippi, rolling its turbid waves thousands of miles exactly as it pleases,—plowing a new channel every year, with tributaries twenty miles wide, and an island in its mouth twice the size of Massachusetts.



## CHAPTER XIX.

The Valley of the Amazon.—Its Physical Geography.—Geology.—Climate.—Vegetation.

FROM the Atlantic shore to the foot of the Andes, and from the Orinoco to the Paraguay, stretches the great Valley of the Amazon. In this vast area the United States might be packed without touching its boundaries. It could contain the basins of the Mississippi, the Danube, the Nile, and the Hoang-Ho. It is girt on three sides by a wall of mountains: on the north are the highlands of Guiana and Venezuela; on the west stand the Andes; on the south rise the table-lands of Matto Grosso. The valley begins at such an altitude, that on the western edge vegetation differs as much from the vegetation at Pará, though in the same latitude, as the flora of Canada from the flora of the West Indies.

The greater part of the region drained by the Amazon, however, is not a valley proper, but an extensive plain. From the mouth of the Napo to the ocean, a distance of eighteen hundred miles in a straight line, the slope is one foot in five miles.\* At Coca, on the Napo, the altitude is 850 feet, according to our observations; at Tinga Maria, on the Huallaga, it is 2200 according to Herndon; at the junction of the Negro with the Cassiquiari, it is 400 according to Wallace; at the mouth of the Mamoré, it is 800 according to Gibbon; at the Pongo de Manseriche, below

\* Professor Agassiz gives the average slope as hardly more than a foot in ten miles, which is based on the farther assertion that the distance from Tabatinga to the sea-shore is more than 2000 miles in a straight line. The distance is not 1600, or exactly 1500, from Pará.—See *A Journey in Brazil*, p. 349.



all rapids, it is 1160 according to Humboldt; and at the junction of Araguaia with the Tocantíns, it is 200 according to Castelnau. These barometrical measurements represent the basin of the Amazon as a shallow trough lying parallel to the equator, the southern side having double the inclination of the northern, and the whole gently sloping eastward. Farthermore, the channel of the great river is not in the centre of the basin, but lies to the north of it: thus, the hills of Almeyrim rise directly from the river, while the first falls on the Tocantíns, Xingú, and Tapajos are nearly two hundred miles above their mouths; the rapids of San Gabriel, on the Negro, are one hundred and seventy-five miles from the Amazon, while the first obstruction to the navigation of the Madeira is a hundred miles farther from the great river.

Of the creation of this valley we have already spoken. No region on the face of the globe of equal extent has such a monotonous geology. Around the rim of the basin are the outcroppings of a cretaceous deposit; this rests on the hidden mezozoic and palæozoic strata which form the ribs of the Andes. Above it, covering the whole basin from New Granada to the Argentine Republic,\* are the following formations: first, a stratified accumulation of sand; second, a series of laminated clays, of divers colors, without a pebble; third, a fine, compact sandstone; fourth, a coarse, porous sandstone, so ferruginous as to resemble bog iron-ore. This last was, originally, a thousand feet in thickness, but was worn down, *perhaps*, in some sudden escape of the

\* Messrs. Myers and Forbes found this red clay on the Negro, most abundantly near Barcellos; also in small quantities on the Orinoco above Maipures. The officers of the "Morona" assured us that the same formation was traceable far up the Ucayali and Huallaga. This clay from the Amazon, as examined microscopically by Prof. H. James Clark, contains fragments of gastropod shells and bivalve casts. The red earth of the Pampas, according to Ehrenberg, contains eight fresh-water to one salt-water animalcule.



pent-up waters of the valley. The table-topped hills of Almeyrim are almost the sole relics.\* Finally, over the undulating surface of the denuded sandstone an ochraceous, unstratified sandy clay was deposited.

It is a question to what period this great accumulation is to be assigned. Humboldt called it "Old Red Sandstone;" Martius pronounced it "New Red;" Agassiz says "Drift"—the glacial deposit brought down from the Andes and worked over by the melting of the ice which transported it.† The Professor farther declares that "these deposits are fresh-water deposits; they show no sign of a marine origin; no sea-shells nor remains of any marine animal have as yet been found throughout their whole extent; tertiary deposits have never been observed in any part of the Amazonian basin." This was true up to 1867. Neither Bates, Wallace, nor Agassiz found any marine fossil on the banks of the great river. But there is danger in building a theory on negative evidence. These explorers ascended no farther than Tabatinga. Two hundred miles west of that fort is the little Peruvian village of Pebas, at the confluence of the Ambiyacu. We came down the Napo and Marañon, and stopped at this place. Here we discovered a fossiliferous bed intercalated between the variegated clays so peculiar to the Amazon. *It was crowded with marine tertiary shells!* This was Pebas *vs.* Cambridge. It was unmistakable proof that the formation was not drift, but tertiary; not of fresh, but salt water origin. The species,

\* "On the South American coast, where tertiary and supra-tertiary beds have been extensively elevated, I repeatedly noticed that the uppermost beds were formed of coarser materials than the lower; this appears to indicate that, as the sea becomes shallower, the force of the waves or currents increased."—Darwin's *Observations*, pt. ii., 131. "Nowhere in the Pampas is there any appearance of much superficial denudation."—Pt. iii., 100.

† *A Journey in Brazil*, p. 250, 411, 424. Again, in his Lecture before the Lowell Institute, 1866: "These deposits could not have been made by the sea, nor in a large lake, as they contain no marine nor fresh-water fossils."



as determined by W. M. Gabb, Esq., of Philadelphia, are : *Neritina pupa*, *Turbonilla minuscula*, *Mesalia Ortoni*, *Tellina Amazonensis*, *Pachydon obliqua*, and *P. tenua*.\* All of these are new forms excepting the first, and the last is a new genus. It is a singular fact that the *Neritina* is now living in the West India waters, and the species found at Pebas retains its peculiar markings. So that we have some ground for the supposition that not many years ago there was a connection between the Caribbean Sea and the Upper Amazon ; in other words, that Guiana has only very lately ceased to be an island. There is no mountain range on the water-shed between the Orinoco and the Negro and Japurá, but the three rivers are linked by natural canals.† Interstratified with the clay deposit are seams of a highly bituminous lignite ; we traced it from near the mouth of the Curaray on the Rio Napo to Loreto on the Marañon, a distance of about four hundred miles. It occurs also at Iquitos. This is farther testimony against the glacial theory of the formation of the Amazonian Valley. The paucity of shells in such a vast deposit is not astonishing. It is as remarkable in the similar accumulation of reddish argillaceous earth, called " Pampean mud," which overspreads the Rio Plata region.‡ Some of the Pampa shells, like those at Pebas, are proper to brackish water, and occur only on the highest banks. The Pampean formation is believed by Mr. Darwin to be an estuary or delta deposit. We will mention, in this connection, that silicified wood is found at the

\* These interesting fossils are figured and described in the *Am. Journal of Conchology*.

† " The whole basin between the Orinoco and the Amazon is composed of granite and gneiss, slightly covered with débris. There is a total absence of sedimentary rocks. The surface is often bare and destitute of soil, the undulations being only a few feet above or below a straight line."—Evan Hopkins, in *Quart. Jour. Geol. Soc.*, vol. vi.

‡ See Darwin on the absence of extensive modern conchiferous deposits in South America, *Geological Observations*, pt. iii., ch. v.



head waters of the Napo; the Indians use it instead of flint (which does not occur there) in striking a light. Darwin found silicified trees on the same slope of the Andes at the Uspallata Pass.

The climatology of the Valley of the Amazon is as simple as its physical geography. There is no circle of the seasons as with us—nature moves in a straight line. The daily order of the weather is uniform for months. There is very little difference between the dry and hot seasons; the former, lasting from July to December, is varied with showers, and the latter, from January to June, with sunny days, while the daily temperature is the same within two or three degrees throughout the year. On the water-shed between the Orinoco and Negro it rains throughout the year, but most water falls between May and November, the coolest season in that region. On the Middle Negro the wet season extends from June 1st to December 1st, and is the most sultry time.

Comparatively few insects, birds, or beasts are to be seen in summer; but it is the harvest-time of the inhabitants, who spend the glorious weather rambling over the plaïas and beaches, fishing and turtle-hunting. The middle of September is the midsummer of the valley. The rainy season, or winter, is ushered in by violent thunder-storms from the west. It is then that the woods are eloquent with buzzing insects, shrill cicadas, screaming parrots, chattering monkeys, and roaring jaguars. The greatest activity of animal and vegetable life is in June and July. The heaviest rains fall in April, May, and June. Scarcely ever is there a continuous rain for twenty-four hours. Castelnau witnessed at Pebas a fall of not less than thirty inches in a single storm. The greatest amount noticed in New York during the whole month of September was 12.2 inches. The humidity of the atmosphere, as likewise the luxuriance of vegetation and



the abundance and beauty of animal forms, increases from the Atlantic to the Andes. At the foot of the Andes, Pœppig found that the most refined sugar in a few days dissolved into sirup, and the best gunpowder became liquid even when inclosed in canisters. So we found the Napo steaming with vapor. Fogs, however, are rarely seen on the Amazon.

The animals and plants are not all simultaneously affected by the change of seasons. The trees retain their verdure through the dry *verao*, and have no set time for renewing their foliage. There are a few trees, like *Mongrubá*, which drop their leaves at particular seasons; but they are so few in number they create the impression of a few dead leaves in a thick-growing forest. Leaves are falling and flowers drooping all the year round. Each species, and, in some cases, each individual, has its own particular autumn and spring. There is no hibernation nor *æstivation* (except by land shells); birds have not one uniform time for nidification; and moulting extends from February to May.

Amazonia, though equatorially situated, has a temperate climate. It is cooler than Guinea or Guiana. This is owing to the constant evaporation from so much submerged land, and the ceaseless trade winds. The mean annual temperature of the air is about  $81^{\circ}$ .\* The nights are always cool. There are no sudden changes, and no fiery "dog days." Venereal and cutaneous affections are found among the people; but they spring from an irregular life. A traveler on the slow black tributaries may take the tertiana, but only after weeks of exposure. Yellow fever and cholera seldom ascend the river above Pará; and on the Middle Amazon there are neither endemics nor epidemics,

\* Agassiz calls the average temperature  $84^{\circ}$ , which, it seems to us, is too high. The mean between the temperatures of Pará, Manáos, and Tabatinga is  $80.7^{\circ}$ .



though the trades are feebly felt there, and the air is stagnant and sultry. According to Bates, swampy and weedy places on the Amazon are generally more healthy than dry ones. Whatever exceptions be taken to the branches, the main river is certainly as healthy as the Mississippi: the rapid current of the water and the continual movement of the air maintaining its salubrity. The few English residents (Messrs. Hislop, Jeffreys, and Hauxwell), who have lived here thirty or forty years, are as fresh and florid as if they had never left their native country. The native women preserve their beauty until late in life. Great is the contrast between the gloomy winters and dusty summers, the chilly springs and frosty autumns of the temperate zone, and the perennial beauty of the equator! No traveler on the Amazon would exchange what Wallace calls "the magic half-hour after sunset" for the long gray twilight of the north. "The man accustomed to this climate (wrote Herndon) is ever unwilling to give it up for a more bracing one."

The mineral kingdom is represented only by sand, clay, and loam. The solid rock (except the sandstone already mentioned) begins above the falls on the tributaries. The precious gems and metals are confined to the still higher lands of Goyaz, Matto Grosso, and the slopes of the Andes. The soil on the Lower Amazon is sandy; on the Solimoens and Marañon it is a stiff loam or vegetable mould, in many places twenty feet deep.

Both in botany and zoology, South America is a natural and strongly-marked division, quite as distinct from North America as from the Old World; and as there are no transverse barriers, there is a remarkable unity in the character of the vegetation. No spot on the globe contains so much vegetable matter as the Valley of the Amazon. From the grassy steppes of Venezuela to the treeless Pampas of Buenos



Ayres, expands a sea of verdure, in which we may draw a circle of eleven hundred miles in diameter, which shall include an ever green, unbroken forest. There is a most bewildering diversity of grand and beautiful trees—a wild, unconquered race of vegetable giants, draped, festooned, corded, matted, and ribboned with climbing and creeping plants, woody and succulent, in endless variety. The exuberance of nature displayed in these million square acres of tangled, impenetrable forest offers a bar to civilization nearly as great as its sterility in the African deserts. A *macheta* is a necessary predecessor: the moment you land (and it is often difficult to get a footing on the bank), you are confronted by a wall of vegetation. Lithe lianas, starred with flowers, coil up the stately trees, and then hang down like strung jewels; they can be counted only by myriads, yet they are mere superfluities. The dense dome of green overhead is supported by crowded columns, often branchless for eighty feet. The reckless competition among both small and great adds to the solemnity and gloom of a tropical forest. Individual struggles with individual, and species with species, to monopolize the air, light, and soil. In the effort to spread their roots, some of the weaker sort, unable to find a footing, climb a powerful neighbor, and let their roots dangle in the air; while many a full-grown tree has been lifted up, as it were, in the strife, and now stands on the ends of its stilt-like roots, so that a man may walk upright between the roots and under the trunk.\*

The mass of the forest on the banks of the great river is composed of palms (about thirty species†), leguminous or

\* Buttress roots are not peculiar to any one species, but common to most of the large trees in the crowded forest, where the lateral growth of the roots is made difficult by the multitude of rivals. The *Paxiuba*, or big-bellied palm, is a fine example.

† Von Martius, in his great work on the Brazilian Palms, enumerates in all 582 species.



pod-bearing trees, colossal nut trees, broad-leaved Musaceæ or bananas, and giant grasses. The most prominent palms are the architectural Pupunha, or "peach-palm," with spiny stems, drooping, deep green leaves, and bunches of mealy, nutritious fruit; the slender Assaï, with a graceful head of delicate green plumes; the Ubussú, with mammoth, undivided fronds; the stiff, serrated-leaved Bussú, and gigantic Mirití. One of the noblest trees of the forest is the Masaranduba, or "cow-tree" (*Mimusops ellata*), often rising one hundred and fifty feet. It is a hard, fine-grained, durable timber, and has a red bark, and leathery, fig-like foliage. The milk has the consistency of cream, and may be used for tea, coffee, or custards. It hardens by exposure, so as to resemble gutta-percha. Another interesting tree, and one which yields the chief article of export, is the Caucho, or India-rubber tree\* (*Siphonia Brasiliensis*), growing in the lowlands of the Amazon for eighteen hundred miles above Pará. It has an erect, tall trunk, from forty to eighty feet high, a smooth, gray bark, and thick, glossy leaves. The milk resembles thick, yellow cream, and is colored by a dense smoke obtained by burning palm-nuts. It is gathered between August and December. A man can collect six pounds a day, though this is rarely done. It is frequently adulterated with sand. The tree belongs to the same apetalous family as our castor-oil and the mandioca; while the tree which furnishes the caoutchouc of the East Indies and Africa is a species of Ficus, and yields an inferior article to the rubber of America. Other characteristic trees are the Mongruba, one of the few which shed their foliage

\* The Portuguese and Brazilians call it *seringa*, or syringe, in which form it is still used extensively, injections forming a great feature in the popular system of cures. The tree mentioned above yields most of the rubber of commerce, and is considered distinct from the species in Guiana, *S. elastica*; while the rubber from the Upper Amazon and Rio Negro comes from the *S. lutea* and *S. brevifolia*. Agassiz puts milk-weed in the same family!



before the new leaf-buds expand; the giant Samaüma, or silk-cotton tree (called *huimba* in Peru); the Calabash, or *cuieira*, whose gourd-like fruit furnishes the cups used throughout the Amazon; the Itauba, or stone-wood, furnishing ship-timber as durable as teak; the red and white Cedar, used for canoes (not coniferous like the northern evergreen, but allied to the mahogany); the Jacarandá, or rose-wood, resembling our locust; Palo de sangre, one of the most valuable woods on the river; Huacapú, a very common timber; Capirona, used as fuel on the steamers; and *Tauarí*, a heavy, close-grained wood, the bark of which splits into thin leaves, much used in making cigarettes. The *Piassaba*, a palm yielding a fibre extensively manufactured into cables and ropes, and exported to foreign countries for brushes and brooms, being singularly elastic, strong, and more durable than hemp; and the Moira-pinima, or "tortoise-shell wood," the most beautiful wood in all Amazonia, if not in the world, grow on the Upper Rio Negro. A small willow represents the great catkin family.

The valley is as remarkable for the abundance, variety, and value of its timber as for any thing else. Within an area of half a mile square, Agassiz counted one hundred and seventeen different kinds of woods, many of them eminently fitted, by their hardness, tints, and beautiful grain, for the finest cabinet-work. Enough palo de sangre or moira-pinima is doubtless wasted annually to veneer all the palaces of Europe.

While most of our fruits belong to the rose family, those of the Amazon come from the myrtle tribe. The delicious flavor, for which our fruits are indebted to centuries of cultivation, is wanting in many of the torrid productions. We prefer the sweetness of Pomona in temperate climes to her savage beauty in the sunny south. It is a curious fact, noticed by Herndon, that nearly all the valuable fruits of the valley are inclosed in hard shells or acid



pulps. They also reach a larger size in advancing westward. The common Brazil nut is the product of one of the tallest trees in the forest (*Bertholletia excelsa*). The fruit is a hard, round shell, resembling a common ball, which contains from twenty to twenty-four nuts. Eighteen months are required for the bud to reach maturity. This tree, says Humboldt, offers the most remarkable example of high organic development. Akin to it is the Sapucaya or "chickens' nuts" (*Lecythis sapucaya*), whose capsule has a natural lid, and is called "monkey's drinking-cup." The nuts, about a dozen in number, are of irregular shape and much richer than the preceding. But they do not find their way to market, because they drop out of the capsule as soon as ripe, and are devoured by peccaries and monkeys. The most luscious fruit on the Amazon is the atta of Santarem. It has the color, taste, and size of the chirimoya; but the rind, which incloses a rich, custardly pulp, frosted with sugar, is scaled. Next in rank are the melting pine-apples of Pará, and the golden papayas, fully equal to those on the western coast. This is the original home of the cacao. It grows abundantly in the forests of the upper river, and particularly on the banks of the Madeira. The wild nut is smaller but more oily than the cultivated. The Amazon is destined to supply the world with the bulk of chocolate. The aromatic tonka beans (Cumarú) used in flavoring snuff, and the Brazilian nutmegs (Puxiri), inferior to the Ceylon, grow on lofty trees on the Negro and Lower Amazon. The Guaraná beans are the seeds of a trailing plant; from these the Mauhés prepare the great medicine, on the Amazon, for diarrhœa and intermittent fevers. Its active principle, caffeine, is more abundant than in any other substance, amounting to 5.07 per cent.; while black tea contains only 2.13. Coffee, rice, tobacco, and sugar-cane are grown to a limited extent. Rio Negro coffee,



if put into the market, would probably eclipse that of Ceará, the best Brazilian. Wild rice grows abundantly on the banks of the rivers and lakes. The cultivated grain is said to yield forty fold. Most of the tobacco comes down from the Marañon and Madeira. It is put up in slender rolls from three to six feet long, tapering at each end, and wound with palm fibre. The sugar-cane is an exotic from Southeastern Asia, but grows well. The first sugar made in the New World was by the Dutch in the island of St. Thomas, 1610. Farina is the principal farinaceous production of Brazil. The mandioca or cassava (*Manihot utilissima*) from which it is made is supposed to be indigenous, though it is not found wild. It does not grow at a higher altitude than 2000 feet. Life and death are blended in the plant, yet every part is useful. The cattle eat the leaves and stalks, while the roots are ground into pulp, which, when pressed and baked, forms farina, the bread of all classes. The juice is a deadly poison: thirty-five drops were sufficient to kill, in six minutes, a negro convicted of murder; but it deposits a fine sediment of pure starch that is the well-known tapioca; and the juice, when fermented and boiled, forms a drink. On the upper waters grow the celebrated coca, a shrub with small, light-green leaves, having a bitter, aromatic taste. The powdered leaves, mixed with lime, form *ypadú*. This is to Peruvians what opium is to the Turk, betel to the Malay, and tobacco to the Yankee. Thirty million pounds are annually consumed in South America. It is not, however, an opiate, but a powerful stimulant. With it the Indian will perform prodigies of labor, traveling days without fatigue or food. Von Tschudi considers its moderate consumption wholesome, and instances the fact that one coca-chewer attained the good old age of one hundred and thirty years; but when used to excess it leads to idiocy. The



signs of intemperance are an uncertain step, sallow complexion, black-rimmed, deeply-sunken eyes, trembling lips, incoherent speech, and stolid apathy. Coca played an important part in the religious rights of the Incas, and divine honors were paid to it. Even to-day the miners of Peru throw a quid of coca against the hard veins of ore, affirming that it renders them more easily worked; and the Indians sometimes put coca in the mouth of the dead to insure them a welcome in the other world. The alkaloid cocaine was discovered by Wöhler.

Flowers are nearly confined to the edges of the dense forest, the banks of the rivers and lagunes. There are a greater number of species under the equator, but we have brighter colors in the temperate zone. "There is grandeur and sublimity in the tropical forest (wrote Wallace, after four years of observation), but little of beauty or brilliancy of color." Perhaps the finest example of inflorescence in the world is seen in the *Victoria Regia*, the magnificent water-lily discovered by Schömberg in 1837. It inhabits the tranquil waters of the shallow lakes which border the Amazon. The leaves are from fifteen to eighteen feet in circumference, and will bear up a child twelve years old; the upper part is dark, glossy green, the under side violet or crimson. The flowers are a foot in diameter, at first pure white, passing, in twenty-four hours, through successive hues from rose to bright red. This queen of water-plants was dedicated to the Queen whose empire is never at once shrouded in night.





Coca-plant.







## CHAPTER XX.

Life within the Great River. — Fishes. — Alligators. — Turtles. — Porpoises and Manatís.

THE Amazon is a crowded aquarium, holding representatives of every zoological class—infusoria, hydras, fresh-water shells (chiefly Ampullaria, Melania, and Unios), aquatic beetles (belonging mostly to new genera), fishes, reptiles, water birds, and cetaceans. The abundance and variety of fishes are extraordinary; so also are the species. This great river is a peculiar ichthyic province, and each part has its characteristics. According to Agassiz, the whole river, as well as its tributaries, is broken up into numerous distinct fauna.\* The *pirarucú*, or “red-fish” (the *Sudis gigas* of science), is at once the largest, most common, and most useful fish. The Peruvian Indians call it *payshi*. It is a powerful fish, often measuring eight feet in length and five in girth, clad in an ornamental coat-of-mail, its large scales being margined with bright red. It ranges from Peru to Pará. It is usually taken by the arrow or spear. Salted and dried, the meat will keep for a year, and forms, with farina, the staple food on the Amazon. The hard, rough tongue is used as a grater. Other fishes most frequently seen are the prettily-spotted catfish, Pescada, Piranha, Acará, which carries its young in its mouth, and a long, slender needle-fish. There are ganoids in the river, but no sturgeons proper. Pickerel, perch, and trout are also wanting. The sting-ray rep-

\* We await the Professor's examination of his “more than 80,000 specimens” before we give the number of new species.

*Summit fish - On*



resents the shark family. As a whole, the fishes of the Amazon have a marine character peculiarly their own.

The reptilian inhabitants of this inland sea are introduced by numerous batrachians, water-snakes (*Heliops*), and anacondas. But alligators bear the palm for ugliness, size, and strength. In summer the main river swarms with them; in the wet season they retreat to the interior lakes and flooded forests. It was for this reason that we did not see an alligator on the Napo. At low water they are found above the entrance of the Curaray. About Obidos, where many of the pools dry up in the fine months, the alligator buries itself in the mud, and sleeps till the rainy season returns. "It is scarcely exaggerating to say (writes Bates) that the waters of the Solimoens are as well stocked with large alligators in the dry season as a ditch in England is in summer with tadpoles." There are three or four species in the Amazon. The largest, the Jacaré-uassú of the natives, attains a length of twenty feet. The Jacaré-tinga is a smaller kind (only five feet long when full grown), and has the long, slender muzzle of the extinct *teleosaurus*. The South American alligators are smaller than the crocodiles of the Nile or Ganges, and they are also inferior in rank. The head of the Jacaré-uassú (the ordinary species) is broad, while the gavial of India has a long, narrow muzzle, and that of the Egyptian lizard is oblong. The dentition differs: while in the Old World saurian the teeth interlock, so that the two jaws are brought close together, the teeth in the upper jaw of the Amazonian cayman pass by the lower series outside of them. The latter has therefore much less power. It has a ventral cuirass as well as dorsal, and it has a ridge across the face before the eyes, and the toes are scarcely webbed. Sluggish on land, the alligator is very agile in its element. It never attacks man when on his guard, but it is



cunning enough to know when it may do this with safety. It lays its eggs (about twenty) some distance from the river bank, covering them with leaves and sticks. They are larger than those of Guayaquil, or about four inches long, of an elliptical shape, with a rough, calcareous shell. Negro venders sell them cooked in the streets of Pará.

Turtles are, perhaps, the most important product of the Amazon, not excepting the pirarucú. The largest and most abundant species is the *Tortaruga grande*. It measures, when full grown, nearly three feet in length and two in breadth, and has an oval, smooth, dark-colored shell. Every house has a little pond (called *currál*) in the back yard to hold a stock of turtles through the wet season. It furnishes the best meat on the Upper Amazon. We found it very tender, palatable, and wholesome; but Bates, who was obliged to live on it for years, says it is very cloying. Every part of the creature is turned to account. The entrails are made into soup; sausages are made of the stomach; steaks are cut from the breast; and the rest is roasted in the shell.\* The turtle lays its eggs (generally between midnight and dawn) on the central and highest part of the *plaias*, or about a hundred feet from the shore. The Indians say it will lay only where itself was hatched out. With its hind flippers it digs a hole two or three feet deep, and deposits from eighty to one hundred and sixty eggs (Gibbon says from one hundred and fifty to two hundred). These are covered with sand, and the next comer makes another deposit on the top, and so on until the pit is full. Egg-laying comes earlier on the Amazon than on the Napo, taking place in August and September. The *tracajá*, a smaller species, lays in July and August; its eggs are smaller and oval, but richer than those of the great turtles.

\* The natives have this notion about the land-tortoise, that by throwing it three times over the head, the liver (the best part) will be enlarged.



The mammoth tortoise of the Galápagos lays an egg very similar in size and shape to that of the Tortaruga, but a month later, or in October. The hunting of turtle eggs is a great business on the Amazon. They are used chiefly in manufacturing oil (*mantéca*) for illumination. Thrown into a canoe, they are broken and beaten up by human feet; water is then poured in, and the floating oil is skimmed off, purified over the fire in copper kettles, and finally put up in three-gallon earthen jars for the market. The turtles are caught for the table as they return to the river after laying their eggs. To secure them, it suffices to turn them over on their backs. The turtles certainly have a hard time of it. The alligators and large fishes swallow the young ones by hundreds; jaguars pounce upon the full-grown specimens as they crawl over the *plaias*, and vultures and ibises attend the feast. But man is their most formidable foe. The destruction of turtle life is incredible. It is calculated that fifty millions of eggs are annually destroyed. Thousands of those that escape capture in the egg period are collected as soon as hatched and devoured, "the remains of yolk in their entrails being considered a great delicacy." An unknown number of full-grown turtles are eaten by the natives on the banks of the *Marañon* and *Solimoens* and their tributaries, while every steamer, schooner, and little craft that descends the Amazon is laden with turtles for the tables of *Manáos*, *Santarem*, and *Pará*. When we consider, also, that all the mature turtles taken are females, we wonder that the race is not well-nigh extinct. They are, in fact, rapidly decreasing in numbers. A large turtle which twenty years ago could be bought for fifty cents, now commands three dollars. One would suppose that the males, being unmolested, would far outnumber the other sex, but Bates says "they are immensely less numerous than the females."



The male turtles, or *Capitaris*, "are distinguishable by their much smaller size, more circular shape, and the greater length and thickness of their tails." Near the Tapajos we met a third species, called *Matá-matá*. It has a deeply-keeled carapax, beautifully bossed, and a hideous triangular head, having curious, lobed, fleshy appendages, and nostrils prolonged into a tube. It is supposed to have great virtues as a remedy for rheumatism. But the most noticeable feature of the Amazonian fauna, as Agassiz has remarked, is the abundance of cetaceans through its whole extent. From the brackish estuary of Pará to the clear, cool waters at the base of the Andes, these clumsy refugees from the ocean may be seen gamboling and blowing as in their native element. Four different kinds of porpoises have been seen. A black species lives in the Bay of Marajó. In the Middle Amazon are two distinct porpoises, one flesh-colored;\* and in the upper tributaries is the *Inia Boliviensis*, resembling, but specifically different from the sea-dolphin and the soosoo of the Ganges. "It was several years (says the Naturalist on the Amazon) before I could induce a fisherman to harpoon dolphins (*Boutos*) for me as specimens, for no one ever kills these animals voluntarily; the superstitious people believe that blindness would result from the use of the oil in lamps." The herbivorous manati (already mentioned, Chap. XV.) is found throughout the great river. It differs slightly from the Atlantic species. It rarely measures over twelve feet in length. It is taken by the harpoon or nets of chambiri twine. Both Herndon and Gibbon mention seals as occurring in the Peruvian tributaries; but we saw none, neither did Bates, Agassiz, or Edwards. They probably meant the manati.

\* *Delphinus pallidus*. Bates observed this species at Villa Nova; we saw it at Coary, 500 miles west; and Herndon found it in the Huallaga.



## CHAPTER XXI.

Life around the Great River.—Insects.—Reptiles.—Birds.—Mammals.

THE forest of the Amazon is less full of life than the river. Beasts, birds, and reptiles are exceedingly scarce; still there is, in fact, a great variety, but they are widely scattered and very shy. In the animal, as in the vegetable kingdom, diversity is the law; there is a great paucity of individuals compared with the species.\* Insects are rare in the dense forest; they are almost confined to the more open country along the banks of the rivers. Ants are perhaps the most numerous. There is one species over an inch long. But the most prominent, by their immense numbers, are the dreaded saübas. Well-beaten paths branch off in every direction through the forest, on which broad columns may be seen marching to and fro, each bearing vertically a circular piece of leaf. Unfortunately they prefer cultivated trees, especially the coffee and orange. They are also given to plundering provisions; in a single night they will carry off bushels of farina. They are of a light red color, with powerful jaws. In every formicarium or ant colony there are three sets of individuals—males, females, and workers; but the saübas have the singularity of possessing three classes of workers. The light-colored mounds often met in the forest, sometimes

\* Amazonia is divided into four distinct zoological districts: those of Ecuador, Peru, Guiana, and Brazil; the limits being the Amazon, Madeira, and Negro. The species found on one side of these rivers are seldom found on the other.



measuring forty feet in diameter by two feet in height, are the domes which overlie the entrances to the vast subterranean galleries of the saüba ants. These ants are eaten by the Rio Negro Indians, and esteemed a luxury; while the Tapajos tribes use them to season their mandioca sauce. Akin to the vegetable-feeding saübas are the carnivorous ecitons, or foraging ants, of which Bates found ten distinct species. They hunt for prey in large organized armies, almost every species having its own special manner of marching and hunting. Fortunately the ecitons choose the thickest part of the forest. The fire-ant is the great plague on the Tapajos. It is small, and of a shiny reddish color; but its sting is very painful, and it disputes every fragment of food with the inhabitants. All eatables and hammocks have to be hung by cords smeared with copaiba balsam.

The traveler on the Amazon frequently meets with conical hillocks of compact earth, from three to five feet high, from which radiate narrow covered galleries or arcades. The architects of these wonderful structures are the termites, or "white ants," so called, though they belong to a lower order of insects, widely differing from the true ants. The only thing in common is the principle of division of labor. The termite neuters are subdivided into two classes, soldiers and workers, both wingless and blind. Their great enemy is the ant-eater; but it is a singular fact, noticed by Bates, that the soldiers only attach themselves to the long worm-like tongue of this animal, so that the workers, on whom the prosperity of the termitarum depends, are saved by the self-sacrifice of the fighting caste. The office of the termites in the tropics seems to be to hasten the decomposition of decaying vegetation. But they also work their way into houses, trunks, wardrobes, and libraries. "It is principally owing to their destructiveness" (wrote Hum-



boldt) "that it is so rare to find papers in tropical America older than fifty or sixty years."

Dragon-flies are conspicuous specimens of insect life on the Amazon. The largest and most brilliant kinds are found by the shady brooks and creeks in the recesses of the forest, some of them with green or crimson bodies seven inches long, and their elegant lace-like wings tipped with white or yellow. Still more noticeable are the butterflies. There is a vast number of genera and species, and great beauty of dress, unequaled in the temperate zone. Some idea of the diversity is conveyed by the fact mentioned by Mr. Bates that about 700 species are found within an hour's walk of Pará, and 550 at Ega; while the total number found in the British Islands does not exceed 66, and the whole of Europe supports only 390. After a shower in the dry season the butterflies appear in fluttering clouds (for they live in societies), white, yellow, red, green, purple, black, and blue, many of them bordered with metallic lines and spots of a silvery or golden lustre. The sulphur-yellow and orange-colored kinds predominate. A colossal morpho, seven and a half inches in expanse, and visible a quarter of a mile off, frequents the shady glades; splendid swallow-tailed papilios, green, rose, or velvety-black, are seen only in the thickets; while the *Hetaira esmeralda*, with transparent wings, having one spot of a violet hue, as it flies over the dead leaves in the dense forest looks "like a wandering petal of a flower." Very abundant is the *Heliconius*, which plays such an important figure, by its variations, in Wallace's theory of the origin of species. On the Marañon we found *Callidryas eubule*, a yellow butterfly common in Florida. The most brilliant butterflies are found on the Middle Amazon, out of reach of the strong trade winds. The males far outnumber the other sex, are more richly colored, and generally lead a sunshiny life.



The females are of dull hues, and spend their lives in the gloomy shadows of the forest. Caterpillars and nocturnal moths are rare.

There are no true hive-bees (*Apides*) in South America,\* but instead there are about one hundred and fifty species of bees (mostly social *Moliponas*), smaller than the European, stingless, and constructing oblong cells. Their colonies are much larger than those of the honey-bee. The *Trigona* occurs on the Napo. Unlike the *Melipona*, it is not confined to the New World. A large sooty-black *Bombus* represents our humble-bee. Shrill cicadas, blood-thirsty mantucas, piums, punkies, and mosquitoes are always associated in the traveler's memory with the glorious river. Of the last there are several kinds. "The forest mosquito belongs to a different species from that of the town, being much larger and having transparent wings. It is a little cloud that one carries about his person every step on a woodland ramble, and their hum is so loud that it prevents one hearing well the notes of birds. The town mosquito has opaque, speckled wings, a less severe sting, and a silent way of going to work. The inhabitants ought to be thankful the big noisy fellows never come out of the forest" (Bates, ii., 386). There are few mosquitoes below Ega; above that point a mosquito net is indispensable. Beetles abound, particularly in shady places, and are of all sizes, from that of a pin's head to several inches in length. The most noticeable are the gigantic *Megalosoma* and *Ene-ma*, armed with horns. Very few are carnivorous. "This is the more remarkable," observes Darwin, "when compared to the case of carnivorous quadrupeds, which are so abundant in hot countries." Very few are terrestrial, even the carnivorous species being found clinging to branches and leaves. In going from the pole to the equator we find

\* The honey-bee of Europe was introduced into South America in 1845.



that insect life increases in the same proportion as vegetable life. There is not a single beetle on Melville Island; eleven species are found in Greenland; in England, 2500; in Brazil, 8000. Here lives the king of spiders, the *Mygale Blondii*, a monstrous hairy fellow, five inches long, of a brown color, with yellowish lines along its stout legs. Its abode is a slanting subterranean gallery about two feet in length, the sides of which are beautifully lined with silk. Other spiders barricade the walks in the forest with invisible threads; some build nests in the trees and attack birds; others again spin a closely-woven web, resembling fine muslin, under the thatched roofs of the houses.

Of land vertebrates, lizards are the first to attract the attention of the traveler on the equator. Great in number and variety, they are met every where—crawling up the walls of buildings, scampering over the hot, dusty roads, gliding through the forest. They stand up on their legs, carry their tails cocked up in the air, and run with the activity of a warm-blooded animal. It is almost impossible to catch them. Some of them are far from being the unpleasant-looking animals many people imagine; but in their coats of many colors, green, gray, brown, and yellow, they may be pronounced beautiful. Others, however, have a repulsive aspect, and are a yard in length. The iguana, peculiar to the New World tropics, is covered with minute green scales banded with brown (though it changes its color like the chameleon), and has a serrated back and gular pouch. It grows to the length of five feet, and is arboreal. Its white flesh, and its oblong, oily eggs, are considered great delicacies. We heard of a lady who kept one as a pet. Frogs and toads, the chief musicians in the Amazonian forest, are of all sizes, from an inch to a foot in diameter. The *Bufo gigas* is of a dull gray color, and is covered with warts. Tree-frogs (*Hyla*) are





Iguana.

very abundant ; they do not occur on the Andes or on the Pacific coast. Their quack-quack, drum-drum, hoo-hoo, is one of our pleasant memories of South America. Of snakes there is no lack ; and yet they are not so numerous as imagination would make them. There are one hundred and fifty species in South America, or one half as many, on the same area, as in the East Indies. The diabolical family is led by the boa, while the rear is brought up by the Amphisbænas, or “double-headed snakes,” which progress equally well with either end forward, so that it is difficult to make head or tail of them. The majority are harmless. The deadly corál is found on both sides of the Andes, and wherever there is a cacao plantation. One of the most beautiful specimens of the venomous kind is a new species (*Elaps imperator*, Cope), which we discovered on the Marañon. It has a slender body more than two feet in length, with black and red bands margined with yellow, and a black and yellow head, with permanently erect fangs.

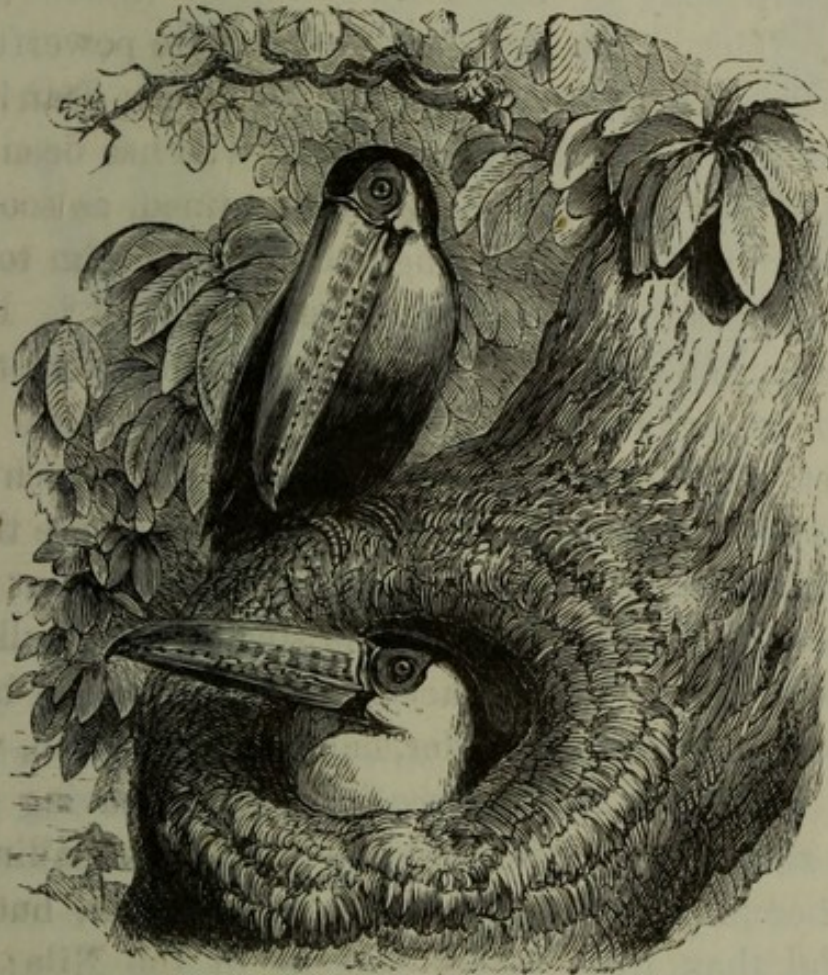
We have already mentioned the most common birds. Probably, says Wallace, no country in the world contains a greater variety of birds than the Amazonian Valley.



But the number does not equal the expectations of the traveler; he may ramble a whole day without meeting one. The rarity, however, is more apparent than real; we forget, for the moment, the vastness of their dwelling-place. The birds of the country, moreover, are gregarious, so that a locality may be deserted and silent at one time and swarming with them at another. Parrots and toucans are the most characteristic groups. To the former belong true parrots, parroquets, and macaws. The first are rarely seen walking, but are rapid flyers and expert climbers. On the trees they are social as monkeys, but in flight they always go in pairs. The parroquets go in flocks. The Hyacinthine macaw (the Araruna of the natives) is one of the finest and rarest species of the parrot family. It is found only on the south side of the Amazon. The macaw was considered sacred by the Maya Indians of Yucatan, and dedicated to the sun. The Quichuans call it guacamayo, guaca meaning sacred. Of toucans there are many species; the largest is the toco, with a beak shaped like a banana; the most beautiful are the curb-crested, or Beauharnais toucans, and the *P. flavirostris*, whose breast is adorned with broad belts of red, crimson, and black. "Wherefore such a beak?" every naturalist has asked; but the toucan still wags his head, as much as to say, "you can not tell." There must be some other reason than adaptation. Birds of the same habits are found beside it—the ibis, pigeon, spoonbill, and toucan are seen feeding together. "How astonishing are the freaks and fancies of Nature! (wrote the funny Sidney Smith). To what purpose, we say, is a bird placed in the woods of Cayenne with a bill a yard long, making a noise like a puppy-dog, and laying eggs in hollow trees? The toucan, to be sure, might retort, to what purpose are certain foolish, prating members of Parliament created, pestering the



House of Commons with their ignorance and folly, and impeding the business of the country? There is no end to such questions; so we will not enter into the metaphysics of the toucan."



Toucans.

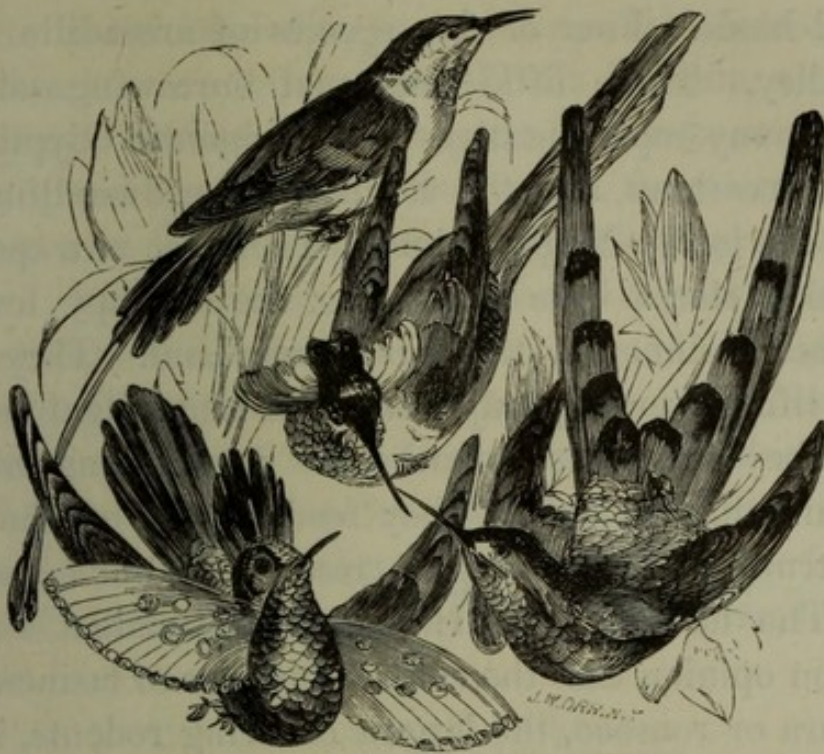
On the flooded islands of the Negro and Upper Amazon is found the rare and curious umbrella bird, black as a crow, and decorated with a crest of hairy plumes and a long lobe suspended from the neck, covered with glossy blue feathers. This latter appendage is connected with the vocal organs, and assists the bird in producing its deep, loud, and lengthy fluty note. There are three species. Another rare bird is the Uruponga, or Campanéro, in English the tolling-bell bird, found only on the borders of Guiana. It is of the size of our jay, of a pure



white color, with a black tubercle on the upper side of the bill. "Orpheus himself (says Waterton) would drop his lute to listen to him, so sweet, so novel, and romantic is the toll of the pretty, snow-white Campanéro." "The Campanéro may be heard three miles! (echoes Sidney Smith). This single little bird being more powerful than the belfry of a cathedral ringing for a new dean! It is impossible to contradict a gentleman who has been in the forests of Cayenne, but we are determined, as soon as a Campanéro is brought to England, to make him toll in a public place, and have the distance measured."\* But the most remarkable songster of the Amazonian forest is the Realejo, or organ-bird. Its notes are as musical as the flageolet. It is the only songster, says Bates, which makes any impression on the natives. Besides these are the Jacamars, peculiar to equatorial America, stupid, but of the most beautiful golden, bronze, and steel colors; sulky Trogons, with glossy green backs and rose-colored breasts; long-toed Jaçanas, half wader, half fowl; the rich, velvety purple and black *Rhamphocoelus Jacapa*, having an immense range from Archidona to Pará; the gallinaceous yet arboreal Ciganas; scarlet ibises, smaller, but more beautiful than their sacred cousins of the Nile; stilted flamingoes, whose awkwardness is atoned for by their brilliant red plumage; glossy black Mutums, or curassow turkeys; ghostly storks, white egrets, ash-colored herons, black ducks, barbets, kingfishers, sandpipers, gulls, plovers, woodpeckers, oreoles; tanagers, essentially a South American family, and, excepting three or four species, found only east of the Andes; wagtails, finches, thrushes, doves, and hummers. The last, "by western Indians *living sunbeams* named," are few, and not to be compared with the swarms in the Andean valleys. The birds of the Amazon have no

\* Review of Waterton's *Wanderings in South America*.





Brazilian Hummers.

uniform time for breeding. The majority, however, build their nests between September and New Year's, and rarely lay more than two eggs.

Amazonia, like Australia, is poor in terrestrial mammals, and the species are of small size. Nearly the only game a hunter can depend upon for food, besides toucans and macaws, is peccari. One species of tapir, to represent the elephants and rhinoceroses of the Old World; three small species of deer, taking the places of deer, antelopes, buffaloes, sheep, and goats of the other continent; three species of large *Felidæ*; one peccari, and a wild dog, with opossums, ant-eaters, armadilloes, sloths, squirrels (the only rodents which approach ours),\* capybaras, pacas, agoutis, and monkeys, comprise all the quadrupeds of equatorial America. The last two are the most numerous. Marsupial rats take the place of the insectivorous mammals. Of ant-eaters, there are at least four distinct species; but they are scattered sparingly, and are seldom found on the low

\* Large rats abound on the Marañon, but they are not American.



flooded lands. Four or five species of armadillo inhabit the valley. These little nocturnal burrowing edentates are the puny representatives of the gigantic Glyptodon of Pleistocene times, and the sloths are the dwindling shadows of the lordly Megatherium. There are two species of three-toed sloths—one inhabiting the swampy lowlands, the other confined to the terra-firma land. They lead a lonely life, never in groups, harmless and frugal as a hermit. They have four stomachs, but not the long intestines of ruminating animals. They feed chiefly on the leaves of the trumpet-tree (*Cecropia*), resembling our horse-chestnut. The natives, both Indian and Brazilian, hold the common opinion that the sloth is the type of laziness. The capybara or ronsoco, the largest of living rodents, is quite



Capybara.

common on the river side. It is gregarious and amphibious, and resembles a mammoth guinea-pig. Pacas and agoutis are most abundant in the lowlands,

and are nocturnal. These semi-hoofed rodents, like the Toxodon of old, approach the Pachyderms. The tapir, or gran-bestia, as it is called, is a characteristic quadruped of South America. It is a clumsy-looking animal, with a tough hide of an iron-gray color, covered with a coat of short coarse hair. Its flesh is dry, but very palatable. It has a less powerful proboscis than the Malay species. M. Roulin distinguishes another species from the mountains, which more nearly resembles the Asiatic. The tapir, like the condor, for an unknown reason, is not found north of  $8^{\circ}$  N., though it wanders as far south as  $40^{\circ}$ . We met but one species of peccari, the white-lipped (*D. labiatus*). It is much larger than the "Mexican hog," and, too thick-



headed to understand danger, is a formidable antagonist. The raposa is seen only on the Middle Amazon, and very rarely there. It has a long tapering muzzle, small ears, bushy tail, and grayish hair. It takes to the water, for the one we saw at Tabatinga was caught while crossing the Amazon. Fawn-colored pumas, spotted jaguars, black tigers, tiger-cats—all members of the graceful feline family—inhabit all parts of the valley, but are seldom seen. The puma (*Suassú-arána*) is more common on the Pacific side of the Andes. The jaguar\* is the fiercest and most powerful animal in South America. It is marked like the leopard—roses of black spots on a yellowish ground; but they are



Jaguar.

angular instead of rounded, and have a central dot. There are also several black streaks across the breast, which easily distinguish it from its transatlantic representative. It is also longer than the leopard; indeed, Humboldt says he saw a jaguar “whose length surpassed that of any of the tigers

\* The Tupi word for dog is *yaguara*, and for wolf, *yagua-men*, or old dog.



of India which he had seen in the collections of Europe." The jaguar frequents the borders of the rivers and lagunes, and its common prey is the capybara. It fears the pecari. The night air is alive with bats of many species, the most prominent one being the *Dysopes perotis*, which measures two feet from tip to tip of the wings. If these Cheiropters are as impish as they look, and as bloodthirsty as some travelers report, it is singular that Bates and Watterton, though residing for years in the country, and ourselves, though sleeping for months unprotected, were unmolested.

About forty species of monkeys, or one half of the New World forms, inhabit the Valley of the Amazon. Wallace, in a residence of four years, saw twenty-one species—seven with prehensile and fourteen with non-prehensile tails. They all differ from the apes of the other hemisphere. While those of Africa and Asia (Europe has only one) have opposable thumbs on the fore feet as well as hind, uniformly ten molar teeth in each jaw, as in man, and generally cheek-pouches and naked collosities, the American monkeys are destitute of the two latter characteristics. None of them are terrestrial, like the baboon; all (save the marmosets) have twenty-four molars; the thumbs of the fore-hands are not habitually opposed to the fingers (one genus, *Ateles*, "the imperfect," is thumbless altogether); the nostrils open on the sides of the nose instead of beneath it, as in the gorilla, and the majority have long prehensile tails. They are inferior in rank to the anthropoids of the Old World, though superior to the lemurs of Madagascar. They are usually grouped in two families—Marmosets and Cebidæ. The former are restless, timid, squirrel-like lilliputs (one species is only seven inches long), with tails not prehensile—in the case of the scarlet-faced, nearly wanting. The Barigudos, or gluttons (*Lagothrix*),



are the largest of American monkeys, but are not so tall as the Coaitas. They are found west of Manáos. They have more human features than the other monkeys, and, with their woolly gray fur, resemble an old negro. There are three kinds of howlers (*Myctes*)—the red or monocolorado of Humboldt, the black, and the *M. beelzebub*, found only near Pará. The forest is full of these surly, untamable guaribas, as the natives call them. They are gifted with a voice of tremendous power and volume, with which they make night and day hideous. They represent the baboons of the Old World in disposition and facial angle ( $30^{\circ}$ ), and the gibbons in their yells and gregarious habits.\* The Sapajous (*Cebus*) are distributed throughout Brazil, and have the reputation of being the most mischievous monkeys in the country. On the west coast of South America there are at least three or four species of monkeys, among them a black howler and a *Cebus capucinus*. The Coitas, or spider-monkeys, are the highest of American quadrumana. They are slender-legged, sluggish, and thumbless, with a most perfectly prehensile tail, terminating in a naked palm, which answers for a fifth hand. The Indians say they walk under the limbs like the sloth. They are the most common pets in Brazil, but they refuse to breed in captivity. Both Coitas and Barigudos are much persecuted for their flesh, which is highly esteemed by the Indians.

Mr. Bates has called our attention to the arboreal character of a large share of the animals in the Amazonian forest. All the monkeys and bats are climbers, and live in the trees. Nearly all the carnivores are feline, and are therefore tree-mounters, though they lead a terrestrial life. The plantigrade *Cercoleptes* has a long tail, and is entirely arboreal. Of the edentates, the sloth can do nothing on

\* Rüttimeyer has found a fossil howler in the Swiss Jura—middle eocene.



the ground. The gallinaceous birds, as the cigana and curassow—the pheasant and turkey of the Amazon—perch on the trees, while the great number of arboreal frogs and beetles is an additional proof of the adaptation of the fauna to a forest region. Even the epiphytous plants sitting on the branches suggest this arboreal feature in animal life.



## CHAPTER XXII.

Life around the Great River.—Origin of the Red Man.—General Characteristics of the Amazonian Indians.—Their Languages, Costumes, and Habitations.—Principal Tribes.—Mixed Breeds.—Brazilians and Brazil.

WE come now to the genus *Homo*. Man makes a very insignificant figure in the vast solitudes of the Amazon. Between *Manáos* and *Pará*, the most densely-peopled part of the valley, there is only one man to every four square miles; and the native race takes a low place in the scale of humanity. As the western continent is geologically more primitive than the eastern, and as the brute creation is also inferior in rank, so the American man, in point of progress, seems to stand in the rear of the Old World races. Both the geology and zoology of the continent were arrested in their development. Vegetable life alone has been favored. "The aboriginal American (wrote Von Martius) is at once in the incapacity of infancy and unpliancy of old age; he unites the opposite poles of intellectual life."\*

We will not touch the debatable ground of the red man's origin, nor inquire whether he is the last remains of a people once high in civilization. But we are tempted to express the full belief that tropical America is not his "centre of creation." He is not the true child of the tropics; and he lives as a stranger, far less fitted for its climate than

\* "I think I discover in the Americans (said Humboldt) the descendants of a race which, early separated from the rest of mankind, has followed up for a series of years a peculiar road in the unfolding of its intellectual faculties and its tendency toward civilization." The South American Indian seems to have a natural aptitude for the arts of civilized life not found in the red man of our continent.



the Negro or Caucasian. Yet a little while, and the race will be as extinct as the Dodo. He has not the supple organization of the European, enabling him to accommodate himself to diverse conditions. Among the Andean tribes there are seldom over five children, generally but one, in a family; and Bates, speaking of Brazilian Indians, says "their fecundity is of a low degree, and it is very rare to find a family having so many as four children."\*

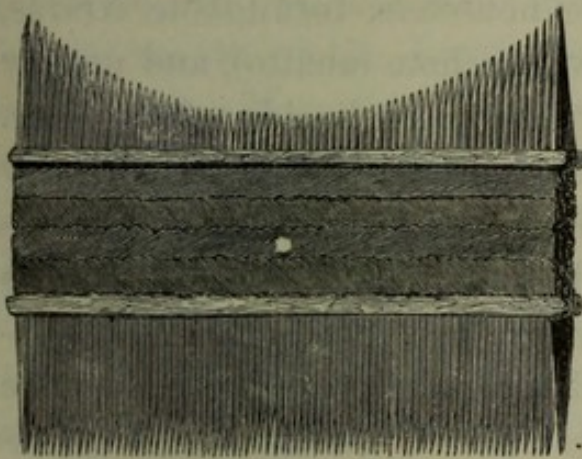
While it is probable that Mexico was peopled from the north, it is very certain that the Tupi and Guarani, the long-headed hordes that occupied eastern South America, came up from the south, moving from the Paraguay to the banks of the Orinoco. From the Tupi nation (perhaps a branch of the Guarani) sprung the multitudinous tribes now dwelling in the vast valley of the Amazon. In such a country—unbroken by a mountain, uniform in climate—we need not look for great diversity. The general characters are these: skin of a brown color, with yellowish tinge, often nearly the tint of mahogany; thick, straight, black hair; black, horizontal eyes; low forehead, somewhat compensated by its breadth; beardless; of the middle height, but thick-set; broad, muscular chest; small hands and feet; incurious; unambitious; impassive; undemonstrative; with a dull imagination and little superstition; with no definite idea of a Supreme Being, few tribes having a name for God, though one for the "Demon;" with no belief in a future state; and, excepting civility, with virtues all negative. The semi-civilized along the Lower Amazon, called *Tupuyos*, seem to have lost (in the language of Wallace) the good qualities of savage life, and gained only the vices of civilization.

There are several hundred different tribes in Amazonia,

\* We do not infer, however, from this fact alone, that the race is exotic, for the Negroes of Central Africa multiply very slowly.



each having a different language; even the scattered members of the same tribe can not understand each other.\* This segregation of dialects is due in great part to the inflexibility of Indian character, and his isolated and narrow round of thought and life. When and where the Babel existed, whence the many branches of the great Tupi family separated, we know not. We only know that though different in words, these languages have the same grammatical construction. In more than one respect the polyglot American is antipodal to the Chinese. The language of the former is richest in words, that of the latter the poorest. The preposition follows the noun, and the verb ends the sentence. Ancient Tupi is the basis of the *Lingoa Geral*, the inter-tribal tongue on the Middle Amazon. The semi-civilized Ticunas, Mundurucus, etc., have one costume—the men in trowsers and white cotton shirts, the women in calico petticoats, with short, loose chemises, and their hair held in a knot on the top of the head by a comb,



Native Comb.

usually of foreign make, but sometimes made of bamboo splinters. The wild tribes north and south go nearly or quite nude, while those on the western tributaries wear cotton or bark togas or ponchos. The habita-

tions are generally a frame-work of poles, thatched with palm-leaves; the walls sometimes latticed and plastered with mud, and the furniture chiefly hammocks and earthen vessels.

\* Authors compute in South America from 280 to 700 languages (Abbé Royo said 2000), of which four fifths are composed of idioms radically distinct.



The Mundurucus are the most numerous and warlike tribe in Amazonia. They inhabit both banks of the Tapajos, and can muster, it is said, 2000 fighting men. They are friendly to the whites, and industrious, selling to traders large quantities of farina, sarsaparilla, rubber, and tonka beans. Their houses are conical or quadrangular huts, sometimes open sheds, and generally contain many families. According to Wallace, the Mundurucus are the only perfectly tattooed nation in South America. It takes at least ten years to complete the tattooing of the whole person. The skin is pricked with spines, and then the soot from burning pitch rubbed in. Their neighbors, the Parárauátes, are intractable, wandering savages, roaming through the forest and sleeping in hammocks slung to the trees. They have delicately-formed hands and feet, an oval face, and glistening black eyes. On the west side of the Tapajos, near Villa Nova, are the Mauhés, an agricultural tribe, well formed, and of a mild disposition. On the Lower Madeira are the houseless, formidable Aráras, who paint their chins red with achote (anatto), and usually have a black tattooed streak on each side of the face. They have long made the navigation of the great tributary hazardous. Above them dwell the Parentintíns, light colored and finely featured, but nude and savage. In the labyrinth of lakes and channels at the mouth of the Madeira live the lazy, brutal Múras, the most degraded tribe on the Amazon. They have a darker skin than their neighbors, an extraordinary breadth of chest, muscular arms, short legs, protuberant abdomens, a thin beard, and a bold, restless expression. They pierce the lips, and wear peccari tusks in them in time of war. The Indians on the Purus live generally on the communal principle, and are unwarlike and indolent. The Puru-purús bury in sandy beaches, go naked, and have one wife.



On the great northwest tributary of the Rio Negro, the Uacaiari, there are numerous tribes, collectively known as the Uaupés. They have permanent abodes, in shape a parallelogram, with a semicircle at one end, and of a size to contain several families, sometimes a whole tribe. One of them, Wallace informs us, was 115 feet long by 75 broad, and about 30 high. The walls are bullet-proof. Partitions of palm-leaves divide it into apartments for families, the chief occupying the semicircular end. The men alone wear clothes and ornaments, but both sexes paint their bodies with red, black, and yellow colors in regular patterns. The men have a little beard, which they pull out, as also the eyebrows, and allow the hair to grow unshorn, tying it behind with a cord and wearing a comb; while the women cut theirs and wear no comb. They are an agricultural people—peaceable, ingenious, apathetic, diffident, and bashful.

The Catauishés inhabit the banks of the Teffé. They perforate the lips, and wear rows of sticks in the holes. At the mouth of the Juruá are the uncivilized, but tall, noble-looking Marauás. They pierce the ears and lips, and insert sticks. They live in separate families, and have no common chief. Above them live the treacherous Arauás.\* On the opposite side of the Amazon are the nearly extinct Passés and Jurís, the finest tribes in central South America. They are peaceable and industrious, and have always been friendly to the whites. The Passés are a slenderly-built, light-colored, dignified, superior race, distinguished by a large square tattooed patch in the middle of the face. The Jurís tattoo in a circle round the mouth. Near by are the Uænambeus, or “Humming-birds,” distinguished by

\* Near the sources of this river Castlenau locates the Canamas and Uginas; the former dwarfs, the latter having tails a palm and a half long—a hybrid from an Indian and Barigudo monkey.



a small blue mark on the upper lip. Higher up the Japurá is the large cannibal tribe of Miránhas, living in isolated families; and on the Tunantíns dwell the low Caishánas, who kill their first-born children. Along the left bank of the Amazon, from Loreto to Japurá, are the scattered houses and villages of the Tucúnas. This is an extensive tribe, leading a settled agricultural life, each horde having a chief and a "medicine-man," or priest of their superstitions. They are good-natured and ingenious, excelling most of the other tribes in the manufacture of pottery; but they are idle and debauched, naked except in the villages, and tattooed in numbers of short, straight lines on the face. The Marúbos, on the Javarí, have a dark complexion and a slight beard; and on the west side of the same river roam the Majerónas—fierce, hostile, light colored, bearded cannibals. In the vicinity of Pebas dwell the inoffensive Yaguas. The shape of the head (but not their vacant expression) is well represented by Catlin's portrait of "Black Hawk," a Sauk chief. They are quite free from the encumbrance of dress, the men wearing a girdle of fibrous bark around the loins, with bunches looking like a mop hanging down in front and rear, and similar bunches hung around the neck and arms. The women tie a strip of brown cotton cloth about the hips. They paint the whole body with achote.\* They sometimes live in communities. One large structure, with Gothic roof, is used in common; on the inside of which, around the walls, are built family sleeping-rooms. The Yaguas are given to drinking and dancing. They are said to bury their dead inside the house of the deceased, and then set fire to it; but this conflicts with their communal life. Perhaps, with the other tribes on the Japurá, Iça, and Napo, they are

\* Query: Is the name Yagua (blood) derived from the practice of coloring the body red?



fragments of the great Omágua nation; but the languages have no resemblance. Of the Oriente Indians we have already spoken. The tall, finely-built Cucámas near Nauta are shrewd, hard-working canoe-men, notorious for the singular desire of acquiring property; and the Yámeos, a white tribe, wander across the Marañon as far as Sarayacú. On the Ucayali are numerous vagabond tribes, living for the most part in their canoes and temporary huts. They are all lazy and faithless, using their wives (polygamy is common) as slaves. Infanticide is practiced, *i. e.*, deformed children they put out of the way, saying they belong to the devil. They worship nothing. They bury their dead in a canoe or earthen jar under the house (which is vacated forever), and throw away his property.\* The common costume is a long gown, called *cushma*, of closely-twilled cotton, woven by the women. Their weapons are two-edged battle-axes of hard wood, as *palo de sangre*, and bows and arrows. The arrows, five or six feet long, are made from the flower-stalk of the arrow-grass (*Gynerium*), the head pointed with the flinty chonta and tipped with bone, often anointed with poison. At the base two rows of feathers are spirally arranged, showing the Indian's knowledge of the rifle principle. When they have fixed abodes several families live together under one roof, with no division separating the women, as among the Red Indians on the Pastassa. The roof is not over ten feet from the ground. The Piros are the highest tribe; they have but one wife. The Conibos are an agricultural people, yet cannibals, stretching from the Upper Ucayali to the sources of the Purus. They are a fair-looking, athletic

\* Compare the ancient burial custom on the Andes: "On the decease of the Inca his palaces are abandoned; all his treasures, except those that were employed in his obsequies, his furniture and apparel, were suffered to remain as he left them, and his mansions, save one, were closed up forever."—*Prescott*.



people, and, like the Shipibos, often wear a piece of money under the lip. The Campas are the most numerous and warlike.\* They are little known, as travelers give them a wide berth. Herndon fancied they were the descendants of the Inca race. They are said to be cannibals, and from the specimen we saw we should judge them uncommonly sharp. He was averse to telling us any thing about his tribe, but turned our questions with an equivocal repartee and a laugh. The Cashíbos, on the Pachitéa, is another cannibal tribe. They are light colored and bearded. The dwarfish, filthy Rimos alone of the Ucayali Indians tattoo, though not so perfectly as the Mundurucus, using black and blue colors. The other tribes simply paint. It was among these wild Indians on the Ucayali that the Franciscan friars labored so long and zealously, and with a success far greater and more lasting than that which attended any other missionary enterprise in the valley.

The remaining inhabitants of the Amazon are mixed-breeds, Negroes, and whites. The amalgamations form the greater part of the population of the large towns. Von Tschudi gives a catalogue of twenty-three hybrids in Peru, and there are undoubtedly as many, or more, in Brazil. The most common are Mamelucos (offspring of white with Indian), Mulattoes (from white and Negro), Cafuzos or Zambos (from Indian and Negro), Curibocos (from Cafuzo and Indian); and Xibaros (from Cafuzo and Negro). "To define their characteristics correctly," says Von Tschudi, "would be impossible, for their minds partake of the mixture of their blood. As a general rule, it may be said that they unite in themselves all the faults without any of the

\* The women circumcise themselves, and a man will not marry a woman who is not circumcised. They perform the singular rite upon arriving at the age of puberty, and have a great feast at the time. Other tribes flog and imprison their daughters when they reach womanhood.



virtues of their progenitors. As men they are generally inferior to the pure races, and as members of society they are the worst class of citizens." Yet they display considerable talent and enterprise, as in Quito; a proof that mental degeneracy does not necessarily result from the mixture of white with Indian blood. "There is, however," confesses Bates, after ten years' experience, "a considerable number of superlatively lazy, tricky, and sensual characters among the half-castes, both in rural places and in the towns." Our observations do not support the opinion that the result of amalgamation is "a vague compound, lacking character and expression." The moral part is perhaps deteriorated; but in tact and enterprise they often excel their progenitors.

Negroes are to be seen only on the Lower Amazon. By the new act of emancipation, such as are slaves continue so, but their children are free. Negroes born in the country are called creoles.

Of the white population, save a handful of English, French, and German, the Portuguese immigrants are the most enterprising men on the river. They are willing to work, trade, or do any thing to turn a penny. Those who acquire a fortune generally retire to Lisbon. The Brazilians proper are the descendants of the men who declared themselves "free and independent" of the mother country. Few of them are of pure Caucasian descent, for the immigration from Portugal for many years has been almost exclusively of the male sex. "It is generally considered bad taste in Brazil to boast purity of descent" (Bates, i, 241). Brazilians are stiff and formal, yet courteous and lively, communicative and hospitable, well-bred and intelligent. They are not ambitious, but content to live and enjoy what nature spontaneously offers. The most a Brazilian wants is farina and coffee, a hammock and cigar. Brazilian la-



dies have led a dreary life of constraint and silence, without education or society, the husband making a nun of his wife after the old bigoted Portuguese notion; but during the last twenty years the doors have been opened. Brazil attained her independence in 1823; Brazilian women in 1848.

Here, in this virgin valley, where every plant is an evergreen, possessing the most agreeable and enjoyable climate in the world, with a brilliant atmosphere, rivaled only by that of Quito, and with no changes of seasons—here we may locate the paradise of the lazy. Life may be maintained with as little labor as in the Garden of Eden. Perhaps no country in the world is capable of yielding so large a return for agriculture. Nature, evidently designing this land as the home of a great nation, has heaped up her bounties of every description—fruits of richest flavors, woods of finest grain, dyes of gayest colors, and drugs of rarest virtues; and left no sirocco or earthquake to disturb its people. Providence, moreover, has given the present emperor a wise and understanding heart; and the government is a happy blending of imperial dignity and republican freedom. White, Negro, half-caste, and Indian may be seen sitting side by side on the jury-bench. Certainly “the nation can not be a despicable one whose best men are able to work themselves up to positions of trust and influence.”

God bless the Empire of the South!



## CHAPTER XXIII.

How to Travel in South America.—Routes.—Expenses.—Outfit.—Precautions.—Dangers.

THE most vague and incorrect notions prevail in respect to traveling in South America. The sources of trustworthy and desirable information are very meagre. Murray has not yet published a "Hand-book for the Andes;" routes, methods, and expenses of travel are almost unknown; and the imagination depicts vampires and scorpions, tigers and anacondas, wild Indians and fevers without end, impassable rivers and inaccessible mountains as the portion of the tourist. The following statements, which can be depended upon, may therefore be acceptable to those who contemplate a trip on the Andes and the Amazon.

The shortest, cheapest, most feasible, and least interesting route across the continent is from Valparaiso to Buenos Ayres. The breadth of South America is here only eight hundred miles. By railroad from Valparaiso to the foot of the Andes; thence a short mule-ride by the Uspallata Pass (altitude 12,000 feet), under the shadow of Aconcagua to Mendoza; thence by coach across the pampas to the Rio Plata. The Portillo Pass (traversed by Darwin) is nearer, but more lofty and dangerous.

Bolivia offers the difficult path of Gibbon: From the coast to Cochabamba; thence down the Mamoré and Madeira. There are three routes through Peru: First, from Lima to Mayro, by way of Cerro Pasco and Huánaco, by mule, ten days; thence down the Pachitea, by canoe, six



days; thence down the Ucayali to Iquitos, by steamer, six days (forty-five hours' running time). When the road from Lima to Mayro is finished the passage will be shortened four days. No snow is met in crossing the Andes in summer, but in winter it is very deep. Second (Herndon's route), from Lima to Tinga Maria, by way of Huánaco, by mule, fifteen days, distance three hundred miles (the passage is difficult in the rainy season); thence by canoe fifteen days down the Huallaga to Yurimaguas. Third and best, by mule from Truxillo to Caximárca, five days (note the magnificent ruins); thence to Chachapoyas, seven days (here are pre-Incarial relics); thence to Moyabamba, eight days; thence on foot to Balsa Puerto, four days; thence by canoe to Yurimaguas, two days. Price of a mule from Truxillo to Moyabamba is \$30; canoe-hire, \$10. The Peruvian steamers arrive at Yurimaguas the fifth of every month and leave the seventh; reach Nauta the ninth and Iquitos the tenth; leave Iquitos the sixteenth and arrive at Tabatinga the nineteenth, to connect with the Brazilian line. Going up, they leave Tabatinga the twenty-first and arrive at Iquitos the twenty-fourth, stopping six days. Running time from Yurimaguas to Tabatinga, forty-eight hours; fare, \$70, gold; third-class, \$17. La Condamine's route, *via* Loxa and the Marañon, is difficult; and Md. Godin's, *via* the Pastassa, is perilous on account of rapids and savages. The transit by the Napo we will now give in detail.

Six hundred dollars in gold will be amply sufficient for a first-class passage from New York to New York across the continent of South America, making no allowance for stoppages. For necessary expenses in Ecuador, take a draft on London, which will sell to advantage in Guayaquil; so will Mexican dollars. American gold should be taken for expenses on the Amazon in Brazil; at Pará it commands



a premium. On the Marañon it is below par; Peruvian gold should therefore be bought at Guayaquil for that part of the route. Also French *medios*, or quarter francs; they will be very useful every where on the route, especially on the Upper Amazon, where change is scarce. Fifty dollars' worth will not be too many; for, as the Scotchman said of sixpences, "they are canny little dogs, and often do the work of shillings." Take a passport for Brazil. Leave behind your delicacies and superfluities of clothing; woolen clothes will be serviceable throughout. A trunk for mountain travel should not exceed 24 by 15 by 15 inches—smaller the better. Take a rubber air-pillow and mattress: there is no bed between Guayaquil and Pará. A hammock for the Amazon can be bought on the Napo.

The Pacific Mail steamships, which leave New York on the first and sixteenth of each month, connect at Panama without delay with the British Steam Navigation line on the South Pacific. Fare, first-class, from New York to Guayaquil, by way of Panama and Paita, \$215, gold; second-class, \$128. Time to Panama, eight days; to Paita, four days; to Guayaquil, one day. A coasting steamer leaves Panama for Guayaquil the thirteenth of each month. There are two so-called hotels in Guayaquil. "Los tres Mosqueteros," kept by Sr. Gonzales, is the best. Take a front room (\$1 per day), and board at the Fonda Italiana or La Santa Rosa (\$1 per day). Here complete your outfit for the mountains: saddle, with strong girth and crupper; saddle-bags, saddle-cover, sweat-cloth, and bridle (\$40, paper), woolen poncho (\$9), rubber poncho (\$4), blanket (\$6), leggins, native spurs and stirrups, knife, fork, spoon, tea-pot, chocolate (tea, pure and cheap, should be purchased at Panama), candles, matches, soap, towels, and tarpaulin for wrapping up baggage. Convert your draft into paper, *quantum sufficit* for Guayaquil; the rest into silver.



Besides this outer outfit, an inner one is needed—of patience without stint. You will soon learn that it is one thing to plan and quite another to execute. “To get out of the inn is one half of the journey” is very appropriately a Spanish proverb. Spaniards do nothing *d'appressado* (in a hurry), but every thing *mañana* (to-morrow). You will find fondas, horses, and roads divided into the bad, the worse, and the worst, and bad is the best. But fret not thyself. “Serenity of mind,” wrote Humboldt, “almost the first requisite for an undertaking in inhospitable regions, passionate love for some class of scientific labor, and a pure feeling for the enjoyment which nature in her freedom is ready to impart, are elements which, when they meet together in an individual, insure the attainment of valuable results from a great and important journey.”

The journey to Quito must be made between May and November; in the rainy season the roads are impassable. From Guayaquil to Bodegas by Yankee steamer; fare, \$2; time, eight hours. At Bodegas hire beasts at the *Consignacion* for Guaranda; price for riding and cargo beasts, \$4 each. No extras for the *arriero*. A mule will carry two hundred and fifty pounds. Buy bread at Bodegas and Guaranda. The Indians on the road are very loth to sell any thing; buy a fowl, therefore, at the first opportunity, or you will have to live on dirty potato soup, and be glad of that. At the tambos, or wayside inns, you pay only for *yerba* (fodder). Never unsaddle your beast till it is cool; an Indian will even leave the bridle on for a time. To Guaranda, three full days. There take mules (safer than horses in climbing the mountains) for Quito; \$6 25, silver, per beast; time, five days. Be sure to leave Guaranda by 4 A.M., for in the afternoon Chimborazo is swept by furious winds. Also start with a full stomach; you will get nothing for two days. Drink sparingly of the snow-water



which dashes down the mountain. You will be tempted to curse Chuquipoyo; but thank heaven it is no worse.

There are two hotels in Quito, French and American; the former has the better location, the latter the better rooms. Best front room, furnished, half a dollar a day; cheaper by the month. Meals (two), twenty-five cents each. The beef is excellent, but the *cuisine*—oh, onions! “God sends the meat, and the evil one cooks.” You can hire a professional male cook (Indian) for \$5 a month, but you can’t teach him any thing. Fish is not to be had in Quito. Gibbon speaks of having some in Cuzco, but does not tell us where it came from.\* Price of best flour, \$3 60 per quintal; butter, thirty cents a pound; beef, \$1 an arroba (twenty-five pounds); refined sugar, \$3 50 an arroba; brown sugar (*rapidura*),† five cents a pound; cigars, from six to sixteen for a dime; cigarettes, five cents a hundred. Horse hire, from fifty cents to \$1 per day. If you are to remain some time, buy a beast: a good mule costs \$40; an ordinary horse, \$50. The Post-office Department is a swindle. If you “pay through” you will find on your arrival home that your letters have been paid at both ends. Ask our consul at Guayaquil to forward them.

The necessary preparations for the Napo journey have been given in a previous chapter (Chap. XI). We might add to the list a few cans of preserved milk from New York, for you will not see a drop between the Andes and the Atlantic. Fail not to take plenty of lienzo; you must have it to pay the Indians, and any surplus can be sold to advantage. A bale of thirty varas costs about five dollars.

\* The Guayaquil market is well supplied with fish of a fair quality. Usually the fish of warm tropical waters are poor, but the cold “Humboldt current,” which passes along the west coast of Ecuador, renders them as edible as those of temperate zones.

† Called *chancaca* in Peru. In flavor it is very nearly equal to maple-sugar.



Rely not at all on game; a champion sharpshooter could not live by his rifle. Santa Rosa and Coca will be represented to you as small New Yorks; but you will do well if you can buy a chicken between them.

From Quito to Papallacta, two days and a half; riding beast, \$2 silver, and \$1 20 for each cargo of three arrobas. At Papallacta hire Indians for Archidona; each carries three arrobas, and wants \$5 silver in advance. You take to your feet; time, nine days, including one day of rest at Baeza. At Archidona you take a new set of peons for Napo at twenty-five cents apiece; time, one day. From Napo down the river to Santa Rosa, one day. You give two and a half varas of lienzo to each Indian, and the same for the canoe. From Santa Rosa to Pebas, on the Marañon, fifteen days; cost of an Indian, twenty-five varas; ditto for a canoe. We advise you to stop at Coca and rig up a raft or craft of some kind; we ascribe our uninterrupted good health to the length and breadth of our accommodations. The Peruvian steamer from the west arrives at Pebas on the sixteenth of each month; fare to Tabatinga, \$15 gold; time, four days; running time, eleven hours. Brazilian steamer leaves Tabatinga the twentieth of each month; fare to Manáos, \$44 44 gold; time, five days; distance, one thousand miles. From Manáos to Pará, \$55 55 gold; time, six days; distance, one thousand miles. The Brazilian steamers make semi-monthly trips. We found two hotels in Pará—the “Italiana,” dear and poor; the “Diana,” unpretending but comfortable. Charges at the latter for room and board, \$2 a day. The best time for traveling on the Amazon is between July and December. The United States and Brazilian steamships on their homeward voyage call at Pará the seventh of each month; fare to New York, \$150 gold (the same as down the whole length of the Amazon); second class, \$75; time, fourteen



days; distance by way of St. Thomas, 1610 + 1400 miles. Steamer for Rio the ninth of each month; fare, \$125; time, twelve days; distance, 2190 miles. Fare from Rio to New York, \$200. Fare by sailing vessel from Pará to New York, from \$50 to \$75; time, three weeks. A British steamer from Rio stops at Pará and Lisbon.

A word about health. First, take one grain of common-sense daily; do as the natives do, keep out of the noon-day sun, and make haste slowly. Secondly, take with you quinine in two-grain pills, and begin to take them before leaving New York, as the great African traveler, Du Chaillu, recommended us. As preventive against the intermittent fevers on the lowlands and rivers, nothing is better than Dr. Copeland's celebrated pills—quinine, twelve grains; camphor, twelve grains; cayenne pepper, twelve grains. Mix with mucilage, and divide into twelve pills; take one every night or morning as required. On the Amazon carry guarana. Woolen socks are recommended by those who have had much experience of tropical fevers. Never bathe when the air is moist; avoid a chill; a native will not bathe till the sun is well up. Rub yourself with *aguardiente* (native rum) after a bath, and always when caught in a shower. Freely exercise in Quito to ward off liver complaints. Drink little water; coffee or chocolate is better, and tea is best. Avoid spirits with fruit, and fruit after dinner. The sickliest time in Guayaquil is at the breaking up of the rainy season.

As to dangers: First, from the people. Traveling is as safe in Ecuador as in New York, and safer than in Missouri. There are no Spanish banditti, though some places, as Chambo, near Riobamba, bear a bad name. It is not wise to tempt a penniless footpad by a show of gold; but no more so in Ecuador than any where. We have traveled from Guayaquil to Damascus, but have never had occasion



to use a weapon in self-defense; and only once for offense, when we threatened to demolish an Arab sheik with an umbrella. Secondly, from brutes. Some travelers would have us infer that it is impossible to stir in South America without being "affectionately entwined by a serpent, or sprung upon by a jaguar, or bitten by a rattlesnake; jiggers in every sand-heap and scorpions under every stone" (*Edinburgh Review*, xliii, 310). Padre Vernazza speaks of meeting a serpent two yards in diameter! But you will be disappointed at the paucity of animal life. We were two months on the Andes (August and September) before we saw a live snake. They are plentiful in the wet season in cacao plantations; but the majority are harmless. Dr. Russel, who particularly studied the reptiles of India, found that out of forty-three species which he examined not more than seven had poisonous fangs; and Sir E. Tennent, after a long residence in Ceylon, declared he had never heard of the death of an European by the bite of a snake. It is true, however, that the number and proportion of the venomous species are greater in South America than in any other part of the world; but it is some consolation to know that, zoologically, they are inferior in rank to the harmless ones; "and certainly," adds Sidney Smith, "a snake that feels fourteen or fifteen stone stamping on his tail has little time for reflection, and may be allowed to be poisonous." If bitten, apply ammonia externally immediately, and take five drops in water internally; it is an almost certain antidote. The discomforts and dangers arising from the animal creation are no greater than one would meet in traveling overland from New York to New Orleans.

Finally, of one thing the tourist in South America may be assured—that dear to him, as it is to us, will be the re-



membrance of those romantic rides over the Cordilleras amid the wild magnificence of nature, the adventurous walk through the primeval forest, the exciting canoe-life on the Napo, and the long, monotonous sail on the waters of the Great River.



## CHAPTER XXIV.

## IN MEMORIAM.

“A life that all the Muses decked  
With gifts of grace that might express  
All comprehensive tenderness,  
All-subtilizing intellect.”—TENNYSON.

ON the east of the city of Quito is a beautiful and extensive plain, so level that it is literally a *table-land*. It is the classic ground of the astronomy of the eighteenth century: here the French and Spanish academicians made their celebrated measurement of a meridian of the earth. As you stand on the edge of this plain just without the city, you see the dazzling summit of Cayambi looking down from the north; on your left are the picturesque defiles of Pichincha; on your right the slopes of Antisana. Close by you, standing between the city and the plain, is a high white wall inclosing a little plot, like the city above, “four square.” You are reminded by its shape, and also by its position relative to Quito and Pichincha, of that other sacred inclosure just outside the walls of Jerusalem and at the foot of Olivet, the Garden of Gethsemane. This is the Protestant Cemetery.

Through the efforts of our late representative—now also numbered with the dead—this place was assigned by the government for the interment of foreigners who do not die in the Romish faith. And there we buried our fellow-traveler, COLONEL PHINEAS STAUNTON, the artist of the expedition, and Vice-Chancellor of Ingham University, New York. On the 8th of September, 1867, we bore him through



the streets of Quito to this quiet resting-place, without parade and in solemn silence—just as we believe his unobtrusive spirit would have desired, and just as his Savior was carried from the cross to the sepulchre. No splendid hearse or nodding plumes; no long procession, save the unheard tread of the angels; no requiem, save the unheard harps of the seraphs. We gave him a Protestant Christian burial, such as Quito never saw. In this corner of nature's vast cathedral, the secluded shrine of grandeur and beauty not found in Westminster Abbey, we left him. We parted with him on the mount which is to be the scene of his transfiguration.

It would be difficult for an artist to find a grave whose surroundings are so akin to his feelings. He lies in the lofty lap of the Andes, and snow-white pinnacles stand around him on every side, just as we imagine the mountains are around the city of God. We think we hear him saying, as Fanny Kemble Butler said of another burial-ground: "I will not rise to trouble any one if they will let me sleep here. I will only ask to be permitted, once in a while, to raise my head and look out upon this glorious scene." No dark and dismal fogs gather at evening about that spot. It lies nearer to heaven than any other Protestant cemetery in the world. "It is good (says Beecher) to have our mortal remains go upward for their burial, and catch the earliest sounds of that trumpet which shall raise the dead." And the day is coming when that precious vein of gold that now lies in the bosom of the mighty Andes shall leave its rocky bed and shine in seven-fold purity. Indeed, the artist is already in that higher studio among the mountains of Beulah.

A simple sculptured obelisk of sorrow stands over the dust of Colonel Staunton: his most fitting monument is his own life-work. He was the very painter Humboldt



longed for in his writings—"the artist, who, studying in nature's great hot-house bounded by the tropics, should add a new and more magnificent kingdom of nature to art." Colonel Staunton, true and lovely in his own character, was ever seeking in nature for whatsoever things are lovely, whatsoever things are pure, and now was about to add whatsoever things are grand. He was a *Christian* artist, in sympathy with such men as Raphael and Leonardo de Vinci. "The habitual choice of sacred subjects (says Ruskin) implies that the painter has a natural disposition to dwell on the highest thoughts of which humanity is capable." No shallow or false person could have conceived his *Ascension*. Only the highest qualities of the intellect and heart—a soul already half ascended—could have given such ethereal lightness to those "two men in white apparel." Only the pure in heart see God. As we revisit in imagination the spot where he sleeps so well, we behold, in the calm sublimity of the mountains that surround his grave, an image of the undisturbed repose of his spirit on the Rock of Ages.



PART II.

---

THE ANDES AND THE AMAZON REVISITED;

OR,

NOTES OF A SECOND JOURNEY ACROSS THE CONTINENT.







## CHAPTER XXV.

The Navigation and Commercial Resources of the Amazons.—Volume of the Great River and its Tributaries.—Natural Wealth.—Sailing Craft and Steamers.

THE Amazons is the most voluminous of rivers. Born in Lake Lauricocha, among the Andes of Peru, the main trunk runs northerly to the frontier of Ecuador, in a continuous series of rapids, and then easterly across the great equatorial plain of the Continent, with an average current of three miles an hour. No other river runs in so deep a channel to so great a distance. No other river can furnish over 6000 miles of continuous navigation for large vessels. For 2000 miles from its mouth the main stream has not less than seven fathoms of water; and not a fall interrupts navigation for 2600 miles. The Pongo de Manseriche is the western limit to navigation. At Tabatinga the width is a mile and a half, and the depth from six to twelve fathoms, according to season. In August and September a strong breeze sweeps up the lower part, so that schooners often go from Pará to Obidos in ten days, or one third of the ordinary time. On the Solimoens the trade-wind is felt occasionally in the dry season; and dense fogs frequently occur there, especially at night. High tide at Pará rises twelve feet, and this is felt 500 miles up the river.\* Besides this, the Amazons annually rises forty feet above its lowest point, its ebb and flow (the

\* A singular phenomenon is observed at Manáos, a daily interruption to the fall of the Negro between June and October, due, doubtless, to the counteracting influence of the ocean-tide.



*vasante* and *enchente*) aping the tidal pulsations of the ocean. Its life, too—porpoises, rays, gulls—has a marine aspect. No wonder the Indians called it *paraná*, or the sea.

The tributaries are in keeping with this colossal trunk. Twelve of them are over a thousand miles long; and the sources of the Madeira and Negro, for example, are 24° distant—the width of Europe. These tributaries, moreover, are united by a wonderful network of natural canals—*igarapes*, *paraná*s, and *furos*—which increase the facility of intercommunication. Another characteristic is the chain of shallow lakes alongside of the rivers—in Brazil called *lago*; in Peru, *laguna*; and in Bolivia, *madre*; they generally mark the ancient course of the stream. In fact, the Amazons is a great river-system, rather than one river; and it drains the best part of an empire and four republics.

As to the tributaries, the first in order is the Tocantíns, which rises in the mountains of Goyaz, close by the sources of the Paraná, and ends in a broad, shallow estuary near Pará. It would furnish a natural highway to the rich mineral regions in Eastern Brazil, were it not for rapids 150 miles from its mouth. Were these away, there would be 400 leagues of navigation on the Tocantíns and its affluents, the Araguaya and Vermelho.

The Xingú is navigable for ninety miles, when a series of rapids and falls begins—Tapaiuna, Cajutuba, Caxaõ, Paguissama, Jurucuá, Ita-tu-cá, Parates, Ita-penima, and many more.

The Tapajos is open to steamers for twenty miles beyond Itaitúba, or sixty leagues from Santarem; but the rapids of Apuím, and the falls 600 miles above them, with shallows between, prevent this river from ever being serviceable for large craft. A few traders in guaraná ascend by canoe to Diamantino and Cuyabá, and occasionally cross over the water-shed into the Paraguay. For the two great feeders

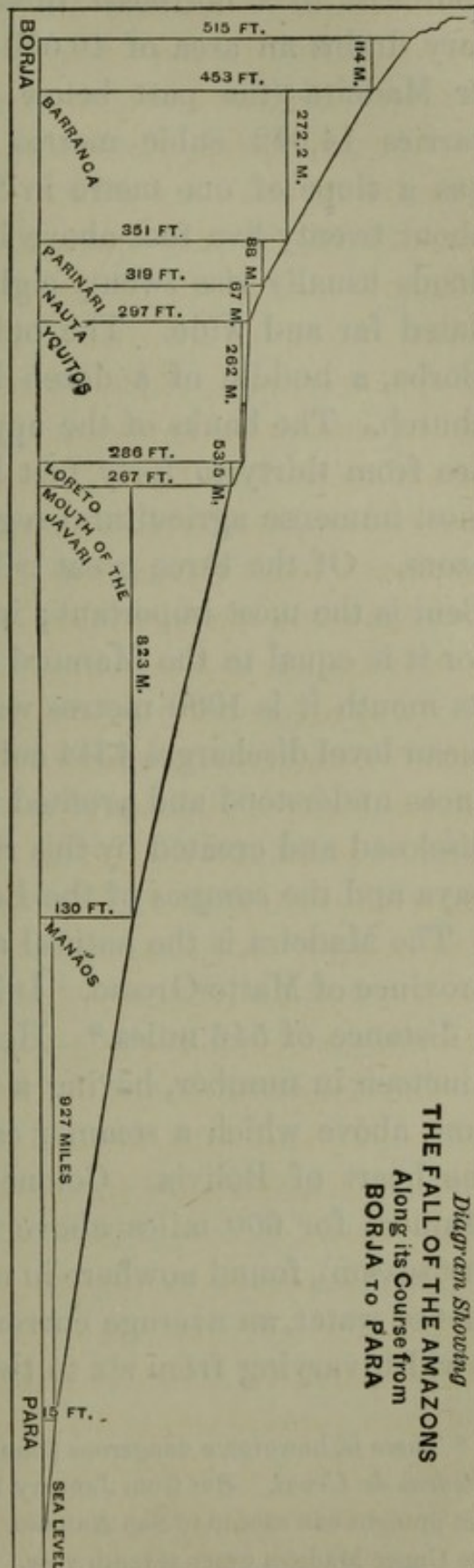


of the Tapajos, the Juruéna and Arínos, rise very near the head of this Argentine river, in the plateau of Mato-Grosso. From Itaitúba down, the Tapajos spreads out into a shallow expanse of quiet water, from four to seven miles wide. It takes nearly four months to go from Santarem to the extreme of canoe-navigation, Porto Velho, a distance of about 1200 miles. From Itaitúba to Mauhés is eight days' travel.

Just beyond Obidos enters the Trombétas, navigable one hundred miles, and with heavily timbered banks. A community of fugitive slaves is said to live up this river.

The great Madeira\* enters the Amazons almost at right angles, and its flood of waters changes the course of the main stream from a

\* The old Indian name was *Caiary*, which the Portuguese changed to express the characteristic feature of this river, the enormous quantity of drift-wood left on the rocks, particularly just below the mouth of the Beni.



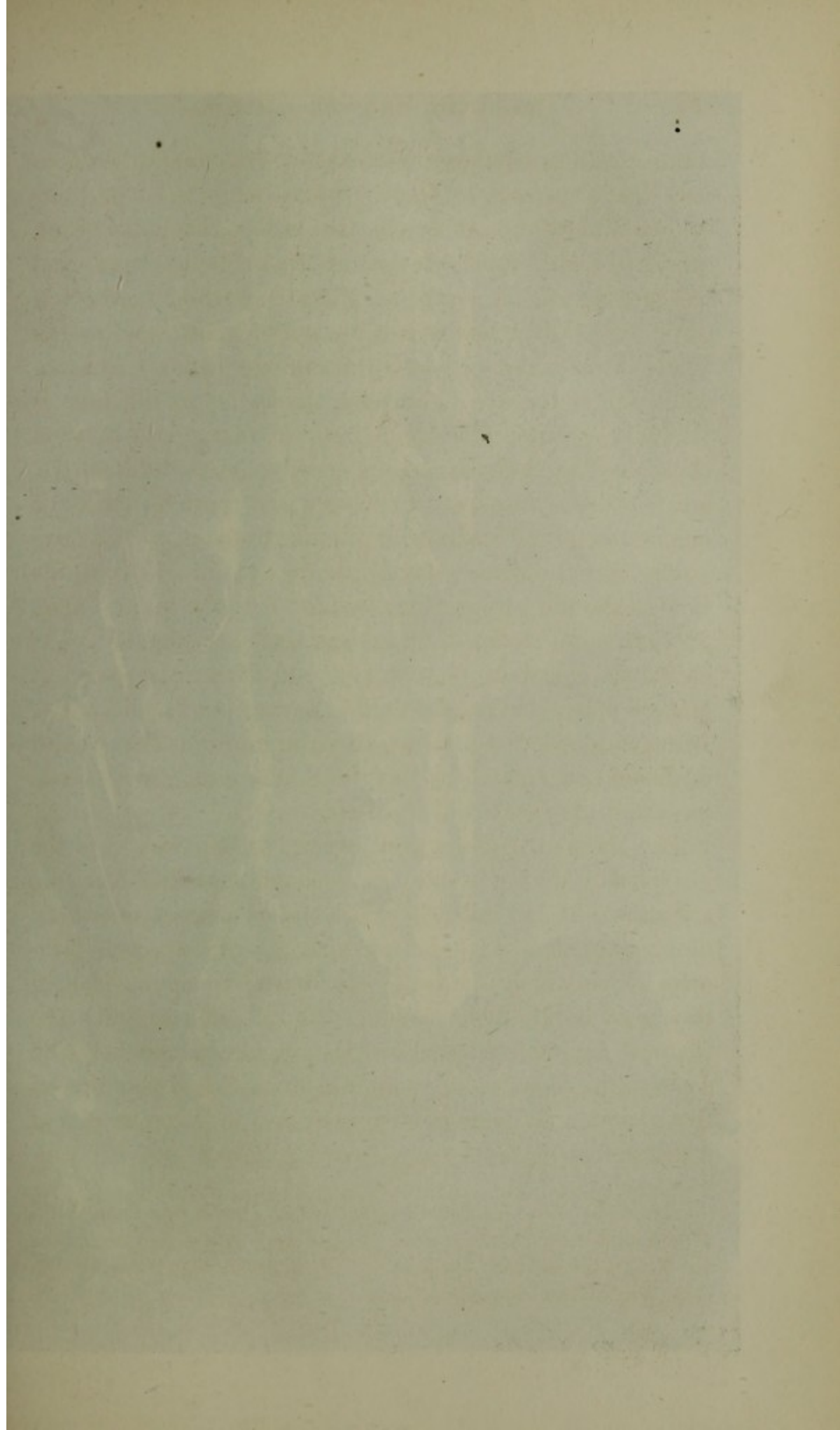


southeast to a northeast direction. This majestic tributary drains an area of 40,000 square leagues. The Lower Madeira (the part below the rapids), at mean level, carries 14,642 cubic metres of water per second, and has a slope of one metre in 26,490. Its banks are only about twenty-five feet above low-water mark; and as the floods usually rise twenty-eight feet, the country is inundated far and wide. The only village below the falls is Borba, a huddle of a dozen huts around a half-finished church. The banks of the upper affluents, as the Mamoré, are from thirty to forty feet high, and there we find the most immense agricultural region in the basin of the Amazons. Of the three great tributaries to the Madeira, the Beni is the most important; in fact, it is the main source, for it is equal to the Mamoré and Guaporé together. At its mouth it is 1000 metres wide and fifteen deep, and at mean level discharges 4344 cubic metres per second. The Incas understood and profited by the inexhaustible wealth disclosed and created by this river—the *montaña* of Carabaya and the *campos* of the Beni.

The Madeira is the natural avenue to Bolivia and to the province of Matto-Grosso. It is navigable to San Antonio, a distance of 546 miles.\* Here begins a series of rapids, nineteen in number, having a total fall of forty-four fathoms, above which a steamer can ascend to Santa Cruz, in the heart of Bolivia. Colonel Church, who sounded the Mamoré for 600 miles above the rapids in October (the dry season), found nowhere in mid-channel less than fifteen feet of water, an average current of two miles an hour, and a width varying from six to twelve hundred feet. A rail-

\* There is, however, a dangerous point three days' steam from Serpa, called *Piedras de Uruas*. But from January 1st to April 30th steamers of sixteen feet draught can ascend to San Antonio. Exceptionally high floods occur on the Upper Madeira every seventh year.









Teotônio Falls, Madeira River.



way around the eighty leagues of formidable rapids which separate Bolivia from the Lower Madeira is now in process of construction by the Madeira and Mamoré Railroad Company. The track extends from San Antonio to Guajarámirim, a distance of 180 miles. This is one of the most important enterprises on foot; but great difficulties have been encountered—as the scarcity of laborers, the attacks of Indians, and the prevalence of epidemics. The company, however, in spite of all obstacles, declare that this great connecting link must and shall be built. As soon as completed, the National Bolivian Navigation Company will be ready to put a fleet of steamers and barges on the Mamoré and Guaporé. Both Brazil and Bolivia are interested in this railway, and have conceded to the company over one million acres of territory along the line. The completion of this iron road will remove the great stumbling-block to the development of half a million square miles of beautiful country, and prove of no little direct value to the commerce of the United States. For each country has what the other wants. Bolivia needs our skilled labor and machinery, our cotton goods, hardware, and agricultural implements; and we would like her Peruvian bark, coffee, and cacao, which now have to climb the mountains of La Paz (15,800 feet), cross the desert to the Pacific, and round Cape Horn, at the average cost of \$200 a ton. Vast must be the wealth of Northwestern Bolivia to have induced Peru to expend \$42,000,000 on a railroad to reach it. When the Madeira is made available by the railroad around the falls, and the railroads of Arequipa and Córdova shall stretch into the borders, Bolivia will become the commercial centre of the continent. Already Bolivia holds four fifths of the entire population of the Amazons basin.

One hundred miles west of the Madeira enters the Rio



Negro, which is navigable to San Gabriel ; but at present steamers go only to Santa Isabel, or 546 miles. It is a deep though sluggish river, slower than the Amazons. The depth at Manáos at high water is forty-four fathoms, and the width a mile and a half. Steamers, therefore, do not usually cast anchor, but fasten to buoys. The river is highest the middle of June, and lowest at the end of October. The Rio Branco branch can also be navigated by small steamers for sixty leagues. Above the rapids of San Gabriel the Negro is connected by the Cassiquiare with the Orinoco ; and hence the commerce of this part of the river is naturally in the hands of Venezuelans. Ayraõ, eighteen hours by steam from Manáos, and the first station of any importance, is the centre of a very fine region for the culture of coffee, but little is raised. Barcellos, once the capital of the province, now nearly deserted, still shows the regular streets, architecture, stone houses and gardens of the old Portuguese settlers. Its climate is delightful, but it is plagued with bats.

Next in order is the Purús, one of the most promising tributaries of the Amazons. Recently opened to the world by the daring Chandless, this hitherto mysterious river, possessed by the untamable "Chunchos" (a name given to savages in general), has suddenly become one of the most attractive and valuable streams in the world. Rising in the richest part of the Andes, and entering the Amazons only forty-five leagues above the city of Manáos, it is navigable for steamers, the greater part of the year, for over 1200 miles. At the distance of 800 miles from its mouth the depth is never less than twelve feet. It is nearly equal to the Madeira in size, and is remarkably free from islands and rapids, but is exceedingly winding in its course. Its affluents on the right bank are the Paricatuba, Mucubim, Ituxy, Aquiry, Hyuacú, and Aracá ; and on the left, Ta-



pauá, Mamoria, Pauynim, Inauynim, and Curumahá. There are no villages yet; but the steamer stations are Paricatuba, Aruman, Boa Vista, Piranhas, Ariman, Jaburú, Canutama, Vista Alegre, and Hyutanahan. The valley of the Purús is occasionally flooded, the *terra firma* seldom touching the river, so that it is not favorable to permanent settlements. It is, however, a healthy river, and there are more inhabitants along the banks than on any other river. Sr. Urbano, a colored man, is called the father of commerce on the Purús, having been the first to ascend it. He has an establishment on the Ituxy.

Parallel to the Purús, and distant from it by the ascending Amazons steamer eighteen hours, is the almost equally important Juruá. It is one third smaller than the Purús, yet it is navigable for steamers drawing three or four feet of water for a thousand miles, and is free from snags. There are many *playas*, but few islands. Like the Purús, it is a very crooked river, and has a two-and-a-half-mile current. Five hundred miles from its mouth it has a depth of two fathoms at low water. The branches on the right are the Chiruan, Tarauacá, Gregorio, and Mu. The Tarauacá affords a passage to the Purús, and it is said there is an affluent called Pixona, communicating with the Tef-fé, and another, the Branco, connecting with the Jutahí. The stations on the Juruá are Juruapúca (left bank), Gavaõ (left), Popunha (left), Chué (right), and Mararý (right). The last and farthest station consists of a single large house, owned by Sr. Justo.

The Jutahí is a black-water stream, and unhealthy. The mouth is 800 metres wide. Forty-five days' travel with a canoe of six oars (*i. e.*, to the Mutum-paraná) shows no falls, nor any villages.

The Japurá is a first-class tributary, but little known. It is navigable for ten days by steamer, or forty days by



six-oar canoe, when the Curetú falls (over granite rocks) are reached, near a lofty table-topped mountain. The channel is only seven or eight metres deep, and there are no settlements. The second *cachoeira* is thirty days above, and is called Arára-cuára; here the river is twelve miles wide, consisting of many channels. Fifteen days by canoe up the Apoporis brings one to rapids. There is but one day's portage between the head of the Tunantíns and the Moco.

The Iça has no rapids, and is navigable into New Granada. It is a healthy river, though swarming with piums; and is of considerable commercial importance.

The Javarí is navigable by canoe for an unknown distance, and is called the "Golden Dream of the Peruvians," since they imagined it was the eastern outlet of their country. But this it will never become. The "Icamiaba" has ascended above the mouth of the Tecuchy in high water; and the Boundary Commission examined it with a steam-launch sixty-four miles.

The Napo could be ascended by a flat-bottom steamer 500 miles, or at least to Coca; it is the natural highway eastward for Ecuador. Should the Curaray be found navigable, it would open one of the richest corners of the continent, abounding in valuable vegetable products, while the purest gold washed in the whole Amazons region is obtained between its source and the Upper Napo.\*

The Nanay has been ascended by a small steamer 160 miles, where there was a depth of from three to five fathoms; but navigation beyond is difficult on account of drift-timber. The banks are high as far up as Pinduyacu, and abounding with rubber-trees; above that are many lagunes

\* It is a singular coincidence that the word "Napo," which is applied to the densest part of the South American wilderness, is the Greek for "forest," as seen in the name "Napoleon," meaning the lion of the forest.



alive with turtles. The Itaya, on the other side of Iquitos, is navigable by steamer at least forty-five miles.

The noble Ucayali has been navigated by a steamer of 500 tons for 600 miles in the dry season. A small steamer can ascend the Pichis to Rochelle-playa, lat.  $9^{\circ} 57' 11''$  S.; the Palcazu (in the rainy season) to Mayro, lat.  $9^{\circ} 55' 22''$  S., or a hundred miles from the terminus of the Oroya Railroad; the Urubamba for fifty miles above its confluence with the Tambo; and the Tambo to lat.  $11^{\circ}$ . The Tambo and Upper Urubamba are the most furious streams entering the Ucayali, the current being sometimes ten miles an hour. Canoes can go up the Pichis to Puerto Tucker, lat.  $10^{\circ} 22' 55''$  S., 980 miles from the Marañon, and 300 from Cuzco. The head of canoe navigation on the Tamaya is within four days of the Javarí, while the St. Catalina nearly joins the Chipurana from the Huallaga; in fact, this is a common route for traders in salt. The current between Sarayácu and the mouth of the Pachitea, a fall of one hundred feet, is three miles an hour; below Sarayácu, and for some distance up the Pachitea, it is a trifle less. The only settlements of importance are the three missions: Sarayácu, once numbering 800 souls, now dwindled to 200, and situated 390 miles from the mouth of the river, and 408 feet above the level of the sea. The temperature does not sensibly differ from that of Iquitos. Farther up are Cashiboya, counting 700, and Calleria, 150. The Ucayali will undoubtedly become the route from Lima to the Atlantic. If volume and length decide the question, this river should be called the "mother-stream" of the Amazons; but on the ground that that branch is the true source on which one can keep longest in the general east and west direction of the main trunk, the Marañon should have the honor.

The Tigre, a black-water stream, has been ascended by steamer 111 miles, but is probably navigable a much great-



er distance. It yields rubber, copal, copaiba, sarsaparilla, wax, and pitch.

The Huallága, for the first hundred miles, has an average depth of three fathoms, a current of three miles an hour, and (at Lagunas) a rise and fall of twenty-five feet. The ordinary steam navigation ends at Yurimaguas, 123 miles from the mouth; but at high water, steamers can go forty-six miles farther, to a point called Rumi Callarina. Canoe-travel begins at Tingo Maria, 120 miles from Huánaco. The Parana - pura and Aypena are ascended by canoes to Balsa Puerto and Jeveros, and the Mayo to Tarapoto.

The Pastássa is an intractable torrent. The little steamer "Mayro" ascended seven miles, when further navigation was stopped by furious rapids. Dr. Spruce was one hundred days in going from Tarapoto, on the Huallága, to Baños, on the Upper Pastássa. Considerable gold is washed by the Indians from the black sand of the Bombonasa.

The Pótro is navigable sixty-four miles by steamer. This river is important as being the prospective avenue for the commerce of Chachapoyas.

The Moróna is open to steamers to the confluence of the Cosulima and Mangosisa, a distance of over 300 miles. Steamers can also ascend the Mangosisa to a point distant only fifteen miles from Macás, "the golden Seville" of old Spanish days.

The Santiago, as it discharges itself above the Pongo de Manseriche, is consequently not available for steam navigation. But canoes ascend it, and not a little gold, washed from its banks and *playas*, is brought down by traders. All the alluvial slopes along this river to the sources of the Napo are auriferous. The Santiago gold is of a deeper yellow than the Napo.

Borja, the last town on the navigable part of the main



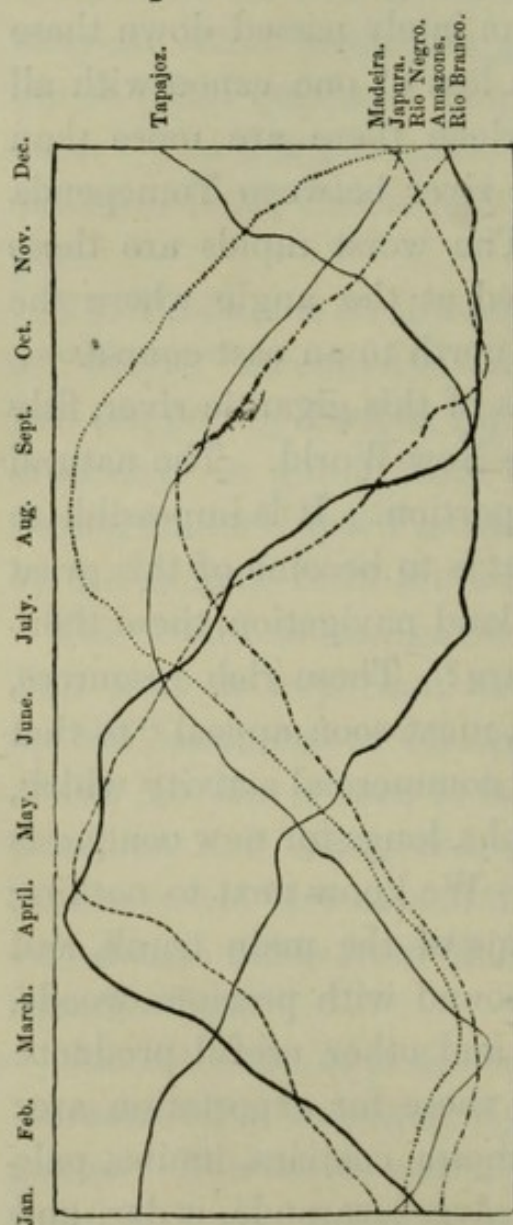
Amazons, is 515 feet above the Atlantic, and 2600 miles from it, following the windings of the river, or 29° measured on the equator. Just above it, the Great River breaks through the cordillera in a narrow, crooked channel, about a hundred yards wide (fifty-eight yards at one point), between perpendicular walls of limestone. The Pongo is three miles long, with a current of ten miles an hour, and dangerous eddies. Wertherman lately passed down these rapids at imminent risk, and a loss of one canoe with all on board. Above the Manseriche there are more than forty pongos and cascades, the river between Tomependa and Borja falling 682 feet. The worst rapids are those called "Escurrebragas," situated at the angle where the Marañon sharply turns from a north to an east course.

Such are the vast capabilities of this gigantic river, fitly called the Mediterranean of the New World. The natural wealth of the country is in proportion. It is impossible to avoid asking the question, What is to become of this great region, this grand system of inland navigation, these thousand and one products of nature? These rich resources, lying almost at our very doors, must soon appeal "to that restless spirit of enterprise and commercial activity which, not content with its past triumphs, longs for new conquests and a wider field of exercise." We know next to nothing of the interior; but the margins of the main trunk, and especially of the tributaries, abound with precious woods, drugs, dye-stuffs, edible fruits, and other useful products. Among the most important of these for exportation are: Moira pinima, moira piránga, moira coatiára, itaúba, palo de sangre, massarandúba, sapucáya, jacarandá, cedar, and cumarú; sarsaparilla, vanilla, copaiba, cinchona and guaraná; cacao, coffee, tonca-beans, nuts, farina, tapioca, cotton, rice, tobacco, and sugar; rubber, piassába, pita, and copal, and a host of others unknown to commerce. And



it is astonishing how much might be done with a little enterprise and ingenuity. A good business remains to be done in the export of preserved fruits, plantain-meal, resins, and oil-bearing seeds, in the discovery of vegetable fibre for paper-manufacture, and in the improved culture of cacao and coffee.

The present traffic in the riches of this inexhaustible



Compensation of Floods in the Amazonas Basin.

region is far behind the world's expectations; but it has wonderfully increased since the introduction of steamers in 1853. Sixty thousand tons of freight pass between Pará and Ma-náos yearly, and this is the trade of only 300,000 people. When the Madeira is made the outlet of Bolivia, the trade of two millions more will be added.

It is impossible to ascertain the number of sailing-vessels on the river; but the variety is extraordinary, for the Indian is a carpenter and shipwright by intuition. Thus we see: First, the *canoe* proper, or, "dug-out." Second, the *montaría*,\* a small boat

made of five planks, or a canoe increased by two narrow boards for the sides, and small triangular pieces for stem

\* So named because it takes the place of a horse, from *montar á caballo*, to ride horseback.





Amazonian Craft.

and stern. The paddle serves for both steering and propelling. Third, the *montaria-possante*, a large *montaria* with oars. Fourth, the *igarité*, a large canoe, or *montaria*, with two masts, rudder, keel, and palm-leaf awning or cabin near the stern. Fifth, the *galiota*, an *igarité* with wooden covering. Sixth, the *coberta*, a large *galiota* with one or two wooden cabins. Seventh, the *vigilengas*, a large *igarité*, short and broad, flat bottom with keel fore and aft, first made at Vigés. Eighth, the *batelaõ*, a barge with square sails, but no deck, to carry cattle; sometimes propelled by long oars. Ninth, the *barco*, a *batelaõ* with deck. Tenth, the *escuna*, or schooner.

Of steamers there are now thirty-five afloat on the Amazons, varying in tonnage from 17 to 864. The aggregate tonnage is over 10,000. Twenty of these belong to three companies, which receive a large subsidy from the government, and have a total capital of \$3,600,000. The



oldest and most powerful line ("*Companhia de Navegação a vapor do Amazonas*") is owned in London, but is under the management of the distinguished and energetic Sr. Pimenta Bueno, of Pará. This company is endeavoring to swallow up the other two, having just purchased the Paraense line, and nearly completed negotiations for the Fluvial, in order to monopolize the carrying-trade on the river.

Officially made free to the world in 1867, the navigation of the Amazons is virtually restricted to the Brazilian flag. Foreign vessels may go up the main river as far as Manáos; up the Tapajos to Santarem; and up the Madeira to Borba. On the Marañon the Peruvian government has two large steamers, doing monthly service, besides several small ones for the tributaries; and a firm at Iquitos has recently inaugurated a private line between that point and Pará. Goods for Peru pass Pará free of duty. Two regular steamers leave Pará for Manáos and intermediate points on the 2d and 18th of each month, and a monthly steamer plies between Manáos and Loreto, on the Brazilian frontier, connecting with the Peruvian "Morona" for Yurimáguas, on the Huallaga. The other steamers run from Pará and Manáos to numerous villages along the main river and the tributaries. The navigation of these tributaries, but just commenced, is most important, for *they* are the real sources of the characteristic products of the country; the region bordering the main trunk yields scarcely any thing. On the Tocantins a steamer goes once a month to Cametá; once a month (during high water) to Baiao and to the first falls. Almost the only trade on this river is in Brazil-nuts. The Xingú has one occasional steamer going just above Souzil for rubber, of which the annual product is five or six thousand arrobas. It also brings down estopa and nuts. The Tapajos has a monthly steam-



er as far as Itaituba (175 miles), leaving Santarem the 28th, and bringing down rubber, sarsaparilla, tobacco, farina, cacao, coffee, copaiba, pepper, nuts, pirarucú, pitch, hides, lumber, and limestone. A steamer leaves Manáos for San Antonio, on the Madeira, the 27th of each month, and oftener when there is a cargo. At present the trade on this chief tributary is inconsiderable, its value, in 1872, amounting to only \$279,312. The export consists of rubber (about 25,000 arrobas), hides, tallow, quina, copaiba, cacao, nuts, fish, tobacco (of superior quality for pipes), and sarsaparilla. But the moment the railway around the falls is finished, a magnificent country will roll its wealth down the Madeira. Above the falls are the cities of Exaltacion, Trinidad, Santa Cruz, Oruro, Cochabamba, and La Paz; there is the Bení valley, famous for its gold, silver, tin, copper, lead, and mercury mines; and from the banks of the Mamoré will be exported, as soon as an outlet can be made, cinchona bark, rubber, coffee, cacao, sugar, rum, vanilla, balsams, copal, wax, dyes, sarsaparilla, tobacco, farina, cotton, llama and alpaca wool, cattle, hides, horns, tallow, dried meat, tiger and deer skins, furs, feathers, hammocks, and hats. At present cattle can be bought there at \$15 a head; cinchona, \$45 a quintal; cacao, \$1 50 an arroba; sugar and rice, \$1 an arroba. Wild cattle swarm on the grassy *campos* of Bolivia, which, as soon as a way is opened, will supply the famishing villages on the Amazons with meat, and more civilized cities with shoes. Wheat, coming from Cochabamba, is scarce. Notwithstanding the difficulty and danger of passing the rapids, a considerable commerce is carried on in launches and canoes, which are dragged overland around the falls. About sixty descend every year, with a total freight of 700 tons. The present exports of Bolivia amount to \$6,000,000, while the internal commerce is valued at \$75,000,000. Potosí and Cara-



cólis, the richest silver-mines in the world, yielded in 1872 \$6,750,000. The Beni region is a favorable field for emigration; the climate is good, the land very fertile, the river abounds with game, and there are no savages between Exaltacion and Trinidad.

★ On the Rio Negro a steamer makes six trips a year, as far as Santa Isabel (546 miles) for piassaba and sarsaparilla. The value of the trade on this tributary, in 1872, was \$62,586; it is now on the increase. The rich cacao and coffee, once raised in this region, are no longer cultivated; and no one can be found to cut the celebrated moira-pinima—the most beautiful wood in the world. Not a stick can be found for sale in the city of Manáos; while every body confesses that there is an abundance of it up the Negro, especially on its branch, the Branco, near the boundary-line of Guiana. A regular monthly steamer (and often an extra one) goes up the Purús, one thousand miles to Hyutanahan, bringing down rubber, copaiba, sarsaparilla, nuts, turtle-oil, and fish. The commerce on this river is rapidly increasing. Its value in 1872 was \$627,602. There is a monthly steamer, likewise, on the Juruá, ascending to Mararý (500 miles), and the trade is similar to that on the Purús. The Peruvian steamers, plying between Loreto and Yurimáguas, take up dry goods and hardware in exchange for Moyabamba hats and sarsaparilla. Their rate downstream is eighteen miles an hour, and from ten to twelve up, while the Brazilian steamers descend at the rate of twelve or fifteen miles an hour, but make only eight upstream.

Such is this great fluvial highway, as thus far developed. Imagine a river rising in the Lake of the Woods, and emptying into the Atlantic with a mouth stretching from New York to Baltimore. Unless checked by blind legislation, the commerce of the Amazons, leavened by



Anglo-Saxon capital and Anglo-Saxon enterprise, is destined to assume proportions commensurate with the magnitude of the river.\*

\* The following note, corroborating some of the foregoing statements, is from the pen of Colonel George E. Church, who has traveled extensively in this region: "South America contains seven millions of square miles. The Amazon River drains over one third of this vast area. Its basin is more than twice the size of the valley of the Mississippi. It would hold forty-nine countries the size of England. Only by floating upon the majestic tide of the Amazon does one get an idea of its mass of waters. The Mississippi River, poured into it near its mouth, would not raise it six inches. In Bolivia, on the Beni branch of its Madeira affluent, two thousand miles from its outlet, it is 170 feet deep! It presents still more astonishing soundings the same distance up the main stream. With its branches, it offers not less than 15,000 miles of waters suitable for steamboat navigation. The Bolivian affluents of its main branch alone count 3000 miles of river navigation. One half of this is suitable for steamers drawing six feet of water, and the other half for craft drawing three feet."



## CHAPTER XXVI.

Pará: its Situation, Climate, Industry, and Commerce.

THE largest city on the largest river in the world, and the sole commercial outlet of a region equal to the United States east of the Mississippi, but vastly more fertile: such is Pará.

It is a city of strange contrasts. Founded 250 years ago, and having an unparalleled position, it has to-day but 35,000 inhabitants—a slow growth, due mainly to revolutions, yellow fever, and absurd legislation. Standing seventy miles from the ocean, it is nevertheless approachable by the largest steamers. It is built on a low tract of land, so that at a distance it appears, like Venice, seated on the sea, with beautiful *rocinhas* nestling in gardens along the shore, and every variety of craft, from frigate to canoe, on the water; hemmed in between the river Guajará and a perpetual forest that stubbornly disputes every inch of ground; with picturesque avenues of mongubas, graceful palms, and superb bananas in elegant luxuriance; with unpaved streets, neglected plazas, dilapidated houses, sombre churches with grass and shrubs growing on their tiled roofs; with screaming parrots and loathsome vultures, yellow dogs and chattering monkeys; with wealthy Brazilians in spotless white, noisy Portuguese porters, idle soldiers, merry negresses with trays or water-jars on their heads, sober Indian women with naked children astride on their hips or rolling in the street; with a mongrel population of amalgamated Portuguese, Indian, and Negro blood—Mulattoes, Mamelucos, Cafuzos, Curibocos, and Xibaros; ev-



ery where the signs of human indolence and Nature's thrift, of filth and poverty alongside of overpowering beauty and wealth of vegetation, yet altogether leaving a pleasing impression on the mind, which can never fade.

Pará (officially called *Belém*, the Portuguese for Bethlehem) is justly celebrated for the almost perfect equilibrium of its climate. The temperature ranges from  $73^{\circ}$  to  $93^{\circ}$ , the mean of the year being  $81^{\circ}$ . The heat is never so oppressive as in New York, being tempered by strong sea-breezes and afternoon showers. Were it not for the imported diseases, Pará would be the paradise of invalids. In 1819 the small-pox first visited the city; in 1850 came the yellow fever; and in 1855, cholera. The natives suffer most from the first epidemic, and foreigners from the second. As agriculture is at a low ebb and import duties high, living is dear in comparison with former rates or with what we might expect in a city on the edge of an empire of exhaustless fertility. Luxuries are exorbitant. Hotels charge \$2 50, gold, per day. Enterprise runs mainly to small shop-keeping and wholesale trade in rubber and cacao. But there is progress toward a better state of things. We notice many changes since our visit in 1867. The passport system was abolished last year. The state religion is more tolerant (the Jews have a synagogue), and religious holidays, which once seriously interfered with trade and industry, have been reduced in number. Among the new public buildings are the President's Palace and the Grand Opera-house. The latter will cost \$500,000, and contain a theatre accommodating 1600 persons, and a saloon holding 1200, in every respect out of all proportion to the wealth and size of the city. There are two banks, with a joint capital of \$6,000,000. The city is lighted by a London company, the gas costing \$4 per thousand cubic feet. A circular railway now connects Pará and Nazareth, and



is well patronized by high and low. The rolling stock consists of five locomotives, fourteen passenger and eight freight cars.

There are very few Germans, French, English, and Americans in Pará; but of Portuguese there are about 5000, all busily coining money as shop-keepers, artisans, carmen, boatmen, etc. The native Brazilians are exceedingly jealous of them. They complain that these foreigners are monopolizing the trade of the country; but instead of vigorously competing with them, they threaten to drive them back to Portugal. While agriculture, such as it is, is carried on by the Tapuyos, or civilized Indians, the mechanical arts are mainly in the hands of the Portuguese. Among the industrial establishments there are fifty-nine bakers, forty-three tailors, thirty-six shoe-makers, thirty-two carpenters and joiners, twenty barbers (including such as bleed by lancet and leech), nineteen tinnern and glaziers, sixteen blacksmiths, thirteen butchers, ten printers, eight sugar-refiners, eight soap and tallow chandlers, eight makers of fire-works, four dentists, four book-binders, four confectioners, three photographers, three saddlers, three tanners, and three potters. No foreigner can practice a profession (as medicine or law), and charge for his services, without a certificate from the University at Rio. Dentistry, being considered a mechanical art, is allowed. There are at present sixteen printing-presses at Pará, from which issue fourteen journals—five dailies, three semi-weeklies, and six weeklies; four bookstores; one college (*Lycéo Paraense*) with twelve departments; a normal school, having a course of three years; a library, museum, and literary club.

The great want of the country is laborers of all kinds, but especially field hands. The Indians and Mestizos will not work; their supreme ambition is to be let alone.



Agriculture has been ruined by the universal rush into "extractive industry"—that is, the collection of the natural products, as rubber, nuts, sarsaparilla, etc.—exactly as in California, twenty years ago, all industry was swallowed up in the rush for gold. The rubber trade absorbs supreme attention; sugar-cane is grown for the manufacture of rum, sugar being imported from the southern provinces; and the cultivation of cotton, rice, coffee, and cacao along the Amazons is nearly neglected. Almost every grain of rice, so largely used on the Amazons steamers, comes from Guajará and Bahia. Rubber-collecting is also depopulating some districts, especially the department of Bení. It probably drains it of a thousand men yearly; and the women are left largely in excess—five to one man. Under the Brazilian laws a laborer can not leave his employer till his debts are canceled; and the "patrons" manage to keep the seringueiros perpetually in debt and bondage.

Another check to commercial enterprises is the high and irregular tariff. The duty on imports varies from five to eighty per cent. Ordinarily it may be reckoned at forty; but the same goods will enter at different rates, evidently depending on the caprice of the official. Bribery is openly practiced and expected. The duty on ready-made clothing is determined by weight, and on shoes by the length of the sole. The usual cost of exportation is seventeen per cent.; but the loss is much greater on certain products, as cabinet woods. This practically discourages labor by taxing it. Not \$400 were collected at the custom-house on all the woods exported from Pará in 1868-'9. Brazil abounds with the most valuable timber in the world, but is prevented from competing with other nations by this system of self-strangulation. There are but three saw-mills on the Amazons. A dozen boards of the common wood of the country (cedar or itauba) cost \$18 at Manáos.



Fine rubber costs about \$14 an arroba (32 pounds) up the river, and the loss is about forty-five per cent. in getting it to Liverpool or New York, half of which is for freight, and the other half for custom charges.

But Pará is destined to enjoy an enviable rank among the commercial centres of the world. She can never have a rival at the mouth of the Amazons, for she occupies the only available spot, the northern channel between Macapá and Chaves being scarcely fit for navigation. Standing at the gate-way of a magnificent valley, covered with the richest and largest forests on the earth, and at the *embouchure* of a river which affords an unparalleled extent of water-communication, touching every country on the continent except Chile and Patagonia, Pará must become the LIVERPOOL OF THE TROPICS. Her most prominent citizens are men of progress, and the dead weights on trade and labor will soon be removed.

At present the commerce of a country of such vast extent and resources is ridiculously insignificant. As most of the articles of consumption are imported, and many of those produced are exported, the foreign trade is greatly in excess of the internal. In 1872 the value of exports to England was \$2,766,761; to the United States, \$2,371,138; to France, \$466,788; to Portugal, \$247,222; to Germany, \$38,438; to Southern Brazil, \$171,469. The imports from Great Britain into the whole of Brazil amount to 45 per cent.; from France, 17 per cent.; from Buenos Ayres, 7 per cent.; from the United States, 5 per cent.; from Portugal, 3.5 per cent.; while of all the exports from the empire the United States takes 45 per cent., and Great Britain 9 per cent. Our country is the largest consumer of Amazonian products; a great part of what is shipped to England is destined for the Continent. The greater part of the rubber goes to England and the United States (about 2500



tons to each); cacao goes chiefly to France; Brazil-nuts, copaiba-oil, and tonka-beans, to the United States; straw hats, sarsaparilla, and tobacco, to Southern Brazil; pias-saba and fish-glue, to England; cotton, sugar, rice, farina, hides, and cachaça, to Portugal. During 1872 there entered the port of Pará 24 steamers and 49 sailing vessels (tonnage 62,393) bearing the stars and stripes; 35 English steamers and eighteen sailing vessels (tonnage 41,937; 39 steamers and 10 sailing vessels (tonnage 41,845) of the empire; Portuguese sailing craft, 23; French, 19; and from other nations, 16. The total value of exports from Pará in that year was \$6,071,818, of which about \$5,000,000 belong to rubber.



## CHAPTER XXVII.

Up the Amazons. — A Thousand Miles on the Great River. — Scenery. — Santarem. — Manáos. — Value of Labor and Productions. — Duties and Freights.

A VOYAGE on the Amazons is excessively monotonous. A vast volume of smooth, yellow water, floating trees and grass, low linear-shaped islets, two lines of the dark, even forest in profile, and the winding river tapering in the distance to a slender thread, till it is lost in the mist of the horizon—these are the general features. No busy towns are seen along the banks; only here and there a palm hut or Indian village, half buried in the wilderness. No mountains break the horizon, only half a dozen table-topped hills; and while many bluffs of red and yellow clay are visible, they are exceptional, the usual border being low alluvial deposits, magnificently wooded, but half the year covered with water. In spite of the glorious sunshine, the scene is depressing from its sameness, vastness, and silence. One never sees here the riant beauty of an English park. We long for a clearing to break the straight edge of the forest, or a little landscape gardening to modify the long streaks of yellow, green, and blue. The real grandeur, however, of a great river like this is derived from reflecting upon its prospective commercial importance and immense drainage. A lover of nature, moreover, can never tire of gazing at the picturesque grouping and variety of trees with their mantles of creeping plants; the wild, unconquered race of vegetable giants; the reckless energy and selfish competition of all, big and little; the dense can-



opy of green, supported by crowded columns, branchless for fifty or eighty feet; the parasites and undergrowth struggling for life and light; the broad-leaved bananas and gigantic grasses; the colossal nut and pod bearing trees; and, above all, the hundreds of species of palms, each vying with the other in beauty and grace. Through such a densely-packed forest flows the Amazons with all the grandeur of an ocean current.

In giving my voyage up the Great River to its source among the Andes, I shall touch only at representative points, and confine myself mainly to such commercial and industrial facts as will be likely to interest the practical man. From Pará to Santarem, the first town of importance, is 543 miles. The passage can be made by steamer once a week, sometimes oftener; fare, \$25; time, four days. Twenty hours after leaving the capital, the steamer stops at the little village of Bréves, on the south-west corner of the great island of Marajó. Rubber is the chief article of export. Here begins a labyrinth of narrow channels, connecting the Amazons with the Pará; and as the forest is unusually luxuriant, the sail through to the Great River is the most memorable part of the whole voyage. This first introduction to the Amazonian forest is worth a voyage to Pará. Here the palms are seen in all their glory; the slender assaï and jupatí with their long, plume-like leaves, the mirití with enormous fan-like leaves, and the bussú with stiff, entire leaves, some thirty feet long. The banks are frequently bordered with heart-shaped arums and waving arrow-grass, or with plantations of the cacao-tree and mandioca shrub.

The first view of the Amazons is disappointing, as it is nearly filled up with islands; but where the Xingú comes in, it shows its greatness, being ten miles wide. Near the mouth of this tributary is situated the pretty village of



Porto de Mos, now numbering but 800 souls, but destined to be an important centre in the rubber trade, while the country up the Xingú is admirably adapted for coffee. Passing the singular hills of Almeyrím and the rightly-named village of Monte Alegre, famous for its cattle, we reach Santarem, at the mouth of the Tapajos. This ambitious but, to an American, sleepy-looking city, is the half-way station between Pará and Manáos, and is now aspiring to become the capital of a new province, to be called Baixo-Amazonas, extending from Obidos to Gurupá.\* It is not thriving, however, barely maintaining its old number of 2500 souls. Of these about 2000 are Indians, Negroes, and mixed, including 200 slaves. The situation is beautiful, lying on a green slope, facing the clear Tapajos, with undulating *campos* and flat-topped hills in the rear. Three or four long rows of low, whitewashed, tiled houses, with less than half a dozen two-storied buildings and one Jesuit church, make up the city. There is a *collegio* for boys and girls, the former department having fifty students varying in age from eight to sixteen, and a course of four years for the study of grammar, arithmetic, geography, history, French, Latin, algebra, and geometry. The primary department is supported by the government, and education is free in one sense, and compulsory in another. The climate of Santarem is delightful, the trade-winds tempering the heat (which is seldom above 83°), and driving away all insect pests. The chief diseases are syphilis and fevers. Dr. Stroope, an immigrant from Arkansas, is the sole physician. The soil in the immediate neighborhood is sandy and poor; but inland, especially where the American colonists have located, it is exceedingly fertile; rice, for ex-

\* Founded in 1654, Santarem became an incorporated city in 1848. The term "city," as originally applied by Spaniards and Portuguese, was solely a mark of royal favor, not a measure of population, as with us.



ample, having a yield of seventy-five bushels to the acre, and tobacco, one thousand pounds. The great want is a laboring class; there are too many shop-keepers and too few workers. Yet such as are willing to work can be hired at fifty cents a day. One paper, a foot square, is published weekly. The following prices will give some idea of living at Santarem: Wheat flour (mostly from Harper's Ferry, United States) costs \$16 a barrel;\* and New York goods generally sell at three times their original value, the chief addition being made at the custom-house at Pará. Agricultural implements are at double their price. Butter (all from England and the United States), 80 cents a pound; Holland cheese, 75 cents; Newfoundland cod-fish, 20 cents a pound; Lowell domestics, from 25 to 40 cents a metre; sawn lumber, \$20 a hundred. Of home productions, cacao sells in the city from \$2 10 to \$2 20 an arroba (32 pounds); coffee from 16 to 24 cents a pound; sirup (no sugar is made), 40 cents a frasca (5 pints); maize, \$2 a bushel; cachaça rum, 50 cents a gallon; peanuts, \$2 a bushel; Brazil-nuts, \$1 50 a bushel; farina, \$5 a bushel; guaraná, \$25 to \$45 an arroba; tobacco, \$1 to \$1 25 a pound; lime, \$3 a barrel; pork, 35 to 40 cents a pound; beef, 7 to 9 cents a pound. Hides, at the ranchos, 5 cents a pound; at Santarem, 7 cents a pound; at Pará, 12 to 14. Cattle, at the ranchos, \$15 to \$20; at Santarem, \$25 to \$28; at Pará, \$35 to \$50. Horses, at the ranchos, \$35 to \$40; at Santarem, \$40 to \$50; at Pará, \$50 to \$100.

The best-paying business at Santarem would be the manufacture of brick, leather, and lumber. The only articles manufactured are cajú wine, cachaça, soap, and lime. But-

\* Wheat can be grown only on the slopes of the Andes, in Bolivia, and in Matto-Grosso. The Amazons valley consumes at present about 20,000 barrels of foreign flour yearly.



ter is made by one family, a North American, of course. Nearly all the following exports, given in the order of their valuation, come down the Tapajos: Rubber (about 7000 arrobas annually), cacao, hides, dried beef, fish, farina, sarsaparilla, tobacco, guaraná, copaiba-oil, Brazil-nuts, tallow, cattle, horses, lumber, lime, and gypsum. Coffee, sugar, and rice are imported from below, although hardly any part of the Amazons valley would produce more. Rubber-gathering has not only killed agriculture, but drained the district of 2000 inhabitants.

Santarem is of interest to the American reader, as it was selected for colonization by emigrants from the Southern States. Most of the colonists have left, only six families remaining; but these contain nearly all the enterprise and intelligence of the motley party that left Mobile in 1867. These have chosen their plantations on the slopes of the hills, six miles south of the city, and are astonishing the Brazilians with the results of their industry. The land is rated at 22 cents an acre; but practically the colonists enjoy "squatter sovereignty," pre-empting a square mile, and paying no taxes except on exports. They can sell their improvements, but not the land. The soil is black and very fertile. It beats South Carolina, yielding without culture thirty bushels of rice per acre. Sugar-cane grows eight feet high, or twice the length of Louisiana cane, and fully as sweet. Sweet potatoes grow naturally; indeed, it is impossible to exterminate the plant. Broom-corn and cotton grow luxuriantly. Indian corn does not mature well; turnips grow finely, but do not come to seed; grapes do well (three crops a year), but the ants devour them. The following valuable vegetable products abound at the American settlement: Abio, ata, pine-apple, pikiá, papaw, aracá, ingá, abacati, bread-fruit, orange, banana, co-coa-nut, peach palm, cupuassú, cajú, cará (or yam, four or



five kinds), three kinds of mandioca, tomato, pepper, ginger, Brazil-nuts, tonka-bean, sugar-cane, sweet potato, squash, Lima-bean, rice, tobacco, indigo, and pita; while in the dense forest we find the following trees, many of them unknown to commerce, but furnishing the richest cabinet woods or timber: Itaúba (often sixty feet high and four feet through), cedar (specimens of which occur one hundred feet high, and seven feet in diameter), jutahí (a very hard, dark wood, used for sugar-mill rollers, etc.), sapucaya (resembling hickory, the clear trunk of which is often fifty feet high), loira (the pine of the country), moira-pushúva (similar to black walnut), cumarú, sapupíra, macacaúba (very close grained), acariúba (very durable), javána, rose-wood, pracuúba (very hard), pao-mulatto, pao-préto, pao-d'arco, and andiróba. With nature so generous, with a healthy location, at the outlet of the rich Tapajos, and, though 500 miles from the sea, accessible to Atlantic vessels of heavy tonnage, Santarem is sure of a brighter future.

From Santarem to Manáos, the capital of the upper province of Amazonas, and the second city in magnitude on the river, is 460 miles. Three villages of importance are passed in this voyage: Obidos (seated beside a bluff on the "narrows," where the river, contracting to a strait not a mile wide, has a depth of forty fathoms and a current of 2.4 feet per second) exports considerable cacao and Brazil-nuts. The large cacao plantations are on the opposite side of the river. Obidos was once an important military post; now there are only twenty guns; these, however, can command the river. The population is set down at 2500; but it is probably very much less. Next we anchor before a bank of slippery yellow clay, on which is a level spot covered with grass, and a row of huts backed by a green forest—the whole labeled "Villa Bella da Imperatrice," or,



the "Beautiful City of the Empress." It numbers about 150 dusky souls, dwelling in whitewashed, mud-plastered, wattled houses of one story. Insignificant in itself, Villa Bella is the outlet of a large and rich inland district, exporting cacao, guaraná (from Mauhés, a large village for the Amazons, counting 800), piraracú fish, bast, Brazil-nuts, tonka-beans, tobacco, coffee, caferána, copaiba-oil, hides, and beef, but importing almost every necessary of life. Then comes Serpa, destined to become the emporium of the Madeira trade, built on a high bank of variegated clay, nearly opposite the entrance of the great tributary, and having an elevated and fertile track behind it, and a deep water-frontage, where vessels might easily dispense with lighters, montariás, etc. But wharves and piers are yet to be on the Amazons. The excuse for not building them is that the great difference between high and low water (fifty feet) precludes their construction. We think any experienced mechanic from the North could easily show that piers or floating docks on the river are among the possibles, and at the same time reap a fortune for himself. One is greatly needed at Manáos, where sometimes twenty-five steamers unload every month.

On the left bank of the dark Rio Negro, ten miles from its junction with the Amazons, stands *the St. Louis of Brazil*, the city of Manáos. The site is admirably located for either residence or commerce. It is uneven and rocky, twenty feet above high-water mark. The river in front is deep enough for the "Great Eastern,"\* and its banks, for hundreds of miles, are packed with a luxuriant forest of valuable trees. The forest scene is peculiar: the palms and broad-leaved plants and grasses, so abounding on the Amazons, play a subordinate part on the banks of the Ne-

\* "Eighty metres at high water," said a resident; but this is probably either a trope or a tropical exaggeration.



gro. The soil, a stiff loam, is fertile in the tropical sense; and the climate is Neapolitan, nature having left little to be desired in this respect. We did not see the mercury rise above  $93^{\circ}$  at midday; and the nights are invariably cool, with but few mosquitoes. The country around is quite romantic for the valley, being undulating and covered with picturesque vegetation; while the famous "Cascade" and the *igarapes*, or canoe-paths, winding through the forest, are among the most charming features in the Amazonian landscape.

The city, for a long time stagnant, is now rapidly improving. As we saw it in 1867, it was meanly built, without a show of enterprise, without a hotel, and not 3000 inhabitants. It now numbers 5000 souls, with 17,000 in the district, a mixture of Brazilians, Portuguese, Negroes, Indians, Italians, Jews, Germans, and English; it has a fine cathedral (the last specimen of stone-work consecrated to church architecture we are to see till we reach Chachapoyas), to cost, when completed, \$200,000, and a president's palace in process of construction; two hotels and a market, besides many elegant private houses. The city is lighted with 500 kerosene-lamps, has day and night schools, with an *Episcopal Seminario*, three newspapers, one daily; and one two-horse carriage, which is advertised "To let, rain or shine." But there is neither bank nor bookstore, and the streets are unlevelled and unpaved. For scavengers, there are flocks of black vultures, or *urubús*, "undertakers in feathers," as a French writer calls them.

The society of Manáos has greatly changed during the last ten years, and business verily looks lively when the steamers are loading or unloading. There are diverse kinds of people here, officials (forming the upper crust), shop-keepers, itinerant traders, soldiers, boatmen, and idlers. There is a stiff formality on state occasions, yet a won-



derful ease ordinarily. One of Northern caste and republican principles is not a little taken back by the sight, on imperial soil, of the courtesy with which Brazilian gentlemen of distinction treat *senhoras* whose blood is fully one half Indian or African. Balls are the chief amusements; and Paris fashions, imported through Rio, lead. The ball opens at nine P.M., when tea is immediately served; thence till midnight there is dancing, sandwiched with liquors. Then follows the large supper. At two A.M. chocolate is served; and at four, a bouillon. During my sojourn, I was invited to a very grand affair, "*uma solemne e franca demonstração d'apreço*," given by the merchants to President Peixoto on his thirty-ninth birthday. Twice a week two excellent bands play before the President's Palace, one furnished by the military, the other by the Indian boys of the "Educando," a government industrial school in the suburbs, worthy of all praise.

Agriculture, as every where on the Amazons, is dead; even farina, the bread of the land, is imported from Pará, although this is the mandioca country. In fact, there is a constant lack of food in the city. The soil is rich, and would yield bountifully under proper cultivation. But it may be said, in general, of the whole valley, that the land is prolific only when charged with moisture. The natural forest, with its "pillared shade," keeps it damp; clear it off, and the sun bakes and burns up every thing, leaving a sandy *campo*. By leaving a number of trees, or by Egyptian irrigation, the country would yield like the Nile flats. The trouble with Manáos, as with Peruvian Iquitos, is that it is not productive; it lives upon its position, importing every thing but fish. No cotton or coffee now leaves Rio Negro, although nature has done every thing to favor their culture.

The only productive industry worth mentioning is seen



in one steam-saw-mill, one brick and tile establishment, and one soap-factory. Masons and carpenters get from \$2 50 to \$5 a day; pilots, \$100 a month; and physicians, \$5 a visit. The daily *Commercio do Amazonas* costs \$10 a year. Hotels, \$2 per day; *i. e.*, for a room where you may hang your hammock, and two meals a day. The following prices, current in 1873, will serve to illustrate life a thousand miles up the Amazons: Cacao, \$2 20 an arroba; tonka-beans, 20 cents per kilogram; puxurí (nutmegs), 90 cents per kilogram; guaraná, 68 cents per kilogram; Brazil-nuts, 5 cents per kilogram; copaiba-oil, 70 cents per kilogram; fish-glue, 90 cents per kilogram; dried meat, 21 cents per kilogram; dried pirarucú fish, 23 cents per kilogram; vanilla, 45 cents per kilogram; indigo, \$2 per kilogram; sarsaparilla in bundle, 80 cents per kilogram; tucum thread, \$1 per kilogram; tallow, refined, 90 cents per kilogram; rubber, from 56 to 85 cents per kilogram; rubber, in liquid, \$2 53 per kilogram; aguardente (cane rum), from 15 to 20 cents a litre; tapioca, 20 cents a litre; piassaba in the rough, 12 cents per kilogram; piassaba cord, 50 cents a centimetre; piassaba brooms, \$1 60 a dozen; estopa, or bast, 9 cents per kilogram; hides, 26 cents per kilogram; cotton hammocks, from \$5 to \$14 each; tucum hammocks, feathered, \$45; cedar logs, \$1 per metre; cedar or itaúba boards, sixteen feet long, eight inches wide, unplaned, \$18 a dozen; cabinet-wood in boards, 45 cents a metre; steamer fuel, \$20 a thousand sticks, each weighing, on the average, fifteen pounds; native brick ( $8 \times 6 \times 2$  inches) and tiles, from \$50 to \$75 a hundred; at Pará, \$35. The ordinary red sandstone rock, which abounds in the vicinity, unworked, 75 cents a cubic foot. This last item shows the high value of labor. So the wood used by the steamers is costly, considering that the forest is free to all. The introduction of steamers has



created a new branch of industry, the production of fuel; and the question is frequently asked whether a steam-saw-mill would pay. But there are two difficulties: it will not do to keep large supplies on hand, for it soon deteriorates in this climate, and lumbering will not leave a margin while there is a custom-house at Pará. The "Moróna," of 150 horse-power, burns nearly 500 sticks an hour; and the round trip of the little Rio Negro steamer from Manáos to Santa Isabel and back, 1092 miles, consumes 30,950 sticks. Coal at £3 a ton would be cheaper on the river than wood.

The provincial duty on liquors is 25 per cent.; on rubber, 12 per cent.; on fish, 5 per cent.; on all other articles, 10 per cent. If exported, 5 per cent. extra is collected at Pará, besides fees. Rubber collected in Peru and Bolivia pays no duty. Steamer freight between Manáos and Pará, on rubber, 25 cents an arroba; on coffee and cacao, 24 cents an arroba; on Brazil-nuts, 35 cents a bushel; on brick, \$20 a thousand; cotton, 30 cents an arroba; hides, 20 cents each; crude piassaba, 25 cents an arroba; sarsaparilla, 30 cents an arroba; tobacco, 25 cents an arroba; boards, \$3 30 per dozen; beeves, \$7 50 each; horses and mules, \$10 each. Freights between Manáos and San Antonio, on the Madeira: on rubber and sarsaparilla, 40 cents an arroba; cacao, coffee, dried beef, and tallow, 32 cents an arroba; Brazil-nuts in sacks, 35 cents a bushel; hides, 25 cents each. To Hyutanahan, on the Purús, the tariff is about the same.

The produce of the Rio Negro and Solimoens does not stop at Manáos, but goes directly to Pará, and must be purchased there. This is owing to the fact that Pará merchants have put the producers under obligation, so that producers up the river can not sell at an intermediate place. But Manáos is determined to become independent of Pará; and the project of a through line of steamers



from Manáos to Europe is on foot. With a healthy climate and fertile soil, a situation near the mouths of four great rivers—the Madeira, Negro, Purús, and Juruá—and having water communication with two thirds of the continent, this city has commercial advantages unsurpassed. What it wants is an even and generous legislation and an industrial class.



## CHAPTER XXVIII.

Up the Amazons.—From the Rio Negro to the Andes.—The Great Wilderness.—Steam on the Marañon.—The Birmingham of the Amazons.—Price of Labor and Food.—Survey of the Marañon.

MANÁOS is an important point of departure for several lines of steamers. Steamers leave regularly for Pará and Tabatinga, and for the Madeira, Negro, Purús, and Juruá. The fare up the Madeira is \$40, and up the Purús, \$50. From Manáos to Tabatinga, on the frontier of the empire, is 850 miles. The "Icamiába," the first and only steamer which has been running for twenty years, leaves Manáos the 11th of each month; fare, \$50; time, one week.

The Solimoens, as this middle portion of the Amazons is called, flows through a rank wilderness, broken at few points by the hand of man. There are probably not 300 acres of cultivated land between the Rio Negro and the base of the Andes, as far as from Boston to Omaha. The whole country is a vast plain of slight elevation, without hills or sandy *campos*, but with a soil of stiff clay covered with vegetable mold, and a lofty, luxuriant, humid forest. We see three varieties of banks: low, alluvial deposits, covered with arrow-grass or wild cane;\* slightly higher land, hidden by broad-leaved plants and dwarf palms, with a dense forest of lofty trees in the *terra incognita* beyond—the most common aspect; and cliffs of variegated clay, from twenty-five to fifty feet high, generally cut squarely

\* The Indians call the arrow-grass (*Gynerium saccharoides*) "caña rana," or "gamellote," and the taller *Gynerium sagittatum* (?) "caña brava," or "pintu." The latter furnishes the punt-poles of the boatmen. It is almost the first form of vegetation which appears when the inundating water retires.



away by the current, and crowned with a massive colonnade of trees, loaded with parasites and wound with creeping plants.

Palms are comparatively few; the most numerous being the short murumurú, the slender assai, the spindle-trunk pashiúba, the beautiful tucumá, and the urucurí, the nuts of which are used for smoking rubber. But the high, unflooded parts are heavily timbered with useful woods; as cedar, copal, andiróba, acapú, sicupíra, acari-cuará, acariúba, moira-piránga, moira-coatiára, itaúba, jutahí, sapupíra, masarandúba, paracu-úba, cumarú, palo de cruz, palo d' arco, and many kinds of loiro. And yet there is not a saw-mill between Manáos and Iquitos, a distance of 1200 miles!

The signs of animal life are not proportioned to this exuberance of vegetation, although more abundant than on the Lower River. It is almost "still-life" here: moving beings (mosquitoes always excepted) are rare. White egrets, and tall gray herons, stalking along the edge of the water; hummers whirring among the flowers; macaws and parrots flying high overhead; capybaras on the banks, and rolling porpoises and ugly alligators in the river: these are the most conspicuous forms. Man himself makes a poor figure in the wilderness of Alto Amazonas. This is one of the spots where he is not lord of creation. He appears on the scene as an interloper, a wayfarer, an accident; he enters the gloomy forest roofed by the groined arches of gigantic palm-leaves, as the traveler for the first time steps into a grand cathedral, with a feeling of mingled helplessness and awe.

From Manáos to the entrance of the Huallága, there are not 10,000 inhabitants scattered along the banks of the river and its inlets. Cudajá and Coarý consist of about forty houses each, whose owners deal in rubber and fish. The largest Brazilian town west of Manáos is Teffé (or



Ega, as the Portuguese called it), *the Omaha of South America* in position; yet it contains scarcely 2000 souls, although the best agricultural region on the Solimoens. It exports annually from 40,000 to 50,000 arrobas of rubber, and 4000 or 5000 arrobas of pirarucú fish. Here, also, are manufactured, by wild tribes in the interior, the celebrated grass hammock woven from the fibre of the tucum palm. The population of the Upper Amazons has not increased with the introduction of steamers. The climate is healthy, although one lives in a constant vapor-bath, and nature is bountiful. Epidemics are unknown, and ague is confined to dark-colored or sluggish tributaries.

Between Teffé (where Bates spent four years and a half, and Agassiz six months) and Tabatinga (the frontier fortress of the empire) is the most uncivilized part of the Amazons. Yet here enter five great rivers, which are destined to be famous—Japurá, Içá, Juruá, Jutahí, and Javari. The only towns are Fonte Boa (fifty houses), Tunantíns (thirty-five houses), and San Paulo (sixty houses), built on slippery clay bluffs, and exporting the produce of the forests and waters. All look as if they had seen better days. Rice and cotton might be grown in vast quantities on the lowlands after the subsidence of the river. But the people, mainly the half-civilized Tucúna Indians, prefer to collect rubber, catch turtles, swing in their hammocks, and live on pirarucú and plantains.

Tabatinga is a village of barracks, defended by sixteen guns, and ornamented with graceful tucumá palms. This has been a military post since 1776. It stands on a high bluff of variegated clay, and gives its name (signifying "white clay") to the vast Amazonian clay-formation. The average depth of the river here is ten fathoms, the difference between high and low water being thirty-six feet. The current, at flood-time, is five miles an hour. The ap-



pointment to the consulship at this distant and isolated spot must be regarded by the carpet-baggers of Rio as a literal banishment.

Here the traveler westward exchanges the Brazilian "Icamiába" for the Peruvian "Moróna." At present the following steamers are afloat on Peruvian waters: "Moróna," "Pastassa," "Tambo," "Putumáyo," "Napo," "Mayro," "Alceste," and "Ucayali," the last two belonging to private individuals. The "Moróna" is an iron vessel of 150 horse-power, with a tonnage of 500. The running time from Tabatinga to Yurimáguas is ninety hours, distance 728 miles. She leaves Tabatinga the 21st of each month, and Yurimáguas the 9th. The first-class fare is \$60, passengers providing their own bedding. There are no accommodations for ladies. Travel on the Marañon exceeds that on the Solimoens; for example, the "Moróna" left Iquitos with nineteen first-class passengers and forty-six third-class. Nevertheless, the towns are decaying, excepting Iquitos and Yurimáguas.

As to climate, I repeat what I have said elsewhere, that the entire main trunk of the Amazons from Pará to Borja, but especially the Marañon, is as healthy as any tropic river in the world. The same can be said of the large tributaries to the Marañon, as the Napo, Ucayáli, and Huallága; malarial fevers are almost confined to the small streams. Diarrhea and dysentery, the most common diseases in the swamp country, can generally be traced to imprudent eating and bathing. The most sickly season is the time of falling waters. The annual rise of the Marañon is about thirty feet. The largest amount of rain-fall occurs in February and March. The maximum rain-fall in twenty-four hours, during 1872-'3, was 4.66 inches. The greatest daily range of temperature noticed was 9°, but this was extraordinary.



Iquitos, the only village of size and enterprise on the Marañon, is of recent origin. It was founded by the survivors of a massacre at Borja in 1841. In 1851, Herndon counted 227 inhabitants; it now numbers 2000,\* English, Americans, Portuguese, Peruvians, Indians, and non-descripts, the last forming a numerous class; for, excepting a dozen lawful marriages, the rest are accidental unions. At least four fifths are half-breeds of Indian and white. The "city" stands on a bank of dark clay (containing a multitude of fossil shells and a layer of lignite), sixty-five feet above the average river, and three hundred and fifty above the sea. The houses generally are built of cane, plastered with mud and whitewashed, one story high, and strung together, not so much to economize space as the expense of putting up an additional wall. The streets are in their native state, and overgrown with grass. The mean temperature is 80°; and at night the mercury never falls below 60°. The climate is unusually healthy; the diseases, such as exist, chiefly *la tinta* (dark blotches on the skin), abscess, fever, dysentery, and catarrh, being due to improper food and drink, and want of cleanliness. But Sodom would shine alongside of Iquitos in point of morality and temperance.

The government works, established in 1864, are the

\* The author of *A Journey across South America*, which purports to have been made recently, betrays himself by saying that Iquitos consists of only thirty-five huts. Such it was in 1846. This work of "Paul Marcoy," so capitally written and splendidly illustrated, is one of the most remarkable impositions on the literary world. All dates are carefully excluded, and the English translator, Rich, coolly palms it off as a late expedition; whereas it was evidently made up from Count Castelnau's narrative, or by one of his party. The route and main incidents, as the death of Father Bobo, and the dispatch of D'Osey to Lima, are precisely parallel; the views of villages are as they looked thirty years ago; mention is made of the reigning king of France (Louis Philippe); "Count de la Blanche Epine" is a caricature of Castelnau; and "Marcoy" descended the Amazons in a schooner, which he would not have done after 1853, when steamers were introduced.



making of this place. It contains a large machine-shop for the repair of steamers, a steam saw-mill, and a brick factory. The superintendent and most of the hands are from England. Carpenters, masons, and machinists get from \$80 to \$100 a month; the first engineer on a steamer has \$145, and the second \$116, with rations; day laborers have \$10 a month. But the mischief is, that this is promised, not paid; some of the foreign employés have not received a cent for two years. By thus withholding payment, the government manages to hold on to imported skill. A number of machinists, in despair, have floated down to Pará, and made their way home, forfeiting, of course, all their earnings in arrear. The Marañon, at present, is a burden to Lima, for the works and the steamers do not pay; and Congress votes a monthly subsidy of \$20,000. But it is vital to Peru that she retain this Oriente, and she has made Iquitos the head-quarters of her military authority on the Amazons. The officer in charge, however, is subordinate to the prefect in Moyobamba.

Iquitos even exceeds Manáos in scarcity of food. She exports nothing but money, and produces nothing eatable. She depends, strange to say, for almost every mouthful of food upon the East instead of the West; upon Pará and New York rather than upon Moyobamba and Lima; and when the steamer fails to bring a supply, a famine is imminent. Residents have told me that at times no amount of money in hand could buy a pound of meat or bread. On the counter of a provision-store in Iquitos I saw this dried menagerie for sale: Iguána, pirarucú, manatí, monkey, and heron—the heap emitting a most disgusting odor. I do not wonder that clay-eaters are so numerous on the Amazons, for they have two strong temptations—the scarcity of food and the abundance of clay. I have seen the mud-blocks of houses in Iquitos largely eaten away by their



owners. Natural food is scarce; for edible fruit is confined mainly to cultivated spots, and game has fled for refuge to the depths of the forest. The fishes are unusually shy and wary, as I found on trial. This destitution of the necessities of life is in strong contrast with the luxury of nature. It can be traced partly to a want of energy and provident forethought (the land is rarely cultivated with a view to a surplus), and partly to the fact that the inhabitants, more like vagrant locusts than colonists, are governed solely by considerations of immediate gain. And as the wealth of the forest, unprotected by legislation, will rapidly decrease under the present reckless system, we may look for still leaner times on the Great River. Not till the rubber interest is made subordinate to tillage can we hope for durable prosperity.

Iquitos receives its flour from Richmond and Baltimore; lard from Cincinnati; canned butter from England; potatoes from Portugal; coffee and sugar from Eastern Brazil; rice from Ceará and India: and all this, while almost any created fruit and grain would grow on the Upper Marañon, or the slope of the Andes. Oranges and alligator-pears could be raised with the greatest ease; but the latter are brought from Pebas, and I could hear of but one orange-tree in all Iquitos. Flour and potatoes sell at 20 cents a pound; butter, \$1 a pound; fowls, \$1 each; eggs, 80 cents a dozen; cachaça, \$1 a gallon; lime, \$12 a barrel; Newcastle coal, \$80 a ton; logs, \$4 apiece, and it costs \$5 a hundred feet for sawing.

I was happy to meet at this place the Hydrographical Commission, commanded by Admiral Tucker, which has been engaged for several years past in surveying the Marañon and its tributaries. It had just returned from an elaborate exploration of the Ucayali, ascending the Pichis to lat.  $10^{\circ} 22' 55''$ , or 1041 marine miles from Iquitos.



The final Report will be of great interest and value. The atlas will comprise some forty sheets, each  $30 \times 15$  inches, besides a general map five feet square; and tables of latitudes, longitudes, magnetic variations, elevations, currents, distances, temperatures, etc., embracing 2945 miles of river, or the total distance navigable by steamers. The determination of the latitude and longitude of prominent points by Captain Rochelle will straighten our geography of the Marañon region; while the meteorological and ethnological observations by Dr. Galt (to be issued by the Smithsonian Institution) will make a valuable contribution to science.

Two little steamers, the "Napo," of Iquitos, and the "Ucayali," of Nauta, run up the Ucayali to Sarayácu and Cachaboya monthly, the voyage to Sarayácu from Iquitos taking eight days up and four down. The trade at present is light, consisting chiefly in the exchange of English goods, and Huallága salt for fish and turtles. But this tributary, contributing more water than the Marañon above it, and navigable for about one thousand miles, or within a short distance of the Oroya Railroad, must ere long become a highway for commerce. A mule-road is already projected to connect Sarayácu with the salt-mines of Chasuta. Fine selenite gypsum occurs above Sarayácu, and "cinnamon" around Cachaboya Lake.

The largest village above Iquitos is Nauta (numbering 1000), but the busiest is old San Regis—a little huddle of mud-huts, but mighty in "cachass." Here they distill and export 2500 garrafones (seven gallons each) a year of this white rum—the apparent life-blood of Eastern Peru—and sell it at \$5 a garrafon. The cane, of which there is a large plantation, is luxuriant, but it is said to be too watery for the manufacture of sugar. Sarsaparilla and payshi (salt fish) are also shipped from San Regis.



From this point to Borja, the head of navigation on the main Marañon, where the river dashes through a deep gorge in the limestone mountain, is about 400 miles. But trade seldom calls a steamer beyond the mouth of the Huallága. The "Moróna" turned up this tributary, and left me on the clay-bank of Yurimáguas, where I leave my reader while I make a foot-tramp through the forest and the ascent of the Andes. Yurimáguas is a collection of a hundred stockades of poles with thatched roofs, standing on a high bluff of pebbly brown clay. It is a busy spot—once a month, when the steamer calls for hats, salt, sarsaparilla, rum, cotton, and fish; then the total population assembles on the bank. But Yurimáguas is the emporium of a region richer, by far, in natural wealth than the Empire State—the entire eastern slope of Northern Peru.



## CHAPTER XXIX.

Routes over the Andes.—A Polar Expedition at the Equator.—A Tramp through the Forest.—Moyobamba and the Manufacture of Straw Hats.—Crossing the Cordillera.

THREE routes are open to the traveler from the Marañon to the Pacific: 1st. Up the Huallága to Tingo Maria, a canoe voyage of a month or more; thence to Lima by mule *viá* Huánaco and Cerro de Pasco. 2d. Up the Huallága from Yurimáguas to Chasuta by canoe, eight days; thence by mule to Moyobamba *viá* Tarapoto, one week. 3d. From Yurimáguas by canoe up the Parana-pura to Balsa Puerto, one week; thence on foot through the forest to Moyobamba, six days. From Moyobamba to Cajamárca *viá* Chachapoyas is a mule-ride of twelve days; and a railway comes up from the coast within one day of Cajamárca. The time here given is that of actual travel, but the delays in procuring canoes, peons, and mules more than double it.

We chose the Balsa Puerto route. Whichever route the traveler takes, he wishes he had taken another. We left Yurimáguas in a long canoe with five Indians, providing them with salt fish, plantains, and chicha, and ourselves with more civilized food, for a six days' journey. Descending the Huallága a short distance, we turned up the Parana-pura, one of its main affluents. The first day we had a comedy which might have been a tragedy. Our old *popero*, or steersman, fell overboard, dead drunk; another Indian tumbled out twice for the same reason, and a third dropped down into a heap in the canoe. A cold bath and a long sleep brought them to, and we had for the rest of the voyage an efficient crew.



Paddles were of no use on the rapid Parana-pura, our Indians—four in front, and the comical genius behind—poling the whole distance; and every night we camped on the sandy beaches, called *playas*, under palm booths. Nothing could surpass the astronomical splendor of the nights. The only improvement I can suggest is an omission of the mosquitoes. I expected to be treated, as on the Napo, to the horrible chorus of “the little men of the woods;” but not a howler howled. A few pueblos break the solitude of this river. At Lemón is the spacious residence of Mons. Jules Juan, built of chonta slats, and surrounded with a great variety of tropical fruit-trees. Here, too, on the edge of the forest, we found another recluse Frenchman, who amuses himself in tracing correspondences between the Quichua and Sanscrit languages. He is the author of *Amérique Équatoriale*, published in Paris, in which he styles himself\* Don Enrique Vte. Ouffroy de Thoron, *Ingénieur, Émir du Liban par acclamation générale en 1840, Ancien Commandant ou Chef des Maronites, et Chef d’État, Major Général de l’armée Turco-Maronite sous le Grand Vizier Izzet Mahomet-Pacha, Vice-roi de Syrie et d’Égypte.*”

Ascending the tributary Cachiyácu (“Salt River”), we passed two large distilleries, provided with the finest apparatus we have seen in the country. On the sugar-mills we saw the well-known names of “Mirelees, Tait, & Watson, New York.” We arrived at Balsa Puerto, six days from Yurimáguas, about one hundred miles. This little village of 400 Indians, dwelling in nailless bamboo huts, that went up without the sound of a hammer, is the chief port of Moyobamba.\* It manufactures nothing, and the state of

\* There are a good many empty houses; for Balsa Puerto was formerly a more important place. I found here among the natives a Peruvian, a Chilian, a Spaniard, a Frenchman, a representative from the Buckeye State, and another of unknown nationality, who forty years ago lived in Nantucket.



society is expressed in fandangos by night, and in street-fights by day. During our stay ten of the chief men sat down before forty-seven bottles of porter, and soon after we saw the drunken governor, Antonio Rios, knocked down twice before his own door. With such an official to aid us in obtaining peons to carry our baggage to Moyobamba, we were detained five days. The second day out, one of the Indians dropped his load and decamped, and two others afterward followed suit. Procuring others, we continued our toilsome journey on foot, picking our way through the thick forest, climbing over precipitous mountains, and wading across the furious Cachiyácu and its tributaries seventy-five times, generally with the prospect of being torn away by the current. If the traveler should strip in crossing each stream, he would <sup>not</sup> make a league a day, for the same river must be crossed often several times a day, the path up its banks changing frequently from one side to the other. The interminable Cachiyácu is crossed three times in going half a mile; and one of its feeders is so fastidious in its course that one must cross it nine times within a mile. The only way is to plunge in accoutred as you are, and change at night. The Indians have to carry the cargo on the head in fording the deeper streams. The character of these streams may be gathered from their names—as Pumayácu, or “Tiger River,” and Escaléra-yácu, or “Staircase River.” The great bowlders strewed along their beds likewise indicate their power at high water. The passage of the Pumayácu is the most perilous of all, and reminds me of the furious Hondaché in the Napo. The river has cut for itself a deep, narrow channel through highly inclined beds of slate and sandstone, dipping downstream. The ford is the slippery edge or crest of a sandstone ledge, a yard wide, with a gulf on one side and a whirlpool on the other. After a heavy rain (and when



does it not rain here?) the Indians tarry on the bank till the waters subside.

Then, for a change, the path, leaving the rivers for a while, runs up the vertical side of the lofty Cerro de Icóto, where it is necessary to go monkey-fashion, holding on with hands as well as feet. Now there are slippery, jutting edges of the rock, supposed to be steps; then a ladder of sticks tied with vines leaning against the precipice. It is painful to see the poor Indian, with a heavy load on his back, going up this crazy thing: the breaking of one step might cost him his life. Finally, the bad, the worse, and the worst follow one another so rapidly that one gets a little accustomed to it; at any rate, he looks for nothing better, and resigns himself to the situation. After seeing so many freaks in this anomalous road, the wayfarer rather expects it to end by running up a tree. It is difficult to conceive how such a path, daily used for the traffic of the great city of Moyobamba, can be tolerated. On the greater part, man has done nothing but select a route that has the fewest obstacles. I could not see that a single stone had been removed; the Indians travel around or over every thing in their way.

Yet this road is the paradise of the botanist and entomologist. I never saw such a variety of ferns and grasshoppers. In a small collection of orthopters, hastily gathered, Mr. Scudder found eight new genera and thirty-four new species.\* The geologist also finds employment, for he passes by the salt-quarries of Cachi-puerto, in the red-sandstone flank of Icóto, while the streams bring down from a higher source fragments of cretaceous limestone, containing ammonites and brachiopods.

After passing the summit of the Punta de Schalca, the grand troubles are at an end. This ridge divides the Ca-

\* Described in *Proc. Boston Soc. Nat. Hist.*, vol. xvii., p. 257.



chiyácu and Mayo. It belongs to the range which comes up from Cerro de Pasco, crosses the Huallága, forming the Pongo de Aguirre, then the Marañon, creating the well-known Pongo de Manseriche, and joins the eastern Cordillera of Ecuador, near Macás. The road now enters an extensive *pajonal*, where herds of cattle are grazing; and the traveler sleeps in a shed at the hacienda of "Jesus del Monte." Thence over an excellent road, which at one point gives a splendid view of Moyobamba, crossing the Yanayácu by a bridge, and the Mayo by canoe, and winding through a fertile valley, which appeared like a large sugar-cane grove, nineteen days from Yurimáguas, we entered the largest city on the Oriental side of the Andes.

The situation of Moyobamba is surpassingly fine, built on an isolated plateau that stands in the midst of a luxuriant plain, through which winds the turbid Mayo, and around which rise picturesque mountains—the worthy beginnings of the Andes. It reminds one of old Toledo, seated on its seven hills, girdled by the lordly Tagus, and encircled by sierras. But the architecture is any thing but the massive style of the Moor. The adobe bears no resemblance to granite. With an altitude above the sea of 2700 feet, and a mean annual temperature of 77°, the climate is delightful. Nature is so prodigal that any body can get a living—except physicians. The oranges of Moyobamba are equal to the best Guayaquilian; while the coffee and cacao are praised in Lima. The ordinary ills, all due to imprudence, are intermittent fever, erysipelas, and worms. The only case of drunkenness I witnessed was that of a priest. The citizens are treated to slight earthquakes, about six in a year, and to a shower nearly every day. The rains have worn deep ravines, *zanjas* or *barrancas*, with perpendicular sides, that radiate from the brow of the hill in all directions. Houses, only a few rods



apart, may be separated by an impassable gulf. I visited two mineral springs in the vicinity. One is a hot spring, slightly ferruginous, the temperature of which I found to be  $106^{\circ}$ , that of the air being  $75^{\circ}$ . On the slope of the Cerro, about three miles from the city, is a copious sulphur spring, forming a little lake thirty feet in diameter, with a temperature of  $84^{\circ}$ . Were this brought down to the city, and respectable roads made to Huallága and to the coast, Moyobamba would become the Saratoga of the South. At present, the city is poorly supplied with water, all coming from a few feeble springs at the foot of the plateau. It is a novel sight to see the long procession of women, who are the water-carriers of the city, descending and ascending the deep *barrancas* at even-tide, with pitchers on their heads, while the young Lotharios lie in wait to make love to their Rebeccas.

Transportation to and from the city is difficult beyond description. Nearly all exports and imports come from or go to the east; and every thing must be carried on the backs of Indians over the horrible Balsa Puerto road, and in canoes on the Parana-pura. The Indians do not care for money; so that when a traveler or merchant wishes peons, he notifies the governor, through the sub-prefect, who orders the police to seize such as they can find, and compel them to bear the burdens. The route to the coast *viâ* Chachapoyas and Cajamárca is traveled by mules, but these are difficult to hire. There are no duties on foreign goods entering Peru by the Amazons; but the freight is enormous, the loss on liquors being 200 per cent., and on other goods 25. A box of flour from the United States weighing 80 pounds sells for 22 soles, or 30 cents a pound; while a roll of bread weighing 3 ounces costs 10 cents. English butter is worth \$1 a pound; Colgate's soap, of which 6000 pounds are used annually, brings 50



cents a pound; and iron, of which 500 pounds are sold yearly, sells from 20 to 40 cents a pound. Yet many foreign articles are sold cheaper at Moyobamba than on the Pacific coast. Beef (jerked and dried) comes from Chachapóyas, and is sold for 10 cents; cattle are kept in the surrounding *chácaras*, but neither for beef nor milk, but for the pleasure of owning them. A few sheep are raised, but solely for meat, not for wool. Cattle, pigs, and dogs are never fed, but are left to help themselves. Of home productions, pork is worth 20 cents; lard, 30 cents; coffee, \$2 an arroba; tiles, \$50 a thousand; brown sugar (*chancaca*), 5 cents, refined, 25 cents. There is not a plow in the whole province; but almost every thing that is planted yields bountifully in from three to six months. August is the usual time for planting. Coffee, cacao, rice, maize, mani (pea-nuts), oranges, pine-apples, bananas, sugar-cane, and two kinds of cotton are grown with little or no culture, but only for home consumption. Grapes (a small black kind), sarsaparilla, vanilla, rubber, and copal grow spontaneously, but are not gathered. Abundance of fine timber (especially cedar and "moyna") covers the slopes of the cerros, with plenty of water-power at hand; but there is neither a saw-mill nor a chimney west of Iquitos. The Moyobambinos, 9000 in number, white, red, and mixed, are content to dwell in mud hovels, tiled or thatched. Poor and proud, they certainly do not believe that money makes the man. "It is only in Spanish America," says Morelet, "that men are to be found so rich in their poverty as to be above the knowledge of want." Boards are cut out with Collins's axes, 10,000 of which are sold annually; the only fault found with them (by the merchants) is that they are too good, and last too long. The value of a day's work, from six to six, is 20 cents and food, or \$5 a month. There are seven foreign merchants in Moyobamba, of



whom Mr. Sisly, the chief, has sold as much as \$40,000 worth of goods in eight months. Trade at present is very dull, as the hat business has declined.

The Department of Loreto, of which Moyobamba is the capital, stretches from the eastern cordillera to Tabatinga, and has a population of at least 60,000, wild tribes included. The main villages west of the Huallága are Tarapóto (8000), Lamas (6000), Chasúta (1500), and Jevéros (1000). The main exports are straw hats, tucuyo (coarse cotton cloth), salt, aguardente, tobacco, beans, coffee, and limestone. The tucuyo is made in Tarapoto for the Indians solely; and an imitation is now manufactured in England, which sells at the same price (20 cents), and is preferred by the natives. It takes six days to spin one pound of cotton thread, and eight days to weave one yard of tucuyo. The principal salt-mines are at Callána-yácu, near Chasúta, Pilluána, and Cachi-yácu, near Balsa Puerto. They are situated in red sandstone, along with gypsum, and supply the whole Marañon region. Aguardente is made wherever the sugar-cane grows. Tarapóto exports 300 garrafones annually. The best tobacco comes from Jevéros; and limestone boulders from up the Huallága are shipped from Yurimáguas at \$40 a ton.

But the great business of Moyobamba and the surrounding villages is the manufacture of "straw" hats. These are made of the same material as the so-called Panama hats of Ecuador and New Granada. It is the undeveloped leaf of the bombonáje (*Carludovica palmata* of science), which is a screw-pine rather than a palm. The trunk of this plant is apparently a yard high, but is really wanting; and the leaf-stalks, six feet long, spring from the ground. The bark of these leaf-stalks is woven into baskets, and the expanded leaves are used for thatching. It is the leaf before it has opened that is prepared for the



manufacture of hats. It then consists of a bundle of plaits about two feet long and one inch in diameter. The green outside of this *cogollo*, or bunch, is stripped off; and then, by an instrument called a *picadera*, resembling a pair of compasses, with legs set half an inch or less apart, according to the fineness of the straw required, the leaflets are made into strips of uniform size, with parallel sides. The *cogollo* is then boiled to toughen the fibre, and hung up in the sun to dry and whiten, when the leaflets roll up (without twisting in the least) into cord-like strands, which are then ready for use. These strands are from one-fourth to one-fortieth of an inch in diameter. The longest straw which can be procured from the bombonáje is twenty-seven and a half inches. It takes sixteen *cogollos* for an ordinary hat, and twenty-four for the finest; and a single hat is plaited in from four days to as many months, according to texture. We saw a fragment of one begun which, if finished, would bring \$500 in Lima. Fortunes have been made in the hat trade; but a change of fashion in Brazil, Europe, and the United States has reduced the number exported from 100,000 to 50,000, and the price from \$40 a dozen to \$15. Hats were first exported down the Amazons in 1853.\*

But Moyobamba is as famous for its execrable roads as for its hats. The traveler who survives the journey from Moyobamba to the Amazons or the Pacific will remember the road longer than the city. Three regions intervene between the Great River and the Great Ocean: the Montaña, extending from the Huallága to Chachapoyas; the

\* This work is not written to encourage emigration to Brazil. I advise those who can get an honest living in the United States to stay there. But in leaving the valley, I may say that if I were to mention any spots most desirable for residence, I would name Manáos and Santarem, on the Lower Amazons; and for settlement, Barranca, on the Upper Marañon; the mouth of the Pichis, on the Ucayali; and, above all, the region of Moyobamba.



agricultural valley of the Upper Marañon; and the mining district between the western cordillera and the coast. The lower part of the Montaña is covered with a rich forest; but from Moyobamba westward the road, or rather mule-path, for the most part winds over boggy valleys, bleak *paramos*, and barren mountains. At some points it is horrible, but the beasts understand their business, and perform impossible feats. The route, in many cases, is most absurdly chosen. Now it is serpentine for no apparent reason; then it makes straight for the top of the highest, steepest hill. The distance from Moyobamba to Chachapoyas is forty leagues; for one hundred miles of which on a stretch there is not an inhabitant, so that the traveler must carry bedding and provisions, and sleep in cheerless tambos. The reader must understand that these tambos are not hotels. In the cold regions they are of stone, plastered with mud and thatched; the others are simply four posts supporting a straw roof, which here and there sheds rain. They are but rude shelters at the best, and not very inviting under other circumstances; but many a weary traveler has blessed the poor people who raised them. In the open tambo of Almirante, ten by eighteen feet, myself and two companions slept with seventeen Indians, who happened to arrive the same evening; and in the stone tambo of Bagazán with nineteen. A spot for a fire is also included. One cold night we camped under a huge rock in the bleak valley of Ventilla. But the roar of unknown rivers, and the splendor of the stars seen from the top of the Andes, atone for all discomforts. The only villages on the route are Ríoja and Taulía.

The highest point on the road is the Puna Piscaguañúni (meaning "the place where the birds die"), rising 11,000 feet above the sea. It is not covered with snow, but the air is generally full of sleet. Geologically, it consists main-



ly of dark-brown slate, in which I found hosts of lias ammonites. It is this range which divides the waters of the Upper Marañon from the affluents of the Huallága, and which, meeting the more westerly sierra, forms the terrible cataracts above the Pongo de Manseriche.

Ascending and descending many a rocky staircase, and winding through a deep and picturesque ravine beside the rushing Ventilla, and between towering, treeless mountains of red sandstone, the weary traveler suddenly and as gratefully finds himself in the city of Chachapoyas.



## CHAPTER XXX

Over the Andes.—Chachapoyas.—The Heart of the Andes.—Cajamárca and its Relics of Atahualpa.—Arrival at the Pacific.—The City of Lima.

WHILE most other towns in Northern Peru are but vast pig-sties containing human habitations, Chachapoyas is the best-built and cleanest city west of Manáos: its grand plaza and paved streets grant no indulgences to the lower animals. The city is regularly laid out, and contains a *cuartel* for soldiers, a university, a rather imposing cathedral, and the residence of the bishop, whose see extends from Moyobamba to Cajamárca. Perched 7600 feet above the sea, Chachapoyas possesses a delightful and equable climate, ranging from 40° to 79°, with the mean temperature of 62° Fahr. Here, for the first time since leaving New York, we saw bread made from native flour. Yet there is very little of that agriculture which requires a preparation of the soil: the people (to the number of 5000) depend mainly on the voluntary gifts of nature, scratching the ground with wooden plows to raise a little wheat, corn, potatoes, and rice. Six crops of rice can be raised without resowing. Flour sells for \$10 a quintal; potatoes, 15 cents a pound; cleaned wool, 18 pounds for \$2; cacao from the warmer regions at \$30 a quintal; and cochineal at 25 cents an ounce. Nothing is exported but a little cascarilla bark. The best Indian tobacco grows at Báguá, in the valley of the Utcubamba, and is sold at four reals for three pounds. The main woods for construction—cedar, walnut, ishpingu, and capuri—being brought a considerable distance, are very high. All boards, from Iquitos to the



Pacific, are cut by hand. There are signs of valuable mines of gold, cinnabar, lead, limonite, and a gray copper ore containing silver, in the vicinity; while mountains of salt occur at San Carlos, twenty-five miles northwest. Apple-trees grow, but do not thrive, at Chachapoyas; the one I saw was covered with moss, yet it presented the singular spectacle of bearing blossoms and ripe fruit at the same time. Unfortunately, this city is the head centre of the *garapata*, a grub-like insect whose bite not unfrequently leads to ulcers. If the road from Chachapoyas to the Marañon by the way of Olleros and the Aichiyácu, recently surveyed by Mr. Wetterman, is ever opened, it will bring the city into easy communication with the outside world. A Chinaman keeps a little fonda here; but I was quartered in the Council Chamber, and dined at the university with his holiness, good Bishop Solano.

From Chachapoyas to the next great city, Cajamárca, is about seventy miles. On the maps, this intervening country between the coast-range and the central cordillera is represented as a broad valley; in reality, it is a jumble of precipitous mountains. The road, for the first two days, is excellent, following the deep, romantic ravine of the Utcubamba. No trees are in sight; but the road is bordered with aloe, whose tall stem resembles a gigantic asparagus. This tributary to the Upper Marañon washes the feet of a few sleepy villages; as Tingo, Magdaléna, San Tomás, Chilingóte, and Leimebámbo. Near Tingo is the lofty Cuelap mountain, which is crowned with ruins supposed to be pre-incarial. These are the remains of a fortress, containing chambers and tombs, and consist of a wall of cut stone 560 feet thick, 3600 long, and 150 high, above which rises another wall 500 feet thick, 600 long, and 150 high. It is estimated that it would take 20,000 men five years to build it. While the antiquarian is busy with this, the geologist



may revel among ammonites and brachiopods; and on the third day, as the road rises above the clouds to the tiptop of Calla-calla,\* every traveler must be entranced by the magnificent panorama at his feet—a sea of mountains with the still loftier coast-range in the background, hiding the Pacific. In presence of such a view from the Andes one is painfully sensible of the poverty of language. Words, however grandiose, are too clumsy for description. One can not help thinking, also, how “Nature, careless of mortal admiration, lavishes with proud indifference her fairest charms where most unseen, her grandest forms where most inaccessible.” Here, too, is the place (though not equal to the Quito valley) to test the statement of Charles Kingsley, that in the tropics distance is apparently shortened by the intense clearness of the atmosphere; the mountains look lower and their summits nearer than they really are.

Descending from this frigid zone by a fearfully inclined zigzag path along narrow ridges that looked like walls rather than mountains, and where the traveler must call home his wandering thoughts, and give his undivided attention to his mule, I soon reached the other extreme—a deep, narrow valley wedged in among the mountains, through which the Marañon struggles to reach its northern outlet. In making this descent, I passed over granite and mica schist, the first metamorphic rocks west of the Hualága, the other rocks both east and west being sedimentary. This point, therefore, is the geological “Heart of the Andes.”

The Marañon is crossed on a raft at the miserable mud village of Balsas, the temperature of which may be com-

\* Calla-calla is the highest point between Chachapoyas and Cajamárca, and separates the Utcubamba from the Rio Tenas, which enters the Marañon just below Bálsas.



pared to that of a furnace. Here the river is from 250 to 500 feet in width, according to season, with a six-mile current; and treeless, rocky mountains dip down on all sides at an angle of  $45^{\circ}$ . Again ascending, and crossing monotonous pajonals and the fertile pampas of Huanco and Pólloc, I caught sight of famous Cajamárca, seated on the eastern slope of the western cordillera, and fronting the most beautiful plain in all the Andes. I can liken it to nothing but to Granada and its lovely Vega — the last dwelling-place of the Moor.

This highland plain, or *campaña*, sixteen leagues in circumference, is almost as level as a billiard-table, rich as the Connecticut flats, and well watered by the mint-bordered Chonta and Masscón. The roads crossing it are hedged in with century-plants; and here and there rises the “sau-ci” (*Salix humboldtiana*), the most conspicuous tree in the region.\* The surrounding mountains are barren and brown, but nevertheless are exceedingly picturesque, and full of history.

Cajamárca, the Caxamalca of Pizarro's day, claims to have 14,000 citizens; certainly it is the largest and finest city on our route from Pará to the Pacific. Its altitude is about 9400 feet, and the temperature ranges from  $40^{\circ}$  to  $72^{\circ}$ . The houses are generally built of adobe, and tiled; but the churches are of the coarse conglomerate from the sierra, and have elaborately sculptured fronts. The grand plaza is adorned with a fine stone fountain, around which congregate a motley crowd of Indian women every morning to vend their little piles of vegetables, fruits, grains, meats, salt, pepper, etc.; for the plaza is the “market-place” in Spanish towns. The following are some of the prices current: Flour, \$16 for 320 pounds; corn, \$1 for 26

\* Called *uirána*, on the Amazons, where it occurs, as also in the Quito valley. It is the only true willow known in the equatorial plains.



pounds; rice, \$24 for 260 pounds; coffee, \$4 80 an arroba; cacao, \$24 a quintal; tobacco, 50 cents per mazo of three or four pounds; sugar, \$4 an arroba; cotton cloth, 10 to 20 cents per vara; wool, \$1 20 to \$2 an arroba; hides, \$2 to \$3 each; horses, \$70 to \$100 each; cows, \$25 each; oxen, \$40 each; sheep, \$2 each; tiles, \$16 a thousand; a cedar board,  $2\frac{1}{2}$  varas long by  $\frac{3}{4}$  vara wide (say 7 by 2 feet), \$5; land on the plains, \$50 per "fanigada" of eight acres. Wheat, barley, corn, and potatoes are about the only vegetable productions within sight of the city.

At the time of my visit (November), the people were plowing with crooked sticks fastened to the horns of cattle. The province yields annually over 7,000,000 pounds of wheat, 160,000 head of sheep, 30,000 head of cattle, and 16,000 horses. The manufactures amount to nothing; and the imports greatly exceed the exports in value. A few textile fabrics of wool and cotton are made, and some straw hats, from the tamsi, instead of the bombonaje. The celebrated silver-mines of Gualgayoc, eighteen leagues northwest, are not yet exhausted, but are not so productive as formerly.

Cajamárca occupies an important place in the history of Peru. It was the favorite residence of the Inca when his empire stretched from the Rio Andasmayo, north of Quito, to the Rio Maule, in Chile. One can not catch a glimpse of this charming spot without a feeling of sympathy.

Yonder cloud of vapor rising along the eastern edge of the plain marks the "Hot Baths of the Inca," memorable as the scene of the first interview between the Spaniards and the ill-fated monarch. In the city, the stone walls of Atahualpa's palace still stand for about fifteen feet. There, too, are the subterranean galleries, tunneling the mountains to connect the distant fortresses with the royal quarters. And there are the remnants of the old barrack



where the Peruvians made their last but unavailing struggle to save their chief. And into that very plaza, the grand square of the city, rushed the cavaliers of Spain, like so many hyenas, upon their unsuspecting victims, shouting the war-cry of "St. Jago and at them!" And there, with becoming treachery, did these Spanish knights strangle Atahualpa, and then follow him to his grave, weeping with one eye, and keeping watch with the other over the golden ransom that had come for his life. The blackest page in the gloomy annals of Spanish conquest was written at Cajamárca.

The hot springs, even now used for baths, and for scalding pigs and poultry, are copious, but not medicinal. I found the temperature as they issue from the ground 162° Fahr., or six degrees higher than Humboldt's. The story goes that, when conquered by the Spaniards, the Peruvians threw the throne of gold of their Inca into a crater, from the sides of which came these thermal waters. The paved *via real*, or military road, designed to connect Quito and Cuzco, stopped unfinished a little beyond Cajamárca. Its construction was interrupted by the landing of Pizarro at Tumbez, who garroted Atahualpa after receiving the ransom of "\$16,000,000 gold and \$175,000 in silver"—one of the many fictions of history.

Again I mounted my mule to scale the last cordillera which separated me from the Pacific.\* This is the true backbone of the continent, and the water-shed between the two oceans. The range, as I crossed it westward, presented three main aspects: the eastern half was of quartzite, and the mountains comparatively smooth and round-

\* It will be remembered that there are three cordilleras in Northern Peru: coast, middle, and oriental. There are no *nevados* in sight from the Cajamárca road, for none of the peaks reach the line of perpetual snow, which, in this part of the Andes, is 15,700 feet. As a rule, it is lower on the eastern cordillera than on the western.



ed; then succeeded rugged rocks of trachytic porphyry. Here the landscape was purgatorial, presenting the confusion of the "grab-box" of a geologist; volcanic piles, marine and river deposits, fiercely contorted granite dikes, etc., are huddled together as if Nature had been in a hurry. Finally, as I neared the ocean, there was a fine exhibition of the ceaseless conflict between sea and land; the barren, rocky mountains, upon which even the lichen refused to grow, stubbornly yielded to the supremacy of the older ocean; and as the great Andes died away along the shore, the southerly wind covered them with a winding-sheet of sand.

Two days from Cajamárca, my party shouted for joy at the sight and sound of a locomotive. It was the sign of civilization: the signal that our hardships were at an end. The Pacasmayo Railway, now completed from the coast, is a model of American enterprise and American skill. It is the creation of Mr. Meiggs, the Vanderbilt of Peru, and will cost \$7,000,000. The money comes from the sale of guano; the laborers from China; the ties from Oregon and Chile; the rails from England; and the rolling stock from the United States. The buildings are of corrugated galvanized iron. The track has a total length of seventy-eight miles. Starting from an iron pier, which is to reach half a mile into the sea, the road winds over the arid pampa, and among the sand-dunes, and beside the Rio Jequetique, and through a region of intensest interest to the archæologist—crowded with the relics of Incarial cities and cemeteries—and ends near the silver-mines of Chiléte, at an altitude of 4000 feet. Pacasmayo appears to stand on the edge of a useless desert; but it really commands one of the most fertile tracts in the republic. It is the port of numerous busy villages, of which San Pedro and Guadalupe (numbering 5000 souls each) are the chief, the cen-



tres of vast plantations of sugar, rice, and coffee. Mr. Meiggs formerly owned a sugar estate here of 15,000 acres. The price of land all depends upon whether it is under irrigation. As along the whole of this coast, the prevailing wind is from the southwest, attaining its maximum at 3 P.M.; and as it follows the cold "Humboldt-current," the temperature seldom exceeds 85°, descending to 60°. The tide rises four feet. The only thorns in the flesh are jiggers and fleas.

Upon arriving at Pacasmayo, weary and worn by our long tramp over the mountains, we were received by the managers of the road, Messrs. Faulkner and Maynadier, and by Dr. Heath of the hospital, with such unbounded hospitality that we are totally unable to "meet our obligations," and accordingly "suspend payment." Thrice happy the American traveler who can fall into such a fraternity at the close of his voyage!

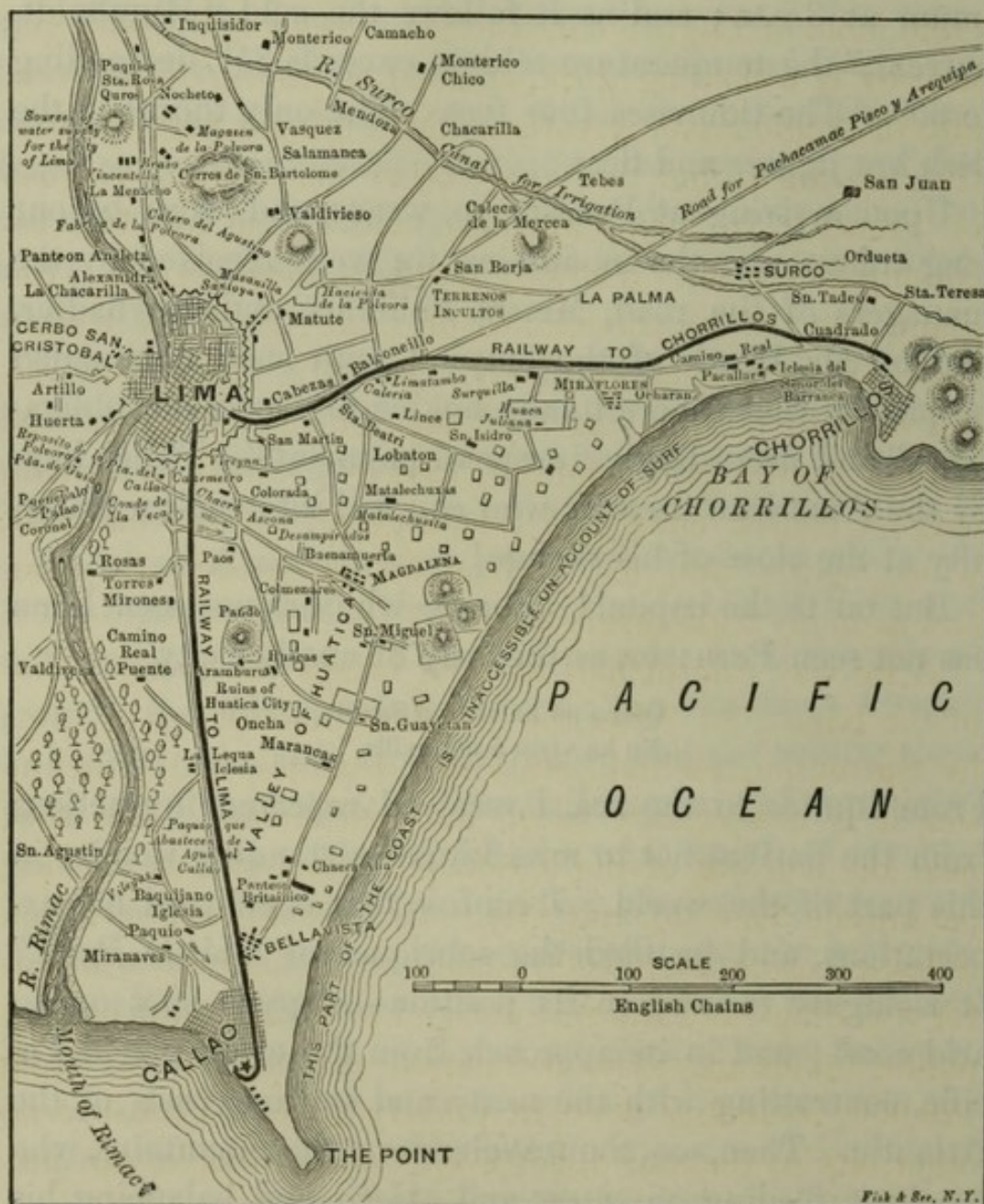
But on to the capital! For he who has not seen Lima has not seen Peru; or, as they say of another city,

"Quien no ha visto á Sevilla,  
No ha visto á maravilla."

From Iquitos to the sea, I received repeated injunctions from the natives not to miss Lima—a standing wonder in this part of the world. I confess that it eclipsed my expectations, and justified the sobriquet of "Little Paris." It is highly favored in its position—a green spot on an arid coast; and in its approach from the clear, placid Pacific, contrasting with the misty and stormy coasts of the Atlantic. Then, too, the traveler from the mountains, who has been feeding on *chupe* and *chicha*, and balancing his worn body on a reckless mule, or a horse that has nearly reverted to the wild state, transferred to a sumptuous English steamer, is put into the best of humor, and is ready to bow down to almost any sign of civilization.



Lima is beautiful from the sea: its stately domes and spires rise out of the plain only seven miles from the ocean, and just behind the city the glorious Andes ascend abruptly to the sky, while in the foreground are busy Callao and gay Chorillos. Callao is the great port of Peru.



Plan of Callao and Lima.

Five miles in front of it, breaking the swell of the Pacific, stands the little rocky island of San Lorenzo, a thousand feet high. The steamer anchors amid a forest of ship-



ping; and forthwith a multitude of black specks fly over the surface of the harbor. These are the boats, *all* of which have come to take *you* in particular. In lungs and pertinacity, the Callao boatmen are a match for the Maltese. You land, to your astonishment, on a splendid concrete mole of English construction (984 by 820 feet); and near-by is a floating dock, as good as any in New York, also of Anglo-Saxon creation. You mingle with the bustling crowd to find that every other man speaks English or French. In fact, Valparaiso and Callao are fast becoming European. The city numbers about 18,000. England has the preponderance of trade; then the United States, Peru, France, and Italy. In 1872, 149 British vessels entered port, having a tonnage of 128,000; from the United States, 119; tonnage, 124,000. North American cargoes consist chiefly of lumber, coal, railway material, wheat, cattle, and ice. About 50,000 passengers enter, and as many leave, every year.

A railway ride of half an hour brings you to the "City of the Kings."\* After the excellent descriptions of Lima by Stevenson, Tschudi, Markham, Fuentes, and Hutchinson, it is unnecessary to go into particulars. The rock near the convent of the barefooted friars affords the best panoramic view of the city. Its circumference is ten miles, covering 14,000,000 square yards, half of which is for dwellings, and the rest devoted to plazas, gardens, and public buildings. The population can not be far from 120,000, including 6000 in priestly garb. Probably no other city in the world, not even Constantinople, can present such a variety of physiognomy and complexion. It is a variegated mass of humanity, like the colored sands on the Isle of Wight. Over twenty-five varieties of people

\* *La Ciudad de los Reyes*, so named by Pizarro because he founded it on Epiphany Sunday, 1535.



have been named in Lima. Of these, the Zambos, half negro, half Indian, are the lowest, furnishing four fifths of the convicts. The Chinos, half Indian, half negro, are a trifle better, bearing the same relation to the Zambos that the mule holds to the hinny. The Coolies are still further complicating the matter, giving a resultant not very flattering to either hemisphere. A few of the Celestials are amassing considerable wealth, chiefly as tea-traders and



A Lima Lady. (From a Photograph.)

medicine-men. Limenians of the upper class are educated, refined, courteous, with but little trace of Castilian hauteur. The ladies, no longer shrouded, now promenade with open faces; the *manto*, or veil, is worn simply as a head-dress.

The Grand Plaza, the heart of every Spanish town, and in Lima the place for gossip, mutual admiration, and revolutions, is truly beautiful. It is 500 feet square, and 490



feet above the sea. A bronze fountain within a pretty little floral garden marks the centre. The cathedral stands on the east side, the most imposing modern structure in Peru. The corner-stone was laid by Pizarro twelve days after he had founded the city. The bones of the savage conqueror, reported to be somewhere in the crypt, were more likely buried in the Sa. Maria de la Concepcion of his native Trujillo. The grand altar is adorned with seven silver columns twelve feet high, and surmounted by a silver crown. During my visit, the niches in the fine façade were receiving statuary for the first time. The two towers, apparently of stone, are of stuccoed wicker-work, and sway like a reed during an earthquake. Over the iron door are the words, *Panis angelorum mysterium fidei*, which must be a double mystery to the poor Indian, who never studied Latin, and never ate bread.

On the north side of the Plaza, surrounded by the wretched stalls of the haberdashers, is what Limenians call, with a blush, the Government Palace, once the residence of the hated viceroys. The other two sides are occupied by arcades lined with shops (of foreign goods), and affording a favorite promenade. At evening, the crowd of every rank and fashion loitering in the illuminated arcades, the band playing on the cathedral steps, and the fine turn-outs, equal to those of Central Park, dashing around the Plaza, make up a very attractive scene. On a dirty alley, leading from the south side of the Grand Plaza, stands the house in which Pizarro was assassinated. The Plaza de la Independencia contains an equestrian statue of Bolivar; fronting which is the Senate House of infamous memory—once the seat of the Inquisition. Near-by is the Chamber of Deputies, 300 years old, formerly the Royal University of San Marcos, whose walls and ceiling show the most elaborately carved wood-works.

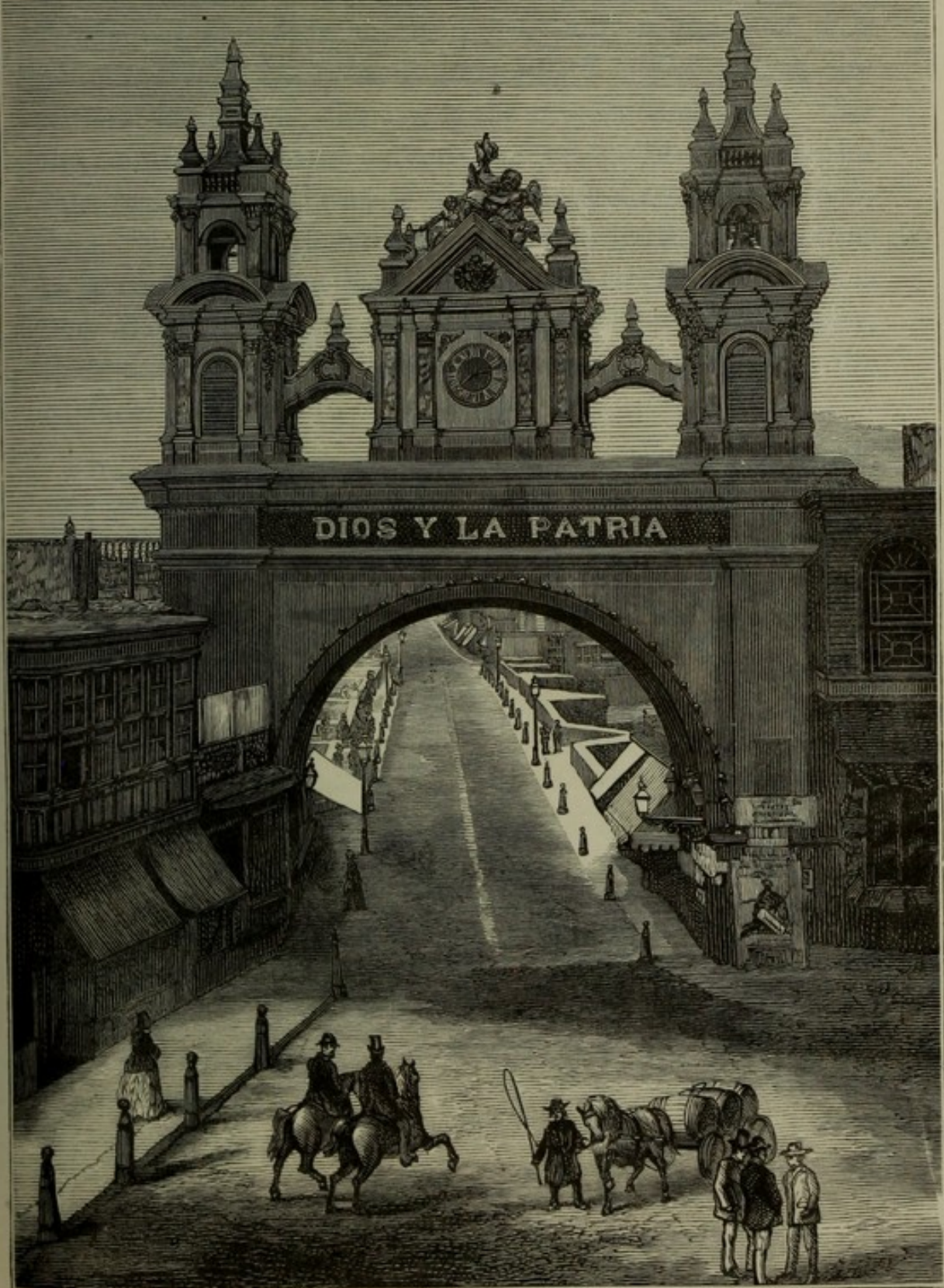


Other places of interest are the National Library, with its learned librarian, Dr. Vigil, its carved cedar ceiling, and its vellum-covered volumes on Spanish-American history; the Museum; the Exhibition Palace, which, with the Zoölogical Gardens, covers nearly fifty acres; the fine penitentiary; two or three of the seventy churches; the University (the oldest institution of learning in America), and eight colleges; the Bull-ring, which is capable of seating 10,000 spectators; and the Alamedas. The Alamedas and Zoölogical Gardens are very commendable, but they are quite deserted by Limenians, who prefer the Bull-ring and the corners of the streets.\* Worthy of a visit, also, is the old Spanish bridge, which spans the sacred Rimac 530 feet, and has survived all the earthquakes during 250 years; for Lima, in imitation of London, Paris, and Rome, is threaded by a little stream. Nine months in the year, however, the Rimac is not knee-deep. The entrance to the bridge is under an imposing arch, bearing the motto *Dios y la Patria*.

The majority of the dwelling-houses are of adobe, with flat roofs and partition walls of plastered cane; but stone and iron are superseding mud. One of the best examples is the residence of Henry Meiggs—a remodeled palace of the viceroys. All the public structures are relics of vice-regal times, save the Exhibition Palace, which, however, was the work of an Italian. In fact, take out what foreigners have done for Lima, and nothing would be left—not even the Bull-ring, for that was built by a viceroy; nor the railway-station, for that was a suppressed convent. The old mud wall, which till lately surrounded the city, has been leveled, and the ground purchased by Mr. Meiggs, who contemplates a circular boulevard.

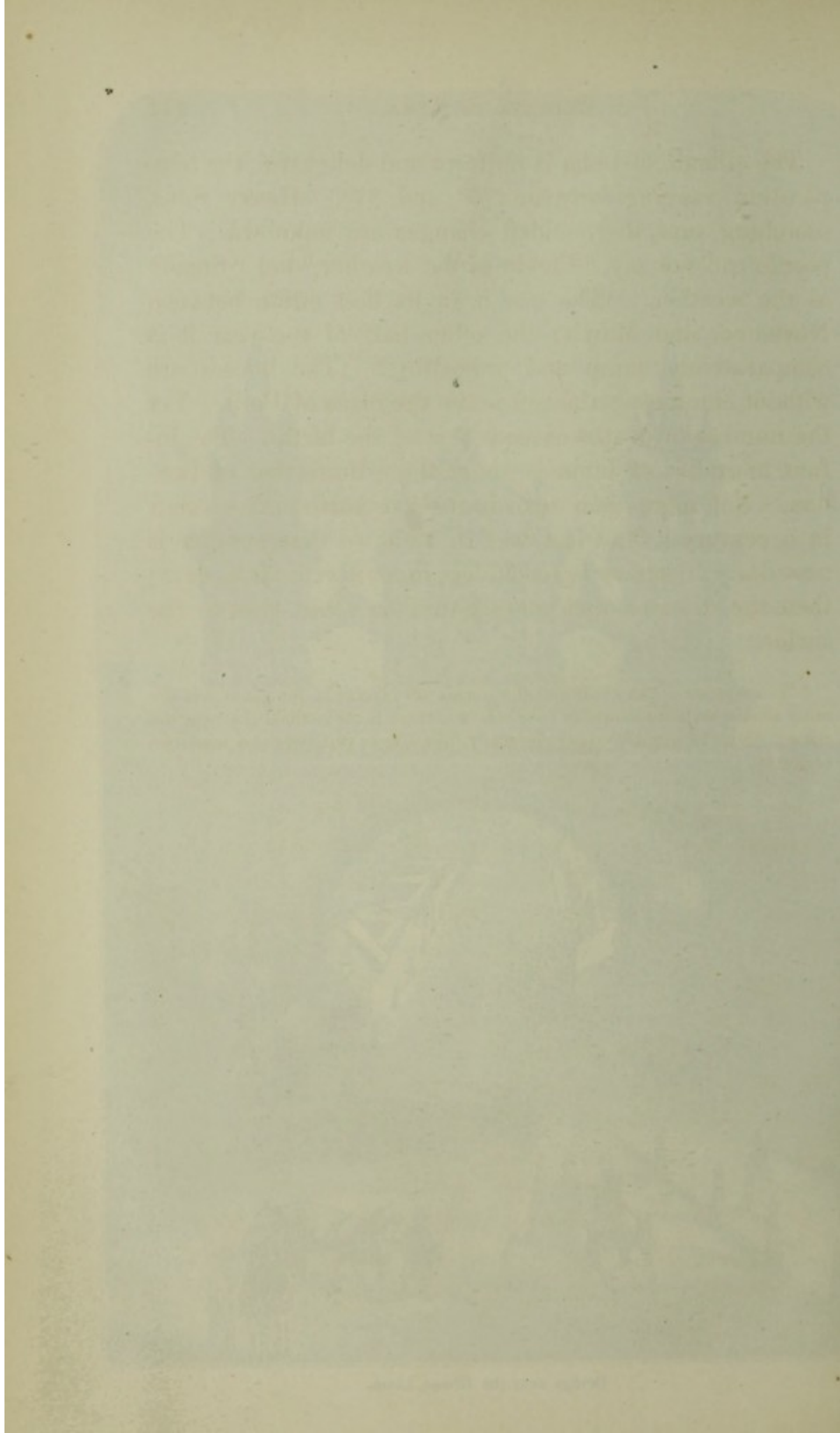
\* Outside of Lima the favorite places of resort are the baths of Chorillos and Ancón, on the coast. The Oroya Railroad has opened several attractions, as Chosica and Tarma.





Bridge over the Rimac, Lima.







The climate of Lima is uniform and delightful, the temperature ranging between  $70^{\circ}$  and  $87^{\circ}$ . Heavy rains, scorching suns, and sudden changes are unknown. The people can not say, "Fickle as the weather," but "Steady as the weather." The city is in its best estate between November and March; the other half of the year it is comparatively damp and unhealthy.\* The houses are without chimneys; the sun is the fire-place of Peru. Yet the number of deaths exceeds that of the births. The infant mortality of Lima is about three times that of London. Not more than two destructive earthquakes occur in a century. The last was in 1806, so that another is now due. Beggary is forbidden, except on certain days; then the diseased and poverty-stricken scum rises to the surface.

\* The seasons of the coast and the sierras are reversed; for while it is the rainy season on the mountains (our winter), there is a cloudless sky over the coast; while, in the dry season, a mist hangs, like a veil, over the maritime region.



## CHAPTER XXXI.

Over the Andes by Rail.—The Desert of Islay.—The City of Arequipa.—  
The Summit.—Puno and Lake Titicaca.

For the first time in history the locomotive has been sent over the Andes. "*Train leaves the Pacific for Lake Titicaca at half-past seven.*" What a strange announcement! An omnibus to Damascus, a railway to Jerusalem, and a steamer on the Nile, are startling innovations; but it seems harder to believe that a train of Troy cars, drawn by a New Jersey locomotive, runs regularly from the coast over the Cordilleras to the very shore of that lofty, mysterious lake, hitherto almost unapproachable.

In many respects it is a more wonderful achievement of engineering than the Pacific Railroad or the Mont Cenis Tunnel. It is the longest railway in the Southern Hemisphere, being 325 miles long, the distance from the sea to the lake in a straight line being 175. It is also the loftiest railway in operation (the Oroya will be a thousand feet higher), and no other road in the world can show so many cubic yards of excavation. It was built for the government by Henry Meiggs, at a total cost of \$44,000,000; and, as we might expect, almost every thing is American, from Ames's shovels to the superintendents.

It was my good fortune to be the first traveler to go by rail from the Pacific to Lake Titicaca, and I propose to give a sketch of this unique journey.

The western terminus is the village of Mollendo, just south of Islay, a sudden creation of the railway. Before it is the unbroken ocean; behind it is a perfect desert. There is no harbor. The rocky coast is simply notched



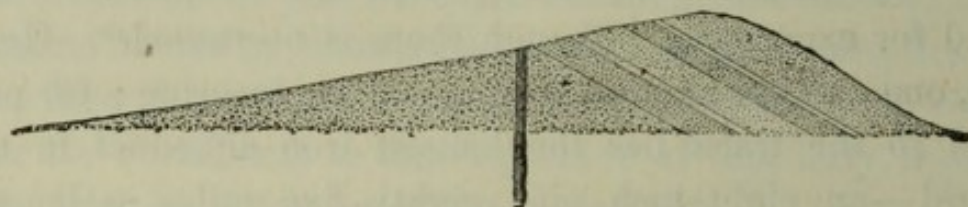
by the wear and tear of the surf; and it is something of a feat to get ashore without getting a ducking. Leaving the elegant station, which stands within sight and sound of the sea, the train, carrying about a hundred passengers, rolled down the coast, strewn with the ruins of extinct volcanoes and the relics of the great tidal wave of 1868, and then turned northeasterly to climb the barren hills in zigzag fashion. The heaviest grade is four per cent.; and the brakes are so essential in descending that they are shod with new shoes after every round trip between Mollendo and Arequipa. The hard work on this division is indicated by the fact that 3,000,000 pounds of powder were used for excavation, although there is no tunnel.\* Here, too, one can see another triumph of engineering; for parallel to the track lies the longest iron aqueduct in the world—an eight-inch pipe eighty-five miles in length, winding down the mountains, to supply Mollendo with fresh water from an altitude of 7000 feet.

Still ascending, clinging to the sides of the mountains, and tacking on almost parallel tracks, we caught occasional glimpses of the magnificent sea, but of only one green thing in all the landscape—the cultivated valley of Tambo. Signs of the old and eternal conflict between fire and water, and of the ultimate triumph of the former, are written on the whole slope of the cordillera, dipping sharply down to the Pacific. The train stopped for breakfast at Cachendo. This station consists of three houses and a water-tank, apparently the centre of a boundless sandy waste; but it is really on the western edge of the Great Desert of Islay. Across this hot and level pampa, the train took a straight line with great speed, raising a cloud of dust that followed like the tail of a comet. This lifeless and, before the railway, trackless desert is sprinkled with fine

\* Yet the first survey necessitated nineteen tunnels.



pumice and saline incrustations; and the dull and dusty, naked and calcined surface has a cold, forbidding look, in spite of the flood of light from a meridian sun. "The purity of the air" (in the words of a French traveler), "the intensity of the light, the unalterable blue of the sky, bring out in sharp relief all the details of the weird scenery, and, leaving none of its features in shadow, impress the beholder with a sense of blinding immensity, of melancholy splendor, and implacable repose." Nothing breaks the monotony but now and then a mirage, here and there a sand-dune, and the roughest kind of metamorphic hills



Sand-dune.

in the distance, covered with a sheet of white volcanic dust; for the surface of this sea of sand is really as restless as the ocean—always on the move. The dunes are from fifteen to thirty feet high, and lunar-shaped, with the convex side always toward the sea, and slowly travel, drifting before the wind. They can be originated artificially by planting a stake, or any fixed object, for a nucleus.

There is scarcely a trace of vegetation, save here and there an ashy, gaunt-looking cactus; yet around the leaky railway water-tanks the grass grows luxuriantly. Such is the excessive dryness of the pampa, there is a loss of one hundred pounds weight in taking a train of lumber from the sea to Arequipa. On the other hand, wool must increase in weight before it reaches Liverpool. Before the railway, trade and travel were accomplished by beasts, and the journey across the Desert (sixty miles) was usually made in the night, for as soon as the sun is up every facet on



the quartz grains sends a burning ray. A recent traveler on horseback, who unluckily failed to reach Arequipa before morning, gives the following picture: "About five o'clock a clear whiteness appeared in the sky, the stars paled their lustre, the day began to break. Soon a ruddy orange tint spread over the soil of the pampa, now become firm and compact. In a few minutes the disk of the sun appeared above the horizon; and as we marched full in the front of the god of day, we found ourselves in the midst of a luminous torrent, which so dazzled and incommoded us that to escape from this new torture we doubled ourselves up like hedgehogs. This anomalous and inconvenient posture rendered us unjust to the claims of the rising sun. Instead of welcoming his appearance with transport, we were inclined to curse him; but, notwithstanding my own feeling about the matter, I could not help laughing at my Peruvian attendants, who in so many words sent to the devil the god they worshiped. It was not till eight o'clock that the sun, now high above the horizon, permitted us to raise our heads."

The first relief was a procession of snow-clad mountains along the eastern horizon, whose summits stood from eighteen to twenty thousand feet above the Pacific. On the right was the serrated ridge of Pichu-pichu; next rose beautiful Misti, one of the finest volcanoes crowning the Andes; then followed precipitous Chichani and, farther north, the lofty Coropuno. Within sight of these towering peaks, which seemed to grow in altitude as we approached them, we flew along the edge of dizzy embankments, passed the iron baths of Tingo, and suddenly entered the city of Arequipa, 107 miles, or eight hours, from Mollendo.

Arequipa—"the place of rest," as the name signifies—is one of those bright spots so often seen in the Andes, all

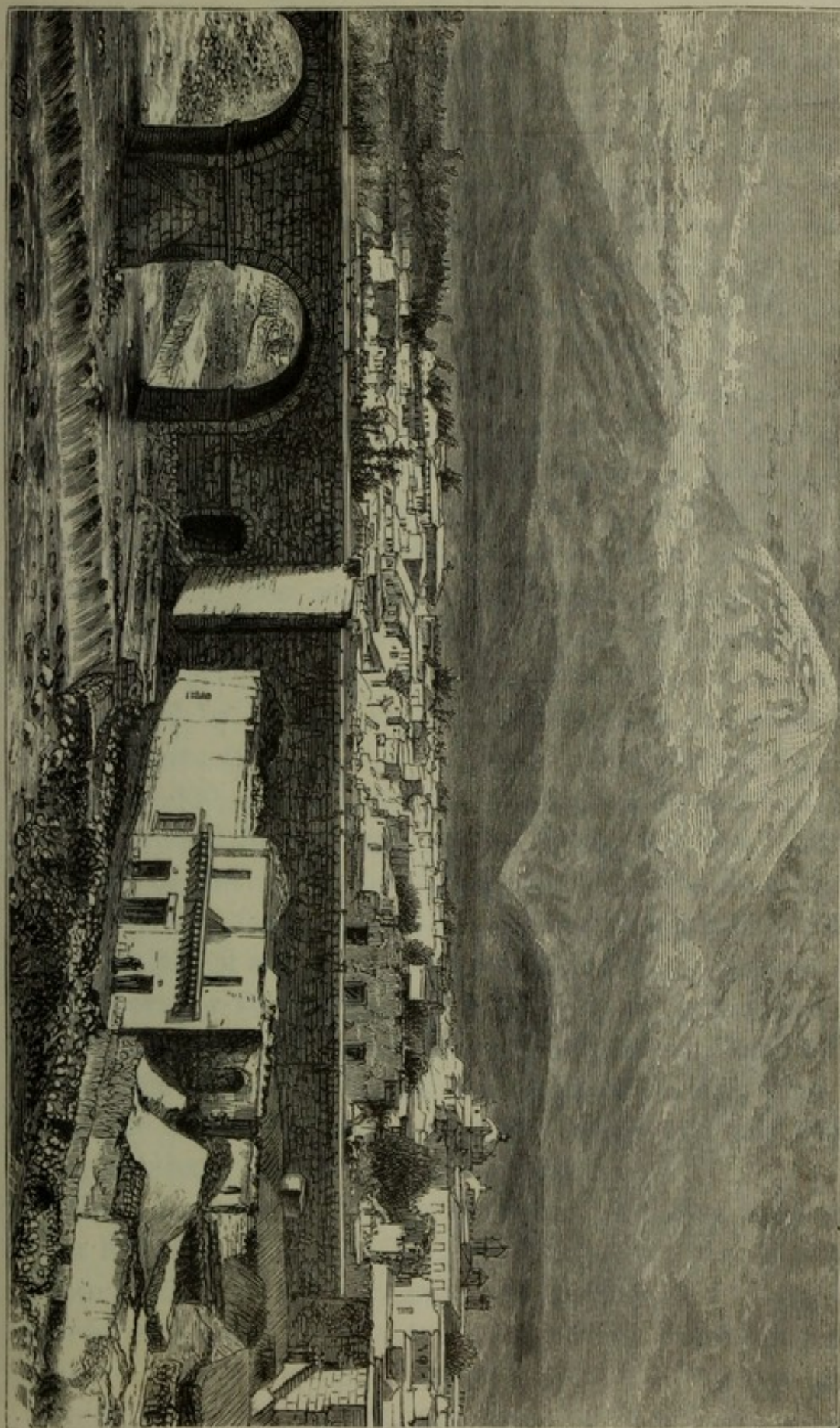


the more charming from contrast with the savage character of the scenery around it. Like Damascus, it is a small green patch redeemed from the sterility of nature by irrigation. The brilliant green is made intense by the dull-yellow hills around it. Arequipa appears, therefore, to great advantage, as it must be approached from any quarter over a desert; and to the dusty, panting traveler this strip of verdure is a land of promise. On the white hills around, powdered with volcanic dust, grow solitary tufts of gray cactus; but in the watered valley stands the smiling city, surrounded with numerous villages and farm-houses, and fields of grain, clover, and potato, bordered with tall willows. The valley is ten miles long by five wide. The little Chile River, born on the side of Misti, is a river of life: were it to dry up, Arequipa would die of thirst.

Just behind the city, and in threatening attitude, stands the beautiful and, fortunately, now silent volcano of Misti. Nothing can be more picturesque than the view of this symmetrical mountain from the Grand Plaza, as its snowy dome reflects the morning sun. It is a first-class mountain, rising 18,538 feet. The altitude of Arequipa is 7560 feet,\* and the climate is delightful; although in June, July, and August there is sometimes a frost, and water is slightly frozen over. But scarcely any spot in Peru is more famous for frequent earthquakes. The fearful shake in 1868 has left indelible marks, and to-day the city presents a Pompeian appearance, as if the event had happened yesterday—demolished churches, tottering arches, houses filled with rubbish, and merchants keeping shop under tents in front of their ruined dwellings. The ca-

\* As determined by Friesach, in 1858, by the Torricellian experiment, Arequipa is 8840 feet! Pentland made Misti 18,300 feet. Chichani is 19,535 feet. Misti was active in 1858, and again in 1868 during the great earthquake.





Arequipa, Peru, and the Volcano of Misti. (After Photograph.)



THE HISTORY OF THE  
CITY OF BOSTON  
FROM THE FIRST SETTLEMENT  
TO THE PRESENT TIME  
IN TWO VOLUMES  
BY NATHANIEL BENTLEY  
VOL. II  
PUBLISHED BY J. B. BENTLEY  
1822



thedral, which occupies one side of the Plaza, is quite imposing even without its towers, which were thrown down by the earthquake. The eight massive Ionic columns which decorate the façade stood the shock. The cathedral, the university (now a heap of ruins), and all the better class of public and private edifices, are of white trachyte; the rest are of whitewashed adobe. The roofs and ceilings are vaulted with stone, so that when the earthquake comes, down go the domes. Galvanized iron is now coming into use, and hereafter the earthquake will not have such a fair chance. The dwelling-houses are all of one stamp, single-storied and domed, with windows barred with iron. The wide, arched entrance leads to an open, quadrangular court, or *patio*. Two hotels have recently been opened. The streets are generally broad and paved, and provided with sidewalks and gutters.

Founded by Pizarro in 1540, Arequipa is the second city in Peru, and the rival of Lima. The citizens, numbering 40,000, are as noted for their revolutionary spirit as the ground for its earthquakes. They are dependent for most of their food upon more favored towns along the coast. Water for irrigation is so scarce that tillable land is worth \$1200 an acre. There is no industry; it is only a dry port for the interior. The chief trade is in alpaca, of which 25,000 quintals are annually exported. The head mercantile houses are a few English and German firms. The city has waked into new life since the railway and telegraph have brought it to the sea-shore.

From Arequipa to Puno is 218 miles. Leaving the city by a long iron bridge of Baltimore make, the train made a steep ascent, first over a gray, barren waste, and through fearful *quebradas*, then among trachytic rocks and colored cinders in endless confusion, evidently from the suspicious-looking peak of Chichani, and again around fortress-like



hills, where the rough, diorite rocks are piled on end as if the Druids had been there. Here begin the wonders of engineering. For ten consecutive miles there are the greatest cuts and fills in the world, each averaging 100,000 cubic yards. In less than half a mile, half a million have been excavated. The highest fill is 141 feet, and the deepest cut 127. The excavation on the whole of this division amounts to nearly ten millions of cubic yards. And much of this was done at an altitude 3000 feet higher than Mount Washington.

But up we went, or rather I, for I was the only passenger, threading the airy defiles of the Cordilleras; and, in the graceful language of Prescott, "the mountains rolled onward as by successive waves to join the colossal barrier of the Andes." "Bless me, this is pleasant," Saxe would say, riding on a level with the clouds and eternal snow. It is literally a highway. Crossing the dreary Pampa de Arrieros at the altitude of 13,000 feet, we reached Vincamayò (100 miles from Arequipa), the only village of importance on the whole line, and the highest in the world. It is a pure creation of the railway, consisting of an "American Hotel," engine-houses, machine-shops, coal-yards, etc. Every thing about this village was imported from beyond the sea. At this chilly altitude (14,443 feet), within sight of the white domes of Misti, Chichani, and the active volcano of Urvinas, which looked like huge snow-drifts on the horizon, I tried to sleep; but such was the rarefaction of the air, I spent the night in panting for breath.

Early next morning the train moved on to the summit of the road, Alto del Crucero, a bog with rounded hills sprinkled with snow, 14,660 feet above the Pacific. It is a drear and desolate, cold and silent region—so silent, the buzzing of an insect would have been painful. Nature seems asleep. The ground is thinly covered with short grass, with here and there clumps of needle-like *ichu*.



The nights are dewless. Many herds of alpacas and wild vicuñas were feeding on these boggy highlands—their natural home.\* The rearing of the “Peruvian sheep” is the chief business of the mountaineers. Shearing-time is the beginning of the wet season, December 15th. And now, descending and winding among the hills, no longer volcanic, but built of fiercely contorted conglomerate, sandstone, slate, and limestone strata of Jurassic age and easterly dip, the road passed between two brackish lakes,† along the banks of the Maravillas to Táya-táya (meaning the place twice cold, a match for Orúro, in Bolivia, which means the place twice wet), and then to Juliáca, where, for the first time since leaving Arequipa, I saw signs of cultivation. Terraced hill-sides and furrowed plains, the relics of an historic nation, told me that I was on classic soil. Ere long the clear waters of Titicaca flashed back the rays of the setting sun; and I gazed, rapt in thought, upon that lake brimful of history, and over it into Bolivia, where rose, in majestic splendor, the crown of America—the Nevado de Sorata. This was the historic centre of the continent. Here, said Humboldt, was the theatre of the ancient American civilization. Out of Titicaca was born, like a water-god, Manco Capac, the first of the Incas, who founded an empire greater than that of Charlemagne. All around this mysterious lake, whose surface lies level with the tops of lofty mountains, are monuments which none but a thrifty and civilized people would or could have left behind them.

\* Llamas and alpacas are domesticated; guanacos and vicuñas are wild. The finest wool in the market is, from a cross between the alpaca and vicuña, called paco-vicuña. Vicuñas are most abundant between Calca and Rumihua-si. They are fawn-colored, and graceful as gazelles. The hair, especially about the neck, is very soft and silky. They go in flocks of a dozen or more, led by a male, who keeps watch. At his signal of danger—stamping with his forefeet, and uttering a cry—off they go like the wind.

† The Lagunillas. Rivero made their altitude 15,255 feet! What a barometer!



It is quite a fall from one's meditations over his first glimpse of Titicaca to enter the Indian city of Puno. The inhabitants, about 5000, are mostly Aymarás, with a more interesting past than present. In sombre garb, silent and sullen as nature in this latitude and altitude, they move to and fro as if in mourning. They are poor and indolent; but why should they work in this sleety region, which yields nothing but small potatoes, ocas, poor barley, quinoa, or "Peruvian rice," and cañigua? \* Wheat, oats, and corn seldom come to seed at an altitude above 12,000 feet. The rich buy Chilean flour at \$13 a quintal. In fact, this upland country owes very little to botany or agriculture; and yet the ancestors of these people thought it worth while to cultivate the ground, and even terraced the mountains for hundreds of feet higher than Puno. There is not a tree within a hundred miles of the lake; boards from Bolivia cost 50 cents a foot, and tiles are worth \$20 a thousand. Timber, however, could be easily procured in the mountains of Carabaya, and floated down the Azangaro. The only fuel is llama dung, and *tola*, a small shrub. Petroleum has been found at Pusí; and, now that the railway will make coal possible, fire-places may hereafter exist. At present, during the evenings, which are bitterly cold, ladies and gentlemen take to their shawls and cloaks, or to bed. The temperature of the day ranges from 18° at sunrise to 55° at noon. The rainy season lasts from December to April. Earthquakes are rare and slight, compared with those of Arequipa; but the singular statement was made to me by a resident that, for six months after the great earthquake of 1868, a shock occurred regularly on the 13th of each month.

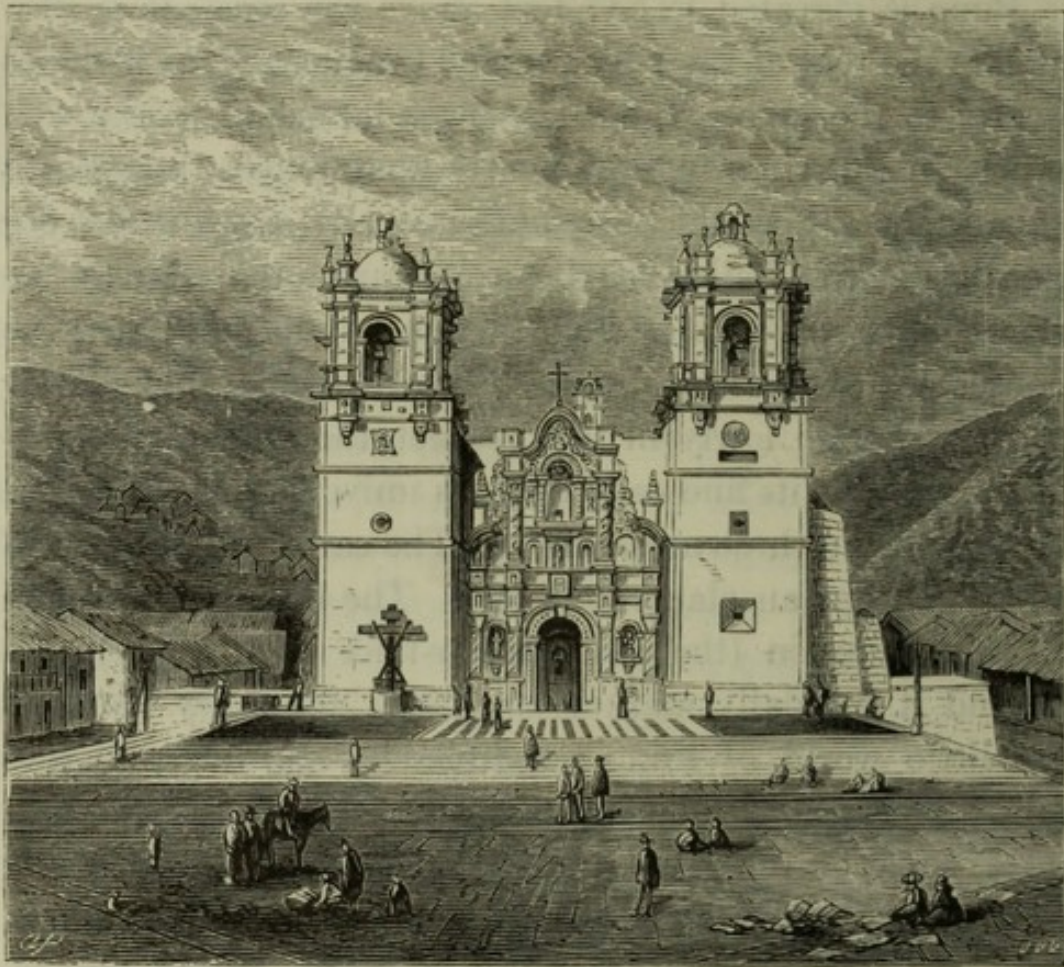
\* The last two are species of *Chenopodium*, and are staple articles of food, though not very nutritious. Ocas (*Oxalis tuberosa*) are small, slender potatoes.



Puno is elevated 12,547 feet above the sea. It is situated at the foot of the silver-veined Caucharáni, as it slopes gently to the lake. Indeed, it owes its origin to the rich mines in the vicinity, now nearly abandoned, though not exhausted. It would be a noiseless city, were it not for jingling church-bells; for the streets are unpaved, and carriages have yet to be. Save a few public buildings, the houses are of one story, and of brown adobe, thatched or tiled. Though lowly in this respect, the lofty city boasts of its altitude, its fine cathedral, its university, with several colleges,\* and three newspapers. The cathedral dates from 1757, and has an elaborate front. The Grand Plaza contains a fountain (the chief water-tank of the city), and around it the daily markets are held; for every morning the little world of Puno assembles here to buy, sell, and talk. Here the Aymará women (who do most of the business) squat on the ground in rows, each with the little pile of *charqui* (jerked beef), fish, dried potatoes (called *chuño*), ocas, *aji* (red peppers), beans, pease, maize, barley, quinoa, coca, and clay. The peppers, beans, and pease come from the coast, and the beans and pease have to be ground to powder before they can be cooked at this altitude. Potatoes are frozen, and then dried, before eaten. Coca, the main solace of the poor Indian, is one of the most valuable articles of internal Peruvian commerce. It is the leaf of a shrub six feet high, cultivated extensively in the warm valleys of Yungas. The clay is eaten; but, as analyzed by Forbes, it shows only a trace of organic

\* One of these is for señoritas. Female colleges in the United States and England may be interested to know the course of study in this rival institution below the equator, and two miles above the sea. The departments are: Ancient history of the East; astronomical geography; Spanish grammar; practical arithmetic; religion; hygiene; urbanity; writing; and embroidery. A similar establishment in Cuzco has three professorships: one of arithmetic, morals, religion, and embroidery; a second of urbanity and sewing; and a third of geography and grammar.





Cathedral of Puno. (From a Photograph.)

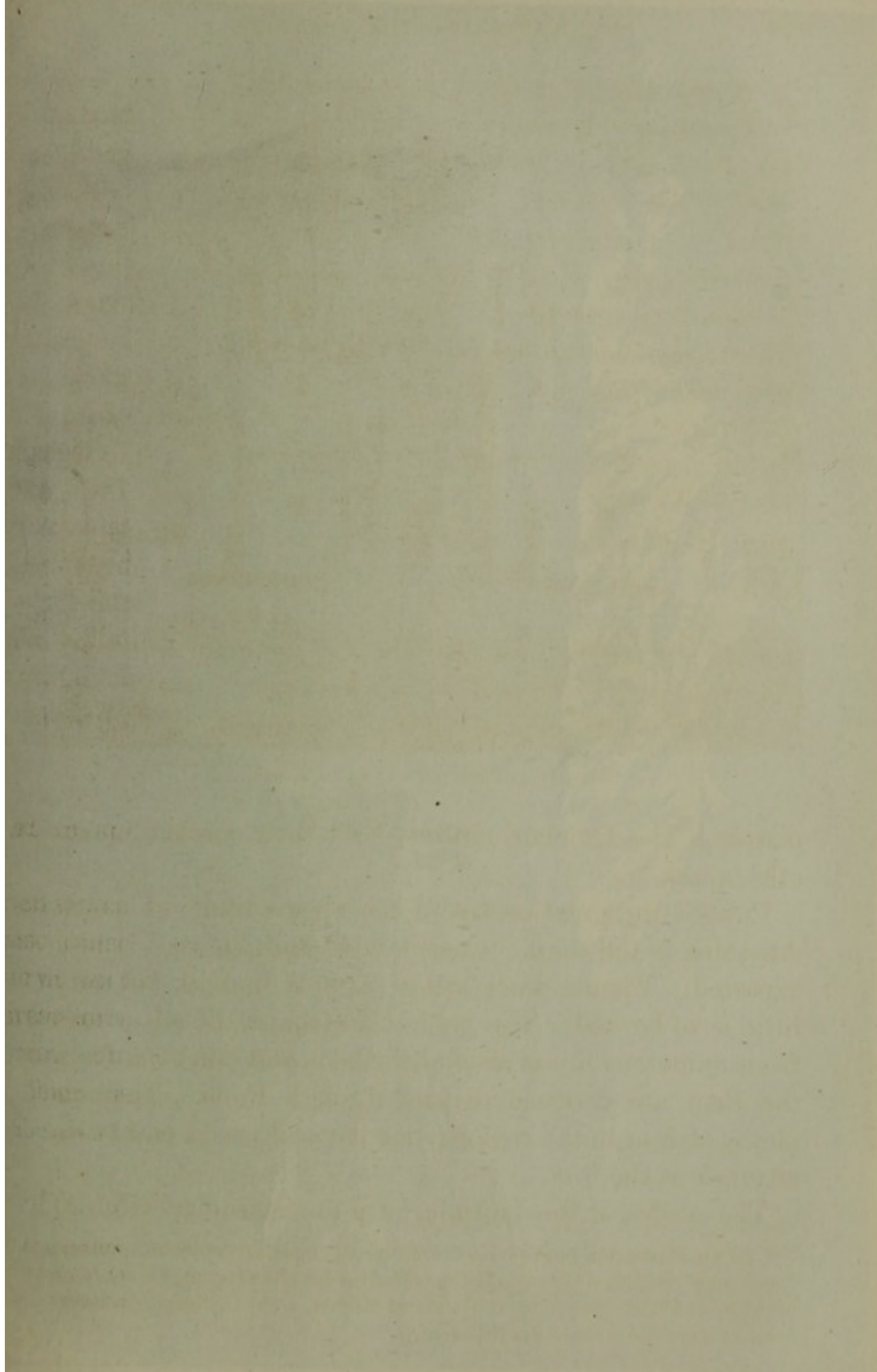
matter. The Quichua citizens hold their market in another plaza.\*

Puno is the great centre of the alpaca trade, of which Arequipa is the mart. Considerable sheep's wool is also exported. Vicuña wool brings \$100 a quintal, but very little is to be had. The gold of Carabaya, the silver ores from numerous mines around the lake, and cinchona from the Bení, are destined to pass through Puno. There is plenty of iron in the region; but the coal would cost twice as much as the iron.

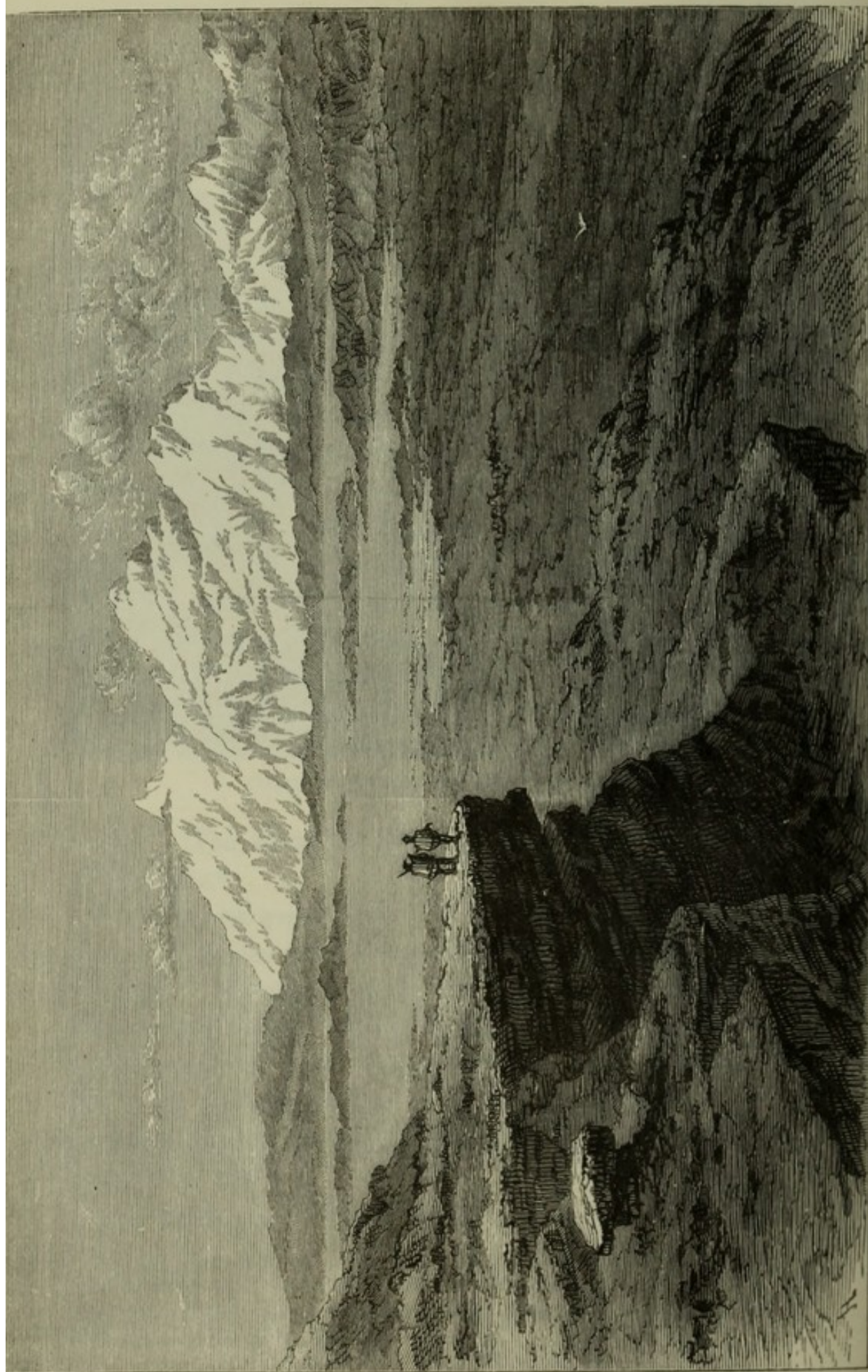
The Andes, at this latitude, have the enormous width of

\* As an illustration how commerce brings the ends of the earth together, I may mention that, while visiting the burial-towers of Sillustani, I lunched on bread from Chile, oysters from Maryland, salmon from California, sausages from France, and water from the Andes.









View of Sorata, across Lake Titicaca.



200 miles, and Puno, the middle point, lies in that great depression, or table-land, hung between the two cordilleras, and extending from the sources of the Ucayali to beyond Oruro. It is apparently a volcanic basin; fragments of lava, porphyry, and jasper are scattered around the lake; and towers of igneous rocks protrude through the sedimentary strata. It has an area of 16,000 square miles, and an oval shape with the small end near Oruro, an average width of one hundred miles, and a southerly slope.

Titicaca,\* the largest lake in South America, has about half the size of Ontario. It spreads over 2500 geographical square miles, being one hundred miles long, with an average breadth of twenty-five miles. The water is slightly brackish. It never freezes over, though ice forms in shallow places. The chief feeders of the lake are the Maravillas, Ramis, and Azangaro, the Ramis rising in a pond, or tarn (La Raya), which is also the source of a tributary to the Ucayali; so that a cork thrown into this pond might find its way to the Amazons or Titicaca, according to the direction of the wind. The water of the lake is drained off by the Desaguadero, and disappears in the swampy lagoon of Aullagas. The lake is gradually filling up, for there is no vegetation on the surrounding hills to prevent the rains from washing down the soil. The most sediment enters at the north end; at the south, the water is noticeably clearer. The surface of the lake is also sinking. Three hundred years ago, its waters washed the ancient monuments of Tiahuanaco, now twelve miles distant from its shores, and 130 feet above it. In 1827, Pentland made its altitude 12,795 feet, and its area nearly 4000 square miles. Now we know that the true level of the lake at high-water mark is only 12,493 feet, as determined by the

\* An Aymará word signifying "cat-rock."



railway surveys from the coast.\* The lake rises in the rainy season four feet. It is so shallow on the north, south, and west, that a fall of ten feet would probably lessen the area one fifth. One can easily see that the lake formerly extended over the lowlands around the north end. The bay of Puno is choked up with tall rushes, and a long stone wharf must needs jut out to enable even the *balsas* to unload. The eastern shore, on the contrary, is lofty and abrupt, and the water correspondingly deep, certainly over 120 fathoms. Across the lake can be clearly seen from Puno the Bolivian cordillera, a succession of sharp, rugged, glittering peaks, strongly contrasting with the rounded, brown summits of the western cordillera — the result of a different geology.

Animal life around and within the lake is quite abundant. Numerous water-birds, as ducks and snipes, but especially grebes (*Podiceps micropterus*), float or fly over the surface. At least nine kinds of small but excellent fish are brought to market, of which the most important is called "boga." The muddy bottom is full of little shells, so that when it is stirred with a pole or dredge they rise to the surface like white foam.†

Lake Titicaca is the natural highway between Puno and Bolivia. At present there are two little steamers afloat, of one hundred tons each, whose transportation from the coast in pieces cost as much as the original price. They are wretchedly managed, are laid up about half the time, get up steam by means of llama dung, and can not come

\* Pentland's estimates of Illimani, Sorata, and other Bolivian peaks, made from the Titicaca basin as a base, must therefore come down 300 feet.

† The following which I obtained seemed to be most numerous: *Paludetrina culminea*, Orb.; *P. andicola*, Orb.; *Ancylus Sayanus*, Orb.; *Planorbis andicolus*, Orb.; and a *Sphærium*, probably new. It is a singular fact that one of the fishes (*Trichomycterus dispar*, Isch.) is found also in the Rimac and Guayaquil rivers.



within five miles of Puno on account of the shallows. There are also two or three trading schooners; but the *balsa* is the characteristic craft. This is simply a bundle of twisted rush, with a mat for a sail; the only wood about it is in the rudder and mast.\* But steam will work a complete revolution in this cradle of the Incas. Puno has already become an important place by being made the terminus of the railway; and when connected,



Balsa Navigation on Lake Titicaca.

as proposed, with Cuzco and La Paz, it will be a commercial centre such as the old Incas never dreamed of. So now it is a fixed fact that the Andes, the most abrupt and lofty range of mountains on the globe, can be crossed in a day. A belt of iron has made a smooth pathway over this wall of granite, so long an insuperable obstacle to the progress of Peru, and on it the commerce of the Pacific and the Amazons will join hands.

\* The rushes, or *totoras*, so abundant in the shallow parts of the lake, are eight or ten feet long. The cattle wade in to feed upon them; and the people eat the lower part as salad, and make balsas, mats, and roofs of the rest.



## CHAPTER XXXII.

The Commerce of Peru.—Her vast Possibilities.—The present Source of her Wealth.

It would be quite as easy to ascertain the revenue of Atahualpa as to find out the present exports and imports of Peru. Both are impossible. The wildest confusion prevails in the custom-houses, as well as in the minds of the people, regarding the commerce of the republic. But better days are coming, as the government has just established a statistical bureau.

Peru, under the Incas, was essentially an agricultural nation, without trade, and with few mechanical arts. In many respects it resembled the Hebrew nation. The empire must have been a magnificent shell that should so suddenly collapse on the appearance of a hundred Spaniards. It is a signal proof that agriculture alone will not preserve a people. Roads there were, but for military communication, not for commerce. Pizarro had sense to see that Cuzco was too far inland; so he founded Lima, the most lasting monument of his wisdom.

Peru, like India, has long been the synonym for wealth; but she no longer leads the South American republics in enterprise and thrift, for Chile now bears the palm. Peru has reached her level for the present. By a system of official stealing and reckless financiering, she has brought herself to the verge of bankruptcy. Every body seeks office, to sap, not to serve, the government. Every city hangs on the skirts of Lima. Arequipa, the second city in Peru, stands like a beggar at the door of the public treasury, receiving \$80,000 annually; and even imperial Cuzco holds



out her hand for \$30,000. Employés distant from the head centre (as Iquitos, for example) go unpaid. Yet Peru has immense capabilities. She is the France of the continent. All the fruits and grains of the earth here find congenial and fertile soil. With the great Pacific on her left, and the navigable sources of the Amazons on her right, with mountains of mineral wealth untouched, with highland valleys like the hanging gardens of Babylon for beauty, and with plains and reclaimable pampas which might equal Egypt in fertility, Peru is potentially one of the richest countries on the globe. But she must have a more substantial and permanent basis of prosperity than guano and saliter. The wealth thus suddenly acquired has diverted the people from the slow but surer sources of national growth. Who ever heard of an original patent taken out by a Peruvian? Where is the vessel that was built in Peruvian waters? What manufactures thrive in Peru? We can think of only one success—the powder factory at Lima, which the government runs, dispensing the “villainous saltpetre” at thirty cents a pound. There was once a woollen-factory at Cuzco, but it is now silent. Commerce is almost entirely in the hands of foreigners.

But we should not judge Peru harshly. We must remember that she celebrates her semi-centennial the very year we are keeping our one hundredth anniversary, and that from the beginning she has been saddled with the vices and superstitions of Old Spain, and a large Indian population. Every nation has its infancy; and we must not expect Peru to make a leap that no other country has been able to do. So long as her politics are led by such men as Pardo, her literature by Vigil, and her science by Raimondi, we may look for progress.\*

\* As the newspapers of a country, even their titles, reflect the spirit of society, I give a list of Peruvian journals: LIMA—*El Comercio*, *El Nacional*,



It is also necessary to understand the peculiar topography of Peru before studying her commercial resources. The word *Peru* is Indian, but its application to the country was a Spanish blunder. The Incas called it *Tahuantinsuyu*, or the land of four parts. As now circumscribed, it contains about half a million square miles. It is a narrow strip of land; but nature has worked here on a magnificent scale. It mainly consists of two colossal ranges of mountains, collectively called the Andes; but the term *Los Andes* belongs only to the eastern chain, while the western is known as the *Cordillera de la Costa*. The latter is the true water-shed: all the streams flowing east of the summit work their way through the eastern range to the Atlantic, which is doubtless due to the more gradual uplifting of the latter, giving the streams time to wear their passage. Peru is accordingly divided into three distinct, longitudinal regions—*Coast*, *Sierra*, and *Montaña*. The first, lying along the Pacific slope, is the land of sunshine. In the main, it is a sandy waste, sprinkled with a saline efflorescence, and presenting a most desolate appearance; but it is broken by numerous valleys, which, when blessed with a trickling stream, are surpassingly fertile. Excepting Callao, the towns on the shore are huddles of dingy hovels around a church and custom-house, to which the arrival of a steamer imparts a kind of galvanized life. The length of the coast-line is 1200 miles, or nearly equal to the Atlantic border of the United States.

The Sierra, or highland plains hung between the two

*La Sociedad, La Patria, El Pueblo, El Peruano.* CALLAO—*El Porvenir, South Pacific Times.* CUZCO—*El Ferro-carril, El Herald.* AREQUIPA—*La Bolsa, La Verdad.* AYACUCHO—*El Progreso, La Nueva Era.* CAJAMARCA—*El Tiempo, El Correo del Norte.* TRUJILLO—*El Imparcial.* PIURA—*El Sol.* ICA—*El Pueblo.* TARAPACÁ—*El Mercurio.* CHICLAYO—*El Chiclayano.* IQUIQUE—*El Mercurio, El Herald.* PUNO—*El Comercio, El Ciudadano, La Iglesia Puneña.* TACNA—*La Luz, La Revista del Sur.*



ranges, is the land of storms and magnificent scenery; the region of the potato and alpaca, corn and barley, and mines of precious metals. It is a long plateau, 300 miles wide, walled in by stupendous peaks, many of them reaching far above the limit of perpetual snow. Here are the cities of Cuzco, Ayacucho, and Cerro de Pasco. But much of the region is a cold, uninhabited *puna*, a monotonous, treeless, rolling country, with scarcely a trace of verdure—by no means a land of promise. Yet this long valley, reaching from Titicaca to the equator, and having an average elevation of 10,000 feet, was the chosen seat of the great Inca nation. The Montaña, or forest-region, skirting the eastern slope of the Andes, is little known; but it only needs an outlet to make it the richest part of Peru. The climate is always humid, and warmer than the same altitude on the Pacific slope.

Peru thus comprehends every degree of latitude from the equator to the snowy regions of Chile, and every altitude from the sea to 20,000 feet; you have only to travel from north to south, or from east to west, to go from palm-groves to everlasting winter.

In Northeastern or Amazonian Peru, hats, aguardiente, salt, turtles, sarsaparilla, tobacco, and hammocks are the main exports; but as no duties are collected, it is impossible to find the amount. Trade has vastly improved since the establishment of steam-navigation on the Great River. Until, however, there is a better port than miserable Balsa Puerto, it must be inconsiderable. In Southeastern Peru the current of trade is almost entirely westward, the roads through Puno and Tacna being the chief highways for Bolivian commerce.

The total import and export revenue annually collected at the custom-houses on the coast is about \$25,000,000. To the railways, now nearly completed by Mr. Meiggs,



Peru must look for an advance. It is a fact that the receipts at the custom-house in Callao have increased by one million of soles every year since the beginning of the Oroya Railroad.

On the coast, the majority of the sailing-vessels are Anglo-Saxon. There are a few French and German steamers, and a "White Star Line;" but the "Pacific Steam Navigation Company," founded by an American, the late Mr. Wheelwright, is the most prosperous navigation company in the world. It is British power on the Pacific. It has a fleet of seventy steamers, some of them the largest afloat, with an aggregate tonnage of over 200,000. The six best harbors of Peru are Payta, Chimbote, Callao, Islay, Arica, and Iquique. But all are roadsteads opening to the north; and of each it can be said, as a captain sarcastically remarked of Mollendo, "the harbor is entered as soon as the ship turns Cape Horn."

The wealth of Peru lies mainly in the following productions:

GUANO. — This valuable fertilizer, whose virtues were known to the Incas, but rediscovered in 1836, comes no longer from the Chincha, Guañape, and Macabi islands, which have been pretty thoroughly scraped. It is now shipped from the Lobos Islands, at the rate of 600 tons per day. The principal deposits yet untouched are those of Viejas Island, Lobillo Island, Huanillo Island, Huanillo Point, White Point, Pabollon de Pica, Chiapana Bay, and on the main-land near Iquique. The guano now in the market is inferior to that of Chincha, containing five per cent. less of ammonia. Peru owns but four millions of tons (the rest being mortgaged to Dreyfus & Co.), worth \$35 a ton where it lies, or £13 a ton in Liverpool. In 1871, nearly 400,000 tons were sold (almost one third to Great Britain), netting £2,785,641. The mining is done



by coolies, who are imported at the rate of 12,000 a year, ostensibly as colonists, but really condemned to the worst form of slavery. Many of the poor fellows, rather than dig the foul guano, throw themselves from the cliffs into the sea. A Celestial sells for \$400; the time of servitude has lately been reduced from eight to six years.

Guano Islands.



**SALITER, OR NITRATE OF SODA**—This formidable competitor with guano is found in the province of Tarapacá, especially on the Pampa del Tamarugal, where it occupies fifty square leagues, and is reckoned at 63,000,000 tons. It seems to be constantly forming. The average yield is



over 4,000,000 quintals; but were the senseless restriction on its exportation (25 cents per quintal) removed, the quantity would be tripled. The demand is on the increase, yet the supply exceeds the demand. It is mainly exported from Iquique, where the price is about \$2 50 a quintal; in Liverpool, £16 a ton. Mixed with guano, saliter (or "caliche," as it is called in the crude state) is the best compost for cereals. In the deposit at La Peña Grande, fossil birds, with a flamingo-like bill, have been discovered nine feet below the surface. Water is found in these pampas 180 feet below the surface. In this same region there is an abundance of borax and nitre; but they are scantily worked.

SUGAR. — In many respects, this is the most important production of Peru. All along the coast, wherever the land is watered by streams or irrigation, the cane grows luxuriantly (from fifteen to twenty feet), and yields 85 per cent. of juice, having 12° or 15° Baumé. The green and ripe are seen in the same field; men are cutting at one end, and planting at the other. The cane requires replanting but once in ten years, and gives a crop every fourteen months. On large plantations, the manufacture of sugar continues all the year round. It is exported mainly from Eten (12,000 tons annually) — the richest agricultural region in Northern Peru — Pacasmáyo (800 tons), Malabrigo, Huancháco, Chancáy, and Pisco. The bulk goes to Europe to be refined, under the name of *chancaca*, or *rapidúra*. A superior quality is grown in the interior, at Abancay, which is sent to Bolivia. The annual yield of sugar and spirits together, in all Peru, is estimated at 20,000,000 soles.

COFFEE. — A small quantity is produced at Guadalupe, near Pacasmáyo, which is second to none in richness of flavor. Its excellence is due to the fact that it is grown



in the shade, and with the greatest care. This "Goyburú" coffee, as it is called, brings 50 cents a pound at the hacienda. A very choice article (valued at \$1 a pound) is made by selecting the smallest Goyburú; but it is not in the market. Fine coffee grows also at Huánuco and Uribamba.

COTTON.—A very fine article, next to sea-island, has been grown at Pacasmáyo; but the yield, only 50 or 60 pounds to the acre, is not encouraging. It suffers from mildew. The points from which cotton is exported are Pacasmáyo (100,000 pounds), Payta (coming from Piura), Eten, Chancay, Lomas, and especially Pisco (grown in the rich valleys of Ica). A beautiful, silk-like cotton is grown in the valley of Santa Ana. At Arica, cotton is worth \$36 a quintal.

RICE is now imported from China direct, and from India *viâ* England, so that little is raised. The usual yield is 200 fold. Its production is nearly confined to Eten, Pacasmáyo, and Huanchaco.

CORN is universally cultivated in the mountain valleys, though not on a large scale, and forms the staple food of the Indians. A prime article, quite different from the short, party-colored ears on the highlands, is grown, to some extent, on the coast; 700,000 pounds passed through the custom-house of Pacasmáyo in 1872.

CACAO, of the best quality, comes from the Department of Cuzco, especially from the hacienda of Echarati. It brings \$6 an arroba in Cuzco, and 60 cents per pound in Lima, or double the price of the Guayaquil. A small quantity is manufactured at Cajamárca.

FRUIT.—The province of Moquegua is the Bordeaux of Peru; and a large amount of rum and wines are exported from Pisco. The "Italia" is the leading brandy. Ordinary "Pisco" is worth \$1 a bottle; "Locumba," \$2. Or-



anges, lemons, melons, and olives are grown along the southern coast. The olives of Ilo, and the raisins of Pica will compare with those of Seville and Malaga.

TOBACCO.—This grows luxuriantly at Eten and Pacasmáyo, sometimes standing eight feet high, with leaves four feet long. It is sent chiefly to Chile. Pacasmáyo exported 100,000 pounds in 1873. Tobacco is also grown along the Urubamba and Utcubamba.

COCA is almost confined to the Urubamba province, and is not exported from the coast, as it is consumed in Cuzco, Puno, and Arequipa. It is considered inferior to the coca of Yungas, Bolivia.

CASCARILLA BARK.—Less and less of this is exported every year, as the hunters have to go farther and farther into the interior for it. The greater part now goes down the Amazons from Bolivia. It is shipped from Payta (coming from Loja), Pacasmáyo (coming through Cajamárca, nearly 200,000 pounds in 1873), Islay, and Arica (coming from the Bolivian forests of Munecas, Apolobamba, Yuracares, Larecaja, Inquisivi, Apopaya, and the Yungas of La Paz. At Arica, it is worth \$90 a quintal.

WOOL.—After guano and sugar, alpaca is the great export. The annual product is about 45,000 bales. It comes almost entirely from the departments of Puno and Cuzco; and the outlets are Pisco, Islay, Mollendo, and Arica. But Arequipa is the great centre of the alpaca trade. Such is the reputation of the Arequipa brand that the wool is generally taken to that city from other points to be re-assorted and repacked. The alpacas thrive best in the black, almost barren, boggy lands from 13,000 to 14,000 feet in elevation. Shearing-time begins December 15; but an individual is sheared only once in two or three years. A fleece of three years is of course the largest, and commands the best price. It is now worth in Arequipa



\$70 a quintal. Vicuña wool brings \$100 a quintal; but little is exported. The sheep's wool of Peru ("cholo") is of middling quality, inferior to the "mestizo" of the Argentine Republic. It brings twelvecence in England. It is exported (20,000 quintals a year) from Arica and Islay.

About 4000 goat-skins are exported annually to the United States from Payta, and a few chinchilla-skins from Arica.

**SILK.**—Peru is admirably adapted for the cultivation of the mulberry and the castor-oil plant, and the two species of silk-worm which feed upon them. Three, four, and even five crops of eggs could be produced annually.

**MINERALS.**—Arica, being the main port of Bolivia, ships the most metal, especially bar silver (at \$12 04 per mark), copper barilla or powdered ore (at \$18 a quintal of 70 per cent.), and tin barilla (at \$19 a quintal of 70 per cent.). Cinnabar abounds at Huancavelica and Chonta in a jurassic slate and sandstone. Pacasmáyo and Chimbote will ere long export considerable silver ore and bituminous coal, the latter having been discovered of excellent quality and in large quantity near the line of the Chimbote Railroad. Coal occurs also near Arequipa (Sumbay), near Pisco, and on the Oroya Railroad, the last resembling Rhode Island anthracite. The want of coal and wood has prevented the smelting of ores to any extent in the country hitherto. An English firm has lately established a furnace on the island of San Lorenzo, opposite Callao. Iron ore is abundant in Jauja, Cuzco, and Puno.

Besides these exports, Tumbes yields petroleum; Huanchaco, starch; Quilca, olives; and Amotape (near Payta), cochineal. Orchilla (or archil) was formerly sent from Payta; but a better article has recently been found on an island off Mexico. In times of scarcity it is worth \$5000 a ton.



## CHAPTER XXXIII.

The Silver-mines of Peru: Cerro de Pasco.—Hualgayoc.—Puno.—Chilete.—Ancachs.

PERU was conquered and explored by the early Spaniards under the belief that it was *El Dorado*; but there are no famous mines of gold in the republic save those of Carabaya.\* It better deserves the name of *La Plata*, for its Andes are threaded with silver. The annual yield of Peruvian silver, however, is decreasing, owing to mismanagement. A thorough scientific survey of the country is needed, and then a judicious system of mining. We are confident this will reveal

“Rocks rich in gems and mountains big with mines,  
That on the high equator ridgy rise.”

The most famous silver-mines in South America, after those of Potosí, are the mines of Cerro de Pasco, sixty leagues northeast of Lima. They are situated on the Atlantic slope of the Andes, over 13,000 feet above the sea, where the prevailing rock is conglomerate. The silver, discovered by an Indian in 1630, occurs in the native state; also as sulphuret mixed with pyrites, with *cobrizo* (a carbonate of copper and lead, with sulphuret of copper), and with oxides, forming what are known in Peru and Mexico as *pacos* and *colorados*. The ore is treated to salt and mercury, but so rudely that generally one pound of

\* It must not be understood, however, that auriferous deposits do not occur in Western Peru. I obtained very rich specimens of gold-bearing rock (a singular, decomposing, metamorphic rock) from Quilque, near Arequipa, eight leagues from the sea, in the coast range. The silver ore of Huamachuco and Pataz contains considerable gold.



mercury is lost to every half pound of silver extracted. Fortunately, Cerro de Pasco is only 200 miles from the celebrated quicksilver mines of Huancavelica. According to Herndon, the ore yields only six marks to the cajon. (A mark is eight ounces, and a cajon is three tons.) A representative specimen in my possession contains 0.004 of silver. During the last two centuries and a half, the mines have produced about \$500,000,000. The annual amount of ore mined at present does not exceed 110,000 tons, each cajon yielding an average of four and a half marks, the amalgam containing 22 per cent. of silver. Just now, work has nearly ceased, owing to the inadequate means of drainage. But at Cerro de Pasco, as at other places, it has been found profitable to rework, by the improved modern method, the tailings left by the old Spanish miners. The contemplated connection of the Oroya Railroad with a line from Pasco will give new impetus to the mining interest, but it will not mollify the excruciating climate.

Hualgayoc, fourteen leagues north of Cajamárca, has long been celebrated for its rich mines; but it is also afflicted with a plethora of water. The Cerro, unlike most silver mountains, presents rugged, tower-like points, and is perforated on every side to its very summit. The rock is siliceous. There are many good mines in the vicinity of Lampa and Puno, on the borders of Lake Titicaca; those of Manto, Salcedo, Chupica, and Cancharani were famous in Spanish history. In the seventeenth century the mines of Puno were inferior only to those of Potosí. The richest ores are called *broza*, *rosicler*, and *pavonado*; the first yields forty marks to fifty quintals. The ores of Huantajaya, Carmen, and Santa Rosa, near Iquique, yield from 2000 to 5000 marks to the cajon. Without question they are among the purest in the world. Masses of pure silver



have been found on the surface of the plain, one weighing 800 pounds. Rich deposits occur also in the province of Cailloma, north of Arequipa; and at Yauli, San Mateo, and other localities near the Oroya Railroad. Extensive veins have been recently discovered at Chilete, the terminus of the Pacasmayo Railroad, the ore assaying from \$60 to \$200 a ton. A Bostonian has a large interest in this mine. Silver associated with gold and copper is found in the Cerro Potoche, near Huancavelica. The mines of Hualanga, near Tarma, have yielded 3000 marks in a year.

But the most numerous and promising silver-mines of Peru are, without doubt, located in the department of Ancachs, just north of Lima; not because it is a richer region than the eastern cordillera, but because it is the only district which has been scientifically explored. This has been done by the accomplished naturalist, Professor Raimondi, under the patronage of Mr. Henry Meiggs. The report recently published at Lima contains assays of specimens from the most valuable mines in which the silver occurs. It appears: (1) That silver is not very common in the native state. (2) That the minerals richest in silver are pyrrargyrite (*rosicler*, or ruby silver) and stephanite (brittle silver glance). (3) That the greater part of the silver, however, is extracted from tetrahedrite, galena, and many mineral oxides (*pacos* or *colorados*). The *pacos* richest in silver ore are those which result from the oxidation of stephanite and pyrrargyrite; the poorest are found in great part of oxide of iron, in which the silver is minutely disseminated in the native state. (4) It is worthy of notice that the silver ores are constantly associated with antimony. Even the galenas, having a cubical structure, always contain a small percentage of antimony. In general, it may be said that the silver of Peru, as of Chile and Bolivia, whether native or in the form of chloride, sulphide,



or amalgam, occurs chiefly in the oolitic and porphyritic series near intrusive diorite.

The following picked specimens from Ancachs show the maximum yield of a variety of ores: native silver with arsenuret of silver, panabasite pyrites and blende, 4284 marks to the cajon; argentiferous tetrahedrite with pyrargyrite, free from gangue, 1966 marks; argentiferous tetrahedrite, malachite, and azurite, 300 marks; sulphide of antimony, silver, lead, copper, iron, and manganese, 606 marks; antimonial lead, copper, and silver, with chrysocolla, 524 marks; cerusite with antimonial silver, lead, copper, and iron, 756 marks; antimonial silver, lead, and iron, with sulphide of silver and antimony, 680 marks; argentiferous tetrahedrite with galena and blende, 676 marks; malinowskite — crude, 572 marks; pure, 1191; argentiferous antimonial silver, 312 marks; sulphide of silver in decomposition with galena and anglesite, 712 marks; anglesite, chloride of silver, and antimonial lead and silver, 560 marks; argentiferous galena and tetrahedrite, 532 marks; argentiferous jamesonite, 340 marks; antimonial silver, lead, copper, and iron, with cerusite and malachite, 408 marks.



## CHAPTER XXXIV.

The Railways of Peru.—Henry Meiggs and his Enterprises.

PERU has just found out that this is an age of roads, and that, if she would not fall too far behind in the race of nations, she must have means of intercommunication. No other country has greater need of highways, for the two agricultural regions, the interandean plateau and the eastern transandean slope ("Montaña") are separated by the oriental cordillera, and the mineral region is cut off from the agricultural by the coast range, while no navigable streams enter the Pacific. The Incas constructed some remarkable roads, chiefly longitudinal—one passing over the grand plateau from Quito to Cuzco; another along the coast. The latter is quite effaced by the shifting sands; a fragment, however, is still visible at Pacasmáyo. The remains of the other bear evidence to their primitive grandeur, and have drawn forth the eulogium of Humboldt, that "the roads of the Incas were among the most useful and stupendous works ever executed by man." But these old roads are now useless, and, even if repaired, would be unsuited to modern commerce. What Peru wants, and what she is trying to accomplish, is a system of transverse railways, bringing her rich highland valleys in connection with her ports, and a longitudinal line, eclipsing the royal road of the Incas, which shall link all together, passing from Jaen through Cajamárca, Cerro de Pasco, and Cuzco to Lake Titicaca.

The following railways are owned by private companies: Lima and Callao, eight miles; finished. This is the



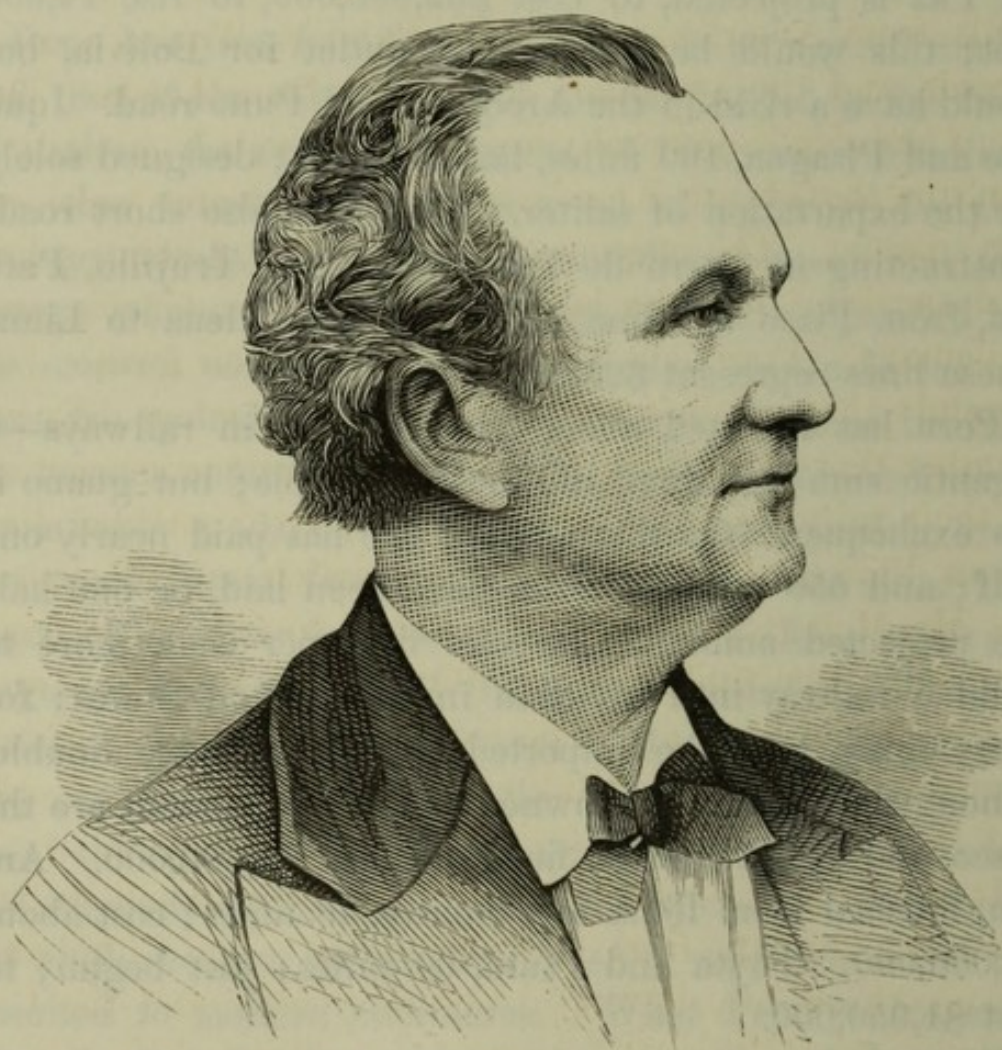
oldest road in Peru, having been opened in 1851, and the best-paying; yet, like all the rest, it has but one track. Lima and Chorillos—the fashionable Long Branch of Peru, nine miles; finished. Eten and Lambayeque, 28 miles; finished, to start from an iron pier 4000 feet long. Arica and Tacna, 40 miles; finished. A continuation to La Paz is projected, to cost \$32,000,000, to rise 14,000 feet; this would be the nearest outlet for Bolivia, but would have a rival in the Arequipa and Puno road. Iquique and Pisagua, 160 miles, half finished; designed solely for the exportation of saliter. There are also short roads constructing at Cerro de Pasco, Pimentel, Trujillo, Patillos, from Pisco to Lima, and from Magdalena to Lima. These lines represent \$25,000,000.

Peru has invested about \$140,000,000 in railways—a gigantic sum for three millions of people; but guano is the exchequer. Of this amount she has paid nearly one half; and 650 miles of track have been laid, or one half the projected amount. It costs fifty per cent. more to build a railway in Peru than in the United States; for every thing must be imported, and labor costs double. Among the minor roads owned by the government are the Pisco and Ica, 45 miles, finished; cost \$1,500,000. Ancón, finished from Lima to Chancay, 45 miles; cost about \$3,000,000. Payta and Piura, 60 miles; just begun; to cost \$1,950,000.

But all the great iron roads of the republic are the handiwork of Mr. Meiggs, the best representative of American enterprise below the equator. Mr. Meiggs has contracts with the government amounting to \$133,000,000, for building seven railways, with an aggregate length of about a thousand miles. Five of these are finished; three (the Puno, Oroya, and Pacasmayo), the longest and most difficult, are in process of construction at the same time.



Unlike many of our governmental works, these railways are models; one must travel around the globe to find better-laid tracks, more finished bridges, culverts, and mason-work, more remarkable cuts and fills, and greater achievements of engineering. In the minutest details the work is of the best description, very often much better than the



Henry Meiggs. (From a Photograph.)

contract calls for; Mr. Meiggs preferring to maintain, at any cost, what he has already gained—the reputation of being an honorable contractor. If he is ever unjust, it is toward himself. The station-house at Chosica, *e. g.*, is so elegant that President Pardo declared he would like such a residence for himself.



The gauge of all the roads is four feet eight and a half inches, save that of Chimbote, which is three feet. The rolling stock is American, the cars coming from Gilbert, Bush & Co., Troy, and the locomotives (mostly Rogers's) from Paterson. A locomotive on the track costs from \$20,000 to \$25,000, and a first-class car \$5500. The ties are from Orégon, the rails from England, the diamond drills from America, worked by Rand & Waring's compressor, and the stationary machinery from Leeds. The shops and dépôts generally are made of English galvanized iron, the shovels are Ames's, and the iron water-tanks are Pitt's patent. The engineers are invariably, I believe, English-speaking, and the laborers are Chinese, Cholos, and Chilenians. Peruvians may be proud of their guano; but certainly they can not hold up their heads when they remember that not a thing has entered into the construction of their railways but what is foreign, save, perhaps, dirt, stones, lime, and powder, which last article, so indispensable, Mr. Meiggs is obliged by contract to buy of the government. The timber, iron, rolling stock, labor, fuel, and nearly all the food, are imported. Even the money which pays for it is foreign—bank-bills engraved in New York, and Bolivian silver!

It will be a long time before the government will realize any thing directly from these railroads. The Chimbote, passing through a developed mining region, and the Ilo, draining the vineyards of Moquehua, will soon be self-supporting. But such a costly enterprise as the Oroya can do nothing but expend, until it is extended to the Amazons; while as to the Arequipa, one is in doubt whether to wonder most at the skill of the engineers or the hardihood of the government in ordering the gigantic undertaking, for it passes through an utterly profitless region—one village in one hundred miles—over sterile pampas and black pa-



ramos, without mines worth the working, without a sign of life save now and then a condor, a few herds of Peruvian sheep and scattered tufts of wiry grass, cacti, and compositæ. The great export from Southern Peru, alpaca, does not exceed 10,000 quintals a year. Surely, we say, the government will not have a month's work for this road in a year. But so would we misjudge our Pacific Railroad as it crosses the Great Desert. When the Oroya Railway shall join the Pichis River, and the Arequipa shall be connected with the heart of Bolivia, and thence with the projected lines in the Argentine Confederation, we shall look for dividends. The railroads of Peru, as every where else, will develop new life in the people and new sources of wealth in the country.

But, letting Peru look after the proceeds, let us glance at these great enterprises as marvels of engineering and as the creations of American genius.

THE PACASMÁYO RAILROAD.—Situating in lat.  $7^{\circ} 30'$  S. Termini, Pacasmáyo and La Viña. Length (including branches), 93 miles; finished. Contract taken by Mr. Meiggs, at \$5,800,000 cash. Starting with an iron mole, half a mile long, it passes up the valley of the Rio Jequetepeque (or "Hidden River"), through the village of San Pedro, the capital of a rich agricultural region, having vast plantations of sugar-cane, rice, coffee, and corn; thence over a desert, which, however, can be easily reclaimed by irrigation, and ends at an altitude of 4000 feet, near the silver-mines of Chilete. A branch leads to the busy village of Guadalupe. One can now go from the coast to Cajamárca in a short day.

THE CHIMBOTE RAILROAD.—Situating in lat.  $9^{\circ}$ . Termini, Chimbote and Huaraz. Length, 172 miles; finished, 50. Contract taken by Mr. Meiggs, at \$24,000,000 cash. It passes up the valley of the Santa, and then southerly

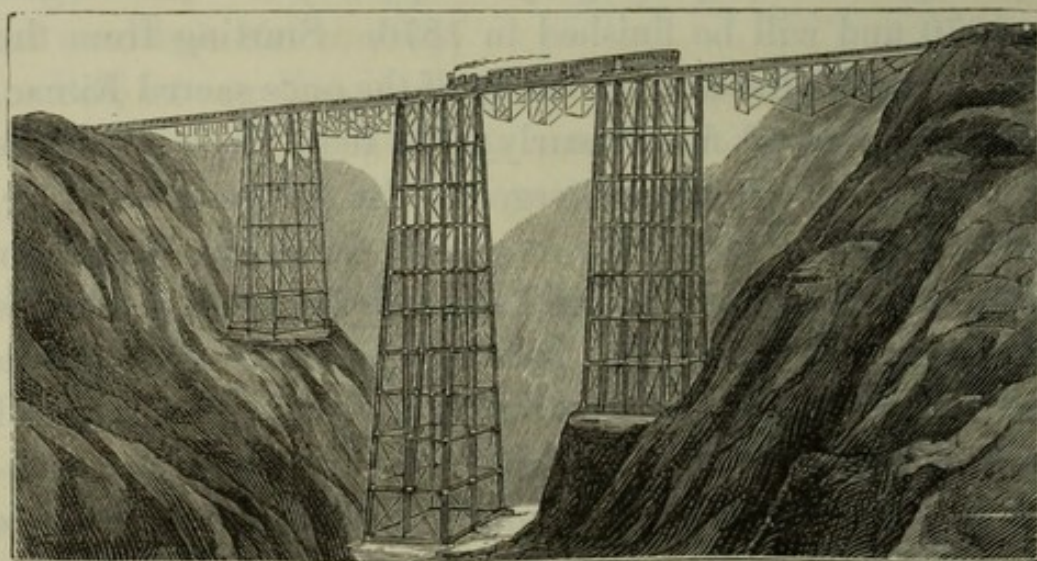


along the highlands, and is designed to open up the rich mines of that region, and to benefit 200,000 inhabitants. It will begin with a magnificent iron pier, 1640 feet long; and there will be thirty tunnels on the route.

THE OROYA RAILROAD.—Situated in lat.  $12^{\circ}$ . Termini, Callao and Oroya. Length, 136 miles; finished, 82 miles, to Anchi; tunnel nearly through, and grading done on the Oroya side. Contract taken by Mr. Meiggs, at \$27,600,000 in bonds at 79. This is one of the nine wonders in the Peruvian world; and certainly it is the greatest feat of railroad engineering in either hemisphere. As a specimen of American enterprise and American workmanship, it suffers nothing by comparison. It was begun in 1870, and will be finished in 1876. Starting from the sea, it ascends the narrow valley of the once sacred Rimac, rising the first 46 miles nearly 5000 feet; then it threads the increasingly-intricate gorges of the sierras (a winding, giddy pathway along the edge of precipices and over bridges that seem suspended in the air), tunnels the Andes at the altitude of 15,645 feet—the most elevated spot in the world where a piston-rod is moved by steam—and ends at Oroya, 12,178 feet above the Pacific. The wonder is doubled by remembering that this great elevation is reached in 78 miles. Between the coast and the summit there is not an inch of down grade. The difficulties encountered in its construction are without a parallel. The valley narrows to a ravine, and then to a gorge, till the closing mountains fairly overhang the infant Rimac; in fact, at one point, a stone dropped will fall on the opposite side of the stream. So that, in forcing the railway up the Cordilleras, the engineers have literally threaded the mountains by a series of sixty-three tunnels, whose aggregate length is 21,000 feet. The great tunnel of Galera, by which the locomotive is to be taken over the Andes,



will be 3800 feet long. Besides boring the flinty rock, and making enormous bridges, cuts, and fills, the workmen (of whom 8000 have been engaged at one time) have had to contend against land-slides, falling boulders, sorroche (or the difficulty of breathing at high altitudes), the extremes of climate, pestilential diseases, as fevers and verrugas, and accidents by falling from the rocks and in blasting. About 7000 have died or been killed in the construction of the road thus far. The bridges and crossings number about thirty. All are of iron or stone. Some are of French and English manufacture; but the best are American. Of these, the Verrugas Bridge is the



Verrugas Bridge, Oroya Railway.

most remarkable structure of its kind in the world. It spans a chasm 580 feet wide, and rests on three piers. The base of the middle pier is 50 feet square, and its height is 252 feet. The deflection is only five eighths of an inch. It was made at Phoenixville, Pa., of hollow wrought-iron columns, and cost in New York \$63,000. This triumph of American ingenuity is the great attraction in Peru, and is the wonder and praise of all visitors.

The maximum grade of this road is four per cent.; the



sharpest curve, 395 feet radius; and the average consumption of coal, 65 pounds per mile. Mules and gunpowder are indispensable in advance of the locomotive, and together make quite an item; \$115,000 are invested in the quadrupedal means of transportation, and 500,000 pounds of powder are used monthly for blasting.

My fearfully grand ride down the Andes on a hand-car drawn by gravity, under the superintendence of Mr. Cilley, will never fade from memory. To fly along the edge of a precipice at the rate of forty-five miles an hour, and whip around a curve till every hair of the head stands on end, is glorious—when over. Once is enough for a lifetime.

Oroya, the terminus, is only a point of divergence. In time, branches will run to silvery Cerro de Pasco; to Tarma, destined to be the Mecca of consumptives; and to Fort San Ramon or to Mairo, the head of navigation on the Amazons. This will probably be the first interoceanic road in South America, as the link necessary to connect it with the Great River is very short. It will also serve to colonize and civilize the mountain regions of Peru.

THE AREQUIPA RAILROAD.—Situated in lat.  $17^{\circ}$ . Termini, Mollendo and Arequipa. Length, 107 miles; finished. Contract taken by Mr. Meiggs, at \$12,000,000 cash. Commenced in 1868; completed in 1870.

THE PUNO RAILROAD.—Situated in lat.  $16^{\circ} 30'$ . Termini, Arequipa and Puno, on the west shore of Lake Titicaca. Length, 218 miles; finished. Contract taken by Mr. Meiggs, at \$32,000,000 in bonds at 79. Commenced July, 1870; completed June, 1874.

These two roads, the Arequipa and Puno, are practically one (for it is a continuous line), and may be treated together.

At present, this is the longest railway south of the equa-



tor, unless the Rosario and Córdova Railroad be a rival. It is the most lofty and most serpentine railway in operation any where, and no other road in the world can show so much heavy work done. On the first division, 7,000,000 cubic yards were removed. The deepest cut is 90 feet; the highest fill, 112 feet; powder used, 27,000 quintals. On the second division the total amount of excavation was 9,858,000 cubic yards, the deepest cut being 127 feet (260,000 yards); the highest fill, 141 feet; powder used, 15,500 quintals. There is but one short tunnel in the 325 miles, although the first survey of the Arequipa division alone demanded nineteen; and there are only four bridges, all American, the longest being 1690 feet. The engines on the Arequipa division have eighteen-inch cylinders; on the Puno, seventeen-inch. They consume one ton of coal (costing \$30) every thirty-four miles, and the shoes of the brakes are replaced for every round trip. The maximum grade is four per cent., and the maximum freight is sixty tons. The road crosses the high Andes at an altitude of 14,660 feet, 116 miles east of Arequipa, where there is a cut of only 6.07 feet. When the track was laid beyond this summit, in 1873, it was the first time in history that a locomotive crossed the Andes. The Oroya Railroad excels in difficulty of work; this, in amount of excavation, as also, perhaps, in the sufferings of the men, arising from want of food and fuel, and the prevalence of rain, snow, cold, and rarefied air. On both, there was trouble in cooking certain articles of food, as beans, for example; for the water boiled before it was fairly hot, so that the men were obliged to use closed cans to cook under pressure. But there is this gain with the locomotives: the steam is generated and acts more freely at high altitudes, and less fuel is needed. A telegraph line follows the railroad.

To supply Mollendo with water, a pipe has just been



laid alongside of the track, 85 miles in length—the longest iron aqueduct in the world. It starts near Arequipa, at the elevation of 7000 feet, and crosses the great desert of Islay. It is an eight-inch pipe, and discharges 433,000 gallons in twenty-four hours. It cost \$20,000 per mile. This magnificent highway across the Andes will be a dead loss to Peru unless extended; for it passes through the most useless region in the world, and Puno is but a huddle of 5000 shivering Indians. A railroad from Puno to La Paz could be built for \$10,000,000. But one important tributary is already in process of construction.

THE CUZCO RAILROAD.—This first longitudinal road along the Peruvian Andes is to connect the city of Cuzco with the Arequipa Railroad at Juliaca, near Puno. Length, 210 miles; graded. Contract taken by Mr. Meiggs, at \$25,000,000 cash. The highest point, 14,150 feet, is about 100 miles north of Juliaca; thence, for 90 miles, the track falls to 10,000 feet, following an affluent of the Ucayali, and then rises to Cuzco, which is 11,500 feet. It passes mainly through sandstone and limestone; but there is no tunneling. The total amount of excavation was 5,500,000 cubic yards. But the freight on the material for this road would be sufficient to build it in the United States. The productions expected for transportation are cacao, coffee, wool, cotton, sugar, cascarilla, and woods.

THE MOQUEGUA RAILROAD.—Situated in lat.  $17^{\circ} 30'$ . Termini, Ilo and Moquegua. Length, 63 miles; finished. Contract taken by Mr. Meiggs, at \$6,700,000 in bonds at 75. It passes through one of the richest wine-producing districts in Peru.



## CHAPTER XXXV.

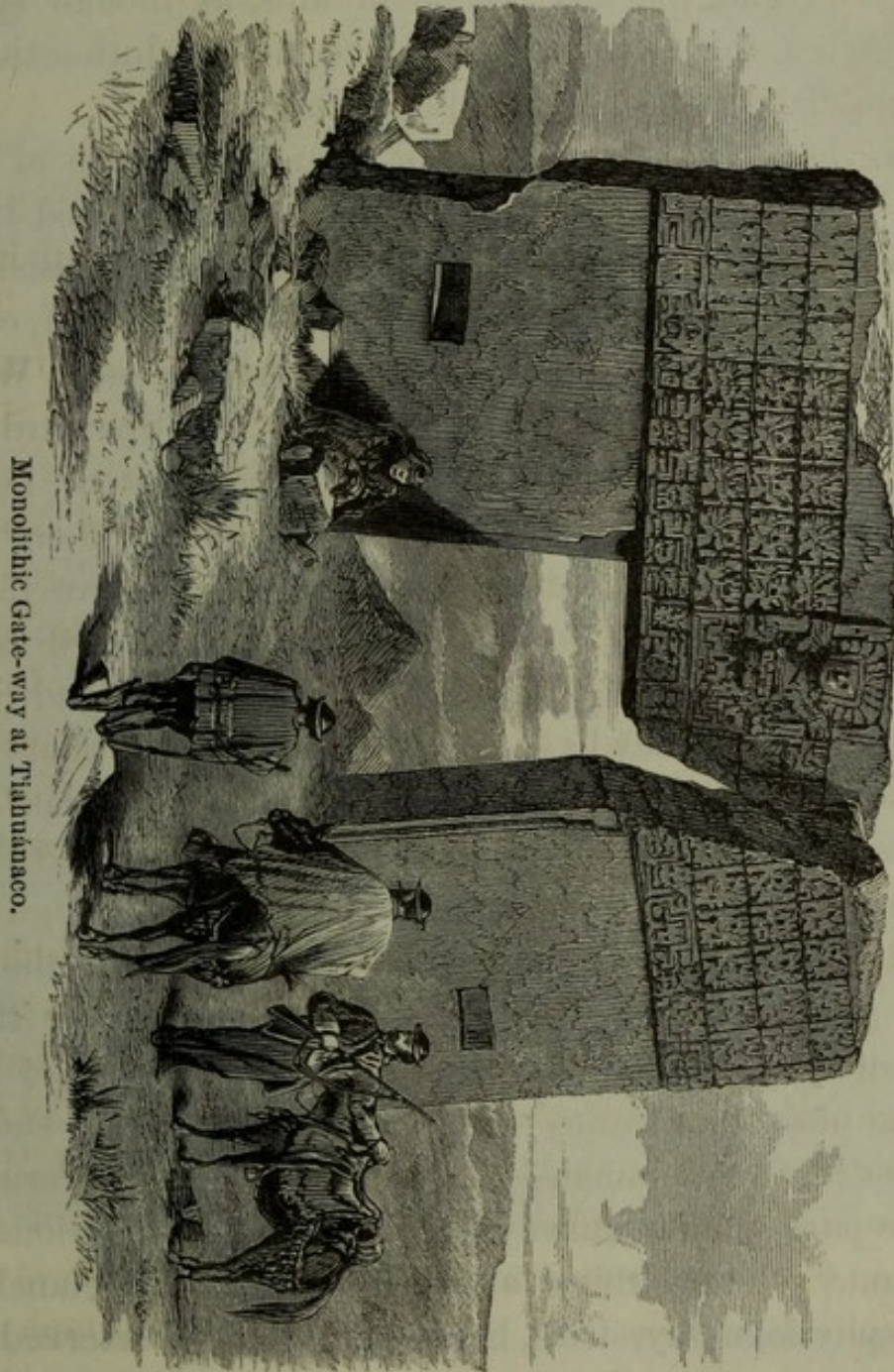
## The Aborigines on the Andes and the Amazons.

Two tribes of the red man dwell on the Andes of Ecuador, Peru, and Bolivia, the Quichua and Aymará. They are remnants of the great Inca nation, which attained the highest, perhaps the only, native civilization in South America. The Quichua Indians are scattered over the mountains from New Granada to the latitude of Arequipa; the Aymarás inhabit Bolivia and Southern Peru; but Lake Titicaca is still the home, as it was the cradle, of the race. Doubtless these two include the fragments of other tribes that paid tribute to Cuzco, but only these types can be clearly distinguished. The empire was, probably, the consolidation of closely allied people, having a common origin, but unequally developed.

The solid history of Peru begins only about a hundred years before the Spanish Conquest. Yet we are pretty certain that the imperial glories of the Incas were but the last gleams of a civilization that mounted up to perhaps thousands of years; that, long before the advent of Manco Capac, the Andes had been the dwelling-place of races whose beginnings must have been coeval with the savages of Western Europe. The earliest left no epitaph; but around Lake Titicaca are massive monolithic monuments, which could not have been wrought by a childish nation, yet are prehistoric, pre-incarial. The latest of the five styles of architecture visible on the Andes (each representing an age of human progress) is shown by the Temple of the Sun at Cuzco, built a century before Pizarro saw it,



yet put together with the precision of mosaic.\* While Europe was getting up rollicking crusades, the "Sun-



Monolithic Gate-way at Tiahuanaco.

kings" had carved out of the rugged Andes an empire equal to that of Rome in the days of Hadrian, stretching

\* It is well to remember that many of the blocks were of Baalbec dimensions, of hard porphyry, and transported miles; and that the builders were below the medium stature, ignorant of the use of iron, and without a beast of burden save the feeble llama.



over forty degrees of latitude. By the innumerable abandoned towns and ruined public works, by the crowded cemeteries and the terraced mountains, as though space were scarce, the traveler is forced to the conclusion that a vast population once swarmed over the land.

Alas, how fallen! A nation, once the France of the New World, now peeled and enslaved, its manhood trodden out. The buildings of Cuzco are of mud, raised on massive foundations, adobe on stone—the upper half, catholic and modern; the lower, heathen and antique. What a symbol! The foot-ball and servant of the Spaniard for three centuries, the Quichua Indians have lost all heart. Their number has rapidly diminished since the Conquest. They are filthy in the first degree; but I forgive them. They are idle; but I do not blame them. According to our measure of eating, they are in a starving condition; and this, though they have far better advantages than their ancestors, for horses, oxen, sheep, goats, pigs, wheat, barley, iron, plows, and powder have all been introduced since the times of the Incas. Their forefathers cut through sixty miles of granite to get a little water; they rob the ancient graves for water-pitchers rather than make them themselves. Who would recognize in this degraded people the blood and brains that once raised the stupendous fortress of Sacsahuaman—the Ehrenbreitstein of Peru?\*

The pure Quichua always wears a silent, sad, serious expression.† Every thing about him wears a melancholy cast—physiognomy, dress, landscape. He is reserved, la-

\* “But who would recognize in the fellahs of modern Egypt the descendants of that people who have transmitted to our days many of the leading elements of our civilization, and have left the pyramids as the imperishable witnesses of their power? Or in the barbarous and crafty Moors of Morocco the offspring of the brilliant Arabs who introduced chivalry into Europe?”—MORELET'S *Central America*.

† For physiognomy, see p. 111.





Remaining End-walls of the Temple of the Sun, Cuzco.

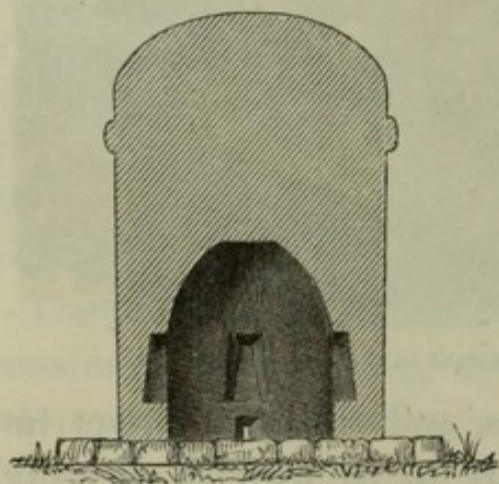
conic, stubborn, timid, harmless, and trustworthy, yet intensely suspicious. He appears to be without curiosity or ambition; but I am inclined to think his stolid indifference is not real. I never saw a fat or jolly Indian on the Andes. Some writers speak of their pathetic songs; but though I have mingled freely with them from Quito to Bolivia, I have never heard one sing. Crushed by



their oppressors, they tread with downcast looks the mountains that once resounded with the proud steps of their unconquered ancestors. As well might the Hebrews sing in Babylon. Yet here is a song (if a note of despair can be called a song) heard by a traveler from the lips of a young Indian mother in the wild recesses of the Andes:

“My mother begat me, amid rain and mist,  
To weep like the rain and be drifted like the clouds.  
‘You are born in the cradle of sorrow,’  
Says my mother; and she weeps as she wraps me around.  
If I wander the wide world over,  
I would not meet my equal in misery.  
Accursed be the day of my birth,  
Accursed be the night I was born,  
From this time, for ever and ever!”

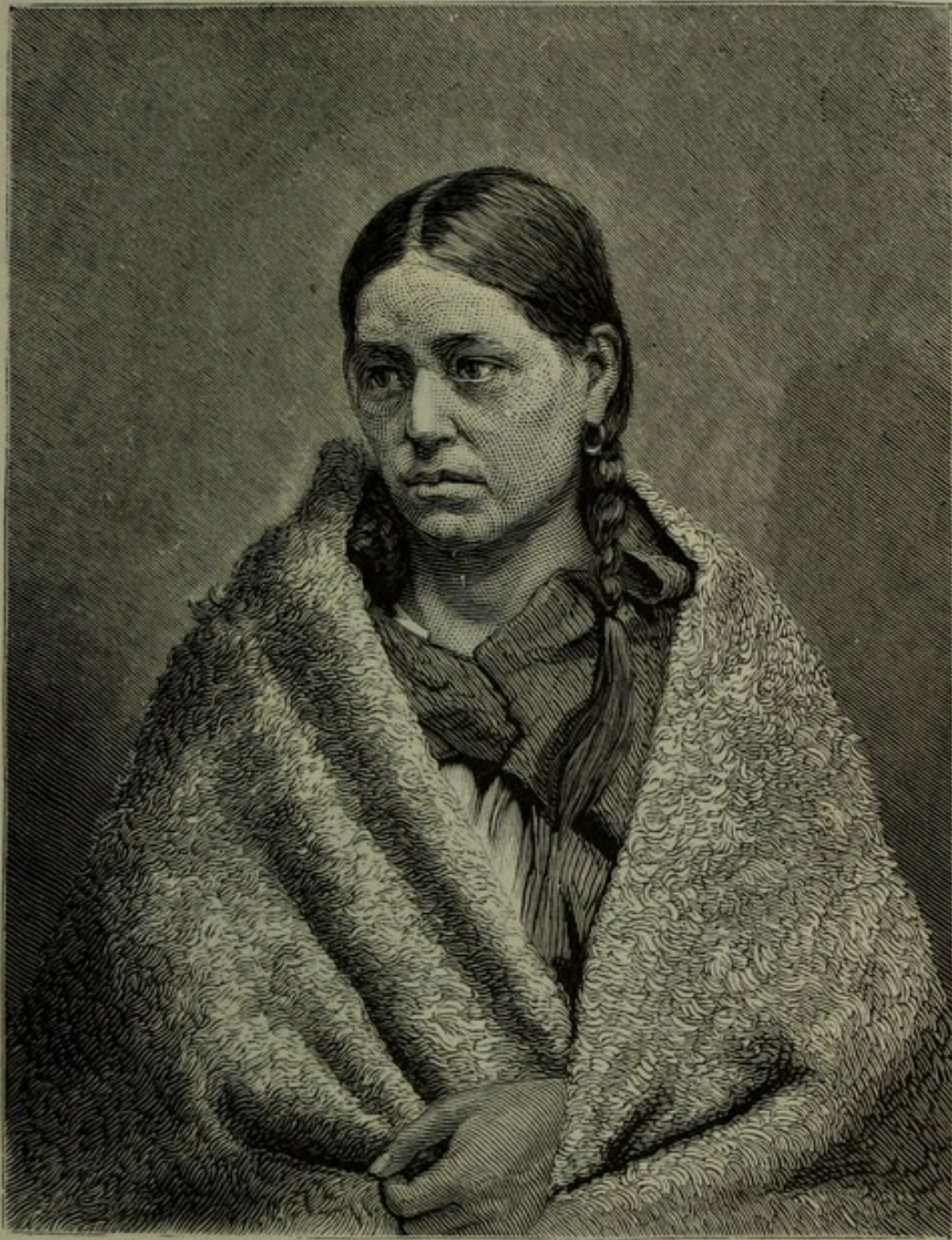
\* The Quichua language was first reduced to writing by a Dominican friar in 1560. It has great facility of expression and a complicated grammar. Many of the words are decidedly musical, as Chosíca, Vilcamáyo, Lauricócha. From the few fragments of a traditional literature which have floated down to us, we gather that the Quichua was fitted for a high and poetic class of composition above all the dialects of the New World.



Section of a Burial-tower at Sillustani.

The Aymarás probably represent an older race than the Quichuas, judging from the style of the ruins at Tiahuanaco and Sillustani. But they did not emerge into history till the third Inca, Yupanqui (1100), who annexed the region to his kingdom. They frequently revolted, and never gave up their language. They, however, joined the Quichuas in rebelling against their common oppressor, the Spaniard. But, though dwelling in amity for centuries,





Quichua Woman, Cerro de Pasco. (From a Photograph.)

they remain distinct. In Puno, the few Quichuas keep to the north side of the city; the rest are Aymarás. The entire population in Peru and Bolivia is about half a million, the majority living in Bolivia. They are a pastoral people. What else could they be in a land without timber or corn? Like the Quichuas, they are almost entirely vegetarian in diet, yet hardy, compactly built, with large



heads, broad shoulders, long bodies, short arms and legs, and small feet. Though of short stature, I noticed more powerful men than among the Quichuas; but the women are not so good-looking. The complexion is dark brown, the dwellers on the dry table-lands being darker than those in the moist valleys. The body is darker than the



Aymará Woman, Puno. (From a Photograph.)

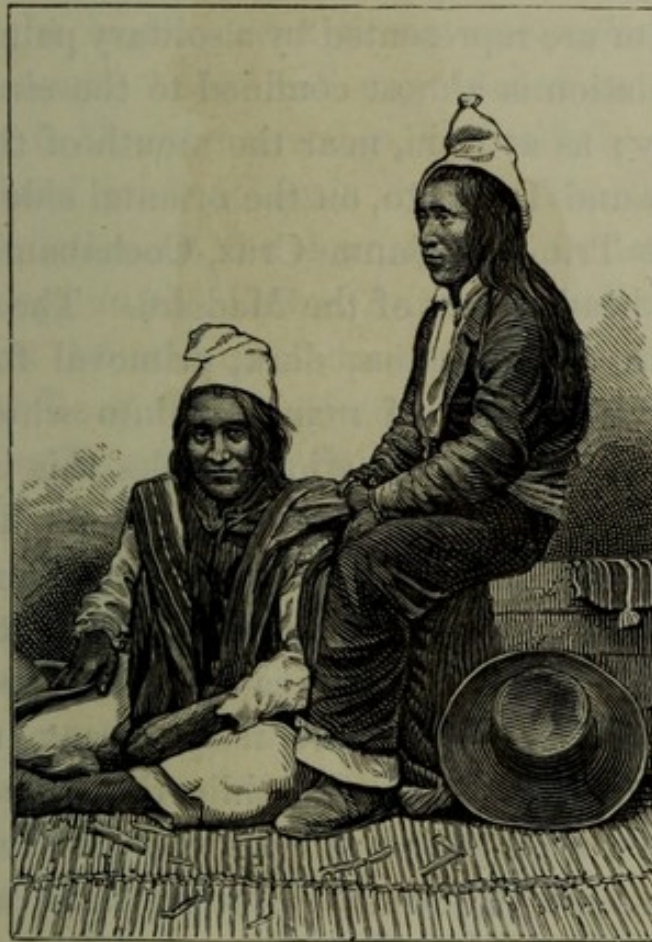
face.\* After a free mixture for three hundred years, we would expect a complete fusion of both Aymarás and Quichuas with their conquerors; but they still maintain their integrity, and outnumber the Cholos. Evidently the latter are not prolific.

The Aymarás have no great vices. Like the Quichuas,

\* None of the South American tribes have the coppery hue of the North Americans.



they are grave, and deferential to *caballeros*—always removing the hat when met on the highway. They also dress similarly: the men with a broad-brim over a skull-cap, a poncho of llama-wool (natural color), short trousers, and hide sandals; the women with a short gown, blue, brown, or black, and a shawl (*manta*) of fine wool but coarse texture, pinned with a large, spoon-shaped *topo*.



Aymará-Men, Puno. (From a Photograph.)

But the head-gear of the women is most extraordinary, and, after the cathedral, the most conspicuous object in Puno. It is of black cloth, lined with red, on a paste-board frame, expanding at the top, from which flaps and tinsel hang down. The Aymará is one of the most guttural languages in the world, and peculiar also in its labial and dental pronunciation; but it is very expressive



and precise. Paz Soldan calls it "as sonorous as the Spanish and energetic and laconic as the English."

The valley of the Amazons is probably the most thinly-peopled region on the globe, save the great deserts and the polar zones. There are not 40,000 souls along the banks of the rivers in the whole province of Amazonas and the Lower Marañon. Many of the towns marked on the maps do not exist, or are represented by a solitary palm-hut. The visible population is almost confined to the circumference of the valley; as at Pará, near the mouth of the river; at Moyobamba and Tarapoto, on the oriental side of the Andes; and at Trinidad, Santa Cruz, Cochabamba, and La Paz, on the head-waters of the Madeira. The great basin is filled with a continuous, dark, primeval forest, rarely disturbed by the hand of man, and into which daylight seldom enters. Yet imagination peoples this pathless wilderness with uncounted swarms of savages. There are, it is true, numerous clans (we can hardly call them tribes) of Indians, distinct in language, and often hostile toward each other. But many of these so-called tribes, though dignified with separate names, are insignificant in numbers, barely mustering a hundred; while the Mundurucú, the largest known tribe in the valley, does not exceed 8000—men, women, and children.\* Nor are there any remains of ancient walls to indicate a by-gone civilization, or even shell-heaps in memory of a more primitive race.†

\* Raimondi, an excellent authority, puts down the number of all the wild Indians on the Marañon—that is, in the whole province of Loreto, which stretches from Ecuador to Cuzco, and from the top of the Andes to Brazil—as from 30,000 to 40,000. To this may be added, perhaps, another 30,000 to include the civilized tribes, half-breeds, and whites.

† The pottery of Marajó and Taperinha, and the rude daubs and scratches on Ereré, exhibit nothing more than savage talent, and are evidently too recent to be numbered with "antiquities." There is a remarkable family likeness between the drawings found by Dr. Seemann at Veraguas, Central



Until the close of the tertiary age, the waters prevailed over this heart of the continent; and since then vegetation has had the mastery, leaving little chance for animal life. And until there is a decided change in the physical geography of the valley, a large part of it must remain unfit for permanent settlement, on account of the annual floods; for a rise of forty feet in the river drives the inhabitants from their summer resorts on the margin of the streams to the higher *terra firma* within the forest. In this way nomadic habits are engendered or perpetuated and poverty is almost inevitable, for half the year (flood-time) it is hard work to get a living. Furthermore, this regular inundation of the country and the lack of grassy campos (except on the Lower Amazons and the Beni region) prevent the raising of domesticated animals, which, if it does not lie at the foundation of agriculture, certainly does aid in the transition from the savage to a semi-civilized state. In this respect, the natives of Central Asia and Africa, as well as the maize-eating tribes of the Andes, have an advantage over the mandioca-eating Indians on the Amazons.

Northern genius may triumph over these physical obstacles, but the aborigines have a short future in the Amazons valley. Von Martius may believe that they are the degraded relics of a more perfect past; in other words, not a wild, but a degenerate race. But there is not a vestige of aboriginal splendor east of the Andes, not a proof that

America (*Memoirs of Anthro. Soc. of London*, vol. ii.), the characters on the rocks at the Falls of the Madeira (Keller's *Amazon and Madeira Rivers*, p. 56), and the Eréré figures published by Professor Hartt (*Am. Naturalist*, vol. v.). But they indicate no more affinity to each other than to the "Ancient British Inscriptions" described by Tate, which they resemble. The wild, unlettered men of every age and nation have similar pictographic methods. To speculate on their "deep significance" is labor thrown away—at present. The Peruvian Hydrographical Commission discovered on the Ucayali numerous hieroglyphics in a large sandstone rock, lat. 9° 9' 4" S.



the primeval men dwelling by the Great River were wiser than their descendants. And now new causes are at work arresting any attempt at development—in fact, dooming the race to final extinction. When the white man comes with his rum and disease, his law and license, the red man disappears. “Every stroke of the settler’s axe will be as



Maué Indian. (From a Photograph.)

a nail driven into the coffin of the native; for at every such stroke he will be thrust farther away from the main sources of his life—the principal rivers and hunting-grounds near them; and, as soon as the shrill whistle of the locomotive shall sound through the clearing and proud steamers rock on the rivers, he will be totally undone.”\*

\* Keller's *Amazon and Madeira*.



And then, too, in some strange way, with no apparent reason, the Indian seems to melt away just *because* his rival appears; a blank, saddened stare steals over him like a shadow—a sign that his hour has come, and he is blighted and withered like a leaf. He simply fulfills the inexorable law of suppression which hangs over every insufficient race.

The Indian is not a tropical animal. The Negro and Caucasian are far more at home on the equator. The Indian is very susceptible to changes of climate or altitude. He is very liable to sickness in going from the main river to the higher regions on the tributaries, or *vice versa*. Even a change of clothing he is not able to bear; feathers and bark are better for him than coats and calico.\* Old age and gray hairs are rare.

Mr. Bates says that fecundity among these wild tribes is of low degree, and this accords with Mr. Darwin's generalization.† But a recent and keen observer, Dr. Galt, thinks‡ that it is perfectly well established that there is no more fertile race than the pure-blooded Indians of the Marañon; that, in fact, it is excessively so. Four or five is the usual number of children in a family. It is, however, very noticeable that crossing with the white impairs this fertility, aside from the accidental causes of decrease; and absence of progeny is more conspicuous in proportion to the purity of type on both sides.

Another clear fact is the rapid loss of resemblance of the offspring to the Indian parent, the white element

\* This is because an injudicious use of clothing by those naturally unaccustomed to it increases the changes of temperature, by which they suffer. Most of the tribes distant from the towns and main river are in the *sansculottic* state.

† Darwin's *Descent of Man*, vol. i., p. 128.

‡ As expressed in a letter to the author. According to M. Hombron, the union of white and Indian is more prolific than of Negro and Indian, or even Negro and white.



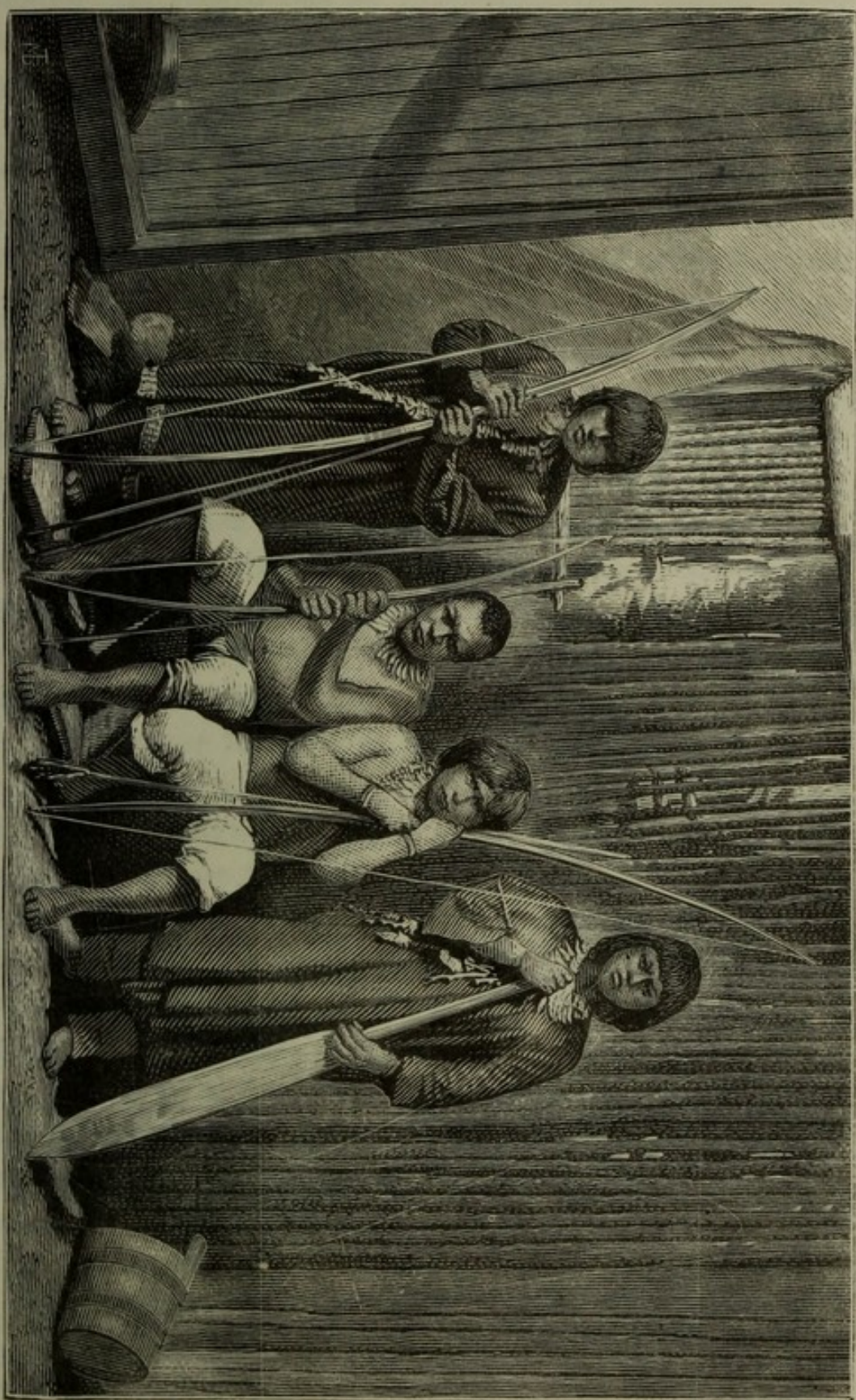
always predominating; the aboriginal seems to be merged into the Spanish in two generations. "The few cases I saw" (says Dr. Galt) "of the alliance of the Tenton and the Indian were nondescripts as to race-type, being somewhat Chinese, or like those bilious, whortle-berried offshoots to be encountered in the miserable malarial regions of our low-coast country. In fact, there is a good deal of the 'heathen Chinees' in most of the half-breeds of the Montaña; and sometimes it is difficult, when the child is of tender age, say two years, to tell whether it be a Cholo or Celestial." The mixture of the white and red races begets a sprightly people (called *Mamelucos* in Brazil, and *Cholos* in Peru), though one not so able to resist causes of disease as either of the parental types.\* It is rather unstable in character, presenting a blending of Spanish haughtiness with Indian suspiciousness, and little tenacity for any thing but their own prejudices.

It is a curious fact, observed by Wallace,† that every where in the East where the Portuguese have mixed with the native races, they have become darker in color than either of the parent stocks. The reverse is the case in South America, where the mixture of the Portuguese or Brazilian with Indian produces the Mameluco, who is not unfrequently lighter than either parent, and always lighter than the Indian. Mr. Darwin's theory of coloration by natural selection is hardly borne out on the Marañon. "It was a notorious fact, in my wanderings in the Montaña" (writes Dr. Galt), "that the Indian was more liable to miasmatic poison than the lighter races, not only from exposure, but from a more susceptible system; and al-

\* Keller, however, remarks (p. 131) that "no one will assert that the black-haired, dark-eyed mestizoes of these countries (Pernambuco, Pará, etc.) are less fit to live and work under the glowing rays of the tropical sun than the fair sons of the North."

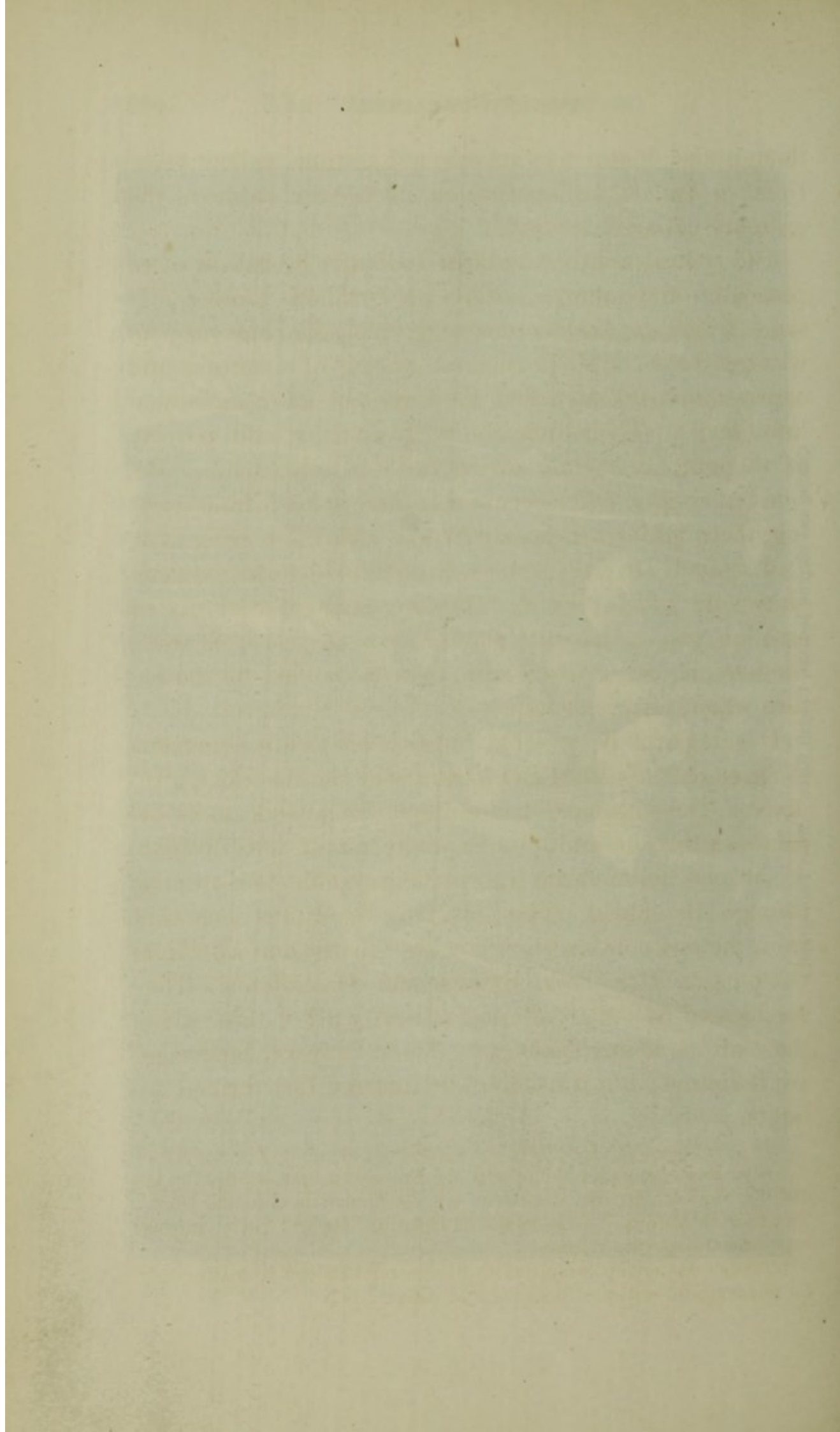
† *Malay Archipelago*, p. 341.





Comibo and Shipibo Indians, Ucayali River. (After Photograph.)







though the Negro has an exemption from yellow fever from prolonged acclimatization, he is very liable to the ordinary malarial fevers."

The typical South American Indian is by nature more peaceable and submissive than his Northern brother. If some tribes are treacherous and cruel, one has only to witness the Spanish-Portuguese system of extortion and oppression to wonder that they are not all transformed into devils. Their inflexibility, taciturnity, and poverty of thought are mainly owing to their isolated life. Besides, having no other occupation than to keep from starving, their minds are nearly blank. As Bates truly says, "all Indians have the same way of thinking, and the same objects to talk about."\* They are without curiosity or emotion, gloomy like the dense forests they love so well; for here, as every where else, man is molded by the nature which surrounds him.

It will never be possible for two consecutive travelers to agree on the names and localities of the Amazonian Indians. The vagabond tribes are shifting, while some become extinct, or multiply by a process of self-division. About one hundred are known; the rest flit like spectres through the forest. The following list differs somewhat from the one obtained by the author in 1867, as also from Castelnau's, Herndon's, Bates's, and Chandless's. They are located by the tributaries, as nearly all of those along the main river are Tapúyos.† Those known to be savages are italicized; but it need not be inferred that the rest are saints.

\* After a century and a half of trial, the Franciscan friars on the Ucayali and the Napo confess that the results are not proportioned to the efforts. The Indian's conversion is a change of idolatry. He will not or can not comprehend a spiritual religion.

† Tapúyo was originally applied to foreigners; Cabôcho is another term for an aboriginal reclaimed from the wild state.



TOCANTÍNS.—Camutás (west side), nearly or quite extinct.

XINGÚ.—Mansos, Junmas, Taconha - piue, Axij - paías, Bravas, *Aráras*, Carajas, Curiuáias, *Parárauátes*.

TAPAJÓS.—Mauhés (west side), Mundurucús (beyond first cataract), *Aráras*, Apiacares, *Nambiguaras*, *Tapanhonas*, Parexis.

MADEIRA.—*Múras*, *Aráras* (right side), Caripúnas (by the rapids), Turás, Urupás, *Parentintins*, Piarrhaus, Matanaûis; *Chacobos*, Cayuabas, Mobimas, Canichánas, and Mojos (on Mamoré); Maropas (on the Béni).

NÉGRO.—Aruaquis (left side), Macús (near Victoria), Uaüpes (above the rapids of San Gabriel—a general name for some thirty tribes). On the Rio Blanco, eighteen tribes are enumerated, among them the Caripunas and Macuxis.

PURÚS.—*Múras*, Pammarýs, Juberýs, Cipós, Catauixís, Pamanás, Caxararýs, *Apurimás*, Camijos, Canamarýs, Manetenerýs.

TEFFÉ.—Jurís, Chumánas, Jananaÿs, Vaÿphÿs, Passés, Jummás. (These names and those on the Japurá were furnished by Manuel Medina, one of the oldest pilots on the Amazons, and one of Mr. Bates's assistants.)

JURUÁ.—Catauixis, Arauas (above Gaviaõ), *Collinas*, Conibos, Catuquinas, *Nauas*.

JUTAHÍ.—Marauás, Catuquínas.

JAPURÁ.—Maria-thé, Minhas, Marÿ-phÿ, *Miránhas* (at the rapids), Curitús. Wallace mentions the Uaenambeus, or Humming-bird tribe.

TUNANTÍNS.—Caishánas.

IÇÁ.—Tucúnas (an extensive tribe extending along both banks of the Solimoens between Tabatinga and Fonte Boa), Chumánas. Across the Solimoens, back of San Paulo, dwell Tucúnas, Cambeás, Jandia-tubas, Varaÿchú, Jurÿs, Passés.



JAVARÍ.—Marúbos (east side), *Majeronas* (west side).

AMBIYÁCU.—Yáguas, *Orejónes*.

NAPO.—Left side ascending, Cotos, *Tamboriácos*, Tarapótos, *Pahayaguas*, Aguarícos or Encabellados (“the long-haired”); right side, Tacamírrys, Tachacurayes, *Hauigíres*, Copalurcos, *Záparos* (different from the tribe of the same name on the Curaráy), Mautanos. Above Coca are the Payamínos and Nápos.

NANAY.—Iquitos, Yawarán, Sapohán.

UCAYÁLI.—Cocamíllas, *Majerónas* (up the Tapichy), Coníbos (ranging from Sarayácu to the head of the Purús), Remos (around Collaria principally), Amajuácas and Sencis (inland above the Pachitea), Pirros or Chontaquíros (on the Pachitea, Tambo, and Urubamba), Sitíbos, Shipíbos, *Campas* or *Antis* (inland on the Tambo and Perene), and *Cachíbos* (on or near the Pachitea). Of these, the only frequent tribes are the Coníbos, Pirros, and Cocamíllas; the others are rarely seen except as slaves at the Ucayali missions. The Panos are extinct.

TÍGRE.—Yaméas. At Náuta and Parinári are seen the Cocámas and Omáguas (Umáüas).

HUALLÁGA.—Cocamíllas (near Lagunas), Jéveros (on Aypéne), Chasútas, Cholones, Hibitos.

PASTÁSSA.—Tucháles, Pinches, Andóas. The large tribe of *Murátos* live between the Pastassa and Moróna. “Jivaros” is probably a collective term for the wild tribes in this part of the Oriente.

SANTIAGO.—Aguarumas, *Huambísos*.

The Indian's power of language is as scanty as his thoughts. Each tribe has its own distinct patois—a loose conglomerate of words, and the words polysynthetic. Nearly all count by duplication above three or five. All the languages of the foregoing tribes, so far as examined,



have the same grammatical structure, but different words. This segregation of dialects, as Bates observes, is no doubt due to the isolated life of each group. Along the banks of the main Amazons, for a distance of 2500 miles, Tupí is the common idiom for intercommunication. West of Iquitos, we can almost say on the entire Marañon, this *lingoa geral* is not heard. On the Ucayali, the Pano (the language of an extinct tribe, and resembling the Quichua, but the most difficult of all the Indian dialects) is the basis for general intercourse on the Lower Ucayali; an adulterated Quichua, however, is now supplanting it. According to Hyde Clarke, the Guaraní, Tupí, and Omágua tongues are similar in roots and grammar to the Agaw of the Nile region. All the Indians speak with very little modulation of voice.

To illustrate the utter distinctness of the Amazonian dialects, I give the specimens shown on the following page for comparison. It will be seen that tribes contiguous are as incapable of social intercourse as those a thousand miles apart. It will also be observed that some of the words do not agree with other published vocabularies. But no one will wonder at the discrepancy who has attempted to take down a list of words from the lips of a live savage: the rapid, indistinct utterance makes it extremely difficult to express the sound by English letters.

It is a curious coincidence that while the two languages of the Campas and Pirros have scarcely one word in common, they have this similar peculiarity, in that the names of all parts of the body begin with the same letter. In Campa, N is used; in Pirro, W (Hu). In the list of words on page 343, obtained by the author from a Campa boy, there are many variations from the vocabularies of other travelers, and the singular one that the parts of the body begin with A instead of N.



COMPARISON OF AMAZONIAN VOCABULARIES.

English.	Tupi.	Quichua.	Omigua.	Tschina.	Yagua.	Cocaina.	Jivaro.	Zaparo.	Conto.	Gampá.	Pamary.	Caripana.	Cayaba.	Molina.	Marépa.
Man....	Abegusa.	Runa.	Apisara.	Iyaté.	Huano.	Yapisara.			Huovo.	Chirari.					
Woman.	Cunba.	Huarml.	Huaynaou.	Ibité.	Huaturana.	Huayna.	Quapllusa.			Chinani.	Gamú.			Itlacua.	Uui.
Father...	Ipayu.	Yaya.	Tapapa.		Yen.	Tatabua.	Papa.	Apochójo.	Papa.	Aya.	Bi-y.			Cutacha.	Yatscha.
Mother.	Imaya.	Mama.	Tamama.		Nihua.		Ahua.	Anno.	Tita.	Iua.	Mia.				
Head....	Iacan.	Uma.				Yaki.	Matu.		Huasca.	Nogoti.					
Hand....	Po.	Magui.			Samutu.	Iua.		Cutchoac.		Neco.		Mapo.	Nahuarcama.	Bamaca.	Mapo.
Foot....	Pai.	Chagui.			Nimutu.	Pinta.	Landic.	Culiboca.	Tai.	Nochapagari.			Daru.	Sejau.	Maipata.
Water ..	E.	Yacu.	Yacu.	Dechlen.	Ash.	Uné.	Dik.		Nashu.	Chura.	Pabá.	Onipassua.	Ikita.	Touui.	Jene.
Fire....	Tata.	Nina.	Tata.	Ejbeh.	Jigney.	Tata.	Prin.		Ichi.	Chichi.	Siju.	Techu.	Idore.	Vé.	Techi.
Day....	Ara.	Punchas.	Ara.	Hunehi.	Niana.	Curachi.	Ookill.			Qulabuitl.		Sabaka.			
Night...	Putuna.	Tuta.	Epuasa.	Sultan.	Nipora.	Ipsusa.	Dikpillik.			Echitiniqui.					
Sun....	Cornecé.	Yati.	Veí.	Ehajeih.	Hini.	Curachi.	Quechi.		Varl.	Porlatiri.	Safny.	Baari.	Nharanau.	Tinno.	Vari.
Moon....	Yacé.	Quilla.	Yacé.	Tahemajeh.	Arimamey.	Yasi.	Duguir.		Ushi.	Cachiri.	Massicu.	Utsche.	Iare.	Yeteo.	Ocho.
One....	Jepé.	Shuc.	Uyépé.	Hethl.	Tiqui.	Hupl.	Alaza.	Nogui.	Avicho.	Impoquiro.		Aares.			
Two....	Mococn.	Ishicay.	Mocuyka.	Tarepuah.	Nanefioi.	Moquequua.	Catuta.	Amassaniqui.	Raboi.	Pitari.		Eranbué.			
Three....	Méapjéte.	Quina.	Mosaprika.	Tonepuah.	Momuli.	Metaprika.	Cala.	Imechimaraqui.		Canuti.		Kimiescha.			



## CHAPTER XXXVI.

Game on the Amazons; or, Friends and Foes in the Animal Kingdom.

UNDER this head I will give a list of animals which are fit for food, and also such as are particularly obnoxious or formidable to man.

## ANIMALS FIT FOR FOOD.

Like most of the useful vegetable products in this region, the useful animals have not been allowed to fully develop, the normal size, as well as number, being reduced by the wholesale slaughter. So the rage for the skins of birds, deer, and tigers has, in many localities, driven the survivors into the depths of the forest. Nevertheless, there is an immense variety of life within the valley. The Marañon is a richer field, at least for commercial purposes, than the Amazons below.

Monkey-meat can not be recommended, as it borders on cannibalism; but many a traveler has been driven to it. The Lower Amazonians esteem the white-whiskered Coaitá, one of the thumbless Spider-monkeys, which has been described as four legs and a tail tied in a knot in the middle. The Maquisapa (*Ateles ater*) is also considered good eating.

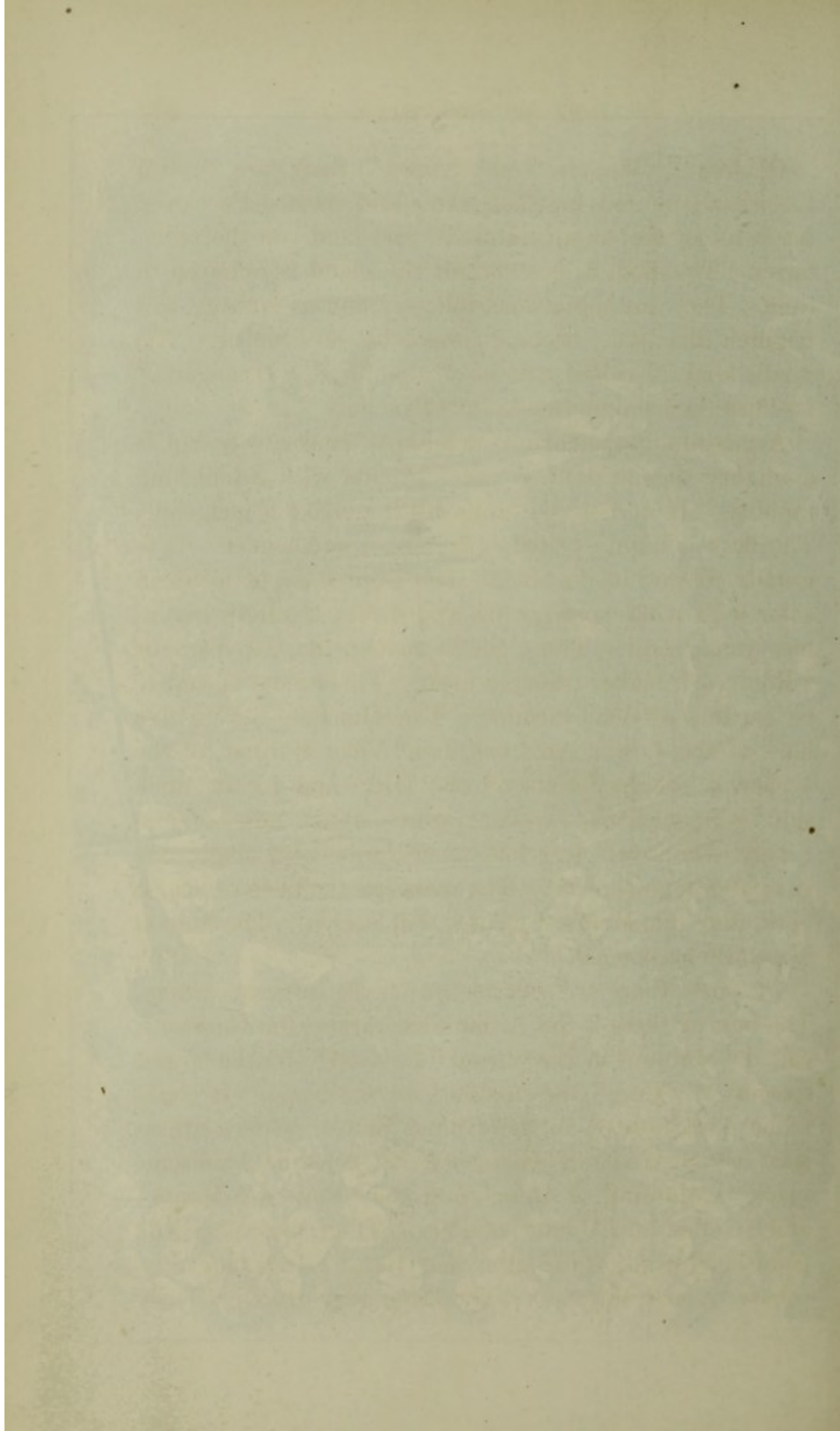
The Tapir, called "Anta," "Danta," "Gran Bestia," and "Vaca del Monte," is hunted by the Indians; but the flesh is rather dry. This is the proboscidian of the New World, and the largest indigenous animal in South America. When full grown it weighs over 500 pounds. It has a thick, tough hide, and swims well.





Hunting with the Blow-gun.







Of Deer ("Venados" or "Suassú") there are several species, all hunted for their skins and meat. Peccaries, the swine of the country, exist in vast herds up the tributaries. The flesh is excellent, if the gland is removed in time. They are pugnacious fellows; and as nothing will frighten them, they become formidable antagonists. The small kind is called "Saíno;" the large, "Huangáno." In Peru the common name is "Chanco."

Armadillo, in Quichua "Carachupa," runs slowly, but is a mighty digger, getting under ground with astonishing rapidity. If cornered, it rolls itself up like a hedgehog. The flesh is highly prized, being sweet and tender. It is usually roasted in the shell. The little Paca, of a brown color with white spots, swims and dives; the flesh resembles young pork. The gigantic rodent, the Capybara, or "Ronsaco," makes passable meat. The animal is said to be capable of domestication. The Manatee, the "Peixe boi" of the Lower Amazons, and "Vaca Marina" of the Upper, is sought for its oil or "lard," and for its thick skin, which yields excellent glue. It is now seldom found over seven feet long; but formerly a single one gave 100 pounds of oil. The meat has the taste of coarse pork, and few civilized palates will pass it. The animal is usually harpooned.

Of birds, there are gallinaceous fowls in great variety. The best of these is the Amazonian turkey, the Curassow, called "Mutum" in Brazil, and "Pouheel" (for the largest species) or "Purí" (the smallest) on the Napo. It ought to be domesticated in the United States. There are at least three kinds of Guans (*Penelope*)—the handsome black "Cujubím" of Brazil, and the "Pava del Monte" and "Gallina del Monte" of Peru. There are many wild geese and ducks; of the latter the "Pato" (*Anas moschata*) occurs on the Marañon. The large gray Heron, "Tuyú-



yu," is also eaten. The eggs of Gulls, or "Gaviotes," which are numerous as far up as the Huallága, and those of a Tern called "Tibi," are much hunted for in the sand.

Turtles, the great article of food and of commerce on the Amazons, abound in the Solimoens, and especially in the Marañon, and in all the tributaries, up to their falls;\* but they are not so plentiful as formerly. Caballococha is called the best field; 4000 were caught on one *playa* in one season. Seven kinds are known to the natives: Tartarúga grande, or Charápa (*Podocnemis expansa*), measuring three feet by two; Tartarúga cabeçúda (found in the Iça); Tracajá, or Charapilla (*Podocnemis*); Cambéhua, Aiassá, or Pitiú (an *Emys* eight or ten inches long); Matá-matá (*Chelys*); Moussouá, and Jabuti-apparéma. Of these, the first and third are eaten, the Charapilla being the richer of the two; and their oily eggs are largely used to make "mantéca," the butter of the country. The Charápa lays from 120 to 150 eggs in September; and the Charapilla from 30 to 40, a month earlier. The turtles are hunted as they go ashore to lay their eggs.† A proposal was lately made in the London *Food Journal* to establish a manufactory on the Amazons for canning turtles for exportation. Such an enterprise, joined to the immense destruction of eggs, would soon deprive the natives of their staff of life. At present, the average price of the large turtle is two dollars, and of the tracajá fifty cents. Another reptile, the ugly Iguána, which grows to the extreme length of five feet, is esteemed a great delicacy when fricasseed. Epicures compare it to frog's leg.

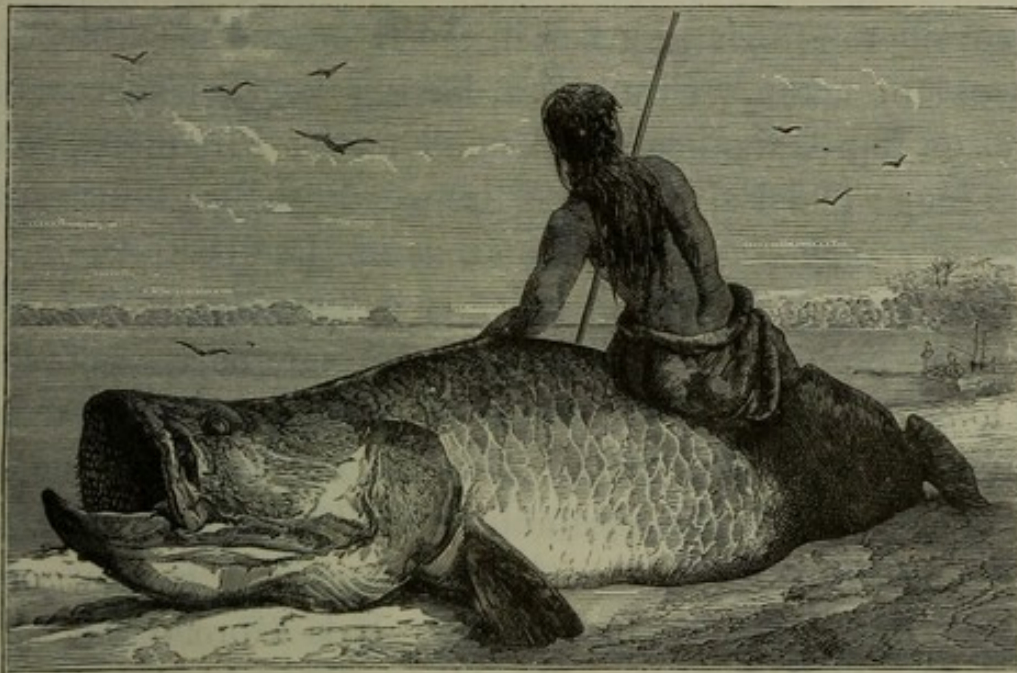
Fishes swarm in endless variety. The great majority

\* Alligators are better travelers, being found above the Falls of the Madeira, far up the Mamoré and Beni.

† Consequently the females almost exclusively are taken. The males are smaller, and go by different names. Thus, the male of the large turtle is called *Capitari*; of the Tracajá, *Anaiuri*, or *Taricaia*, in Peru. (See p. 297.)



belong to the Cat-fish family (*Siluridæ*), naked with barbels, and mainly to the group *Pimelodina*. The *Loricarias*, or cuirassed Silurids, are also comparatively numerous. Scale-fish seem to be most abundant above the falls on the tributaries, and the skin-fish below. They are usually captured by poisoning the water (as with "barbasco"), and by means of spears, arrows, and hooks. A novel method I witnessed on the Tapajos: two Indians dragged a canoe lengthwise down stream, while a third followed after with a long palm-branch which provoked the fishes to leap out of the water, most of which fell into the canoe.



The Pira-rucú.

Pira-rucú, Payshi, or Anátto (*Arapaima gigas*), the Cod-fish of the Amazons, is the universal diet on the river, and, after rubber and cacao, the most important article of trade. It is sometimes found, but rarely, ten feet long, weighing 300 pounds. It is covered with large, hard, red scales; has a smooth head, wide mouth, no barbels, and bands of rasp-like teeth in various parts of the mouth. It abounds in lagunes and clear water. Places, usually dry sand-banks,



where salting this fish for the market is made a business, are called *feitorias*—about the only factories on the river. The fish is coarse, and not relished by foreigners.

Pescáda, a scaly, silvery fish, attaining six pounds, has a delicious, white, flaky flesh, resembling fresh Cod-fish; abounds in the Solimoens and Tapajos. Tambaquí, called Gamitána on the Marañon (*Myletes*, one of the *Characini*), is a very fine, large fish, found from the Negro to the Ucayali. It is often a yard long, having a flat, keeled body, small scales, adipose fin, long anal and dorsal, narrow mouth, and large, compressed teeth, which are strikingly human. Súngaro, in Brazil Tuberún (a *Pimelodus*), is considered the largest fish in the river, and is edible, but is seldom taken. Pira-arára, having long barbels, small eyes on top of the head, and small teeth; Pira-piéna, four feet long; and Peixe-lenha (“fire-wood fish”), are also species of *Pimelodus* in the Amazons of Brazil.

Tucunaré (*Cichla temensis*) is a superior, edible fish from the Solimoens, about a foot long, one quarter as broad as long, with small scales, three black vertical bands, truncated tail, and small teeth. Corvína, or Rumi-chállua, is another excellent fish resembling the Perch. Piránha, or Pygo, “Scissor-fish” (one of the *Salmonidæ*), is very good eating, but is dreaded by bathers. It is a broad fish with sharp, projecting teeth. There are three kinds—black, white, and red; the first is the best, and is two feet long. Acará-uassú (*Mesonauta*), from the Solimoens and Marañon, is eight inches long, black-banded and spiny-finned, and of fine quality. Acarí, two kinds, six and twenty inches long, are *Loricaria* from the Middle and Lower Amazons. Pira-pitinga, or “Painted Fish,” is a Silurid as large as the Tambaquí in the Solimoens; and with it occurs the Pira-catinga, or “Fetid Fish,” about twenty inches long, and a savage biter.



In the Solimoens and its tributaries are also found the following: Curimotá (*Anodus Amazonum*), very highly esteemed, characterized by a short dorsal fin in the middle of the body, small mouth, and no teeth in lower jaw; prefers the rough waters. Surubím, or Pintádo, a *Platystoma*, four feet long, with six barbels, long snout, upper jaw projecting, forked tail, short spiny dorsal, and small adipose fin. Pira-uáca, the *Platystoma planiceps* of Agassiz, same size and form as preceding. Pira-mutába, a *Pirramutana*, twenty inches in length, with long adipose fin; occurs also in the Negro and Madeira. Mandubí, fifteen inches long. Jandiá (*Platystoma spatula*), a spotted Silurid three feet long; found also in the Tapajos. Jáu, akin to Pira-arára, but shorter, with mottled green back and double spots; occurs also in the Tapajos, Juraquí, and Mamoré, ten inches long; the latter very excellent. Mamai-acú, covered with cuirass and spines. Besides, the little Uaracú and Matupirí, and three kinds of Sardinia.

Pirahíva, a skin-fish with mackerel-tail, said to attain sixty pounds, is found in the Tapajos; also the Aramassá, a small flat-fish. Candirú is the name of two eel-like fishes; and is also applied to three species of *Serrasalmo*, all dreaded by bathers. Parahýba is a large edible fish in the Negro. Doráda, Sábalo, Sapamáma, Cúnche, Paña, Puñuysíqui, and Uitochálua are Rio Mayo fishes. Doráda, a kind of Tench, and Sábalo, a Carp, are said to occur also in the Upper Madeira.

Besides the finny tribe, the natives eat Crabs, of which two kinds, Caranguejo and Camarão, are seen in the Solimoens; and especially Fresh-water Clams (*Anodontas*) and Apple-shells (*Ampullaria*), which abound from Pará to Moyobamba.



## FORMIDABLE ANIMALS.

After two journeys across the continent, my experience in meeting with venomous snakes and lurking wild beasts is so limited that I find it impossible to make a frightful paragraph under this head. The conclusion in my own mind is that my experience is due, not to my good luck, but to their absence.

Pumas, Jaguars, and Tiger-cats slink through the dense forest, and are hunted for their skins. But the one, solitary live specimen which I saw in South America was in the arms of its owner—tame as a kitten!\* Bates, after eleven years of residence, met only two. The Indians call the Jaguar "The Devil's Beast," and speak of nine kinds. The black is the most formidable animal on the continent, and it is dangerous to meet one alone. They are most common up the river. They are hunted by strings of Indians shouting and driving the game before them into a narrow strip of land.

Alligators, or Caymans, are very common, except on the Lower Amazons. There are three or four kinds, of which the largest, called "Jacaré-uassú," is twenty feet long. On land it waddles like a duck; but in the water it is agile and cunning. It can count more victims than any other animal in the valley. The vulnerable part is a small spot behind the eyes. Electric Eels abound, particularly in the stagnant bays of the Brazilian rivers. The electric organs are along each side of the lower part of the tail. I have seen, also, hosts of leeches in the Negro. The natives accuse a slender Silurid fish (*Vandellia*) of

\* Brazilians, especially half-castes, have a passion for tamed animals. They pet not only monkeys and parrots, but also the tapir, peccary, deer, paca, agouti, macaw, curassow, toucan, and iguana. The Felidæ of South America generally have spotted skins, while their relations in North America seldom have.



entering the nether openings of individuals while bathing; but I did not meet with one confirmatory case. Vampire Bats, measuring two feet in expanse, are not uncommon on the Middle Amazons; but they are more diabolical in appearance than in heart. Bates considers them the most harmless of bats. It is true, however, that small, gray *Phyllostomas* and large-eared *Dysopes* do bleed men and beasts of burden.

The most unwelcome snakes are—the spotted Jararacá (*Craspedocephalus atrox*) and the Surucucú (*Lachesis mutus*) of the Lower Amazons and Upper Negro; the green Urrito-machácuí, or “Parrot Snake;” large, yellowish Humanínda, and little brown-banded Hergón of the Marañon; the beautiful Corál-snakes, vermilion, with black bands, frequenting cacao-plantations; and Rattle-snakes in the dry forests. There are few venomous species at the altitude of 3000 feet, and none over 6000.\* The Anaconda, or Sucurujú (*Eunectes murinus*) is not venomous, and rarely attacks man. It is, however, more formidable than the Boa-constrictor, the Jiboa of the natives. Anacondas have occasionally been seen twenty-six feet long; and the hoofs of horses have been found in the excrements.

After Snakes, the large hairy Spiders (especially the *Mygale avicularia*, two inches long, called by natives “Crab-spiders”) are most to be dreaded, for they lurk anywhere, and their bite is often fatal. Centipedes and Scorpions are repulsive enough, but their wound is seldom dangerous. The largest Centipede I have heard of measured eleven inches. “After twelve years in the tropics (says

\* A cup of strong coffee, brandy, or some other diffusive stimulant is efficacious to keep up the action of the heart, when bitten. I suggest, also, a dose of quinine. But the wound should be cauterized. After a few minutes, any external application, as ammonia, is of no use. All Indians have the superstition that it is unlucky for a woman to kill a snake. Pigs and Trumpet-birds are natural enemies of snakes.



Wallace), I have never been bitten or stung by scorpion, spider, or centipede."

#### INSECT PLAGUES.

But the most numerous and most dreaded of all animals on the Middle Amazons are the Insects. Nearly all kinds of articulate life here have either sting or bite. The strong trade-wind keeps the Lower Amazons clear of the winged pests; but soon after leaving Manáos, and especially on the Marañon in the rainy season, the traveler becomes intimately acquainted with half a dozen insects of torture: (1) The sanguinary Mosquito (so called in English America), the Carapaná of Brazilians, and Zancúdo of Spanish Americans. The Ticuna Indians give it the very expressive name of Ah!\* There are several species, most of them working at night; but one black fellow with white feet is diurnal. They are most numerous in damp weather. Dr. Spruce experimented upon himself, and found that he lost, by letting the blood-letters have their own way, three ounces of blood per day. Great is the joy of their tiny souls when a fresh traveler comes along. The ceaseless irritation of these ubiquitous creatures makes life almost intolerable. The great Cortez, after all his victories, could not forget his struggles with these despicable enemies he could not conquer. Scorpions with cocked tails, spiders six inches in diameter, and centipedes running on all dozens, are not half so bad as a cloud of mosquitoes. I have yet to find the man who can see any useful or ornamental purpose in their creation. (2) The Piúm, or Sand-fly, a species of *Trombidium* called Mosquito in Peru. It is a minute, dark-colored dipter with two triangular horny

\* The Indians have a special name for every strikingly good or evil animal or plant. Thus, the Tupí has fifteen words for as many species of Bees. Objects, however, not attractive in any sense are expressed under one general term.

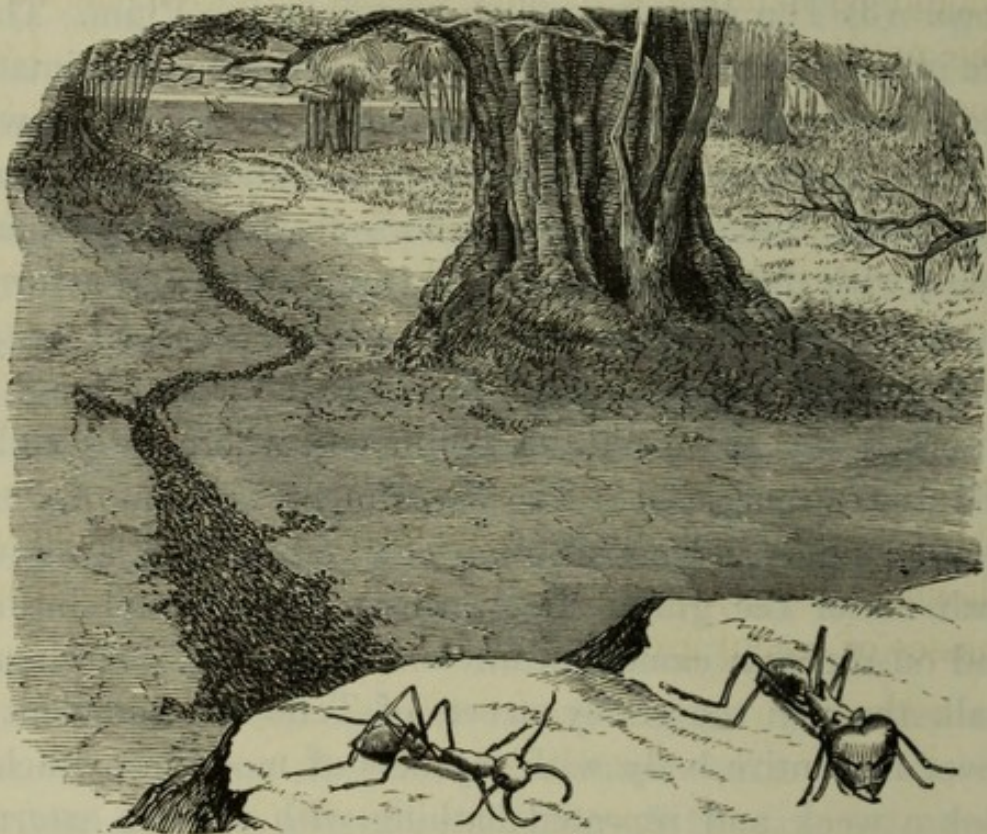


lancets, which leave a small, circular red spot on the skin. It works by day, relieving the mosquito at sunrise. It is the great scourge of the Amazons. Many a paradisaic spot is converted into an Inferno by their presence. There are several species, which follow one another in succession through the day, all of them being diurnal. Their favorite region is said to be on the Cassiquiare and Upper Orinoco. (3) The Maruím, which resembles the Piúm. They are infinitely numerous on the Juruá. Humboldt estimated there were a million to a cubic foot of air where he was. (4) The Mutúca, called Tábono on the Marañon (*Hadaus lepidotus*), resembling a small horse-fly, of a bronze-black color, with the tips of the wings transparent, and a formidable proboscis. Bates mentions another species (*Pangonia*) on the Tapajos, with a lancet half an inch long. I observed the same on the Solimoens, where it is called "Mutúca grande." (5) The Moquím, or Ysanguí of Peruvians, a microscopic scarlet *Acarus*, resembling a minute crab under the glass. It swarms on weeds and bushes, and on the skin causes an intolerable itching. An hour's walk through the grassy streets of Teffé was sufficient to cover my entire body with myriads of moquíms, which it took a week and repeated bathing with rum to exterminate. (6) Carapátos, or Ticks (*Ixodes*), which mount to the tips of blades of grass, attach themselves to the clothes of passers-by, and bury their jaws and heads so deeply in the flesh that it is difficult to remove them without leaving the proboscis behind to fret and fester. In sucking one's blood, they cause no pain; but serious sores, even ulcers, often result. The natives told me that they would never pass our india-rubber. I saw none on the Amazons, though plenty in Chachapoyas; but Bates met them in dry places on the Lower Amazons.

These few forms of insect life must forever hinder the



settlement of the valley. It is true, however, that they have their migrations. Fonte Boa, for example, the paradise of mosquitoes in Bates's time, is now nearly free from them. Besides these, there are Ants (*Cici* in Quichua) innumerable in species and individuals, and of all sizes, from the little red ant of the houses to the mammoth Tokandéra, an inch and a half long. The latter, called Isúla



An Army of Eciton Ants.

in Peru, is a species of *Cryptocerus*; and I traced it from Santarem to Moyobamba. It bites fiercely, but rarely causes death. A single bite laid a man up in his hammock for two days; but these tropical people take to their hammocks very easily. Dr. Spruce likens the pain to that of a hundred thousand nettles. My battle with Ecitons (Tanóca of the Indians) is given on page 225. They both bite and sting. On the Tapajós lives the terrible Fire-ant ("Formiga do fogo"), whose sting is likened to the puncture of a red-hot needle. The Saübas are not carnivorous,



but they make agriculture almost impossible. The only natural enemy of ants seems to be the Ant-eater, and this animal is rather rare; so the ants are allowed to increase and multiply. The only means of safety is isolation by water. There are black and yellow Wasps (*Monedula*); but as they prey upon Mutúcas and Cockroaches, we will say nothing against them. The large hairy Caterpillars should be handled with care, as the irritation caused by the nettling hairs is sometimes a serious matter. Cockroaches are great pests in the villages. Lice find a congenial home on the unwashed Indians of every tribe, but particularly the Andean. Jiggers and Fleas prefer dry, sandy localities; they are accordingly most abounding on the mountains. The Pacific slope is worthy of being called flea-dom. After passing a night in any Indian hut with these insatiate creatures, you are glad, as the author of *Eothen* said after stopping at fleay Tiberias, to pick up the wretched remains of your body long before morning dawns. In general, vermin are most common in wildernesses of recent growth and in sandy places.



## CHAPTER XXXVII.

## The Valuable Woods in the Valley of the Amazons.

How to meet the growing demand for timber is a question of considerable interest and importance. It rises to the dignity of a national topic. While the population of the United States increases in a decade thirty-five per cent., the increase of the consumption of wood is sixty-three per cent. England imports wood to the value of \$60,000,000, or three times as much as her home produce. The temperate zones supply most of the woods of construction, while nearly all the ornamental woods come from tropical countries. No hard timber is found in the United States west of the one hundredth meridian, and all the great forests of South America are cisandine.

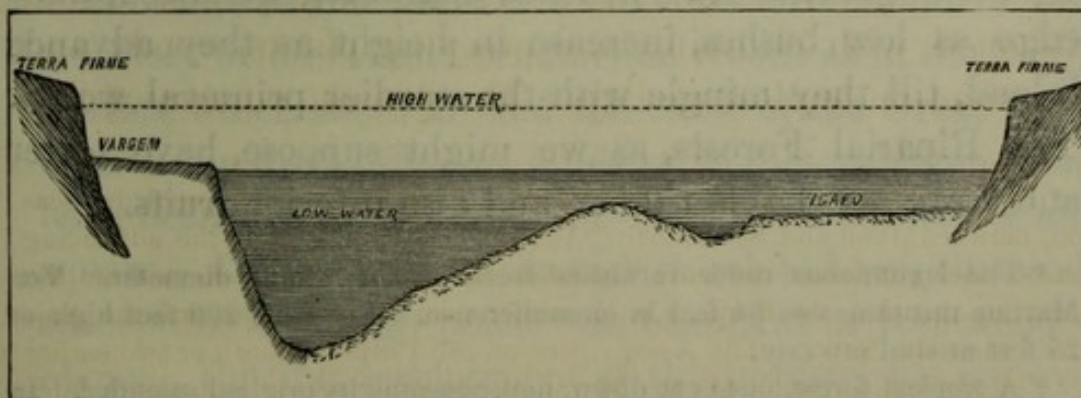
No spot on the globe contains so much vegetable matter as the valley of the Amazons. In it we may draw a circle a thousand miles in diameter, which will include an evergreen forest,\* broken only by the rivers and a few grassy *campos*. There is a most bewildering diversity of grand and beautiful trees—a wild, unconquered race of vegetable giants—draped, festooned, corded, matted, and ribboned with climbing and creeping plants, woody and succulent, in endless variety. The densest portion of this

\* In Central Brazil, most of the trees lose their leaves in the cool dry season, between June and September. It is a singular fact that the advancing season does not follow the sun; but while the sun is coming down from the northern altitudes, the Purús, *e.g.*, is earlier than the Amazons, and the Amazons than the Napo. The Assaï ripens on the Purús a month or two earlier than on the main river. On the Marañon, the rainy season is a month later than on the Solimoens.



mass of verdure is along the base of the Andes, where the moisture and temperature are combined in the right proportion — such as existed, doubtless, in the carboniferous age.

The flowers are on the top. On many of the trees, not a single blossom is to be found at a less height than one hundred feet. The glory of the forest can be seen only by sailing in a balloon over the undulating, flowery surface above. There, too, in that green cloud are the insects and birds and monkeys. You are in "the empty nave of the cathedral, and the service is being celebrated aloft in the blazing roof." In place of mosses and lichens, the trunks and boughs are bearded with epiphytic orchids, ferns, *tilandsias*, cactuses, etc., frequently forming hanging gardens of great beauty. In ascending the river, the traveler, even if an acute botanist, is rarely able to distinguish individual trees, save the Palms and certain lofty, dome-shaped crowns; for the branches are so thoroughly interwoven and so densely veiled with twiners and epiphytes, that one sees little more than a green wall. He might roam a hundred years in the Amazons thicket, and at the end find it impossible to classify the myriad, crowded, competing shapes of vegetation. The roots, even of the giants, are not deep. The temperature of the interior of the forest is generally lower than by the river-bank.



Deposits in the Amazons Valley.



The Amazonian sylvia is naturally divided into: 1st. The Great or Virgin Forests (*Caa-guaçú* of the Brazilians), which clothe the *terra firma* beyond the reach of inundations, and constitute the great mass of the vegetation. Here grow the fine timber-trees and the most lordly trunks, as the Brazil-nut-trees.\* The Palms are peculiar and few. 2d. The Low or White Forests (*Caa-tinga*), rich and varied, growing on the *vargem*, or occasionally flooded tracts. Palms, pao-mulatto, and wild cacao are characteristic forms. 3d. The Riparial Forests (*Ygapú*) on lowlands bordering the rivers, and laid under water several months in the year. The soil is the most recent alluvium. Here thrive herbaceous plants, reeds, broad-leaved heliconias, and soft-wooded trees, as embaübas. Besides these are the second-growth forests (*Caa-puéra*)† and the scrubby *campos*. The woods growing in the salt marshes near Pará have the general name of *Mangues*, and consist mostly of Mangroves and Avicennias. The Virgin Forests are distinct “by the sombre foliage of the densely-packed, lofty trees, out of which stand—like the cupolas, spires, and turrets of a large city—dome-shaped or pyramidal or flat-topped crowns of still loftier trees, overtopping even the tallest palms.” The Riparial are marked by the varied tints of the foliage, by the greater abundance of palms and lianas, and by the humbler growth of the trees generally, which, beginning at the water’s edge as low bushes, increase in height as they advance inland, till they mingle with the sturdier primeval woods. The Riparial Forests, as we might suppose, have softer and more perishable timber, and also inferior fruits.

\* The leguminous order furnishes trees of the largest diameter. Von Martius mentions one 84 feet in circumference. But trees 200 feet high or 25 feet around are rare.

† A tropical forest, once cut down, never regains its original splendor. In the second growth we find different species of inferior size.





A Giant of the Forest

Nowhere in the world is there such an amount or such a variety of useful and ornamental woods as in the Virgin Forests which stand around the basin of the Great River. Over a hundred different kinds of highly valuable woods have been cut from a piece of land less than half a mile square. Of these many were dark-colored veined woods, susceptible of a high polish—as beautiful as rose-wood or ebony. But the development of this industry has not even begun. There are only two saw-mills on the river be-



tween Pará and the Andes—namely, at Manáos and Iquitos. When the natives want a plank, they cut down a tree and hew it with a hatchet. Common cedar or itaüba boards, sixteen feet long and eight inches wide, are worth \$18 a dozen at Manáos, and cabinet woods bring 45 cents a metre. Several hundred kinds of choice woods, hard and heavy, finely tinted and close-grained, abound, with water-power on every tributary, and a highway by river and ocean to Europe and America; yet enough goes to rot every year to enrich an empire. It is a singular fact that dead timber is rarely to be seen in the heart of the Great Forest. It seems to go to dust almost immediately after its fall, the process of destruction being accelerated by insects. The like rapid decay of fallen timber was noticed by Tennent in Ceylon.

There are three drawbacks to lumbering on the Amazons: first, the scarcity of labor; second, the high export duty; and, third, the fact that the trees of any one kind, though abundant, are scattered. While we have our forests of oak, pine, and hemlock, in the tropics diversity is the law. Rarely do we see half a dozen trees of the same species together.\*

The design of this chapter is to give some observations made by the writer during two voyages up and down the Great River. One discovery made was the difficulty of obtaining reliable information from the natives; and another was the great confusion caused by the inhabitants of different provinces calling the same tree by different names. Then, too, most of the forest trees are unknown

\* The groves of Mirití palms on the Lower Amazons are exceptional. In the tropics, says Charles Kingsley, "no two plants seem alike. Stems rough, smooth, prickly, round, fluted, stilted, upright, sloping, branched, arched, jointed, opposite-leaved, alternate-leaved, leafless, or covered with leaves of every conceivable pattern, are jumbled together, till the eye and brain are tired of continually asking, What next?"



to science, having never been seen by botanists in flower. So far as determined, they are referred to their proper order and genus. Of the others, some, though bearing distinct names, may be identical.

CEDRO, the Brazilian Mahogany.—It is not coniferous, and, therefore, not a true cedar; nor is it always fragrant, like the American cedar of Central America. It is one of the *Cedrelaceæ*; but whether it is a variety of *C. odorata*



Leaves and Flowers of the Cedro.

or a distinct *C. Brasiliensis* is not certain. Some surmise that it is the *Icica altissima*, of the Myrrh order. The wood is somewhat resinous, fragile, and porous, often undulating, seldom aromatic; and as it floats on water (its specific gravity ranging between 0.6 and 0.7), while the



majority of forest trees sink, it is the main wood seen floating down the Amazons. It is the most common timber of the country—the pine of Brazil and Peru—and grows all along the river. That growing on high ground is the best. Trees have been found seven feet in diameter and one hundred high. There are two varieties—the white or yellow, which is worthless, and the red, which is much used for cabinet-work and canoe-building. At Moyobamba they speak of three kinds—Cedro (white), Huasca-cedro (red), and Rumi-cedro (bright red). In the Montaña grows also the Cedron macho (*Huertea grandulosa*), a valuable wood. The flowers of the Cedro are small and white, grouped in terminal panicles. The leaves are pinnate and opposite. The wood is not proof against insects.

ACAPÚ, the “Wacapou” or “Black Heart” of foreigners.—It is the *Andira aubletii*, one of the *Leguminosæ*. This is the most durable ship-timber in Amazonia, resisting the teredo. Inland it is largely used as uprights in construction. There are two kinds—that of *terra firma* (the best) and that of the lowlands. The wood is heavy, hard, and of a light-brown color, sometimes mottled brown and white. It has a lofty, naked trunk, yielding clear timber sixty feet long. Acapú is the pride of the Brazilians, being invaluable in the naval art, and admirably fitted for piles and railroad-ties, as it endures moisture and is tough. The leaves are alternate; the flowers in panicles. It grows the whole length of the main river, and I have seen it on the Huallága.

SABORÁNA.—This fine wood resembles Acapú, but does not appear to be so heavy. I have found it only on the Lower Amazons. It is used by the carpenters of Manáos.

ITAÜBA, or ICAÜBA, the “Stone-wood” of the Amazons, belonging to the Laurels.—One of the most valuable and most common woods in the valley. It is hard, heavy, and



firm, and is largely used in building schooners and for flooring houses. As ship-timber it is as durable as teak. It often occurs four feet through and from thirty to sixty feet high. There are two kinds—yellow and black. The former, *I. amarella*, resembles maple; the other, *I. preta*, is very hard, dark-colored, and close-grained. Both grow from the Tapajos to the Huallága.

MOIRA-PINÍMA, the “Tortoise-shell-wood” or “Snake-wood” of dealers (*moira* or *muira* is Tupí for wood).—It is called also “Buracurra,” “Paira,” and “Pao-tartaruga.” This is probably the most beautiful wood in the world, but is unfortunately very scarce. It is the heart (about six inches diameter) of a tree which is ten feet in circumference and sixty feet high. It belongs to the same order as the Bread Fruit, and is the *Brosimum discolor* of Gama, but the *Piratinera Guianensis* of English botanists. The outer wood is white and hard; but the heart is a rich chestnut brown, mottled with cloudy, amber-colored spots, and is the densest wood in Brazil, if not in the world—its specific gravity being 1.358—but is rather brittle. It used to come to market in sticks about three inches in diameter and a yard in length, and even these were often worm-eaten and otherwise imperfect. It was worked up into canes and other fancy articles. But at present not a stick or cane of the genuine article is sold in Pará or Manáos. Imitations are made by staining the Palo de Sangre. It formerly grew on the Tapajos and the Trombetes; but it is now found only up the Rio Branco, back from the river, in the depths of the forest, near the boundary-line of English Guiana. The bark yields a milk. The leaves are alternate, stiff, elliptical, and about two and a half inches long. Flowers monœcious.

MOIRA-COATIÁRA, or “Striped Wood.”—This is probably a leguminous tree, of the genus *Machærium*. It attains



the height of from sixty to one hundred feet, but the logs as obtained by the natives are only about ten feet long and one foot through. The wood is the central part, and is close-grained, richly streaked with chocolate brown on a yellow ground. The bark is a dirty yellow. It abounds on the Tapajos, and very likely throughout the Brazilian Amazons. I have not seen it above Fonte Boa. *Query*.—Is the Coatiára related to the Itaka wood of Guiana?

MOIRA-PUSHÚRA. — I can say little of this wood, as I only heard of it at Santarem, where it grows. It resembles black walnut, and is made into furniture. The largest trees are two feet through.

MOIRA-PIRÁNGA, or "Redwood."—This is the *Mimusops balata* (one of the *Sapotaceæ*), and belongs, therefore, to the same genus as the Bullet-tree of Guiana and the Maçarandúba. The wood is of a rich cherry-red color, sometimes with a violet cast, solid, heavy, and takes a high polish. It is used by the Indians for battle-axes, and, as it is very durable, it promises to be well adapted for ship-building. The trunk is sixty feet long and six feet in diameter. It yields a milky juice very similar to gutta-percha (which belongs to the same order), and may prove of commercial value. A single tree, it is said, will give over 400 grams. It has a dark-gray bark with emetic properties, aromatic flowers, oily seeds, and alternate elliptical leaves. It grows chiefly on the Rio Japurá, Rio Negro, and Solimoens, but is found also in French Guiana and Martinique. This wood held a prominent place in the Paris Exposition.

MOIRA-TINGA, the "White or King Tree."—This is one of the most conspicuous trees on the Amazons, rising from 90 to 120 feet, and of proportional diameter. The timber, however, is not of first quality—neither compact nor enduring. The milk which exudes is used for rheumatism.



It is a leguminous tree. I did not notice it on the Marañon.

MOIRA-TAUA.—I can not speak of the relations of this tree, having seen only the wood. This is heavy and light-colored, but rather coarse-grained. It grows at Fonte Boa. It is possible that it is the same as the Tauarí of the Marañon (Couratari), which has a dark-red heart, very dense and heavy, and well fitted for construction. The inner bark of the Tauarí separates into thin, papery layers, much used for cigarettes.

PALO DE CRUZ, or "Wood of the Cross," the *Lignum-vitæ* of Brazil.—It is a comparatively small tree (leguminous), not over two feet in diameter, consisting of a white wood inclosing a black and intensely hard heart, and from the fancied cruciform section it sometimes presents it derives its name. It is susceptible of a fine polish, and is chiefly made into canes. It is almost confined to Pebas, on the Marañon.

PALO DE SANGRE, or "Blood-wood."—This is a very beautiful wood, of a red color, somewhat lighter than that of Moira-piránga, fine-grained, hard, and receiving a good polish. The tree, which has a white bark, grows only on the Marañon and its tributaries, particularly near the foot of the Andes.

PÁO D'ARCO, or MOIRA-APÁRA of the Indians (by whom it is used for bows—hence the name).—The tree (a *Bignonia*) is very tall and slender, with a rough bark. There are two kinds—the red and the black. The latter is the best, and is as useful and durable as hickory. It is found on the Solimoens, and even in the southern province of Espírito Santo.

PÁO-FERRO, or "Iron-wood," called also JUCÁ.—This is among the most important woods of the South American forest. It is a leguminous tree of medium height—the



*Cæsalpinea ferrea* of science. The wood is reddish black, very hard and heavy (sp. gr. 1.086), and durable under water or in wet places. It is admirably fitted for all kinds of construction—as houses, bridges, ships, etc. The leaves are opposite, and the racemose flowers yellow. Páo-ferro grows on the Rio Negro and the Lower Amazons. The Páo-ferro of Rio is *Swartzia tomentosa*.

PÁO-SETÍM, or “Satin-wood.”—This precious wood is very close-grained, heavy, and durable, of a deep-yellow color, and is used for veneering, inlaying, picture-frames, etc. It has more lustre than the Oriental Satin-wood (*Chloroxylon*), and belongs to an entirely different order—the *Ebenaceæ*. It is probably the same species (*Maba Guianensis*) as the West Indian. Logs can be procured eight inches square and ten feet long. It is said to grow in Peru.

PÁO-BRASIL, or “Brazil-wood,” known among the Tupí-speaking tribes as Ibira-pitánga (Red-wood), and doubtless identical with the Puna-caspa on the Huallága.—Botanists call it *Cæsalpinea echinata*, a leguminous species, related to Páo-ferro. The leaves are bipinnate, the flowers are in racemes, and the branches spinous. The bark is reddish, the wood fiery red, compact, tough, and heavy, having a specific gravity of 1.129. It is very durable in moist grounds, and would be very serviceable in the construction of railroads and bridges. It is chiefly valuable, however, for its dye. It has a wide range, growing around Rio, at Pernambuco, along the main Amazons, and up the Napo and Huallága.

PÁO-MULATTO, called Capiróna on the Marañon.—It is allied to the Cinchonas (*Eukylista Spruceana*), and grows every where on the flooded lands of the Amazons, far up the Andean tributaries, to the altitude of 2000 feet. It is a tall, elegant tree (from eighty to one hundred feet) con-



spicuous from its polished dark-green trunk. It bears fragrant corymbs of small, white flowers. The wood is light and tough, and is used for beams in houses. But, from its abundance and the readiness with which it burns while green, it supplies most of the fuel consumed by the Amazonian steamers. It is probably the same tree that the Napo Indians call *Sindicaspa*, meaning "the wood that burns," a special provision in these damp forests, where every thing is dripping with moisture.

PÁO-BUSHA resembles ash, but is of little worth as timber. It grows on the Lower Amazons and Rio Negro.

PÁO-SANTO, or "Holy-wood"—(*Guaiacum officinale*). Much used in carving images. Called also "Guayacán" on the Andes, to the slopes of which it is confined.

PÁO-PRETO, or "Black-wood."—This name, so far as we can learn, does not belong to a definite species, but is applied to several dark-colored woods growing along the whole river. The ebony heart of the Palo de Cruz is a Páo-preto. The Palo-prieto of Mexico has a smooth, green bark, tall straight trunk, and evergreen foliage.

PÁO-ROSA, or "Rose-wood."—There is some confusion as to the trees furnishing this fine timber, probably arising from the fact that several distinct kinds yield a Rose-wood. The true Páo-rosa is a leguminous tree—*Triptolomea* (formerly *Physocalymma*) *floribunda*. The wood is rose-colored, fragrant, with a hard, close texture, well fitting it for construction and cabinet-work. The best locality is on the Rio Japurá. The Rose-wood of Guiana is a laurel. *Cabiuna*, or "Bois de Palissandre," belongs to Southern Brazil.

JACARANDÁ, the "Rose-wood" of commerce (*Bignonia Brasiliana* of most botanists; by others considered a leguminous tree). Evidently several kinds of timber bear this name. One is a *Macherium*, and another *Dolbergia*.



Rose-wood exhibits large elongated zones of black irregular lines on a reddish-brown ground of various tints and high lustre. The grain varies from coarse to fine. It is limited to the Lower Amazons and to Eastern Brazil. The Jacarandá branco of Southern Brazil is quite another wood—white, knotty, light, and fragile (the *Platypodium elegans*).

SAMAÜMA, or *Eriodendron*, another monarch of the forest, having a lofty, dome-shaped crown, and rarely putting forth a branch until it has overtopped all the trees around. It has been found 200 feet high. The timber, however, is not of prime quality. It is most abundant on the Lower Amazons.

JUTAHÍ, or JETAHY, "Copal-wood."—This also is a patriarch of the forest, from 150 to 180 feet high, with a gigantic trunk, sometimes sixty feet around and supported by huge buttresses. Generally, however, the trunk is forty feet long and three or four feet in diameter. The bark resembles that of the English Oak. It is a *Hymenæa*, bearing two specific names, *Mirabilis* and *Martianna*; probably not the *H. Courbaril*, or West Indian Locust-tree. There are two kinds: the high yields copal; the low has a poisonous juice. The wood is dark-colored, and intensely hard, tough, and dense. It is used for rollers and cogs in sugar-mills, for beams and planks in heavy engine-work, and for treenails in planking vessels. It occurs throughout the valley.

MAÇARANDÚBA, or "Cow-tree."—This wonderful tree, one of the largest of the forest monarchs, is the *Mimusops elata*, belonging, therefore, to the same order and genus as the Moira-piranga.\* It stands from 180 to 200 feet high and 20 feet in circumference, crowned with a vast dome of

\* On page 288, the Maçarandúba is confounded with the Palo de Vaca, which is an Artocarpad. The "Cow-tree" of Guiana is a *Galactodendron*.



foliage. It has entire, alternate leaves, a deeply-scored, reddish, ragged bark (used for dying cloth), palatable fruit and milk, and a hard, fine-grained, heavy (sp. gr. 1.172), reddish wood, very durable in water—more so than Itaüba even—and the toughest of all the Amazonian woods, yet splitting easily. It is largely used for construction and for



Leaves, Fruit, and Flower of Maçarandúba.

furniture, and would be admirable for ship-building. The young trees have a dark-red centre, surrounded with a white softer wood. It grows on dry lands along the whole length of the Great River, from Pará to the Upper Marañon, also on the Rio Negro, and probably other affluents.

LOIRO, or LOURO, one of the most useful woods in Brazil, and growing every where on the Amazons and Marañon.



—It is the *Cordia excelsa* or *frondosa* of science, of which there are four varieties: *L. pardo*, *L. preto*, *L. batata*, and *L. branco*. It is a high tree, with a trunk over sixty feet long and a foot and a half in diameter, alternate leathery leaves and paniced flowers. The light-yellow variety is fragrant, and makes excellent lumber, being largely used in flooring, making tables, doors, etc. The dark-colored, however, is harder, and best for boat-building and the like.

CUMARÚ, or “Tonka-wood.”—This tree, the leguminous *Dipterix odorata*, is about forty feet high by twenty inches in diameter, growing on the Lower Amazons, and yielding fragrant seeds, well known as tonka-beans. The wood is hard, fine-grained, and very durable, and is used for the same purposes as Jutahí.

SAPUPÍRA. — This is an exceedingly rare and precious wood. Its botanical affinities are unknown to me, but it is probably leguminous. It is a high tree, and the wood, light-brown near the surface, is within deep-brown, thickly speckled with yellow. It is so excessively hard and close that it is sometimes turned into goblets and into mortars for pounding coffee. It grows on the Tapajos, Negro, and Solimoens.

SAPUCAYA.—This is one of the tallest trees in the Brazilian forest, and bears in capsules, having a lid (“Monkey’s Drinking-cups”), very rich edible nuts. It is the *Lecythis ollaria*, with alternate leaves, showy flowers, and yellowish bark. The wood is light-red, heavy (sp. gr. 1.077), and hard, but not very durable. We have seen branchless trunks fifty feet high. It grows abundantly on the Lower Amazons and Rio Negro.

CASTANHÉIRO, or “Brazil-nut-tree.”—This is the *Bertholletia excelsa*, which yields the well-known triangular nuts of commerce. It is one of the noblest trees of the Ama-



zons, in aspect and foliage not unlike a gigantic chestnut-tree. It grows along all the Brazilian rivers in the valley, but not on the Marañon. Specimens have measured fully 200 feet high. The wood, like that of its relative, the Sapucaya, is not very durable, lasting but two or three years in the tropics; but it might be very enduring in another climate.



Leaves, Nut, and Flower of Sapucaya.

GUARIÚBA is a reddish wood of the texture of Hard Maple, growing on the Marañon.

COPAÍBA, COPAÍVA, or CUPAÚBA.—This tree, the *Mirocarpus copaifera*, furnishes the well-known resinous oil of materia medica. It is a high tree, growing on the *terra firma* all along the Amazons. The wood resembles pine.



MACACÁ-ÚBA.—This is a tree of considerable height, furnishing a close-grained, very hard wood of a light-red or mottled-red color. It is found throughout the valley, but best grows near Moyobamba, where it is called *Quinilla*.

PARACÚ-ÚBA, or Indian "Teak," from its excellence for boat-building.—The wood has a cherry color, and is very hard and durable. The natives use it for harpoons. The tree is lofty, with a white bark, and grows every where on the river.

AMBAÚBA, or EMBAUBA, the "Powder-tree."—It is the *Cecropia peltata*, belonging to the Bread-fruit order. It abounds on the Solimoens and Amazons generally. It is a comparatively slender tree, with large palmate leaves, and a smooth white bark, and the stems are hollow between the nodes. Its light, porous timber furnishes the best charcoal for powder. To be distinguished from the *Morototo* (*Panax*), another white tree abounding all along the river.

ANDARÚBA, or ANDIRÓBA.—This is a tall tree (*Xylocarpus caropa*) growing on the Brazilian Amazons, which furnishes a good ship-timber, fine-grained and durable. The nuts yield oil.

GUAJIRA, or GUAJURÚ.—A rosaceous tree (*Chrysobolanus Icaco*), most valued for its medicinal bark and leaves. The wood is brittle, and the trunk, which resembles a fluted column, not over fifteen inches in diameter. It is used for rails.

IPEÚNA.—This is called the hardest wood in Brazil, and belongs to the Bignoniads. But I know nothing further about it.

SICUPÍRA, or SUCOPÍRA.—There are two leguminous trees bearing this name. *S. parda* (*Bowdichia virgilioides*) is a tree about seventy-five feet trunk, with a diameter of four feet. The bark is bitter, and the wood is dark-color-



ed, with white veins, having a specific gravity of 1.116, and proverbial for its durability in contact with water. It is considered one of the best woods for naval construction. It grows on the Solimoens, the Lower Amazons, and near Rio. The Sicupíra amarella (*Ferreirea spectabilis*) is a yellow, lighter wood, resembling teak, well adapted for building purposes; but I am not sure of its occurrence in the valley.

TANIMBÚCA, or "*Bois à Cendre*."—This lofty, immense tree, sometimes seven feet in diameter, has a light-red wood with a black centre, excellent for ship-building. It grows at Fonte Boa.

CAIMÍTO.—This is a hard, reddish wood, of fine texture, from the *Lucuma Caimito*, growing on the Marañon.

ONNANY, or PÁO DE BREO.—This resinous tree, of the Gamboge order (*Symphonia globulifera*), grows in humid places on the Middle and Lower Amazons, as also at Pernambuco and Bahia. The wood is highly valued for both civil and naval construction. The leaves are lanceolate and the flowers terminal.

ESTORAQUE.—This is another Peruvian wood, excellent for construction, of the color of Maple, but tougher. It is a large tree, with whitish bark.

ACARÍ-CUÁRA.—The very durable wood of a high tree, two feet in diameter, growing at Fonte Boa.

ACARI-ÚBA.—This appears to be a kind of Cedro—a yellowish wood, very durable, and used for canoes. The tree is high, but only eighteen inches in diameter. It is found from Fonte Boa down.

CARAPANA-ÚBA.—This is a white, fine-grained, not very heavy wood, growing at Fonte Boa.

PARNAÚBA is a "White Cedar," found from Pará to the Andes.

PASHIÚBA, or "Big-bellied Palm."—This is one of the



few palms yielding useful timber. It is the *Iriartea barbigudo*, easily recognized by its bulging stem and buttress roots. It is found on the Solimoens and Marañon. The wood is very durable, and is used for rough building.

MARUPÁ.—This is a light, whitish, soft wood, resembling pine, but not valued much on the Amazons.

JARANÁ.—A pink-colored wood, splitting easily, growing on the Rio Negro.

GENIPÁPO.—A large Cinchona-tree, having a good, flexible wood, useful for many purposes. The Indians make spoons of it, and paint themselves with the dark-purple juice of the green fruit.

CUMIVI, another Marañon timber, resembling Maple.

BARAS, a white, soft wood, also from the Marañon, used as beams in houses, but comparatively of small value.

CHONTA.—This is a general term in Quichua for Palm. The one I refer to is the *Bactris ciliata*, a very hard, dark-colored, elastic wood of the Marañon, from which the Indians make bows, spears, and the points of arrows. Another Chonta (a species of *Euterpe*) is used in construction on the Huallága. The wood of the Pupúnha Palm is tough and black, taking a fine polish, and is called "Chontadura" on the Upper Marañon.

EMBURÁNA.—This valuable wood is white, fragrant, moderately firm and heavy, and much sought after for building and furniture purposes. The tree (*Bursera leptophloeos*) is lofty, about three feet in diameter, and grows around the head-waters of the Tocantíns.

CHIMICO-CASPA.—A reddish, light, rather soft wood from the Marañon.

AGUÁNO, or "Mahogany."—This is a gigantic tree even for the tropical forest. It is probably not identical with the *Swietenia mahogoni* of Central America—the Mahogany of commerce; but it resembles it in color, and it is a



choice wood in the Montaña. It grows on the western tributaries of the Marañon, as the Napo and Huallága, where it is used in canoe-building, etc.

COCOBÓLO.—An excellent timber of Moyobamba, the heart of a very large tree. It is reddish and very strong; often used for making the cogs of wheels.

JACARÉ-UBA, the Palo Maria of Bolivians and *Calophyllum Brasiliense* of science, is an elastic wood used for making canoes. The trunk is a yard in diameter.

CUMATSÍBA, a very hard, heavy, reddish wood with a white bark, from the Ucayali; sometimes confounded with the Maçarandúba.

ALÉSO (*Betula acuminata*) is one of the most abundant and useful trees in the Quitonian Andes, descending the Pastássa to near 4000 feet.

LUPÚNA, one of the largest trees on the Huallága, has a gray bark and umbrella-like top. The wood is used for building; and rails of it are taken down the Marañon on the steamers.

ASSARQUÍRO is a large tree on the Upper Marañon, resembling Cinchona; the wood is not hard, but durable.

CHAWINTO.—The very tough wood of the *Guayusa*, used at Moyobamba. *Sacha-vacca chawinto* is another very hard, reddish wood, of the same region.

SANGRE DE DRAGO.—This is the strong, red wood of a species of Croton which grows around Moyobamba—a straight tree of eighty feet, with black shining bark and buttress roots.

BALSA, or CEIBA.—An exceedingly light white wood, the "Raft-wood" of the Upper Marañon. It resembles our Cotton-wood. The tree (*Ochroma piscatoria*) is about as large as the Maple, and the fruit has a cotton-like covering, used for mattresses. The raft-wood-trees on the



Rio Negro are species of *Malonetia*, while the Orejones use the hollowed trunk of the *Iriartea* Palm.

TOCTE, or "Walnut."—An undescribed species of *Juglans* growing on the eastern slopes of the Quitonian Andes, at the altitude of 5000 feet, and at Chachapoyas.

BREAD-FRUIT-TREE.—The "Jak" of the Amazons, introduced and cultivated from Pará to the Andes. It furnishes a valuable timber for building-purposes, very durable and strong. A native species—*Artocarpus Brasiliensis*—grows on the Lower Amazons.

ASNA and PUNCHÁNA, resembling Maple; ESPINO and PUCA-MOYNA, hard, red woods; ALFÁRO and CACHA-MOYNA, white woods; QUILLA-MOYNA, a yellow wood; HUAYNACASPA, resembling cedar; and INDÁNO, very strong and durable, are valuable construction woods, growing on the Marañon, particularly around Moyobamba.

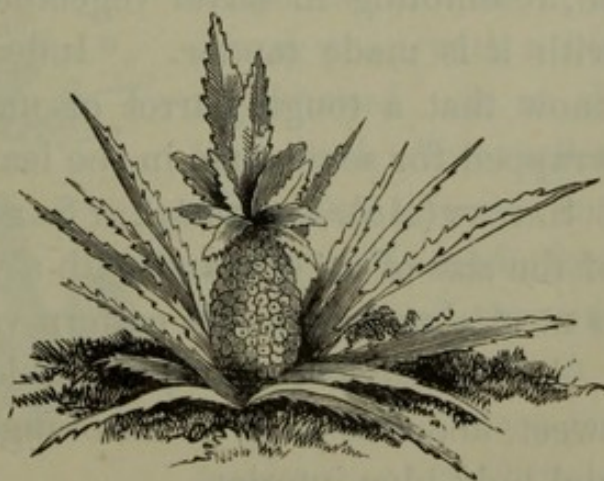


## CHAPTER XXXVIII.

The Fruits of the Amazons, Edible and Medicinal.

THE valley of the Amazons, so remarkable for the abundance and variety of its timbers, is equally rich in the other products of the vegetable kingdom. The field is so vast, it can hardly be said to have been explored; but enough has been seen to justify the remark that if the valley is not the Ophir of Solomon, as some suppose, it is certainly worthy of the name. The industrial, medicinal, and food plants already known and used are beyond enumeration; but when science and commerce shall have threaded every part of the great forest, an immense harvest will be reaped. It should be remembered, also, that almost every product at present utilized is taken directly from the hand of Nature. Very few articles have been altered by cultivation, by the chemist, or by the ingenuity of man: there is no horticultural society between Pará and Lima. The fruits attain a larger size on the Middle and Upper Amazons than on the Lower.

The PINE-APPLE (*Ananassa sativa*) is cultivated in almost every large village throughout the Amazons. There are three kinds—*abacaxis*, *anáñas*, and *curaná*. The first is the largest and best, of a conical shape, and confined to



Pine-apple.



the region of Pará. The third is larger in diameter than the *anána*, which is the ordinary variety. Wild pine-apples abound in the *campos*, about the size of an apple, having the true flavor, but little pulp.

ATA (*Anona squamosa*), called "Pinha" in Pernambuco and Bahia, and "Fruto do Conde" in Rio. It grows wild on a tree in the neighborhood of Santarem, and is one of the most delicious fruits in the tropics, rivaling the Chirimoya and Mangosteem. It is about as large as an orange; and its scaly rind, incrustated on the inside with sugar, incloses a rich, custardy pulp, having the flavor of perfumed cream.

FRUTO DO CONDE (*Anona muricata*), called "Ata" at Rio.—This is similar to the custard-apple, but has a smooth, pear-colored skin. It grows sparingly at Manáos.

BIRIBÁ is the name of a favorite fruit cultivated at Fonte Boa, related to the Ata, but much larger, being five inches in diameter.

PAPAW (*Carica papaya*), by Brazilians called "Mamão, is a large melon-shaped fruit, of an orange-yellow color, growing on a herbaceous tree, cultivated particularly on the wooded slopes of the Andes. It is eaten raw when ripe, like water-melon, and is considered wholesome and anthelmintic. When fully grown, but not ripe, it is cooked, resembling in flavor vegetable marrow. Meat boiled with it is made tender. "Indeed," says Mr. Spruce, "I know that a tough parrot or macaw grows tender when wrapped for some time in the leaves."

SAPOTY (*Achras sapota*), or SAPOTILLA, a very sweet fruit, of the size of an egg and with a yellowish-brown exterior, is most abundant in the eastern valleys of Peru.

ABÍO (*Achras cainito*) resembles the former. It is very sweet, about as large as an orange, with a yellow exterior and light-blue interior.



PIKIÁ is the large fruit of a lofty tree, having a hollow chamber between the pulp and kernel, beset with spines. It is not palatable to foreigners. It yields an oil of which a butter is made. I noticed it only at Santarem.

JABUTÉ-PE, or "Tortoise-foot," is a scaled fruit, about two inches in diameter, inclosing seeds and a richly-flavored pulp. The small tree which yields it is not cultivated, but grows wild in the Middle Amazons. It is unknown on the coast.

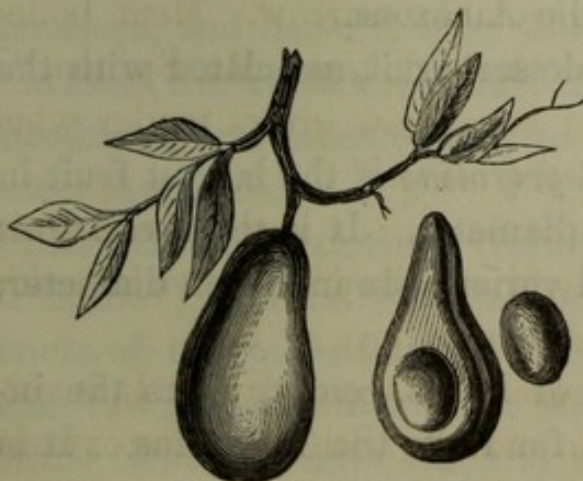
CUMÁ, or SORVA, is not unlike a Seckel pear; but the hard skin contains a gummy milk and a delicious pulp. The Cumá-tree (one of the Dogbanes) is also restricted to the elevated parts of the Solimoens.

PAMÁ, an uncultivated stone-fruit, is oblong in shape, but otherwise resembling a cherry. The tree is one of the loftiest in the forest of the Middle Amazons.

CAJÚ (*Anacardium occidentale*) is the fruit of a Terebinth, abounding in dry, sandy soils from Santarem to Moyobamba. It has the



Cajú Nut.



Abacáte Pear.

shape and size of an ordinary pear, with a kidney-shaped nut at the lower end. An excellent wine (considered anti-syphilitic) is made from the fruit, and the nuts are roasted and eaten.

ABACÁTE (*Persea gratissima*), or "Alligator



Pear," called "Palta" on the Andes.—This delicious fruit is the product of a tall Laurel-tree with dome-shaped top,



Guáva.

growing on all the Amazons, but particularly on the Marañon. The unctuous pulp always recommends itself to a refined taste by its wonderfully delicate and peculiar flavor.

GUÁVA, or GOIÁBA, resembles a small Pomegranate, and is used for making an excellent though astringent jelly. The tree (a scrubby *Psidium*) grows sparingly throughout the valley; I observed it at Moyobamba.

JABUTI-CABA (*Eugenia cauliflora*) is one of the most agreeable fruits of Brazil, and makes a good wine. It is cultivated at Pará.

ARAÇÁ (*Psidium araça*), the "Apple of Brazil."—There are three kinds: *A. corôa*, *A. mirí*, and *A. bói*. It is the yellow fruit of a shrub, five or ten feet high, cultivated along the Lower and Middle Amazons.

GRUMIXÚMA is another dessert-fruit, associated with the preceding.

JACÁ (*Arthrocarpea integrifolia*) is the largest fruit in Brazil, being three feet in diameter. It is the bread-fruit of some regions. A small variety, six inches in diameter, grows at Fonte Boa.

IMBÚ is a valuable fruit of Bahia, coming from the interior of the province, not far from the Tocantíns. It is eaten with cream, like strawberries.



GENIPAPO (*Genipa Brasiliensis*) is a fruit eaten with sugar. The tree belongs to the Cinchona family, and grows on the Lower Amazons.

MARACUJÁ (*Passiflora alata*) is a wild fruit of the size of a pear, found on the Brazilian Amazons. There are two kinds: *M. assú* and *M. mirí*.

ORANGES, or NARANJAS, abound the whole length of the river; those of Moyobamba probably have no superior. The trees blossom all the year round, but especially in January. The orange has one quality wanting in all other tropical fruits—a blending of the sweet and aromatic flavors with the acidulous. All others are either too saccharine or too acid. Sour oranges, lemons, limes, and sweet lemons are grown sparingly on the Amazons. Indeed, any fruit which requires cultivation is very scarce.

PUPÚNHA (*Guilielma speciosa*), or “Peach Palm;” on the Peruvian slope called PISHO-GUAYO, or “Bird-fruit.”—This celebrated fruit has the color and size of a peach. Bates compares it in taste to a mixture of chestnuts and cheese; and Spruce to something between potato and chestnut, but superior to either. It is very nutritious, and forms the principal article of food of the natives when in season. It is not indigenous, and does not occur wild, but has been cultivated by the Indians, like the cocoa-nut, mandioca, and banana, from time immemorial.

MANGO, the well-known East Indian Terebinth, has been introduced, and is cultivated to a limited extent on the Lower Amazons.

BANANA and PLANTAIN (called in Peru “Genéo” and “Plátano”), especially the latter, form the most important article of vegetable food on the Amazons. Bananas are eaten raw; plantains must be cooked. Botanists call the former *Musa paradisiaca*, and the latter *M. sapientum*; but there are hosts of variations, and the nomenclature is



in hopeless confusion. The natives do not make the botanical distinction of two species, but speak of the following ten varieties of the generic fruit: *Pacovão farinacea* (the largest), *P. prata*, *P. massaá*, *P. St. Thomá vermelha*, *P. St. Thomá branca*, *P. usual*, *P. sempre verde*, *P. inajá*, *Pacovinha*, and *P. celestina* (the smallest). The first they consider aboriginal, and distinct from the rest. It sometimes attains the height of forty centimetres, and bears over 150 in a cluster. They are seedless, and are propagated by cuttings. The only spot where they regularly seed is said to be the Andaman Islands. The stem is underground; what is called the "stem" is the petiole. The liquor made from Bananas is called *mazáto*. An experiment to test the profits of cultivating this fruit was made in Guiana with this result:

	Acres.	Bunches.	Value.
First year.....	35	8,987	\$3,432 64
Second year.....	127	20,276	5,955 14
Third year.....	153	26,694	12,327 39
Fourth year.....	161	14,852	4,560 69
Total.....	476	70,809	\$26,275 86

From this it is seen that the average yield per acre during the four years was 150 bunches, and that the average price per bunch was 37 cents, making a return of \$55 20 per acre.

The WILD BANANA, or "Sororoca" (*Urania Amazonica*), growing along the low shores of the river, is quite another plant.

PITAJAYA, the delicious fruit of a tall Cactus, I saw only at Cajamárca.

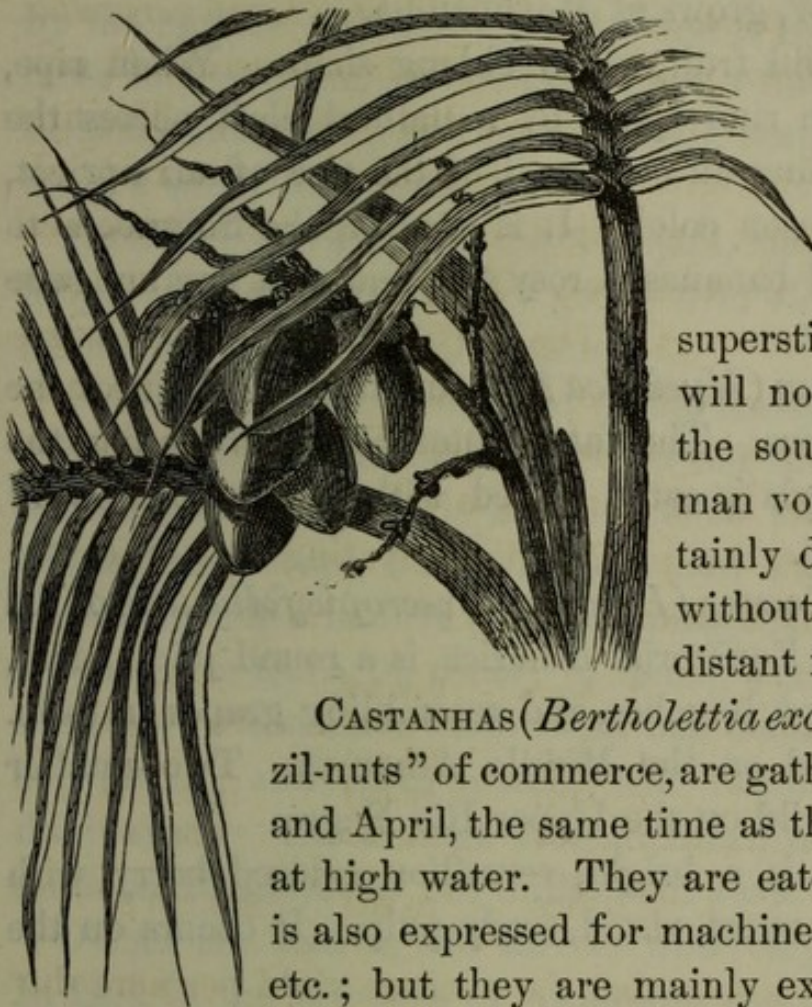
PALMITO, the terminal bud of many Palms, is largely used, particularly on the Marañon, as a salad.

BREAD-FRUIT (*Artocarpus incisa*) has been introduced, and is cultivated sparingly from Pará to the Andes; but



little use is made of it. There are two kinds—one large and edible, the other worthless.

The COCOA-NUT is naturalized and cultivated to a small



A Bunch of Cocoa-nuts.

extent in the villages on the Lower Amazons.

The Ceylonese have a superstition that it will not grow out of the sound of the human voice, and it certainly does not thrive without attention, nor distant from the sea.

CASTANHAS (*Bertholettia excelsa*), the "Brazil-nuts" of commerce, are gathered in March and April, the same time as the Cacao—*i. e.*, at high water. They are eaten, and the oil is also expressed for machines, illumination, etc.; but they are mainly exported to England and the United States, yielding an annual revenue of \$200,000. The tree (called *Castanheiro*), one of the forest giants, grows on all the Brazilian Amazons, or wherever *terra firma* reaches the margin of the river.

SAPUCAYA (*Lecythis ollaria*) is a gigantic tree, having the same distribution as the preceding. The pericarps (called "Monkey-pots"), having natural lids, are used as drinking-cups, and the seeds are richer than the Castanhas; but, as they fall to the ground, when the ripened lid drops out, they are picked up by the wild animals, and, therefore, few come to market.



INGÁ-PUCÚ is an enormous pod, a yard in length by two and a half inches wide, bearing an excellent bean. The tree, of moderate height, is cultivated at Fonte Boa. INGA-VERA, or PACÁY, grows at Moyobamba.

UIKÍ is a wild fruit, of an oblong shape. When ripe, the thick green rind opens by a natural cleft across the middle, disclosing an oval seed, of the size of an apricot, of a vivid crimson color. It is used on the Solimoens to give to stewed bananas a rosy tint and rich creamy taste and consistence.

UIÇÍ, or WISHI (*Myristica?*), is another wild fruit of the Middle Amazons. The fatty bitter pulp surrounding the large stony seeds is eaten mixed with farina, and is very nourishing.

MAPATI, or COCURA (*Pourouma cecropiæfolia*), one of the finest fruits of Equatorial America, is a round juicy berry, growing in large bunches, and resembling grapes in taste. It is cultivated on the Middle Amazons. Two smaller species grow wild on the Upper Rio Negro.

AÁPIRÁNGA is a bright, vermilion-colored berry, with hard skin and sweet, viscid, seedy pulp. It occurs on the Tapajos.

WAJURÚ (*Achras?*), of the size of a gooseberry, contains a sweet, gelatinous pulp, inclosing two large, black, shining seeds.

BACURI, or PACOURY-UVA (*Platonia insignis*), is a delicious sour berry, of a bright lemon color, and containing almond-like seeds. It makes a fine golden jelly. It is found on the Solimoens. There are two kinds—*B. súma* and *B. curúa*.

CASHIPÁRI-ARAPÁÁ is an oblong scarlet berry from the same region.

ASSAÍ (*Euterpe oleracea*), a slim and beautiful Palm-tree, yields a cherry-like fruit, having a dark-blue pulp,



with which a popular beverage is made on the Lower Amazons.

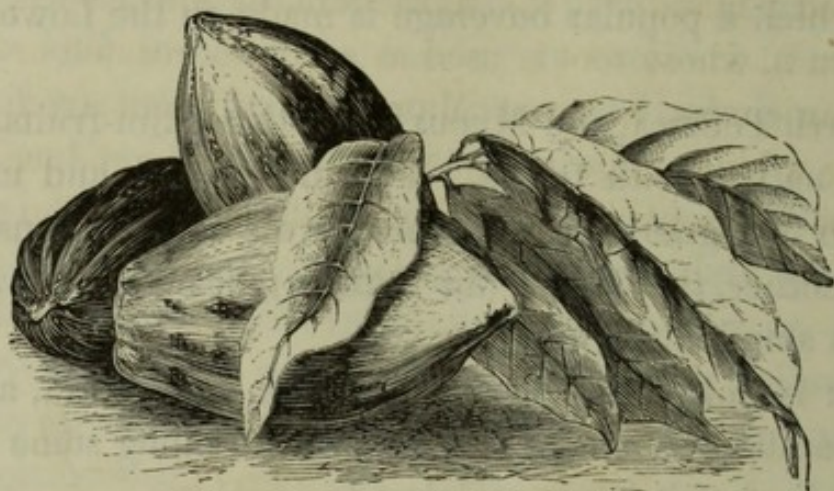
MIRITÍ, TUCUMÁ, and MUCUJÁ are other palm-fruits, eaten by the natives with farina. The first is sour, and unpalatable to foreigners. The others have a fatty, fibrous pulp. Still another, the CURUA (an *Attalea*), bears a fruit resembling a small cocoa-nut.

RICE is cultivated on the Guajará, near Pará, and at Moyobamba. A native rice grows wild along some of the tributaries, but it is not reclaimed.

COFFEE has been introduced on the Amazons, and a very excellent quality has been raised on the Rio Negro and at Moyobamba; but nearly all the coffee used on the river comes from Ceará, Parahyba, and San Paulo. The cost of raising coffee in Java (with shipping charges) is 10 cents a pound; in Cuba, 9½ cents; in Brazil, 8 cents. Since the stoppage of the slave-trade there has been a decrease of cultivation; and emancipation will result in a further diminution. The average crop in Brazil in 1852 was 256 millions of pounds to 146 millions in Java.

CACÁO is a native, and thrives with very little culture. In fact, in the province of Amazonas the Cacáo is nearly all wild. The reasons why there are so few plantations are the want of capital, and the length of time required in getting a plantation to pay. The largest plantations are opposite Obidos and Cametá. It is usually grown on the lowlands. A high variety grows on *terra firma*. Bates saw trees yielding an arroba (thirty-two pounds) each a year. One hundred trees on the average give ten arrobas. There are three crops a year—in March, June, and September. The best article is grown in Pará and Maranham. The choicest cacao, like the best coffee, is grown in the shade, and is therefore sheltered by rows of bananas. Excepting rubber, cacao is the chief article of exportation.





Cacáo.

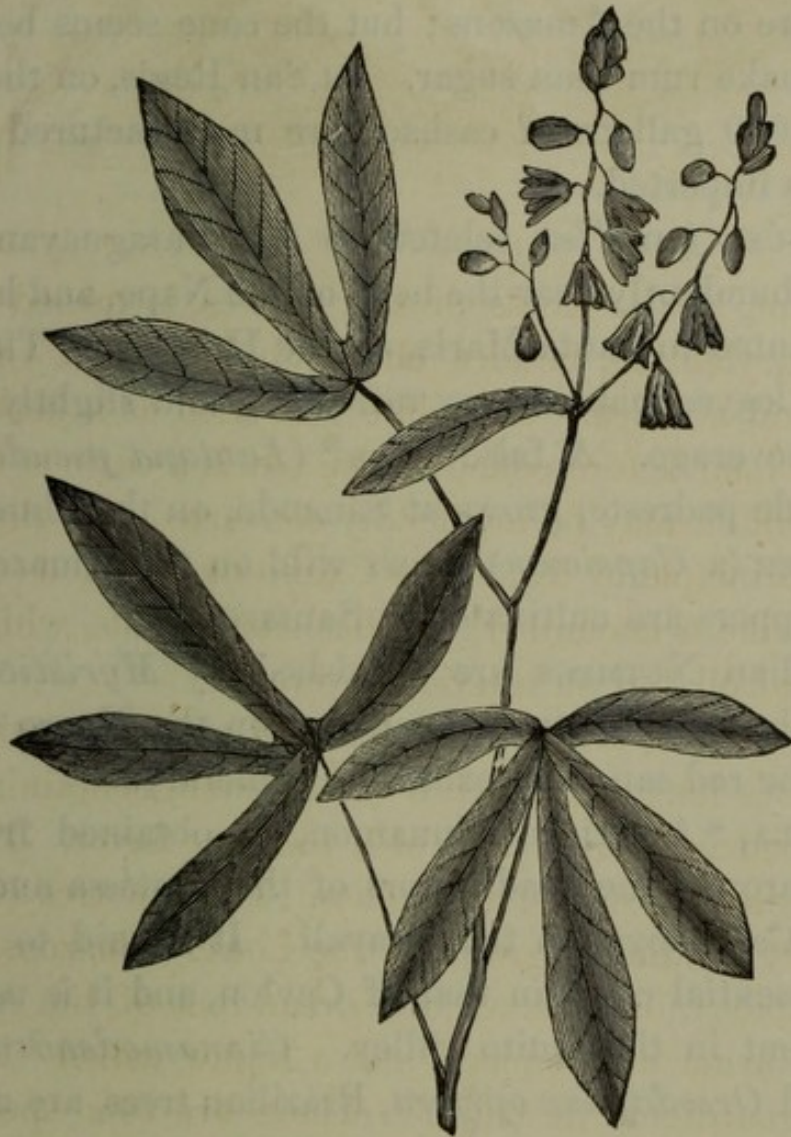
The fruit, in the hands of the natives, is turned to good account, yielding, besides chocolate, a soap, a vinegar, a wine, and a dulce. Chocolate was used as a beverage in Europe long before coffee or tea. It is a curious fact that theobromine may be artificially converted into theine, the active principle of tea. The CACÁO DE MACÁCO (*Cupú*) is shaped like a cucumber, and has small seeds, which yield plenty of oil, but an inferior beverage.

CUPÚ-ASSÚ is an elliptical fruit, of a dingy earthy color, six inches long, with a thin woody shell, containing seeds enveloped in a juicy pulp of a pleasant flavor. It is used for ice-creams, sirups, and jellies. The low tree (*Pharmacosyce*?) yielding it grows on the Lower Amazons.

MANDIOCA, or CASSAVA, the bread-root of the Amazons, yields farina and tapioca, and a liquor called "Tucupí," or "Aguardiente de beijú." There are four species: (1) The Mandioca proper (*Maniot utilissima*), of which there are many varieties, among them Maicurú, the lowest, being only four feet high, but producing the largest and best roots—Itoqui, Tambaqui, Auirána, and Mucúra. (2) Aypi (*M. aipi*), or Sweet Mandioca, called "Yuca Dulce" on the Marañon, having oblong, juicy roots, becoming sweet after they are gathered. The chicha made from it



is called "masáto." (3) Macachera, or Macasheira (Yuca of Peru?), whose root is used as a potato, roasted or boiled. (4) Manicueira, a sweet Mandioca, different from Aypi, having a long, large root. Mandioca will produce in six months after planting without cultivation. The root is



Mandioca.

deprived of its poisonous juice in a curious strainer: a long tube of woven fibre, containing the macerated root, is hung up, with a stone at the lower end, by which means the diameter is diminished and the juice squeezed out.

CARÁ is a large root, resembling a yam or potato, and



used as such. There are four or five kinds at Santarem.

SWEET-POTATOES grow so luxuriantly at the American colony in Santarem that they have become a pest. They are inferior to those raised in the Middle United States.

SUGAR-CANE and SORGHUM have a luxuriant growth every where on the Amazons; but the cane seems better fitted to make rum than sugar. At San Regis, on the Marañon, 18,000 gallons of cashaça are manufactured yearly. Sugar is imported.

GUAYÚSA (an *Ilex* related to the Paraguayan Maté) grows abundantly near the head of the Napo, and has been transplanted to Santa Maria, on the Huallága. The large, shining leaves make a very refreshing and slightly exhilarating beverage. A false "Tea" (*Lantana pseudothea?*), or Cha de pedreste, grows at Sancudo, on the Marañon.

PEPPER (a *Capsicum*) grows wild on the Amazons, and Red Peppers are cultivated at Santarem.

Brazilian NUTMEGS are furnished by *Myristica toba* ("ucu-uba"), a tall tree abounding on the Negro and Japurá; the red sap is an excellent vulnerary.

CANELA, "American Cinnamon," is obtained from the forests around the head-waters of the Pastássa and Napo, and at Cashaboya, on the Ucayali. It is said to contain more essential oil than that of Ceylon, and it is used as a condiment in the Quito valley. *Cinnamodendron axillare* and *Oreodaphne opifera*, Brazilian trees, are also aromatic.

PICHURIM, or Sassafras-nuts, used for flavoring chocolate, are the seeds of the laurel *Nectandra puchury*.

VANILLA is not cultivated on the river, so far as we know, except by an American at Napo; but a small quantity, collected wild, goes down to Pará. It is quite abundant on the Sacramento plain of the Ucayali. It is infe-



rior to the Mexican, but would be improved by culture and preparation.

TONKA-BEANS (*Dipterix odorata*), called "Cumarú" in Brazil, are exported in considerable quantities, especially from the Tapajos. They are valued at 20 cents a kilogram.



## CHAPTER XXXIX.

## Brazilian Drugs, Dyes, Gums, and Textile Plants.

THE valley of the Amazons is an infinite field for the discovery of useful vegetable products. Many unknown principles are waiting to enter our *materia medica*, or to advance the industrial sciences. Chance has revealed a few beneficial properties; but only thorough investigation and systematic experiment can develop the region. Many an herb of mysterious virtue is known to the Indians, but we can not rely upon them. In fact, only the Indians in contact with the whites use direct remedies: among the wild tribes, *it is the physician, not the patient, who takes the medicine*, since they hold that every ailment is the work of an evil one who must be conjured. Even among the Christianized half-castes of Tarapoto, Dr. Spruce found this ridiculous receipt: "Chew a piece of the gum-resin called *sonitonio*, place it in the hollow of the hand, and with it rub the legs of the sick person from the knees downward, and end by whistling between all the toes."

## DRUGS.

CINCHÓNA, or "Peruvian Bark," the foremost of febrifuges, is collected at the sources of the Upper Marañon, Huallága, Ucayáli, and Béni. The region extends over 29 degrees of latitude, and describes a vast curve commencing with the nineteenth parallel south, and continuing generally along the east slope at the altitude of 7500 feet. The valuable Red Bark (*C. succirubra*) is peculiar to the Pa-



cific side of Chimborazo, and therefore does not belong to the Amazons valley. The Crown Bark (*C. condaminea*) is found in the provinces of Loja, Jaen, and Cajamárca: its proper commercial name is "Cascarilla," but that term is now given to cinchona in general. The Yellow Bark (*C. calisaya*) from Bolivia is the present chief source of quinine. The Indians call it *Quina-quina*, or "Bark of barks."\* The cinchona-trees have the aspect of the beech, with the flowering branches of the lilac; smooth bark; white wood susceptible of a polish; opposite, entire leaves similar to those of the Coffee-plant, which belongs to the same order. The reckless manner of gathering the bark will ere long remove every trace of cinchona vegetation. At least 3,000,000 pounds are shipped annually to England, and the demand and price are on the increase. Several substitutes are used by the natives, as *Maravilla* from the Pastássa forest, *Chuquiraga* from the high Andes of Ecuador, *Quina* (*Solanum pseudoquina*) and *Cafferána* from Brazil. A tincture of the last is considered more efficacious than quinine.

SALSAPARILLA is found on all the tributaries, but that from the Tapajos, Negro, and Madeira is considered much superior to the salsaparilla of the Marañon. It is sometimes adulterated with the root of the Agave.

IPECACUANHA, the great emetic,† is the creeping root of the herb *Cephaëlis*, growing in the humid, shady forests of the Amazons. It is usually gathered while in flower, *i. e.*, during the rainy season. *Ionidium poaya* is sometimes sold for the genuine Ipecac.

GOMPHRENA ("Paratodo" of the natives), growing on

\* The doubling of the name of a tree in Quichua is said to signify that it has medicinal virtues.

† Strong guayúsa-tea is emetic, and the Indians, who are more solicitous to clear out the stomach than to empty the bowels, drink enough when they wake in the morning to make them vomit.



the Madeira, is used as a panacea for intermittent fevers, colic, diarrhea, snake-bites, etc.

CUPHEA *balsamona* is also a remedy for fevers.

The leaves of SANANGO (*Tabernæmontana*) from the Moyobamba province, *Davilla rugosa*, *Tetracera breyniana*, *Petiveria tetrandra* (Raiz de Pipa), *Sequiera*, and *Leonotis rupetifolia*, and the juice of *Plumieria phagedænica* (Sucu-uba) and *Cuscuta racemosa* (Sipo de Chumbo), are employed in rheumatism or local inflammation.

The root, bark, and leaves of CHRYSOBALANUS *icaco*, the root of FRANCISCEA *uniflora* (Manacá), the milk of the MURURÉ (Mercurio vegetal), the bark of BIGNONIA *anti-syphilitica*, the fruit of WALTHERIA *Douradinha*, the leaves and fruit of TRIUMPHETE *serpium* (Carapixo da Calçada), the root of HELICTERES (Sacarolha), and the root of a PELTOBRYON (Paribaroba) are successfully used in the treatment of venereal diseases.

GUARANÁ (*Paullinia cupana*), POAYA BRANCA (*Ionidium ituba*), SPHÆRALCEA *cisplatina*, MANETTIA *cordifolia*, PAVONIA *diuretica*, and the seeds of the PATAGUA (*Hura aculeata*), are popular remedies for bowel complaints. The Guaraná, the most important, is cultivated on the Negro and Tapajos, but especially on the River Mauhés. It is a natural twiner, but is kept down in cultivation to the size of a compact currant-bush. The seeds are roasted, ground, and made up into sticks. The essential principle is almost identical with theine and caffeine. It is a preventive rather than cure; but European physicians pronounce it efficacious, not only in diarrhea, but also in sick headache, neuralgia, paralysis, and lumbago. In France, it has cured attacks of cholera when the evacuations were at the rate of thirty an hour. It also prevents exhaustion, hunger, and sleep, being slightly exhilarative. The natives, particularly up the southern tributaries, are passionately fond of gua-



raná, and drink it as a beverage. On the Orinoco it is used as a preservative against bilious fevers. In Bolivia it brings \$6 a pound; on the Amazons, 60 cents.

MATÍCO, the leaves of *Artanthe elongata* growing on the Peruvian slope, is a valuable styptic for hemorrhages.

PARAÍBA (*Simaruba versicolor*), RAIZ-PRETA (*Chiococca anguifuga*), MARMALEIRO DO MATO (*Casearia ulmifolia*), and *Eupatorium Ayapena* are considered certain antidotes to snake-poison.

CLOVE CASSIA is furnished by the laurel *Dicypellium caryophyllatum*.

MARANHAM CLOVE is the highly odoriferous bark of a small tree growing on some of the small tributaries of the Negro.

A species of the leguminous *Myrospermum* ("Quinoquino"), growing in the high region of the Huallága, yields the BALSAM OF PERU.

COCA ("Ipadú" of Brazilians), the powdered leaves of an *Erythroxylon* growing on the eastern slopes of the Peruvian Andes, is to the natives of that region what opium is to the Turks, and betel to the Malays. It is not only a powerful stimulant, but also alimental and tonic. With it and a little parched corn the Indians will endure a surprising amount of fatigue. In fact, with coca alone, they will go days without food and sleep. The leaves resemble tea-leaves, only they are entire; and the plant is a slender shrub, occurring both wild and cultivated. The best coca is grown in the Yungas of Bolivia.

TOBACCO of fine quality is cultivated in many parts of the Amazons. The best quality for pipes is that of Borba and Trinidad, on the Madeira. The finest for cigarettes is produced at Jevéros, near the mouth of the Huallága, and at Báguá, Tamboli, Duña, and Cunchára, in the valley of the Utcubamba. Three species of the tobacco-plant



are recognized by Brazilian botanists: *Nicotiana tabacum*, *N. rustica*, and *N. persica*.

AYA-HUASCA, or "Dead Man's Vine" (*Banisteria caapi*), a woody twiner, cultivated on the upper parts of the Pastássa, Napo, and Negro, contains in its stem one of the most remarkable narcotics in America. The Napos and Uaüpes drink an infusion at their feasts to get into a trance.

Another narcotic, producing a like frenzy, first exciting and then fuddling, and used by nearly all the Brazilian tribes, is the celebrated PARICÁ, a snuff made from the flat green seeds of the *Piptadenia niopo* (a tree fifty feet high, with bipinnate leaves), which grows in the drier forests of the Lower Amazons and its tributaries. It is blown into the nose with a bent tube. The Indian, setting forth on a chase, snuffs a pinch of paricá, and gives another to his dog, by which both become uncommonly alert.

The celebrated poison URARI, the most powerful sedative in nature, is a compound prepared only by the Indians living beyond the cataracts of the Northern tributaries, especially the Negro and Japurá, and by the Ticúnas. Its principal ingredient is derived from the *Strychnos toxifera*. The extract is prepared by boiling the bark, and then coagulating with the milk of another plant and tobacco-juice. The slightest portion of this poison diffused in the blood produces excessive torpor; but it is said that the mind and involuntary muscles continue active. Death ensues from palsy of the lungs. Salt is the only known antidote; and its effects on salt-eating men are therefore not so manifest as on the wild animals. A monkey, which I killed with a particle of urari, fell almost immediately into convulsions. The tribes south of the Amazons do not use it extensively. It is sold chiefly at Pebas, at \$1 50 a cup of half a gill. It does not appear to be identical with the *Curáre* of the Orinoco Indians.



On the Purús, a poison is compounded of the sap of the ASSACÚ (*Sapium aucuparium*) and other ingredients.

The leaves, and especially the roots, of the deadly liana TIMBÓ-AÇÚ (*Paullinia pinnata*) GOYANA-TIMBÓ (*Piscidia erythrina*), and TARAIRA-MOIRA (*Cocculus inermis*) on the Brazilian Amazons, and of the BARBASCO (*Jaquinia armillaris*) and GUACA-BARBASCO (*Clibadium*) on the Marañon, are used for stupefying fishes in still waters.

#### DYES.

BRAZIL-WOOD, a species of *Cæsalpina* (Ibira-pitanga), grows on the Amazons even to the head of the Napo; but it is little sought after.

FUSTIC, a yellow dye, is obtained from the wood of *Machura tinctoria*. Other yellow dyes are furnished by *Jussiaea pilosa* and Quilloyuya.

The bark of a *Byrsonima* (MURISHÍ) is used to give a maroon color to cloth, and also for tanning. The *Melanoxylon braiina*, a large tree, has a remarkable reddish-brown coloring matter in its bark and wood.

CARAJURÚ is a brilliant scarlet dye from the leaves of the *Bignonia chica* on the Japurá and Negro.

ACHIOTE, *Anotto* or *Urucú*, prepared from the seeds of *Bixa Orellana*, growing abundantly on the high Marañon, is used extensively by the Indians in dyeing a reddish-brown or orange-yellow.

The *Esychotria* on the Marañon affords a yellow dye. *Erythroxylon suberosum* (GALLINHA CHOCA) yields a more permanent reddish-brown color.

INDIGO (Pseudo-anil) grows wild in many places—as at Santarem, Fonte Boa, and in the provinces of Loreto, Uribamba, and Carabaya.

The fruit of the JAGUA, or VITU (*Genipa*), gives a dark blue, used on the Ucayali and Huallága. The Moyobam-



binos dye cotton cloth a permanent blue by simply boiling it along with the digitate leaves of the *Yangua tinctoria*.

*Lasiandra argentia*, on the Amazons, and PARINARI, RIJARI, and HUTO, from the Marañon, are used for dyeing black.

#### GUMS AND OILS.

COPAL exudes from the bark of the *Hymenæa* (Jutahí, of which there are several species), a monarch of the forest, often one hundred feet high. On the Marañon it is used for illumination.

The bark of the MATA-MATA-UBA on the Solimoens, a very large tree, is also used for illumination; it is probably resinous.

The BREU BRANCO, a common tree around Santarem, secretes from the inner bark a white resin, resembling CAMPHOR in smell and appearance.

The BREO DE OUNANY, a black wax (from the heart of *Symphonia globulifera*), and the SECCANTA are used by the Indians to pitch their canoes.

The bark and leaves of the Wax Palm, *Copernicia cerifera* (CARNAUBA), excrete a resinous wax, used to some extent in making candles, and a great article of export from Ceará. But it does not fairly belong to the Amazonian valley. Another Wax Palm (*Ceroxylon andicola*), the "Palma de Ramos" of the Ecuadorians, grows at Canelos.

The CETICO (a *Cecropia*, a tree fifty feet high, with white bark and digitate foliage, very common on the Marañon), is also called a "Wax-tree;" but the wax is of animal origin, stored away in the hollow trunk. The wax is of two kinds, white and reddish; the former, *aiunt*, is made by bees, the other by ants.

The berries of Lacre-trees on the Lower Amazons exude globules of wax resembling gamboge.



INDIA-RUBBER—called on the River “Borracha” (from the bottle form in which it is exported), “Seringa” (because it was formerly made by the natives into syringes for injections, a popular treatment of diseases), “Gomma-elastica,” “Jebe,” and “Caucho”—is the product of several Amazonian trees, but especially of *Syphonia cahucha*,\* known by the collectors as the “Seringueira” or “Chirin-



Branch of the India-rubber-tree.

ga.” This tree, having the bark and foliage of the European ash, and a trunk with the maximum diameter of four feet, and branchless for a hundred feet, grows on the wild lowlands (*ygapos*) of all the tributaries, but is tapped mainly in the regions of the Madeira, Xingú, Purús, Juruá, and Tapajós. The rubber is collected in the dry season (between July and January), one man collecting on the

\* This name, and *S. elastica* and *Hevea Brasiliensis*, may possibly express distinct species.



average eight pounds a day, worth on the Amazons (when fine) \$14 an arroba. The sap has at first the consistency of cream, but soon thickens, and is further hardened and blackened by exposing it to the smoke of burning palm-nuts, usually the Urucuri. Coagulation is necessary also to prevent the separation of the resinous parts. Europeans are now using alum or ammonia and pressure. The rubber industry has destroyed agriculture and raised the price of provisions on the River. It is also an unhealthy business, arising from the swampy nature of the Seringa regions and the lack of sufficient food. The rubber collectors (*seringueiros*) are the most wretched and shamefully-treated class in Amazonia, as the *cascarilleiros* and miners are on the Andes. They live half the year on the feverish, flooded lands, in palm huts with a raised floor at one end, to which they retire at high water, famishing on farina and fish, and tormented by clouds of mosquitoes, piúms, and motucas. They are paid in clothing, groceries, and notions at quadruple Pará prices, and by the agents put under obligations *in futuro*, so that they are really slaves. If one dies under obligation to the agent, his friends can not move away till the debt is paid. Collectors generally are compelled to go for the trees some distance into the forest; but on the Juruá they are visible along the bank. Trees growing on the dry lands yield very little milk. The cultivation of the Rubber-tree has been commenced on the Rio Mauhés. Twenty years after planting, the tree will yield milk. The Amazons caoutchouc (of which 5000 tons are annually exported) is the finest quality yet discovered, being more tensile, and retaining its strength longer than any other; but it is often adulterated with the milk of the Mangaba (*Hancornia speciosa*), called "Pernambuco rubber." It comes into market in "biscuits," "bottles," and "negro heads," or refuse. The Madagascar rubber, de-



rived from the climbing *Vahea*, stands next in quality and price. Third in rank is that furnished by the Ule-trees (*Castilloa elastica*) growing in Central America and on the western slope of the Andes as far down as Guayaquil. The Indian rubber ("Assam" and "Singapore") comes mainly from the *Ficus elastica*.

Several trees—as the Maçarandúba (or "Cow-tree)," Sejas, and Guapeba—yield a viscid milk, which, upon evaporation, resembles GUTTA-PERCHA.

Two species of the VEGETABLE IVORY Palm (*Phytelphas*) abound on the Huallága, Ucayali, and Purús. The smaller is called "Jarina," and the larger "Poloponto." The ivory is the consolidated albumen of the nut.

COPAIBA (Oleo de Copahyba) is a prominent export from the Amazons, a considerable quantity being brought down the southern tributaries—as the Juruá and Purús. It is the juice of several species of *Copaifera*, having a smooth, straight stem, umbelliferous head, and pinnate leaves. It is valued at Manáos at 70 cents a kilogram. When pure, it should be of a straw-yellow color; any other color indicates too much resin or some adulteration. Its virtue is in the yellow volatile oil.

The CASTOR-OIL Plant (*Ricina*) abounds along the eastern slope of the Andes, one species attaining, at Tarapoto the height of twenty-five feet; but very little oil is extracted.

UMIRÍ is a very fragrant yellow balsam from the trunk of *Humirium floribundum*, growing on the Tapajos.

SASSAFRAS, so called, is the transparent oil of a tree on the Upper Negro, used in mixing oil colors.

ANDIRÓBA is the bitter oil made from a fruit on the Lower Amazons, and used in lamps.



## TEXTILE PLANTS.

PIASSABA (called "Chapaja" in Peru and "Chiquichiqui" in Venezuela) is the fibrous covering of the stem of *Leopoldinia piassaba*, which grows in swampy lands along the black-water tributaries of the Rio Negro. It is extensively used for cables, for which it is admirably fitted, as it is light and durable. It sells at Manáos for 12 cents a kilogram. It is exported in the rough to England and the United States, where it is made into brooms. Another Piassaba of commerce, but coarser, is obtained from the *Attalea funifera* of South Brazil.

PITA (so called in Ecuador, in Peru "Cabuya") is made from the macerated fibrous leaves of a species of *Agave*.\* It is manufactured most largely at Archidona, on the Napo.

ESTOPA ("Bast") is a coarse, strong fibre obtained from the capsules and inner bark of several trees on the Lower Amazons—as the Castanheiro, Cocoa-nut (called "coir" in commerce), *Cecropia peltata*, Javarí and Tucúm.

The leaves of the MIRITÍ, a majestic palm, growing on all the flooded lands, furnish the material of which string for the manufacture of hammocks is made.

The CHAMBIRA (an *Astrocaryum*) is used for the same purpose by the Záparos, on the Napo.

A strong, silky fibre is obtained from the inner bark of the UAISSIMA, a light-wooded, slender tree abounding on the south side of the Lower Amazons.

The natives make a "bark cloth" from the TURURÍ (*Curatari legalis*) called "Cáscara" up the Maderia, and from the LANCHÁMA on the Marañon (Napo and Huallága). The latter tree is about twenty inches in diameter, and

\* The *Agave* is not an *Aloe*, being an Amaryllid with lateral flowers and ovary inferior.



has a white bark. From the Tururí, garments four yards long are made of a single piece, resembling a coarse woolen stuff with two layers of wavy fibre.

A Wax Palm (*Carnauba*) furnishes a fibre for making mats; and ropes and other fabrics are made of the fine, glossy fibre called "CARAUÁ" and "PALHA" from a species of *Bromelia*.

The Screw Pine, *Carludovica* (BOMBONÁJE), the unexpanded leaves of which are so extensively used at Moyobamba, as well as at Guayaquil, for the manufacture of Panama hats, grows between the Huallága and the Andes, particularly about Moyobamba, Rioja, and Tarapoto. It is probably a distinct species from that used in Ecuador. The tree is seven feet high, but the full-grown leaves are ten or more. The longest straw obtainable is twenty-seven and a half inches. It takes about sixteen bundles (*cogollos*) for an ordinary hat, and twenty-four for the finest. The straws of the latter are not more than one fortieth of an inch wide. About 100,000 hats were annually sent down to Pará ten years ago. Then they commanded \$40 a dozen; now they can be bought for \$15.

COTTON is grown mainly on the Huallága (particularly Tarapoto) and Ucayali. I noticed trees at Balsa Puerto twelve feet high. The native cloth is called "tocuyo" and "lienza," and that which is made into *cushmas*, or long tunics, is stronger than the stoutest unbleached cotton of England or the United States. The spinning-wheels and looms are of the rudest construction.

HUIMBA, the product of a tree (*Bombax*) growing on the Peruvian slope, resembles cotton, but is much lighter, and silky, and is used by the Indians to wrap around the ends of the slender arrows blown through the cerbatana.

SAMAÜMA-SILK, from the gigantic *Eriodendron*, is used for the same purpose.



## CHAPTER XL.

The Palms of the Amazons, Fan-leaved and Feathery.

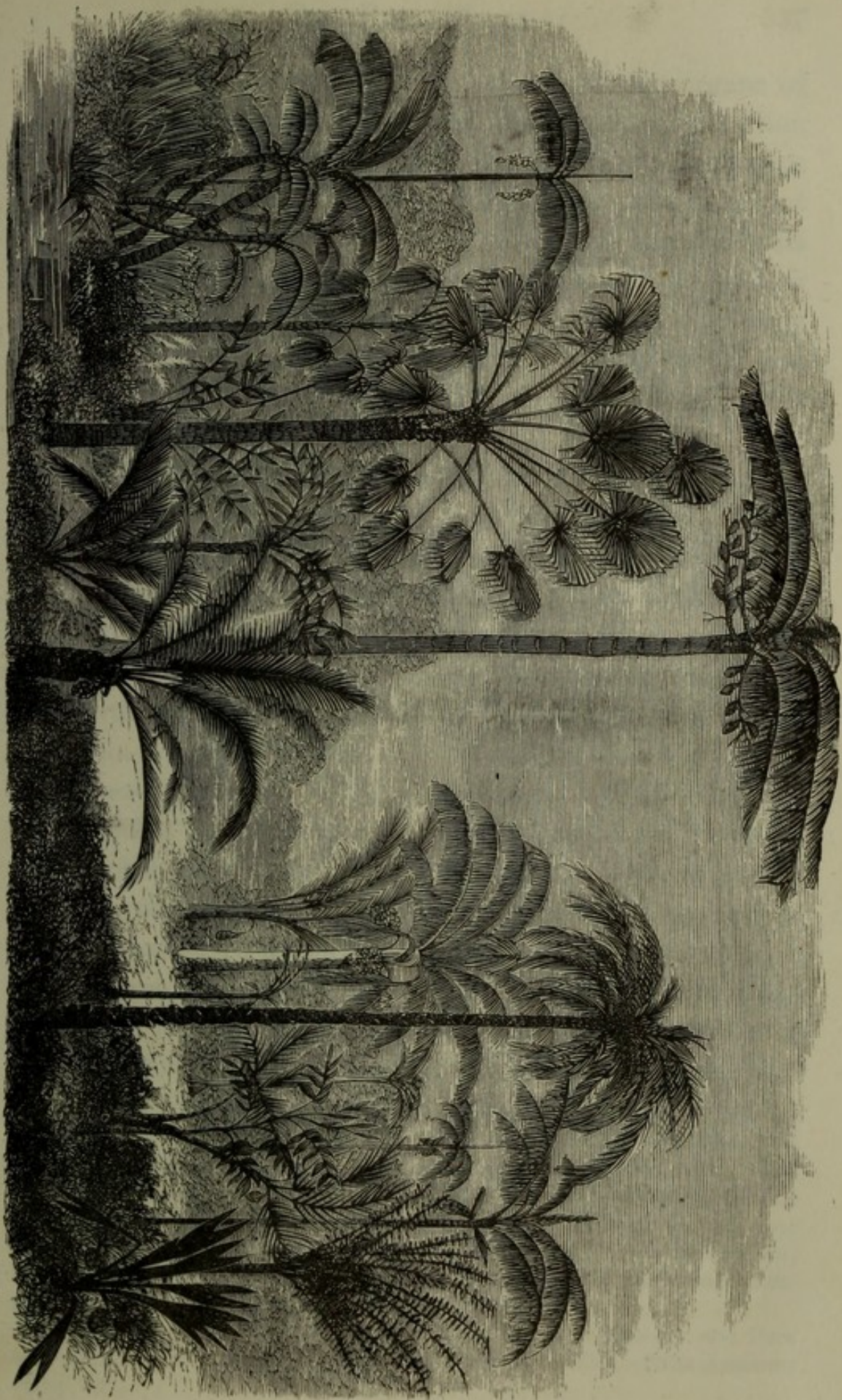
PALMS, Bananas, and Ferns are the three forms of special beauty peculiar to a tropical forest. Of these, the first give the most striking feature to the landscape. The elegance of the tall, slender stem, rough with the scars of fallen leaves, but branchless and symmetrical as a column, and the luxuriance of the feathery or fan-like foliage tossed out of the summit, compel admiration which no amount of familiarity tends to diminish.\*

It is usually supposed that the Palms tower over all the other trees, their crowns standing so far above the surrounding vegetation as to give Humboldt's idea of "a forest above a forest." Along the sea-coast and riverbanks, this is true; but within the virgin forest, the loftiest Palms rarely exceed the average height of the exogenous trees. The altitude of the highest Amazonian Palm taken with a sextant was not over 120 feet; while the Brazil-nut-tree has measured fully 200 feet. Then there are numerous low Palms—the poor relations of the more lordly species.

\* "It is a joy forever, a sight never to be forgotten, to have once seen Palms, breaking through, and, as it were, defying, the soft rounded forms of the broad-leaved vegetation by the stern grace of their simple lines; the immovable pillar-stem looking the more immovable beneath the toss and lash and flicker of the long leaves, as they awake out of their sun-lit sleep, and rage impatiently for a while before the mountain gusts, and fall asleep again. Like a Greek statue in a luxurious drawing-room, sharp cut, cold, virginal; shaming, by the grandeur of mere form, the voluptuousness of mere color, however rich and harmonious: so stands the Palm in the forest; to be worshiped rather than to be loved."—CHARLES KINGSLEY.



Palms on the Middle Amazons.









Palms have a wonderful development of the organs of fructification—a single individual bearing half a million of flowers. Yet the number of trees representing a species is not in proportion. This is mainly due to the fact that the fruit is frequently aborted, or forms the food of hosts of animals—insects, birds, and mammals. Some species flower annually; others only once in a life-time. Palms furnish man with many important products—wood and leaves for habitations, bark and leaves for cloth and cordage, buds and fruit for food.\*

At the beginning of this century, only twenty-three species of Palms were known to the scientific world. Now, mainly through the labors of Humboldt and Bonpland, Spix and Martins, Poeppig, Wallace, Spruce, Wendland, and Griesbach, in the New World, and of Blume and Griffith in the Old, we distinguish nearly 600 species. These belt the earth between the latitudes of New Zealand and South Carolina. Humboldt was right in calling South America “the most beautiful portion of the palm-world.” Certainly, it yields to no continent in exuberance and variety. Europe has but one species, and Africa comparatively few; India is the only rival. There are 275 American forms, and, probably, 75 of these are peculiar to the Amazonas.† Palms have small power of migration; and it does not appear that any species is able to cross the ocean without the aid of man. They are distributed between the sea-

\* Dr. Spruce discovered an “alternation of function” in Palms. “In May, 1852, I found a small plot of ground in the forest covered with plants of a delicate Palm, a species of *Geonoma*, growing about ten feet high. The plants were all females, and bore young fruits. On revisiting the spot in the same month of the following year, I saw, to my astonishment, the very same plants all bearing male flowers alone! But the mystery disappeared when, on examination, I made out that male and female spadices must have alternated all the way up the stem.”

† Quite a number of Palms on the Andean slopes of Ecuador and Peru still remain undescribed. The true Palm climate is that of the Amazonas valley, 81°.



shore and the altitude of 11,000 feet. A few species range from the roots of the Andes across the whole plain to the Atlantic; but many are restricted to certain tributaries, to the Lower Amazons, the Solimoens, or the Marañon. Palms are far more abundant on the east than on the west side of the Andes, and the species are entirely distinct. Sometimes, when the vitality of a Palm is exhausted, the crown first withers and falls, and the soft interior of the trunk gradually rots, and is eaten away by termites, until nothing is left but a thin shell; and when that can no longer bear its own weight, it collapses with a crash like that of a gunshot.

The following are the most important Palms observed in ascending the Amazons and its chief affluents.\* For convenience, we may roughly divide them into those having fan-shaped, or flabellate, leaves, and those having feathery, or pinnate, leaves. The former are considered lower in rank:

§ 1. *Fan-leaved Palms.*

MAURITIA.—This group may be distinguished from all others, not only by their leaves, but also by their *scaly* fruits and pinnately *branched* spadices. There are at least a dozen species on the River. The *M. flexuosa*, L., the “Mirití” of Brazilians, and “Achuál” or “Aguáshi” of Peruvians, is the most universally-distributed Palm in the valley, abounding from the shores of the Atlantic to the altitude of 3000 feet on the Andes of Peru, Ecuador, and New Granada. It is a social Palm, forming groves along the low shores, at the mouths of tributaries, and about

\* I am glad to say, because it vouches for their correctness, that most of the statements in this chapter are derived from the valuable but well-nigh inaccessible memoir published in the *Linnean Society's Journal*, vol. xi., the result of eleven years of research (1849–1860) in Equatorial America, by Richard Spruce, the most accomplished botanist on the Amazons since Von Martius left it.



swampy lakes. It is always a conspicuous object, the smooth stem often rising one hundred feet, and bearing enormous, spreading, fan-like leaves and clusters of egg-shaped, scaly reddish fruit resembling pine-cones. The epidermis of the leaves furnishes a useful fibre; the orange pulp of the fruit is eaten by the Indians, or made into a wine called "yucuta," and the farinaceous pith yields a kind of sago. The Indians call it "the tree of life," and say that when a man and a woman survived the great deluge, they cast behind them some fruits of the Mirití which produced human beings, and so the earth was repopled. *M. vinifera*, Mart., on the Lower Amazons, closely resembles the Mirití.

The *M. Martiana*, Spruce, *armata*, Mart., *aculeata*, H. et B., *pumila*, Wall., *subinermis*, Spruce, and *cavana*, Wall., are also majestic fan-leaved Palms, but differ from the preceding in having the stem surrounded by whorls of spines. All but the first two are confined to the Rio Negro. The *M. gracilis*, Mart., *tenuis*, Mart., *quadripartita*, Spruce, and *Casiquiarensis*, Spruce, are diminutive Mauritias, and, excepting the *tenuis*, belong to the Rio Negro region.

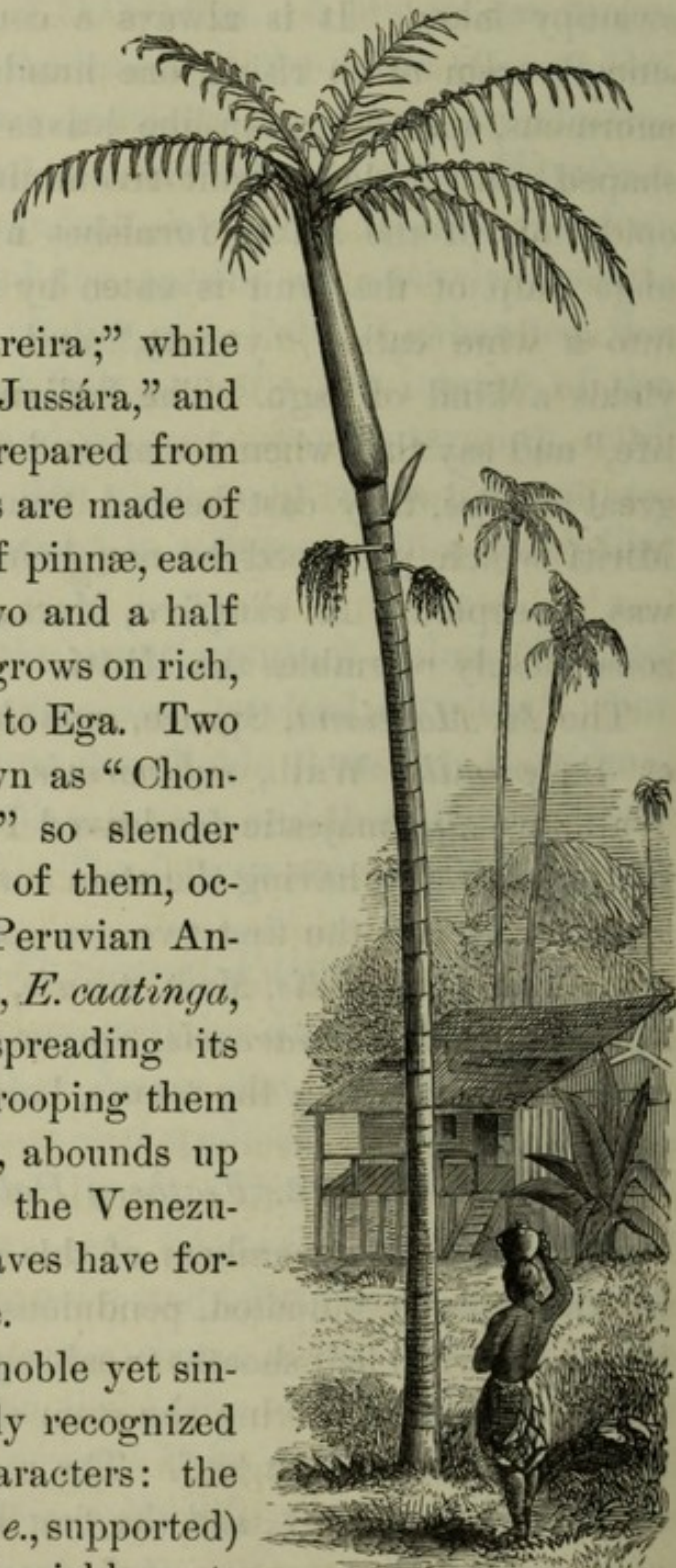
## § 2. Feathery Palms.

EUTERPE.—The members of this genus are remarkable for their neatly pinnated, pendulous leaves, and for their long cylindrical leaf-sheaths ("cabbage"), which finally fall away completely, leaving the stem clean and naked up to the base of the lowest leaf. The most common species is the *E. oleracea*, Mart., and the first Palm, after the Mirití, which arrests the attention of the traveler. Its tall, straight, slender stem, measuring from seventy-five to one hundred feet, its curious "cabbage" top four feet long, and its arched, plume-like foliage eight or nine feet more, trembling in the gentlest breeze, give a peculiarly picturesque



feature to the views on the Lower Amazons. It is commonly known as the "Assaí;" but the proper native name of the tree itself is "Jussareira;" while the fruit is called "Jussára," and the popular drink prepared from it is assaí. Its leaves are made of seventy-eight pairs of pinnæ, each pinna being about two and a half feet long. The tree grows on rich, moist soils from Pará to Ega. Two other Euterpes, known as "Chonta" and "Chontilla," so slender that canes are made of them, occur high up on the Peruvian Andes. Another species, *E. caatinga*, Wall., peculiar in spreading its leaves horizontally, drooping them merely at the points, abounds up the Rio Negro, near the Venezuelan frontier. Its leaves have forty-five pairs of pinnæ.

IRIARTEA.—These noble yet singular Palms are easily recognized by the following characters: the stem is buttressed (*i. e.*, supported) on a cone of emersed prickly roots resembling the spokes of a half-opened umbrella, so that the tree looks as if standing on stilts; the leaflets are fan-shaped and abruptly truncate; the spathes are many; and the berry or drupe is



Assai Palm (*Euterpe oleracea*).



gelatinous and bitter. *I. exorrhiza*, Mart., called "Paxiúba" in Brazil, and "Huacra-pona" in Peru, is the most common form, ranging across the entire breadth of the forest, being equally abundant at the mouth of the Amazons and in the moist valleys of the Andes. It is often not more than forty feet high, and the leaves are not so drooping as in many other Palms. The *I. ventricosa*, Mart., called "Barrigúda" in Brazil, and "Tarapóto" in Peru, is distinguished from all others by a curious swelling midway of its trunk. It is a solitary Palm, rising from sixty to one hundred feet. A specimen sixty-three feet high was eight inches in diameter at the base and twenty inches at the swelling. The belly, however, is often much longer; and Dr. Spruce says that he has seen canoes extemporized from it by splitting off lengthwise a little less than half of it, hollowing out the remainder, and stopping up the ends with clay. The cone of roots often stands six feet high, sometimes twelve. The leaves, usually six in number, are eighteen feet long; and the pinnae are cuneate-flabelliform, with ten plaits. The dark-colored berries are nearly an inch in diameter. It grows on lands not inundated, and ranges from the Rio Negro westward, ascending the Andes 5000 feet. A third species, *I. deltoidea*, R. et P., occurs on the slopes of the Peruvian Andes; and a fourth, *I. setigera*, Mart., on the Middle Amazons, Japurá, and Negro. The latter, called "Paxiuba-miri," is from ten to twenty feet high and two inches in diameter, with leaves five feet in length, having seven pairs of pinnae, each pinna eleven by three and a half inches. It is of this slender Palm that the Indians commonly make their blow-guns.

WETTINIA.—These Palms resemble the Iriartees, but differ in having hairy fruit and long floral envelopes. They are found only on the skirts of the mountains, as along



the Huallága, Pastássa, and Napo. Two species are described, *W. regia*, Poep., and *W. Maynensis*, Spruce. The latter, the most common, is from thirty to forty feet high, bearing five or six leaves twelve feet long, with forty pairs of long semi-lanceolate pinnæ spreading out horizontally, but pendulous from their height.

LEOPOLDINIA. — This remarkable genus is represented only in the thin forest ("Caa-tinga") on the sandy and stony flats of the Upper Rio Negro. The *L. piassaba* is ordinarily about twenty-five feet high (sometimes forty), bearing thick, large, shining leaves fifteen feet long, with sixty pairs of pinnæ. The stem is stouter than in the majority of Palms, and is covered with a pendulous, brown, hairy "beard." This is the valuable *piassába* of commerce, exported to England for the manufacture of brooms, but used on the Amazons for cables, for which it is admirably fitted, being durable and light, not sinking in water. The fibre in young plants is nearly five feet long; in old trees, not two. The fruit is flattened, an inch and three-quarters long, of a dull-red color, and sweet. The *Piassába* grows along the banks of the Padanarí, Jahá, Darahá, Marié, and Xié. The *L. major*, Wall., or "Jará-acú," is distinguished by its bitter fruit, its many clustered stems, from fifteen to twenty feet high; its pendulous leaves scarcely five feet long, with twenty-eight pairs of pinnæ eighteen inches in length. The *L. pulchrá*, Mart., or "Jará," is of humbler growth, and its woody leaf-sheaths clasp the stem almost down to its base. It occurs on the Tapajos as well as Negro.

NUNNEZHARIA *fragrans*, R. et P.—This delicate, graceful Palm is distributed along the arms of the Huallága, particularly around Tarapoto. The stem is only half an inch in diameter, ringed, and rarely erect. It bears simple, forked, jagged leaves, and orange-colored flowers



which exhale the odor of mignonnette. On this account it is much sought after by the Moyobambinos, who call it "Sangapilla." August is the best time for collecting it.

GEONOMA.—The little Palms comprising this genus are often found in the shade of the Mirití and other giants, and range throughout the Amazonian plain and up the Andes to 4000 feet. Their reed-like stems are usually from six to ten feet high, and their smooth, polished straw-colored cuticle is marked with rings. The flowers are yellow or purple, and the fruit is a small, dry berry. *G. baculifera*, Poit., known in Brazil as "Ubím," is frequent in the damp forests about Pará. Its simple forked leaves, three or four feet long, are used for thatching. *G. paniculigera*, Mart., found far up the Negro and Japurá, is between twelve and fifteen feet high, with about twenty leaves three and a half feet long. *G. pauciflora*, Mart., is another very slender Palm, fifteen feet high, with pinnate leaves a yard long, bearing not over ten pairs of pinnæ. It grows near Manáos. *G. discolor*, Spruce, is a low Palm in the neighborhood of Santarem, with a stem six feet long and closely ringed, pinnated leaves a yard long, and from sixteen to twenty-two pairs of pinnæ. *G. tuberculata*, Spruce, near the mouth of the Negro, has four or five leaves about a foot long, and with only two pairs of leaflets. *G. Paraensis*, Spruce, is a Pará Palm having not over ten pairs of pinnæ, fourteen inches by one in length. Eight more species of Geonoma inhabit the Upper Rio Negro.

MANICARIA *saccifera*, Gaert., or "Bussú," common about the mouth of the Amazons on flooded lands, looks at a distance like a rigid plantain, having immense, stiff, simple leaves, of a pale-green color, and twenty-five feet long by six feet wide, the largest entire leaves of any Palm. The stem is deeply ringed, and not over twelve feet high. It



has a sack-like spathe, used for caps and for making cloth, and large, rough, brown, corky fruits.

**CENOCARPUS.**—The Palms of this group have the pinnæ numerous and strongly plicate, a broom-like spadix, and the base of the petioles purplish or lead-colored. The *Æ. distichus*, Mart., or “Baccába” of the Lower and Middle Amazons, is a stately, elegant tree, sixty feet high, with a straight, smooth stem, and a flattened crown of a dark-green color. The black, oily fruit grows in bunches weighing thirty or forty pounds, and is used like that of the Asaí in making a beverage. *Æ. minor*, Mart., called “Baccába-í,” is from fifteen to thirty feet high, but not over three inches in diameter, with glossy leaves eight and a half feet long, having about sixty pairs of pinnæ, abruptly acuminate and five-plicate. It is found on the Brazilian Amazons and Rio Negro. *Æ. patauá*, a giant among Palms, stands from eighty to one hundred feet, with leaves nearly half that length. The pinnæ are very numerous, and measure four feet and a half long by four or five inches wide; each has fourteen or fifteen deep folds. The veins of the leaf-sheaths are the ready-made arrows which the Indians shoot from the blow-gun. The fruit is grayish-purple, and affords a creamy, sweetish liquor. It occurs on the Brazilian Amazons and Rio Negro. *Æ. multicaulis*, Spruce, or “Sinámi,” grows in clusters (six to ten from the same rhizoma) about Tarapoto, near the Huallága, fifteen to thirty feet high, with a diameter of four or five inches. The leaves, about ten feet long, bear sixty pairs of plicated pinnæ.

**RAPHIA taedigera**, Mart., or “Jupatí,” is famous for its long shaggy leaves, which measure from forty to fifty feet, rolling out from the top in graceful curves, forming a magnificent plume. It is also the only scaly-fruited Palm in America that has pinnate leaves, in this respect resem-



bling Old World Palms. The trunk is from six to eight feet high, and spiny; the leaf-stalks are about twelve feet long; and the fruit is a large, oblong drupe. It belongs to the *ygapos*, on the lower part of the Amazons.

BACTRIS.—These prickly, dwarf Palms form, along with the *Geonomas*, a considerable portion of the undergrowth in recent forests. The leaf-points are tipped with a pencil, and the peduncle of the spadix bursts through the middle of the leaf-sheath. *B. Negrensis*, Spruce, growing about the mouth of the Negro, has a smooth stem a yard high, distantly ringed, and about five simple bifurcated leaves. *B. marajá*, Mart., bears an edible fruit with acid flavor. A smaller species, *B. tenuis*, Wall., called "Peuririma" or "Marajá-í," occurs on the Lower Amazons and Rio Negro. The stem is from six to twelve feet high and less than an inch in diameter, and the four pairs of pinnæ are not equally distant. *B. bifida*, Mart., or "Bussu-rana," has a spiny stem ten feet high, bearing numerous simple forked leaves three feet long by one in width, with petioles covered with prickles. It is found on the Negro. *B. flaccosa*, Spruce, in the woods near Santarem, has a prickly stem four feet high, and leaves two and a half feet long, with about ten pairs of pinnæ. *B. bidentula*, Spruce, about Manáos, grows in clusters of three or four stems from ten to fifteen feet high, an inch in diameter, and spiny; and its leaves are nearly five feet long, with thirty-three pairs of pinnæ. *B. hylophila*, Spruce, growing near the mouth of the Negro, is of the same height as the last, but more slender; its leaves are only a yard long, and have fifteen pairs of pinnæ, the longest eleven inches long by half an inch wide. Along the banks of the whole Amazons is found *B. concinna*, Mart., growing in clusters, from ten to fourteen feet high and three-quarters of an inch in diameter, generally nodding, and thorny; its leaves, five feet



in length, are composed of twenty-eight pairs of pinnæ sixteen inches long, and nearly an inch wide.

The "Pupúnha," or Peach Palm, formerly called *Guilielmia speciosa*, Mart., is now considered to be the *BACTRIS Gasipaés* of Humboldt. It is one of the most beautiful and useful of Palms, growing, generally in clusters, from sixty to ninety feet high, and thickly armed with prickles. Its numerous, curling, drooping leaves, seven feet long, have from sixty to seventy pairs of pinnæ pointing in all directions. Under the deep-green vault hangs the huge cluster of fruit, yellow and red when ripe, about seventy-five in number, and making a load for a strong man. It is nowhere found wild, although an undoubted native. It is seen in the cultivated spots along the whole River, even to the warm highland valleys of the Andes. The Peruvians give it the Quichua name of "Pisho-guáyo" (Bird-fruit) and "Chonta-rúru" (Palm-egg).

DESMONCUS.—These are slender, climbing Palms with spinous stem and leaves. The pinnæ are opposite, and the upper pairs are transformed into tough, recurved spines—a nuisance to travelers. The most common kind, the *D. macracanthos*, Mart., or "Jacitára," is observed on the Lower Amazons and Rio Negro. The *D. prunifer*, Poep., in Eastern Peru, bears sweet, edible drupes.

ASTROCARYUM *vulgare*, Mart., called "Tucúm" in Brazil and "Chambíra" in Peru, and *A. tucumá*, Mart., are common forest Palms (growing only on the main-land), with a stout trunk from fifty to sixty feet high. Their closely-set leaves stand erect, broom-like, at the head of the stem; and every part, even the edges of the leaves, bristles with spines. The leaves are pinnate, and white underneath. From the cuticle of the Tucúm fronds are made mats, twine, hammocks, and nets. The fruit of the Tucumá is esteemed by the Indians. In Iquitos may be seen a



Chambíra eighty-five feet high growing through the centre of a large exogenous tree; and strong and strange is the contrast between the two forms of vegetation when the Palm, coming through the top, spreads out its flat crown among the net-veined leaves of its rival. *A. jauarí*, Mart., is one of the commonest riparial Palms on the Middle and Upper Amazons; and its clustered, rather slender but very prickly stems, thirty to forty feet high, contribute to give a forbidding and monotonous aspect to low, inundated, sandy shores, where it often abounds to the exclusion of every other Palm. It bears an excessively hard nut. *A. murumurú*, Mart., abounds particularly along the banks of the Marañon, and in the moist, sandy flats of the forest. It rarely exceeds fifteen feet in height; but it carries a graceful head of long, pinnate leaves, white on the underside, and formidable spines. The fruit is edible, a juicy part covering a very hard seed. *A. munbáca*, Mart., has a slender, spiny stem not over twelve feet high, with spiny, pinnate leaves five feet long. The lancet-like prickles, two inches long, suggested the native name, Munbáca (Wake up!). It bears a sweet, orange-colored fruit. It grows in old clearings on the Lower Amazons. *A. acaule*, Mart., is a stemless Palm found in sandy places on the Rio Negro, bearing spiny leaves ten feet in length, with sixty-seven pairs of pinnæ.

*MAXIMILIANA regia*, Mart., "Inajá" in Tupi, and "Catarinna" in Quichua, is a fine, feathery Palm, quite common in the primitive forests along the whole river, but most conspicuous up the Rio Negro, where it is called "Cocurito." Its large spathe is used as a ready-made basket. The stem is of moderate height, and the leaves in circles of fives spread slightly, forming an open vase. The drupe is yellowish-gray.

*ATTALEA Humboldtiana*, Spruce, the "Yágua" of the



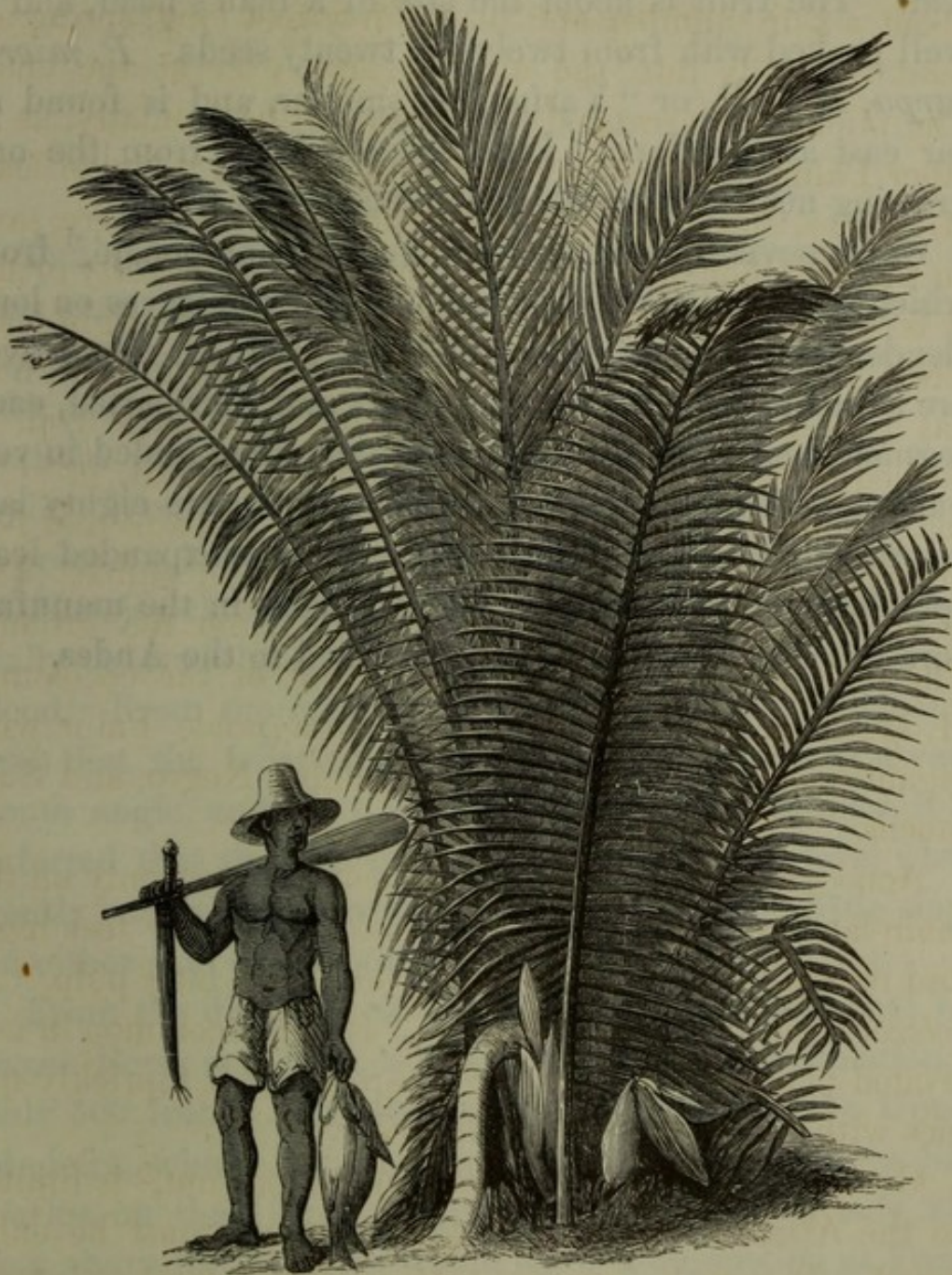
Indians, on which, said Humboldt, "Nature has lavished every beauty of form." The smooth, annulated, slender stem rises between twenty and forty feet, and its leaves, about six in number and over thirty feet long, spring almost vertically into the air, but arch over at the ends. The pinnæ are arranged *vertically*, not horizontally, as in other Palms, and number some 200 pairs in a single leaf. *A. excelsa*, Mart., or "Urucurí," common every where, save on the Marañon, has a smooth, columnar stem, forty or fifty feet high, and broad leaves with symmetrical, rigid leaflets. The fruit, about the size and shape of a butternut, has a pleasant, juicy pulp, but is not eaten. The fruit is burned for smoking rubber. *A. spectabilis*, Mart., or "Curuá," found on the sandy campos of the Tapajos and Negro, is a stemless Palm with broad, flat, rigid pinnæ. The leaves, twenty feet long, rise directly from the ground. The fruit contains milk similar to that of the cocoa-nut. *A. speciosa*, Mart., or "Uanassú," is a noble Palm with gigantic leaves growing on the Madeira, Negro, and Solimões.

*ACROCOMIA lasiospatha*, or "Mucujá," grows only on the main-land of the Lower Amazons. It is forty feet high, and its fruit contains an edible, yellowish, fatty pulp. *A. sclerocarpa*, also called "Mucujá," is not uncommon in cultivated places from Pará to Santarem. It is a prickly species with edible but dryish drupes.

*Cocos nucifera*, L., the common "Cocoa-nut," is limited to the Atlantic end of the Amazons, and must be cultivated. It may be grown at Manáos and farther inland, but will not fruit. Even at Santarem, according to our experience, the nuts lack the sweetness of those nearer the sea. The stem is about forty feet high, and invariably inclined. In germination, the ovule sprouts through the softest of the three "eyes" at the butt of the nut.



PHYTELEPHAS.\* The "Ivory Palms," whose seeds yield the vegetable ivory of commerce, are found only at the roots of the Andes, generally in clusters near streams un-



The Vegetable-ivory Plant.

der the shade of lofty trees, as at Tarapoto. Their extreme altitude is 3000 feet. There are two species: *P. macro-*

\* This and the following are not true Palms, but belong to the allied order of *Pandanaceæ* or Screw-pines.



*carpa*, R. et P., or "Polo-ponto," has a very short trunk or none at all, and large, pinnate leaves with about one hundred pairs of pinnae, which begin at the very base of the leaf. The fruit is about the size of a man's head, and is well packed with from twelve to twenty seeds. *P. microcarpa*, R. et P., or "Yarína," is smaller, and is found as far east as the Napo. Both species differ from the one growing near Guayaquil, which has a high trunk.

CARLUDOVICA *palmata*, R. et P., or "Bombonájé," from which straw hats are made, has no stem, the leaves on long slender petioles springing from the ground. The leaves are about two feet long, fan-shaped and four-parted, each segment being again ten-cleft; so that when folded in veneration, each segment on its own rib, there are eighty layers in a young leaf. It is this young, unexpanded leaf, split into 160 or more strips, that is used in the manufacture of "Panama hats." It is confined to the Andes.



## CHAPTER XLI.

## The Geological Structure of the Amazons Valley.

THE valley of the Amazons is a very shallow basin of vast extent and of an oval shape, with the small end pointing eastward. Between December and June, a large part of it resembles a huge, undrained swamp, and people sail half the year above districts where for the other half they walk. Were the forest removed from the Lower Amazons, a great mud flat would be exposed (lower than the island of Marajó), threaded by a net-work of deep channels, partially covered by every tide, and deluged by the annual flood. From the marked feature (first noticed by Chandless) that the tributaries enter the main stream at a very acute angle, and have exceedingly tortuous courses, it is inferred that the rest of the valley is a nearly level plain gently inclined from west to east, and with very little slope on either side toward the centre of drainage.

From the diagram on page 341 it will be seen that between Borja and Pará, a distance of  $29^{\circ}$ , the inclination is only 500 feet. A section from Exaltacion, on the Upper Madeira, which has the same altitude as Borja, to San Carlos, on the Upper Negro, which is elevated only 212 feet above the Atlantic, would show a depression at Fonte Boa, on the Amazons, of only 150 feet in 1000 miles. The Negro is a sluggish stream (San Carlos being on a level with Tabatinga); the Napo is more rapid; and the Pastássa is a torrent. In the last thousand miles, the Madeira descends 430 feet; the Purús, 225; and the Ucayali,



400; while the Huallága has probably a swifter current than any of the southern affluents.

The basin of the Great River is principally inclosed by the sedimentary slopes of the Andes and the metamorphic regions of the Casiquiare and Central Brazil.

As the rise of the Andes was the creation of the Amazons, the study of the Mountain should precede that of the River. Indeed, the structure of the basin can not be understood without a knowledge of the "rim." The geology of the Andes is not sufficiently advanced to warrant a classification of the ranges with respect to their periods of elevation. Yet it is very probable that the coast cordillera was the first to emerge, and very certain that the eastern did not reach its present elevation until after the Cretaceous age. The characteristic rocks of the maritime range are trachytes and porphyries; of the oriental, sandstones and slates.

The profile of the Andes of Northern Peru, on the following page, gives the relative heights of the ranges and the main formations. I found no fossils in the Pacasmáyo beach; but at Payta, farther north, there are many, among them *Turritella Patagonica*, Sow. (which Darwin found also on the coasts of Patagonia and Chile), and *Pecten modisonus*, Say, and *Crepidula fornicata*, Say, identical with Miocene species on the east coast. The beach was therefore raised in late or post Tertiary times; and there is evidence that a subsidence has taken place since the Conquest,\* for an Incarial road, with side-walls intended

\* I have elsewhere called attention to the singular fact that every successive measurement of the Andes gives a reduced elevation, tempting one to believe that either the chain is sinking or the atmospheric pressure increasing. Thus, Humboldt (1803) made the altitude of Quito 9570 feet; the writer (1867), 9520; Reiss and Stübel (1870), 9350. Pichincha, according to Humboldt, is 15,922; according to the writer, 15,827; according to Reiss and Stübel, 15,704. In 1827, Pentland very carefully estimated the altitude of Lake Titicaca at 12,795 feet, and Friesach, in 1858, determined it to be

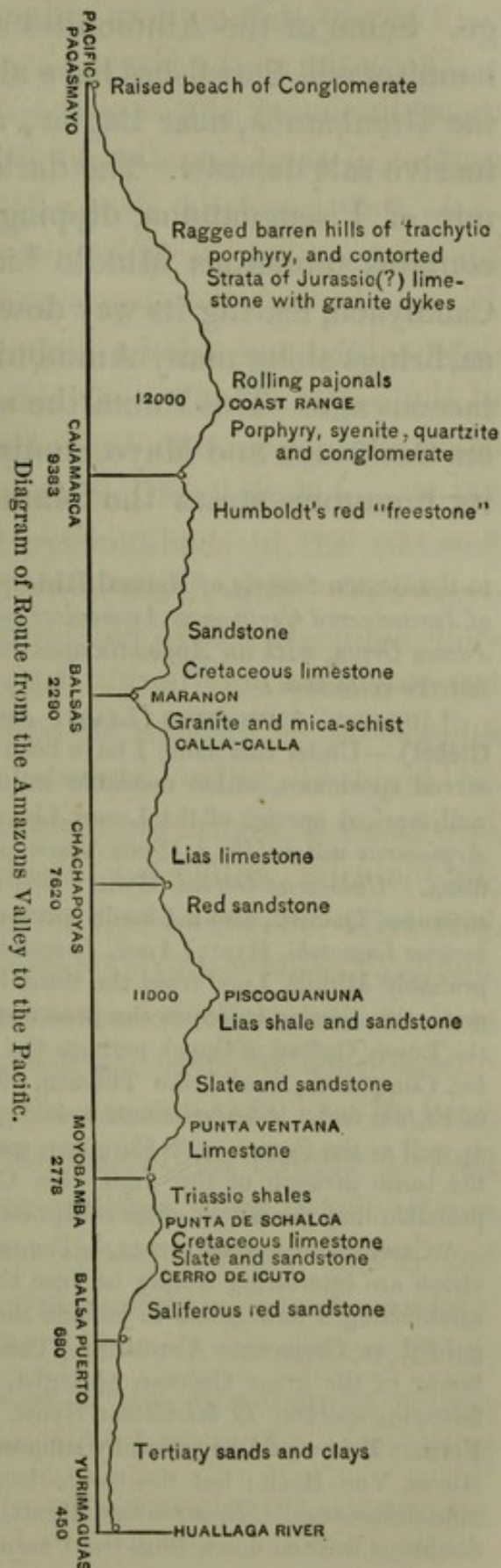


to run along the coast, starts from Pacasmáyo, and ends in the sea some three miles south.

The western cordillera is doubtless Mesozoic, the Pacific side being probably Jurassic, as in Southern Peru, and the oriental side Cretaceous. From the slope facing Pacasmáyo I obtained Jurassic *Cardiums* and *Ostreas*, and an Ammonite resembling *A. Murchisoni*. Above Balsas, near Tomependa, Humboldt found and Von Buch determined *Echini*, *Isocardias*, *Pectens*, *Ostreas*, and Ammonites of Cretaceous age, and similar forms were discovered by Raimondi below, within the department of Ancachs. Half a day's journey west of Chachapoyas is a highly fossiliferous limestone, abounding with Ammonites and *Pectens*, which, according to Professor Hyatt, are Liassic.\* The fossils are most

12,630; but the recent railway levelings from the coast make it only 12,493.

\* The following is an abstract of Professor Hyatt's paper presented





common along the left bank of the Utcubamba, near Tingo. Some of the Ammonites are a foot in diameter. Belemnites and Star-fishes have also been found farther down the Utcubamba, near Bagua; and at San Carlos is an extensive salt deposit. The dark-brown shale near the summit of Piscoguañuna, dipping strongly to the eastward, contains numerous Middle Lias Ammonites. The rapid Cachiyacu, tearing its way down from the Punta de Schalca, brings along many Ammonites and Brachiopods of Cretaceous age. This Punta, the saddle which divides the rivers Cachiyacu and Mayo, continues northward, and through its limestone strata the Marañon has cut the Pongo de

to the Boston Society of Natural History, January 20th, 1875, entitled *Notice of Jurassic and Cretaceous Ammonites collected in South America by Professor James Orton, with an Appendix upon the Cretaceous Ammonites of Professor Hartt's collection*:

"JURASSIC AMMONITES (LIAS): *Arnioceras ceras*, Agassiz (*Amm. ceras*, Giebel).—Under this name I have been obliged to describe several badly preserved specimens, which resemble in their characteristics very closely this well-marked species of the Lower Lias; *loc.* Piscoguañuna, Northern Peru. *Arnioceras miserabilis?* Hyatt (*Amm. miserabilis?* Quenst.); *loc.* Piscoguañuna. *Caloceras Ortoni*, Hyatt: this new species is closely allied to *Amm. sironotus*, Quenst., also a Liassic species; *loc.* Tingo, Northern Peru. *Phylloceras Loscombi*, Hyatt (*Amm. Loscombi*, D'Orb.): this is another Lias form, probably Middle Lias, from the same locality. *Perisphinctes anceps*, Waagen: this species indicates the presence of the higher divisions of the Jura, the Lower Oxford of Oppel, perhaps the Kelloway division of that formation; *loc.* Compuerta, near Lake Titicaca, fifty miles northwest of Puno, altitude of 13,500 feet. *Stephanoceras macrocephalus*, Waagen: the identity of this, as well as the former, with European species can not be doubted. It indicates the same division of the Jura; *loc.* Caracolis, near Lake Titicaca. It is probable that the whole series of Jurassic rocks exist in Peru and Bolivia.

"CRETACEOUS AMMONITES.—The remarks upon the specimens in this division are interesting simply because they have furnished me the means of establishing a new genus to include the forms which have hitherto been regarded as Cretaceous Ceratites. This genus I have called *Buchiceras*, in honor of the great German geologist, Leopold Von Buch. It includes the following species: *B. bilobatum*, Hyatt, n. s.; *loc.* Punta de Schalca, Northern Peru. This would be generally supposed to be identical with the *Amm. Syriacus*, Von Buch; but the comparison of authentic specimens shows specific differences. *B. serratum*, Hyatt, n. s., *loc.* Cachiyacu, Northern Peru, doubtless washed down from the Punta de Schalca."



Manseriche. The limestone at the Pongo yielded me a *Protocardia*, a linguiform *Ostrea*, and an *Exogyra* of Cretaceous type. All the Pongos on the Upper Marañon are made through limestone mountains. The Punta de Schalca is also a prolongation of the calcareous range which crosses the Huallága at the Pongo de Aguirre. It is probable, therefore, that this western wall at the head of the Amazons valley is of Cretaceous age.

The Cerro de Icuto is flanked on the east with saliferous red sandstone. It contains the valuable salt-mines of Cachipuerto, on the Cachiyacu; and without doubt the salt-hills of Chasuta and Pilluana on the Huallága belong to the same formation, as also the gypsum-beds in the elevated ridge separating the Huallága from the Ucayali. The Cerro de Sal, farther south, near the head of the Pachitea, may likewise be contemporaneous.\* The Icuto rock is unfossiliferous, and I could not find its relation to the Schalca limestone. The great Moyobamba valley, inclosed between the Schalca and Piscoguañuna ranges, is lined with friable shales of divers colors—red, yellow, purple, blue, and black—with overlying soft, white sandstone. Drs. Raimondi and Spruce refer this to the Triassic. Near Tarapoto, where the shales contain Ammonites of immense size, there are jointed columns of trap-rock and cliffs of white salt.

In crossing the Andes in the latitude of Lake Titicaca eastward, we first find Oolitic formations largely covered with intrusive rocks. After passing the summit of the coast cordillera, we have purely sedimentary strata, contorted but dipping easterly—conglomerate, sandstone, slate, and Jurassic limestone. Then follow, in succession, Triassic beds (remarkably like those in the Moyobamba valley, capped with white sandstone, and broken by protruding

\* The gorge of Tunkini on the Upper Ucayali is described by Castelnau as "freestone."



igneous rocks); Carboniferous, at the south end of the lake, and re-appearing east of Cochabamba on the headwaters of the Chapara; and the Devonian and Silurian, forming the mass of the high Andes.

If now we examine the valley of the Amazons, we shall be struck with its remarkably uniform character, such as is presented by no other region on the globe of equal area. From the Andes to the Atlantic, and from the Falls of the Madeira to the Orinoco, scarcely any thing is visible but clays and sandstones.

The fundamental rock is metamorphic, chiefly gneiss and granite. It is exposed at the falls of the tributaries, especially on the Madeira. It is greatly disturbed, and frequently broken through by porphyritic dikes. The granite contains little mica and much quartz. The valley is bounded on the north and south by immense metamorphic areas. The low water-shed between the Amazons and Paraguay is covered with tertiary beds; but the still lower region of the Upper Rio Negro is one great undulating sheet of granite and gneiss completely denuded of the stratified rocks that once overlaid it, save here and there a thin covering of white sand and red loam filling the hollows, and abrupt peaks that suddenly rise from the plain.

Silurian formations are rarely visible. The gold and topaz bearing rocks of Minas Geraes probably belong to this age, but they are greatly altered. In the Bolivian Andes, facing the Madeira valley, is an extensive development of Silurian slates and sandstones. The only undoubted Devonian formation in the valley is the plain north of the Serra of Ereré, discovered by Hartt.

The horizontal limestone strata at Itaituba on the Tapajos and on the Trombetas across the Amazons abound with Brachiopods of the Coal Measures. D'Orbigny and Forbes have pointed out isolated Carboniferous deposits



in the Titicaca basin and near Santa Cruz, on the Mamoré. From the Pichis, which flows directly from the Cerro de Sal (a spur of the eastern cordillera), I obtained several fossils of limited vertical range which go to show that the Pichis, Bolivian, and Itaituban beds are identical. The Pichis, Titicaca, Oruro, and Guaco (province of San Juan) deposits lie in the same line, northwest-southeast, along the Andes. The altitude of the Tapajos beds is 125 feet; of the Pichis, over 700 feet; of the Titicaca, 12,500 feet; and Raimondi has found Carboniferous rocks on the Apurimac at the height of more than 14,000 feet. It is evident that through the Paleozoic ages at least the basin of the Amazons was an open sea.\*

\* A pebbly bottom is first struck in ascending the Ucayali about fifteen miles up the Pachitea. Now and then bluffs of yellowish-gray sandstone abound on the Pachitea; but the Ucayali, for 700 miles from its mouth, flows through a vast pampa, overflowed in the rainy season. The rocky bed of the Pichis (lat.  $10^{\circ}$ , long.  $75^{\circ}$ ) is filled with fragmentary, fossiliferous limestone of an ash-gray color. At Puerto Tucker, the highest point navigable in canoes, lofty mountains are seen about seven miles distant, extending east and west. I am indebted to the Hydrographical Commission for specimens from the bed of the Pichis. Among them are two corals, which I have submitted to Professors Hall and Pourtales. One is cyathophylloid, having the structure of *Amplexus*; but it is compound. The other has the aspect of *Syringopora*, and may be an *Eridophyllum* of small size. The evidence is in favor of their Carboniferous age. The following note on the Mollusks is by Mr. Orville A. Dewey, of Cornell University: "On his return from Peru in 1874, Professor James Orton submitted to me for examination a piece of fossiliferous limestone from the Pichis River. The mass was a water-worn pebble of dark-blue stone, scarcely larger than one's fist. The fossils being silicified, the specimen was treated with acid, and a number of species of Brachiopoda obtained. The only other fossil was a slender ramose Coral or Bryozoan, which, being imperfectly silicified, could not be obtained for identification. The number of individuals and species occurring in so small a mass indicate an exceedingly rich fauna in the locality. The following are the species determined:

"*SPIRIFERA CAMERATA*, MORTON: This widely distributed species is represented by several specimens, one of which is of considerable size, and shows unmistakably the characteristics of the species. The fasciculated arrangement of the ribs, though distinct, is not strongly marked, and in this as in other respects it agrees with the forms found on the Tapajos. The occurrence of this form in the Andes strengthens the view which I had taken in my pa-



No Mesozoic rocks are visible east of the Andes, except the Cretaceous conglomerate found by Chandless on the Upper Purús, which, however, was evidently washed down from a higher locality farther south.\* The Andean region was covered by the Jurassic sea, and was afterward elevated (in Northern Peru) 11,000 feet. The moment the Andes began to rise, the topography of the Amazons val-

per on the Brazilian Carboniferous Brachiopods (*Bull. Cornell Univ.*, vol. i.), that *S. condor*, D'Orb. from Lake Titicaca is identical with the North American species. SPIRIFERA or SPIRIFERINA sp.: There is also a fragment with rather coarse simple ribs not recognizable specifically. The aspect is that of a *Spiriferina*, but no puncta have been observed. SPIRIFERA PERPLEXA, M'Chesney: A single dorsal valve is referred to this species. In the paper above cited, I have endeavored to show that this well-known and widely-distributed American form is distinct from the European *S. lineata*, Martin, to which it has usually been referred. An exceedingly small specimen, presenting the characters of a smooth *Spirifer*, is probably the young of this species or of *S. PLANOCONVEXA*, Shumard. EUMETRIA MORMONII, Marcou (*Retzia punctulifera*, Shumard), is by far the most abundant species, being represented by ten or a dozen specimens in the rock examined. One of these is figured on Pl. viii., Fig. 8, in my paper referred to. TEREBRATULA BOVIDENS, Morton (?): A crushed specimen agrees perfectly with Morton's species from Missouri in the characters of the beak and in general form, as far as the latter can be observed. This species is known from two Bolivian localities. Salter identified it under the name of *T. millepunctata* among some specimens from Santa Cruz, by Mr. Cummings (*Quart. Jour. Geol. Soc.*, vol. xvii., p. 50), and Toulia describes an apparently identical form from Cochabamba as *T. Hochstetteri* (*Proc. Vienna Acad.*, lix.). RHYNCHONELLA, or CAMAROPHORIA, sp.: A small specimen; ovate, about as long as wide; ventral valve depressed, convex, with a broad shallow sinus extending but little beyond the middle, and marked by two rounded ribs; dorsal valve gibbous; surface smooth. Should this prove to be new, I would suggest the name of R. (or C.) ORTONII. Of these species, *S. camerata*, *S. perplexa*, and *E. Mormonii* occur on the Tapajos in beds equivalent to the North American Coal Measures, of which the same species with *T. bovidens* are characteristic. I have endeavored to show (*Bull. Cor. Univ.*, vol. i., part ii., p. 6) that the fossils found in various Bolivian localities belong to the same division of the Carboniferous age. The existence of a Carboniferous basin in Peru quite widely removed from the Titicaca basin on the south, and from the Tapajos basin on the east, is an exceedingly interesting point in South American geology."

\* Dr. Galt brought an Ammonite from the mouth of the Pichis on the Pachitea (Upper Ucayali) which appears to be Cretaceous. It was probably washed down from the south.



ley was foreshadowed. The superficial Cretaceous strata up the Parana-pura, at the Pongo de Manseriche, and from Tomependa up the remarkable longitudinal valley of the Upper Marañon to Balsas, into the department of Ancachs, would indicate that so much at least of the Great River began to exist in the Early Tertiary. Without doubt, during the Cretaceous period, the Atlantic and Pacific were continuous oceans, flowing over not only the Panama isthmus, but also over all Equatorial America, save a few islands and reefs. We are not surprised, therefore, to find the same Cretaceous (and even Miocene) species on both sides of the Andes.\*

The vast basin (whether Carboniferous or Cretaceous I will not say) formed by the rise of the Andes and the metamorphic regions on the north and south received an immense sheet of colored clays, sands, and sandstones. This deposit, unique in its extent and origin, is known as the Amazonian Tertiary formation. It was the sediment of a brackish Mediterranean, or of a quiet lake to which brackish water had occasional access. The argillaceous and loamy beds are universal; the sandstone has been reduced by subsequent denudation, and is now nearly confined to the Lower Amazons.† Excepting this sandstone, the material is so thoroughly comminuted that a pebble is a rarity. The Marañon Indians, upon returning from up the Ucayali and other tributaries, bring home rocks to sharpen their knives. I have seen, however, concretions, nodular and stalactiform, strikingly similar to the marly concretions noticed by Darwin in the Pampean mud.

Previous to the expedition of the writer across the con-

\* Mr. Bland informs me, after an examination of my land-shells, that the general aspect of the living *Bulimi* from the Peruvian Andes is remarkably like the Lower Californian.

† Vesicular, ferruginous sandstone occurs far up the Madeira and Negro. I am not aware of its existence in any part of the Marañon region.



continent in 1867, this vast homogeneous formation along the Great River had not yielded a single fossil. In the words of Professor Agassiz, "Tertiary deposits have never been observed in any part of the Amazonian basin." And it was on this negative evidence mainly that the distinguished naturalist hazarded the conjecture that the formation was drift.\* But the banks of the Marañon prove to be highly fossiliferous. At Pebas, near the mouth of the Ambiyacu, as already stated (page 282), I discovered in one of the beds of blue clay, twelve feet below the surface, a multitude of fossil shells. Below this bed is a seam of lignite, and then another layer of fossils. I engaged Mr. Hauxwell, an English collector, to search for other localities; and in 1870 he reported a large deposit on the south side of the Marañon, below Pebas, at Pichana. The shells were larger and more plentiful than at Pebas, and were found from six to twenty feet beneath the soil. In revisiting the Amazons, in 1873, I discovered at Iquitos, more than a hundred miles west of Pebas, a still more prolific bed.† Here the shells occur above, below, and in

\* The history of the attempt to find the traces of glaciation in this equatorial region is short. The Cambridge professor, who had berated other naturalists for theorizing without facts, entered the mouth of the Amazons for the first time in his life with the confidence of a prophet, foreordaining bowlders, moraines, striæ, and all the other appurtenances of a gigantic glacier. All proved to be imaginary; yet the chief and his satellites stoutly kept their original faith. Professor Hartt, after propounding several modifications, the last one being the possible glacial origin of the superficial layer, to which the Pebas shells had driven him, finally owns that, "having no evidence whatever of the former existence of glaciers in the Amazons, the question of the glacial origin of the valley need not be raised." For evidence against the supposition of a glacial epoch at the equator, see *Annals and Mag. Nat. Hist.*, 1871, vol. viii., p. 297. Keller, in his late exploration of the Madeira, searched diligently for erratic bowlders; but not a trace of the "foundlings" could he discover. "I never believed for a moment" (writes Mr. Darwin), "in Agassiz's idea of the origin of the Amazonian formation."

† It is very singular that Castelnau and Herndon overlooked the shells at Pebas, since they are plainly exposed; and still more strange that Mr. Steer, who examined the beds at Pebas and Pichana in 1871, found nothing at



the lignite band, beginning about twenty feet from the surface. They are best exposed about two miles below the town. A well dug at Iquitos shows, first, seven feet of variegated clays, nine feet of fine sand; next, several feet of pebbles; and then, blue clay containing shells. From the collections made at these localities, the following thirty species have been determined:

## BIVALVES.

*Pachydon carinatus*, Conrad.  
 “ *obliquus*, Gabb.  
 “ *tenuis*, Gabb.  
 “ *erectus*, Conrad.  
 “ *cuneatus*, Conrad.  
 “ *ovatus*, Conrad.  
 “ *cuneiformis*, Conrad.  
 “ *dispar*, Conrad.  
*Dresseina scripta*, Conrad.  
*Anodon Batesii*, Woodward.  
 “ *Pebasana*, Conrad.  
*Triquetra longula*, Conrad.  
*Ostomya papyria*, Conrad.  
*Haplothaerus capax*, Conrad.

## UNIVALVES.

*Isaea Ortoni*, Gabb.  
 “ *lintea*, Conrad.  
*Liris laqueata*, Conrad.  
*Ebora crassilabra*, Conrad.  
*Nesis bella*, Conrad.  
*Neritina Ortoni*, Conrad.  
*Dyris gracilis*, Conrad.  
*Hemisinus sulcatus*, Conrad.  
 “ *Steerei*, Conrad.  
*Iquitosa tuberculifera*, Conrad.\*  
*Pachytoma tertia*, Conrad.  
*Toxosoma eborea*, Conrad.  
*Cirrobasis venusta*, Conrad.  
*Liosoma curta*, Conrad.  
*Cyclocheila Pebasana*, Conrad.  
*Bulimus lintheus*, Conrad.

These interesting fossils have attracted much attention by their extraordinary character, and by the light which they throw upon the largest continuous Tertiary formation in the world. All the species and twelve of the genera are extinct. The impalpable clay in which they were imbedded was admirably fitted for their preservation. Some

Iquitos, where I found shells even more abundant than below. All the known localities were discovered by myself, and by Mr. Hauxwell, under my instructions.

\* This beautiful and characteristic shell was originally described in *Proceed. Acad. Nat. Sci. Phil.*, vol. xxvi., as a *Hemisinus*; but Mr. Conrad has since decided that it belongs to a new genus, distinguished by its high, Melania-like spine and short, patulous aperture. “Subulate, subturreted, whorls numerous, spirally ribbed; aperture short, oval; columella regularly arched, solid, subtruncated at base; outer lip regularly curved.” The name is derived from Iquitos, Peru, where it is very abundant. *Hemisinus* and *Triquetra* are characteristic genera of South American rivers.



have retained their colors and epidermis, and the bivalves generally occur with the valves united and closed. They exist also in such vast numbers, they must have lived and died on the spot. The bivalves are most abundant at Pichana, and the univalves at Iquitos—localities at least 150 miles apart: the former may be the lower stratum, and the other the upper. The *Hemisinus* is particularly abundant at Iquitos, and very rare in the Pebas district. Mr. Gabb led me astray in saying, on page 282, that these shells are marine. Most of them are fresh-water, many are estuary (but might have lived in fresh or brackish water), and a few are terrestrial. Mr. Conrad, who examined my large collections, and is better prepared to speak than any other paleontologist, considers the beds *Eocene*.\*

I am not prepared to give the vertical or horizontal distribution of these fossils. So far as visible at low water, they appear to range over twenty feet of depth, coming nearer to the surface at Pebas than at Iquitos; but the main layer lies nearly parallel with the level of the river, which falls about forty feet between the two places. They occur on both sides of the lignite, which is traceable from Tabatinga to the Huallága. The shell-bed must extend far west of Iquitos; and in my last expedition, I procured a mass of yellow clay containing the "Pebas shells" from a point several hundred miles up the Ucayali; the precise locality I can not give, as I did not visit it. Evidently this Tertiary basin is not so contracted as the glacialists have tried to make it. Dr. Galt brought from the Pachitea (near the junction of the Pichis and Palcazu) a beautiful *Ostrea*, which Conrad calls *O. callacta*, and says it is a Tertiary form, and was filled with a light-colored clay strik-

\* *Per contra*, Professor Hartt, who has never seen the Marañon, decides that "it was in the latter part of the stage of growth of the basin that the clays of the Upper Amazon were deposited, and the Pebas shells lived. This appears to have been near the close of the Tertiary."



ingly similar to that of the Pebas beds.\* Mastodon remains have been found near Moyobamba; and silicified wood is occasionally seen in the hands of the Marañon Indians.

It is evident that such an even sheet of fine earth could not have been spread over such a vast area by streams from the rising Andes; it must be the deposit of a quiet, inland lake. It is evident that the Amazons estuary extended farther west than now, the result of a gentle oscillation: a subsidence of one hundred feet at Tabatinga would make the tides felt on the Marañon. It is evident that the condition of things in the Brazilian Amazons, both during and after the deposition of the formation, was different from that in the Marañon region. If there is any difference in age, I should give the priority to the latter. It is evident that the Andes did not reach their present altitude until after the deposition of the Amazonian formation; though it was a slow movement in mass, for the beds are nowhere unequally tilted or dislocated. The clay-beds ascend with gentle inclination the eastern slope, being visible far up the Napo, Pastássa, and Huallága. Balsa Puerto,  $3^{\circ} 15'$  west of Iquitos and 400 feet higher, stands on a thick bed of red, yellow, and white clays, resting on a soft slate, dipping easterly.† By the continued rise of the Andes, the great equatorial lake, already shallowed by sediment, was drained, leaving only a net-work of rivers, igarapes and lagunes.

\* In the ferruginous clay at Villa Bella, Lower Amazons, I found imbedded a little shell which Conrad refers to *Acicula*.

† At the head of the Napo and Pastássa, the Andes begin with a soft slate of great thickness, overlying mica schist, and trachyte.



## CHAPTER XLII.

On the Condors and Humming-birds of the Equatorial Andes.\*

THE Condor has been singularly unfortunate in the hands of the curious and scientific. Fifty years have elapsed since the first specimen reached Europe; yet to-day the exaggerated stories of its size and strength are repeated in many of our text-books, and the very latest ornithological work leaves us in doubt as to its relation to the other vultures. No one credits the assertion of the old geographer, Marco Paolo, that the Condor can lift an elephant from the ground high enough to kill it by the fall; nor the story of a traveler, so late as 1830, who declared that a Condor of moderate size, just killed, was lying before him, a single quill-feather of which was twenty good paces long! Yet the statement continues to be published that the ordinary expanse of a full-grown specimen is from twelve to twenty feet; whereas it is very doubtful if it ever exceeds, or even equals, twelve feet. A full-grown male, from the most celebrated locality on the Andes, now in Vassar College, has a stretch of nine feet; Humboldt never found one to measure over nine feet; and the largest specimen seen by Darwin was eight and a half feet from tip to tip. An old male in the Zoölogical Gardens of London measures eleven feet. Von Tschudi says he found one with a spread of fourteen feet two inches; but he invalidates his testimony by the subsequent statement that the full-grown Condor measures from twelve to thirteen feet.

\* For the author's contributions to the natural history of the valley of Quito, see *American Naturalist*, vol. v.



The old names of *Vultur gryphus*, *V. Magellanicus*, *Gypagus gryffus*, and *Zopilotes*, are obsolete, and *Sarcoramphus gryphus* is universally adopted. But it is not yet settled that it is generically distinct from the other great vultures. Thus Sclater and Gurney put the Condor alone in *Sarcoramphus*; while Gray and Strickland include the King Vulture; and Vieillot and others add a third—the California Vulture. The structure and habits of the Condor, in my judgment, make it worthy to stand by itself. The King Vulture belongs more especially to the plains; while the California species has straggling feathers on its head, builds nests in trees, where it perches, and its time of incubation is only one month.

But a more important question, perhaps, is whether there is but one species. Associated with the Great Condor is a smaller vulture, having brown or ash-colored plumage instead of black and white, a beak wholly black instead of black at the base and white at the tip, and no caruncle. It inhabits the high altitudes, and is rather common. This was formerly thought to be a distinct species, but lately ornithologists have pronounced it the young of the *Sarcoramphus gryphus*. I wish this decision to be reconsidered, for there is some ground for the belief that the first impression is correct; that the "Condor pardo" (as the brown kind is called by the natives) is specifically distinct from the greater "Condor negro." They are always spoken of as separate kinds at Quito, where certainly it would be known if one were the young of the other.

Mr. John Smith, an Englishman of intelligence and acute observation, and a resident of nearly twelve years on the slope of Antisana, where both kinds abound, said to me, "I have heard it said that the Brown Condor is the young of the Black. It can not possibly be, for I have seen young Condors with white beaks and a few white



feathers in their wings. I have also seen old Condors with caruncles on the head (which are said to come from age alone), and black beaks, and the body brown or ash-colored all over." Bonaparte, in his *American Ornithology*, gives a careful drawing of a young male, with a crest, and with white patches on its wings, both features wanting in the Brown. Lieutenant Gilliss declares, as the result of his observations on the Chilean Andes, that the brown kind is a different species. Further proof is wanted; but it is quite probable that another species must be added to the genus *Sarcoramphus*.

The ordinary habitat of the Royal Condor is between the altitudes of 10,000 and 16,000 feet. The largest seem to make their home around the volcano of Cayambi, which stands exactly on the equator. In the rainy season they frequently descend to the coast, where they may be seen roosting on trees; on the mountains they very rarely perch (for which their feet are poorly fitted), but stand on rocks. They are most commonly seen around vertical cliffs, where their nests are, and where cattle are most likely to fall. Great numbers frequent Antisana, where there is a great cattle estate. Flocks are never seen except around a large carcass. It is often seen singly, soaring at a great height in vast circles. Its flight is slow and majestic. Its head is constantly in motion as if in search of food below; its mouth is kept open, and its tail spread. To rise from the ground, it must needs run for some distance, then it flaps its wings three or four times, and ascends at a low angle till it reaches a considerable elevation, when it seems to make a few leisurely strokes, as if to ease its wings, after which it literally sails upon the air. In walking, the wings trail on the ground, and the head takes a crouching position. It has a very awkward, almost painful gait. From its inability to rise without running, a narrow pen is suffi-



cient to imprison it. Though a carrion bird, it breathes the purest air, spending much of its time soaring three miles above the sea. Humboldt saw one fly over Chimborazo. I have seen them sailing at least a thousand feet above the crater of Pichincha.\*

Its gormandizing power has hardly been overstated. I have known a single Condor, not of the largest size, to make way in one week with a calf, a sheep, and a dog. It prefers carrion, but will sometimes attack live sheep, deer, dogs, etc. The eye and tongue are favorite parts, and first devoured; next the intestines. I never heard of one authenticated case of its carrying off children, nor of its attacking adults except in defense of its eggs. Von Tschudi says it can not carry, when flying, a weight of over ten pounds. In captivity, it will eat every thing except pork and cooked meat. When full fed, it is exceedingly stupid, and may be caught by the hand; but at other times it is a match for the stoutest man. It passes the greater part of the day sleeping, more often searching for prey morning and evening than at noon; very likely because objects are then more distinctly seen.

It is seldom shot (though it is not invulnerable, as once thought), but is generally trapped or lassoed. Prescott, in his *Conquest of Peru*, vol. i., p. 384, speaks of "the great bird of the Andes, the loathsome condor, who, sailing high above the clouds, followed with *doleful cries* in the track of the army." But the only noise it makes is a hiss like that of a goose. The usual trachial muscles are wanting.

It lays two white eggs, three or four inches long, on an inaccessible ledge. It makes no nest proper, but places a few sticks around the eggs. By no amount of bribery could we tempt an Indian to search for Condors' eggs;

\* One of the peaks of Pichincha is called in the Inca language *Cuntur guachana*, or "Condor's nest."



and Mr. Smith, who had hunted many years in the valley of Quito, was never able to get sight of an egg. Incubation occupies about seven weeks, ending April or May.\* The young are scarcely covered with a dirty-white down, and they are not able to fly till nearly two years. D'Orbigny says they take the wing in about a month and a half after being hatched; a manifest error. They are as downy as goslings until they nearly equal in size a full-grown bird. Darwin was told they could not fly for a whole year. The white frill at the base of the neck, and the white feathers in the wings, do not appear until the second plumage, or until after the first general moulting, during which time they lie in the caves, and are fed by their elders for at least six months. Previous to this the frill is of a deep-gray color (Gilliss says "light blue-black"), and the wing-feathers brown.

The head, neck, and front of the breast are bare, indicative of its propensity to feed on carrion. The head is elongated, and much flattened above. The neck is of unusual size, and in the male the skin lies in folds. The nostrils are oval and longitudinal, but in the male they are not so much exposed as in the other sex, since the caruncle forms an arch over them. The olfactories, however, seem to be well developed. Yet the Condor, though it has neither the smelling powers of the dog (as proved by Darwin), nor the bright eye of the eagle, somehow distinguishes a carcass afar off. The color of the eye is variously given: by Latham, as nut-brown; by Cassell, as purple; and by Bonaparte, as olive-gray; but Gurney, in his *Raptorial Birds in the Norwich Museum*, states it correctly as pale-brown in the male, and carbuncle-red in the female—a singular difference between the sexes. In young birds the color is dark-brown, which changes with

\* In Patagonia, according to Darwin, much earlier, or about February.



change of plumage. They are peculiarly elongated, not sunken in the head as the eagle's, and very far back, being an inch and a half behind the gape, while those of the eagle are directly over it. The bill is shorter and weaker than the eagle's, and the decurved tip of the upper mandible only one third as long. The tongue is canaliculate, with serrated edges, which obviously assists in deglutition, as the head is never raised to swallow food. The caruncle and wattle are wanting in the female. The downy ruff is more prominent in the male, but in neither sex completes a circle. The primaries are black, the third and fourth being equal and longest—a feature wanting in the Old World vultures. The secondaries are exteriorly edged with white. The tail is of twelve feathers, black and even. Legs feathered to the tarsus. Toes united by a small membrane; the middle one is excessively long; the third one comparatively undeveloped, by which the foot is rendered less prehensile than that of other Raptores. Claws blunt, as might be expected from its habit of standing on the rocks; nor are sharp talons wanted, as it seldom seizes living prey. The nail of the hind toe is more curved than the other three, but far less than the talons of the eagle. The female Condor is smaller than the male, an unusual circumstance in this order, the feminine eagles and hawks being larger than their mates.

Our knowledge of the habits and economy of the Trochilidæ is very meagre. The relationship between the genera is not clear, and one species is no more typical than another. The only well-marked divisions I can discover are those adopted by Gould and Gray—the Phæthornithinæ and Polytmminæ. The former, popularly called "Hermits," are dull-colored, and frequent the dense forests. They are more numerous on the Amazons than the



other group; and I know of no specimen from the Quito valley, or from any altitude above 10,000 feet. They usually build long purse-like nests of vegetable fibres, covered with lichens and lined with silk cotton, and hung from the extremities of leaves over water-courses.

The Polytminae comprise the vast majority of the Humming-birds, or nearly nine tenths. They delight in sunshine, and the males generally are remarkable for their brilliant plumage. The diversified slopes of the Andes are more favorable for their development than the uniform plains. Their head-quarters seem to be in New Granada; but the precise distribution of the species is not so well known as it might be. Near the equator the species are nearly stationary; some, as the *Oreotrochilus*, are confined to particular volcanoes, or an area of a few square miles. There is, therefore, greater need of determining the precise locality of a specimen; yet, in the best monograph on the Trochilidae (Mr. Gould's), species are assigned to such indefinite regions as Ecuador, Peru, etc. But Ecuador ascends from the sea-coast to 20,000 feet, and is traversed by two cordilleras and a plateau, making three very distinct districts; the faunæ of the west slope, the Quito valley, and the Napo country, being, with less than half a dozen exceptions, entirely separate. Of the 430 known species of Hummers, 27 are found in and around the valley of Quito, 37 on the Pacific slope, and 20 on the oriental side of the Andes—making a total of 84, or about one fifth of the family, within the republic of Ecuador. The paucity of Hummers south of the equator, in comparison with the number on or just above the line, has been accounted for by the fact that the dry and sterile plains of Peru and the barren pampas of La Plata are unsuited to insect, and therefore to Humming-bird, life. This can not be the whole reason; for there are myriads more of insects on



the Lower Amazons than on the Andes, yet there are not fifteen species east of Egas, or the last 1500 miles. If the wanton destruction of Humming-birds for mere decorative purposes continues for the next decade as it has during the last, several genera may become utterly extinct. This is evident when we consider that many a genus is represented by a single species, which species has a very circumscribed habitat, and multiplies slowly, producing but two eggs a year; and that at Nanegal, *e. g.*, a famous locality near Quito, it was possible ten years ago to shoot sixteen or eighteen per day, while now it is hard to get half a dozen.

Nidification is uniform at the same altitude and latitude. In the valley of Quito it occurs at about the close of the rainy season, or April. The nest is built in six days. But one egg is laid before the nest is finished. The usual height of the nest above the ground is six feet. Some, like that of our Northern species, are cup-shaped, and placed in the fork of a branch; others are hung like a hammock by threads or spiders' webs to trees or rocks; while the long-tailed *Lesbia* constructs a purse-shaped nest, resembling those of the Phæthornithinæ on the Amazons. Like the "hermit" Hummers of the lowlands, the Purple-eared (*Petasophora iolata*) alone of the Quito species hangs its nest over a stream of water. As to the materials of the nest, I have noticed a fact which I can not explain. Our Northern Hummer glues lichens all over the outside; so do a number of species in Brazil, Guiana, etc.; but in the valley of Quito moss is invariably used: not a particle of lichen have I seen on any nest, though lichens abound.\* Mr. Gould mentions a nest which, being

\* A similar variation is seen in the nests of the Chimney-swallows: our species (*Chaetura pelagica*) builds of twigs glued together with saliva, while its Quito representative (*C. rutila*) builds of mud and moss.



heavier on one side than on the other, was weighted with a small stone to preserve the equilibrium. A few Hummers, as the *Glaucis* of the lowlands, lay but a single egg; but the usual number is two, and they are always of a pinkish hue when freshly laid. The spotted egg of a species on the Upper Amazons, noticed by Edwards, has not been seen by other observers. The time of incubation at Quito is twelve days, varying a day more or less, according to the weather. There is but one brood a year, as with *T. colubris*, in our Northern States. But in our Southern States, and in Brazil, there are generally two. Drapiez says "sometimes four broods;" but we conjecture that this is a mistake.

No insessorial bird seeks its food at so great an elevation as the *Oreotrochilus*.\* This has been seen clinging to the volcanic cliffs of Chimborazo; but no other Hummer has been observed to alight on the ground, for which, in fact, their sharp, hooked nails are ill fitted. When perching on a branch, all Hummers remain motionless. Of the sixteen genera represented in the valley of Quito, the average length of the bill is three fourths of an inch; and the most numerous plants are the Compositæ, Scrophulariaceæ, and Labiatae. The curve-billed *Eutoxeres* is usually seen around the fuschias or the scales of the palms, seeking for spiders. The *Oreotrochilus* feeds its young by bringing them flowers of the myrtle; then throwing them away, it goes for more. As Bates has said, Hummers "do not proceed in that methodical manner which bees follow, taking the flowers *seriatim*, but skip about from one part of the tree to another in the most capricious way." No other vertebrate has a tubular tongue, an organ adapted for gathering both insects and honey.† No

\* We have seen flies on Pichincha at the height of 15,700 feet.

† Dr. Crisp contends that the bifid portion of the tongue is not hollow, but



other family of birds contains so many species; nor has any other group such varied forms of bill: compare the short bill of the *Ramphomicron*, one-third of an inch, and the six-inch bill of the *Docimastes*; the bill of the *Eutoxeres*, bent downward into a semicircle, and that of the *Avocettula*, turning upward. To an unequalled splendor of plumage—resembling laminæ of topax and emerald—nature has not added the gift of song. Its ordinary cry is a shrill *chirik*, uttered by the males in their petty quarrels. The “warbles” ascribed to the *Mellisuga* and *Oreotrochilus* need to be heard again to be credited.

is composed of solid cartilaginous material. The same anatomist also asserts, in opposition to the opinion of Professor Owen, that the bones of the Hummer, like those of the Swallow, do not contain air. The cleft end of the tongue forms a delicate forceps for picking out insects from flowers.



## CHAPTER XLIII.

## Cotopaxi: The First Ascent of the Great Volcano.

THE ascent of the loftiest active volcano on the globe is no ordinary event. Its achievement would have filled many pages in the works of Humboldt.

Standing fifty miles below the equator, and a hundred west of the meridian of Washington, Cotopaxi is at once the most beautiful and the most terrible of volcanoes. From the valley of Quito it appears like a huge truncated cone, in altitude equaling five Vesuviuses piled upon each other, its summit rising 4000 feet above the limit of perpetual snow, its sides presenting alternate ridges and gorges plowed by descending floods of water, and around the base for miles heaps of ruins—bowlders 20 feet square, and volcanic ashes and mud 600 feet deep. Very seldom does Cotopaxi wake up to intense activity, for, as a rule, the higher a volcano, the less frequent its eruptions. Generally the only signs of life are the deep, rumbling thunders, and a cloud of smoke lazily issuing from the crater.

The scientific world has long desired to know the structure of the crater of Cotopaxi. The great Humboldt, although he attempted to climb Chimborazo, seemed to think the top of this volcano unapproachable, and contented himself by examining it through his telescope. Fifty years ago, Colonel Hall, an American, tried it with scaling-ladders, only to fail. In 1869, Dr. Felipe Sarrade, an Ecuadorian, said he reached the summit, where he found seven craters; but nobody believed his story. The glory



was reserved for Dr. Reiss, a German naturalist, who, with Dr. Stübel, has been exploring the valley of Quito.

On the 27th of November, 1872, Dr. Reiss set out from Mulalo, with ten peons, for the southwest point of the crater. Crossing the river Cutuche at Limpiopungo, where the stream cuts through vast deposits of volcanic ashes, he reached the "Ventanillas," a dry and sterile pampa, since the porous earth retains no moisture. Here the ascent of the cone began. Following a triangular ridge whose apex reaches the snow limit, he crossed successive cerros and pampas, which were so many steps in the grand staircase he was ascending. Vegetation now ceased entirely, and the surface was covered with ashes and black sand. In fact, nearly the whole occidental slope of Cotopaxi, between 12,500 and 16,000 feet, presents the aspect of a dismal black desert. In this lofty, lifeless, silent solitude, says our traveler, man seems an intrusion. He found it difficult to judge of the distances and dimensions of objects. Progress was slow, for at every step the foot sunk into the sand, which increased in depth with the ascent. The mules were scarcely able to move, sinking to the knees, and suffering from the rarefaction of the air.

Occasionally the magnificent vista below and the neighborhood of the snowy cone above absorbed attention; but clouds and driving hail-storms generally cut off all prospect. Suddenly a profound chasm, containing fresh, smoking lava, was discovered on the left. This lava-stream was the lower limit of a vast mass, which from the valley appeared like a long black line. At 2 P.M. our traveler reached the point where the two quebradas unite, marked by an immense pile of rocks. Here he encamped for the night at an altitude of 15,179 feet. At six o'clock the upper part of the mountain was cleared of smoke and mist, and gave a grand and imposing view. The white cone



rose immediately above, appearing very huge, but not very high. The border of the crater showed itself as a broad line, with a lofty rock on the north end, and another on the south. An immense stream of lava came down the cone, and near the place of encampment divided, entering the two quebradas, or ravines, mentioned. The lava was still warm, clouds of vapor rising along the whole extent of the stream. During the afternoon the thermometer had stood at freezing-point; but in the night it fell to  $25^{\circ}$ .

The next day Dr. Reiss attained all his hopes. The top stood out clear, while at his feet the accumulated clouds looked like a sea of cotton wrapping the mountain up to the altitude of 12,000 feet, leaving here and there an islanded peak or promontory. Cropping out of the lava-stream, but mainly disposed along the borders of it, were numerous rough stones, upon which he advanced as on the rounds of a ladder. The greatest width of the lava current before it divided was about 3000 feet, and the estimated thickness 150 feet. The lava was entirely black and warm in all its course; its temperature being from  $68^{\circ}$  to  $91^{\circ}$ , while that of the atmosphere was  $32^{\circ}$ . This elevated temperature explains the absence of snow on this part of the slope. The gaseous exhalations from the crevices seemed to be nothing more than air mixed with vapor. This is doubtless the lava-stream which flowed in 1854, and which, by melting vast quantities of snow, caused much devastation in the valley by floods. These sudden floods, caused by fresh eruptions of lava on the mountain side, are the terror of the villages at the foot of Cotopaxi. Sometimes, however, the cone, especially on the east side, appears black, owing not to absence of snow, but to a covering of black ashes. No fissure or accumulation of scorix indicates the source of the lava-stream. But the altitude of the point of departure is 18,700 feet.



At 8.45 he reached the arenal, a deep mass of fine sand stretching upward at an angle of  $40^{\circ}$ . Over this he must advance, difficult as it was, for on either side were impassable fields of snow and ice. The temperature of the sand was  $77^{\circ}$ . Another stream of lava was discovered, which must have flowed with great velocity, since, instead of following the inclination of the cone, it had descended diagonally. Only the peaks of Iliniza and Chimborazo in the opposite cordillera were visible; but above the clouds, toward the southwest, a dense mass of smoke rose perpendicularly to a prodigious height, and then, by an east wind, was carried off in a horizontal line westward. This came from the furious and ever-active volcano of Sangáy, whose top was invisible, but whose activity was manifested in this manner. As the clouds shifted, the diversified valley and its royal mountains were spread out like a map. Nearby, on the southern flank of the volcano, was the porphyritic peak called Cabeza del Cotopaxi, or the Inca's Head. Tradition has it that this was the original summit of Cotopaxi, torn off by an eruption on the very day Atahualpa was murdered by Pizarro. Dr. Reiss thinks it really forms no part of Cotopaxi, but belongs to a more ancient volcano. The old eruptions produced much obsidian, not found in the lavas of Cotopaxi, and probably the heaps of pumice around Tacunga came from some ancient crater.

The clouds were ascending the mountain more rapidly than our traveler, as if in hot pursuit to intercept his view of the unseen crater. More than once, while ascending the arenal, his courage nearly failed him. The sand became mingled with ice; but, turning a little to the south, he found a series of huge rocks rising above the snow and ashes, and giving him a firm foothold. It was now 10.15 A.M.; thermometer,  $28^{\circ}$ . Fumaroles abounded, giving forth sulphurous gas. And now followed a sheet of com-



pact blue ice, inclined from  $35^{\circ}$  to  $40^{\circ}$ ; but fortunately it was not smooth, but covered with myriads of points or icicles three or four inches high. Scrambling over this, and climbing over and between walls, some of immense size, suddenly he reached the edge of the crater. At the same moment a cloud, which had hovered over the summit, dispersed, and for the first time human eyes looked into the profound crater of far-famed Cotopaxi. "I confess" (says the doctor) "an unutterable satisfaction in having accomplished this feat, the ascent of the highest active volcano on the globe."

He had reached the western part of the southern lip. The crater presented an elliptical form, the major axis lying north and south. The stones, which were continually falling in from all sides, but especially from the west side, rolled together as to the bottom of a funnel. There were no signs of a level bottom. The depth, roughly estimated, appeared to be 1500 feet. The side of the funnel least inclined, and by which alone it is possible to descend, is the southwest; but here are large fumaroles sending forth dense masses of vapor charged with gas, and having a temperature of  $156^{\circ}$ . Around these fumaroles were masses of sulphur, and a deposit of gypsum mixed with chloride of lime. This is of great interest, as being the first instance of a chloride being found among the products of the South American volcanoes. Humboldt thought that the absence of hydrochloric acid was a characteristic of the New World volcanoes. The barometer gave 19,660 feet as the altitude, while the doctor's trigonometrical observations, repeated at various times from independent bases in the valley, had given him 19,496 as the height of the north peak, and 19,427 for the southern. Both results exceed the altitude estimated by other travelers. Humboldt made it 18,880 feet.



While standing on the rim of the crater, holding to his Indian servant with one hand, and with the other examining the deposits of a fumarole, a gust of air filled both eyes with sand impregnated with sulphuric acid, causing violent inflammation. This put an end to observation, and made it the part of wisdom to descend as soon as possible. He left the crater at 1.45 P.M., and reached his encampment at the head of the ridge in three hours and a half, just as a heavy snow-storm began.

"If the scientific results of my ascent," says M. Reiss, "do not meet the expectation of *savans*, I console myself with the reflection that I have pointed out the road, and that other travelers may make the ascent without being hindered by the general notion that it is impossible to reach the crater." He says it is possible to ascend from the snow-limit to the summit in four or five hours. But as the ascent is steep and laborious, it is better to sleep the first night at the limit, and the second night on the arenal, the sand of which is warm. This will give a long third day to the crater, and enable the traveler to explore the whole circumference. He says he felt no inconvenience from the rarefaction of the air. This difficulty in ascending high altitudes begins at the height of 12,000 or 13,000 feet, but does not appear to augment with the altitude. In 1867, the writer of these lines ran a race with a fellow-traveler on the side of Antisana at the bracing altitude of 16,000 feet. All the peons with Dr. Reiss complained of sickness, and one stout fellow bled at the nose. The mules also suffered much above the altitude of 13,000 feet; but his dog, although evidently troubled for breath, followed him to the crater.\*

\* For observations by the author on the Ecuadorian volcanoes, the reader is referred to *The Am. Jour. of Science* for March, 1869, p. 242, and September, 1868, p. 203.



## CHAPTER XLIV.

## Medical Notes on the Upper Amazons.\*

THE Amazons River, in its course eastward, reaches Tabatinga, the Brazilian frontier post, which is 2000 miles from the Atlantic Ocean. From this frontier westward the Amazons is in Peruvian territory, and is known as the Marañon by those through whose country it passes, and keeps this name to its head-waters in the Andes. Some five hundred miles west of the above-named frontier, the Marañon receives its largest tributary, whose quantity of water, its navigability, and its running through the same lowlands as the Lower Marañon, seem to entitle it to be considered a continuation of the Marañon itself, but which is known locally, and on the maps, as the Ucayali. At some two hundred miles west of this river the Marañon reaches the spurs of the Andes at or near Borja, through which it rushes with great rapidity, and above which there is no navigation but for canoes. On the Ucayali, however, the steamers have gone as far as the junction of the Tambo and Urubamba rivers, some nine hundred miles from the Marañon. A few miles up either of the streams mentioned, the hills again make navigation impossible, and the rivers degenerate into mere mountain torrents. It is of the valleys of these two large water-courses, the Marañon and Ucayali, that the following notes are designed to treat.

The basin of the Ucayali extends to the west at varying

\* By F. L. GALT, M.D. Republished from the *Medical Journal*, Philadelphia, with additional notes by the author.



distances, from fifty to one hundred and thirty miles, up to the foot of the eastern cordillera of the Andes, and it is known generally as the *Pampa del Sacramento*, the name being given by the old Franciscan friars in their voyage through this wild region, some two hundred and forty years ago. This pampa is a low, wooded country, extending some five hundred miles from north to south. To the east the basin of the Ucayali extends for hundreds of miles, forming, with the basins of other lesser tributaries of the Amazons, what is known in Peru as the *montaña*, or "wooded country," which is but a continuation of the great Amazons valley of Brazil to the east. The basin of the Marañon extends on the north side of the river some one hundred or two hundred miles, variably, into the mountainous region of Ecuador. West, as before said, the mountain passes begin at Borja, and to the south the Marañon basin may also be considered as that of the Ucayali. The Marañon has a general east and west direction, and is included between lat. S.  $3^{\circ}$  and  $5^{\circ}$ ; and the low country of its valley may be included between lon. W.  $70^{\circ}$  and  $76^{\circ}$ . The Ucayali is included between lat. S.  $4^{\circ} 30'$  and  $9^{\circ} 40'$ , and its lowlands between lon. W.  $74^{\circ}$  to  $76^{\circ}$ , on the west, and indefinitely to the east, where continues the Amazons basin. Over this immense tract of over one hundred thousand square miles Nature runs riot, in her wanton luxuriance; and where man appears he is an exotic, though he may be "to the manner born." It is one rank waste of woods and water which, located mostly within the "zone of constant precipitation," enjoys all the glorious privileges of growth and deluge.

In this district the year is divided, with sufficient distinctness, into two parts, as regards seasons—one, the rainy season (*invierno*), extending from November to April; and the dry season (*verano*), reaching from May to October,



the two frontier months of either season being one or the other irregularly.

In the rainy season the quantity of rain-fall, though as yet not accurately gauged, amounts to about seventy inches, the greatest fall being about March probably.\* During this time of the year, the easterly winds, generally to the northward, which are those which blow over all the Amazons valley as far as the Andes, are lighter and more irregular. The atmosphere is heavily charged with constant moisture, giving to one's body a feeling of warm humidity which is sufficiently disagreeable. Shoes become covered with mold within forty-eight hours; watches and other instruments become seriously corroded; and medicines, particularly powders and salts, are with great difficulty kept fit for use. The temperature is not so oppressive, from its elevation, as in the dry season, though the bodily discomfort, from the feeling of dampness, is probably greater, and the tropical languor is more irresistible; from which, however, one is aroused by the disgusting necessity of an almost incessant war against the inevitable mosquito, whose paradise is all over this section of earth.

The rivers, which begin to rise about October, continue to increase their flood—with the exception of a short standstill, or slight fall, about December—until May; and during the height of the season, from January to March, the country for miles along the lowlands calls to mind the primeval deluge which is just now being drained off the earth's surface. Decaying vegetation, undermined banks, tumble headlong and are swept on the flood; and a dirtier mixture of mud, leaves, trees, broken or entire, can not be found on the planet than the "king of rivers" presents at this time. Still, there are noble uses in the vilest pictures

\* My record of the rain-gauge for an entire year showed the rain-fall to be 110 inches, the heaviest fall being in February.



sometimes, and these sweepings of the watery scavenger are one of the modes by which nature makes pure the air, by removing the festering mass of decomposing materials, washing out the stagnant water-sinks, and thus adding the strangeness of health to the jungles of the Amazons valley. The Indian who has spent the dry season on the lowlands or *playas* (sand-flats) curing his fish, or catching the turtle, now retires before the coming flood, and perches himself on some red-clay bluff here and there on the river-margins; the wild animals hasten to the interior high grounds; the woods become silent, except to the lofty-roosting bird; and the traveler who drifts down this yellow road of liquid mud becomes almost oppressed with the calm supremacy of the silent waters. About May the waters subside, the rains diminish, the air becomes drier and warmer, continuing so up to October; the mercury, however, rarely having a daily average of  $29^{\circ}$ , and still less frequently does it reach  $30^{\circ}$ .\*

At this season we now find the southeast winds more frequent, giving always an agreeable depression to the mercury; the atmosphere of the mornings and evenings is generally more clear, and the tropics show all their beauty of leaf and starlight. In June, generally about the 25th, there supervenes a "cold spell," comparatively speaking—cold for the natives, when the mercury for three or four days sinks at night as low as from  $22^{\circ}$  to  $19^{\circ}$ . So great is even this moderate depression, that the natives shiver with the change, nor is the stranger beyond the reach of this impression of chilliness. This change is always known here as the *inviernito de San Juan* (the little, or short, winter of San Juan), because that saint's anniversary falls on the 24th of June, the time about which

\* During the months from July to October, there are often violent storms of wind and rain, attended with great electric display.



this cold comes on. This cool change is also one of the noted facts of the Lower Amazons as well, where the Portuguese know it as the *tempo da friagem* (the time of cold); and Bates, the English naturalist, who labored for many years successfully on the Lower Amazons, thinks it to be caused by a continuous cold wind blowing from the south over the damp forests that extend from north of the equator to lat.  $18^{\circ}$  S., when it is winter in the southern hemisphere; and the cool currents of air traveling north to the equator become only moderately heated in their course, owing to the intermediate country being a vast, partially-flooded plain, covered with humid forests. The warm winds of this dry season are from the northwest, which make the air very oppressive, though the great heat is only for a short time, passing off in squalls, attended with thunder, lightning, and light rain. In July, August, and September the variations in the thermometer are greatest; and in these months is encountered the extreme range for the year—from  $19^{\circ}$  to  $29^{\circ}$ . In these months, too, more especially June and July, will be noticed fogs, which, however, disappear by 8 A.M. always, leaving the sky clear and bright. The average of annual heat for the whole Amazons has been estimated at  $26^{\circ}$ . On the Marañon, probably it is some one or two degrees lower. This moderate elevation of the thermometer for a tropical region enters into the elements of present healthfulness of this country.

Such is a brief outline of the topography and seasons of the basin of the Marañon, or the Peruvian Amazons. With such uniformity of temperature, and regularity of seasons, if the two changes of the year may be so called, there is in the diseases of this district a certain characteristic of sameness also to be noted, the features of complaints being distinctive, and not often varied. In the order of frequency the diseases may be mentioned as occurring thus:



*skin affections, geophagy, malarial fevers, severe colics, trismus nascentium, abscesses.*

But, before sketching these, it may be well to give some notes on the different nationalities, or representatives of man, one finds on the Marañon. And first in point of numbers and possession is the Indian, who lives scattered very much about the river-margins, the interior of the *montaña* itself being entirely too dense a vegetation to permit man to move about even on foot—the water-courses being the only highways of that region. The South-American Indian, particularly the one living under the tropical skies, is a different character from the obstinate “patriot” of our Western reserves, or the bold and tenacious Araucanian of Chile, or the Bedouin-like wanderers on the Northwestern plains of the Argentine Confederation. Born in a sweltering climate, with impenetrable forests to defy even stealthy tread, with alternate deluge to drive him from his anchorage, the Marañon red man lives, as it were, apart from the nature which is contesting his natural right to soil and life. He is not a gregarious animal; but lives in detached families, or at most where two or three households are collected. He moves from his dirty hut to spear the fish, to overturn the turtle on the bank, or to enjoy the amiable diversion of stealing an additional wife or child from a neighboring tribe; and is altogether totally negative in his virtues, though positive enough in his vices. The lazy stroke of the paddle is his only vigorous exercise; and, without the warlike virtues of the red man of the colder climes, his whole anatomy exhibits a heavy, flabby, unimpassioned physique, which has some effect on his case when diseased. The want of resistance to circumstances about him, the want of numbers, the want of mobility, as it were, have made the native Indian of the Amazons valley always appear as a stranger here on his “native heath.”



Next in point of numbers is the white Spanish-Peruvian, who, with the Indian, forms various grades of blood-relationship; the white man being the trader or the governor of the district, and now and then the *padre* of an uncertain extent of leagues up or down the rivers.

Rivaling these in point of numbers is the Brazilian or Portuguese trader, who makes his way up from the Lower Amazons, and locates at the various villages, intermarrying with the half-breed Indian, or bringing his family with him. The Portuguese are the most industrious of all the populations on the whole Amazons, and generally the most healthy. The energy of this people, wherever found on the Amazons, has often been the subject of remark, and they seem still to carry about the vim of a Vasco de Gama in their wanderings. The contrast between them and their kinsmen, the pure Brazilian, is very great. At Iquitos, which is the largest town on the low countries of the Marañon, or the Ucayali, and which is the government headquarters of the Fluvial Department of Eastern Peru, are to be found seventy or eighty Englishmen, who are employés in the public workshops, some of them having their families with them, and they form the largest body of Anglo-Saxons on the whole length of the Marañon. Besides these larger groups of nationalities is to be seen an occasional Yankee, who, by-the-bye, does not appear in this district to be much of a developer of ideas of any sort; and a German here and there seems to be "looking out for a good opening," as also is the stray Frenchman. Of all these diverse representatives, the Portuguese and the half-blooded Spaniard-and-Peruvian seem to live more as though they were not striving against circumstances; the Indian appearing almost as foreign as the white Spanish-Peruvian, neither showing resistance to climate or inertia, as well as the mestizos. Rarely may be seen a *zambo*—



the mixed blood of white and Negro;\* but he is generally a stranger from the interior, or the Pacific coast, where his people make up a large class of laborers and soldiery. The Spanish-Peruvian, especially the children, are a singularly sprightly people, of high nervous excitability, spasmodic in their endeavors, but easily tired of work, mental or manual; they idealize a great deal, and have a good deal of the vague relics of imperialism of palmier days lingering about their pride and indolence. The Portuguese is dull, as regards *esprit*, but of toiling energy, and lives more uniformly, and without the disposition to paroxysmal excitation of his competitor, the Peruvian.

In estimating symptoms of diseased action, these peculiarities of race must enter largely into the phenomena which any particular complaint may exhibit. In the Indian, the first impressions of sickness produce an apathy or inability to care for his own condition, which forms a troublesome part of the physician's care. Of course, where a stranger is the medical attendant, there is added to this constitutional apathy an extreme, though very natural, want of confidence in the stranger and his remedies, and it is almost useless to leave medicines to be administered—the doctor has to see them given in his presence if he wishes to accomplish any thing.

Accustomed to the use of the native remedies of their forests, some of which are efficacious in the tropical complaints, and looking upon a request to put out the tongue, or an attempt to feel the pulse, or any other cabalistic demand, as a species of sorcery different from their own, and generally to be resisted to the death, the system of "heroic guessing" not unfrequently enters largely into the opinion

\* The *zambo* in Peru is the offspring of the white and the Negro; but in other parts of South America this cross is known as the *mulatto*, while the *zambo* properly is the child of the native *Indian* and the *Negro*. Some in Peru use this latter cross to define the word "*zambo*," however.



one may form of the patient under consideration, especially where affections of the chest are supposed to involve a necessity for physical examinations. To this there is, in the case of the Indian, added unusual excitability of the nervous system, which lends to his want of confidence additional obstacles; and not unfrequently this compound of fright and nervous exaltation suddenly deprives the doctor of his patient, who may have incontinently put off for the "bush," to escape the "foul fiend," be it the disease or the "medicine-man." The poverty of their diet, which consists only of dried fish and plantains, makes proper aliment impossible; and should a more appropriate diet be suggested, very likely the poor fellow returns to his homely fare, all unmindful of bad consequences.\*

The excitability of the nervous system is observable in all castes of the native population, and the foreigner of some years' residence also notices this somewhat in his attacks of whatever disease. In the white Peruvian or Portuguese there is superadded to this nervous condition an ease with which the system seems to go down under slight attacks, and a great languor of strength and appetite in convalescence, which makes recovery tardy in this humid atmosphere, and the results often not as satisfactory as could be wished. Among the women of these races, their now and then irregular tastes, as regards unusual and unwholesome articles of food during convalescence, still further increase the trouble. In this connection, it has occurred to me that probably here the universal custom of all ages, sexes, and classes of society, of the use of tobacco

\* During the last year of my stay at Iquitos, a fearful epidemic of small-pox committed ravages among the Indians, who were at first with great difficulty persuaded to accept vaccination as a preventive, as they believed it to be intended as a mark of subjection to the authorities. After a while, however, they came in from the adjoining settlements in crowds, and its effect was most happy in stamping out the plague.



—by smoking—should be included as among the prominent depressing causes. The tobacco of Peru, which is that used by every one on the Marañon, is greatly stronger than the Virginia or the Havana, so much so as to make old smokers of these varieties completely and steadily nauseated for a long time after they try the Peruvian leaf. This tobacco, used mostly in the form of cigarettes, is the constant companion, day and night, of the Marañon people, particularly the whites and mestizos. Beginning at the early age of four or five years, this habit is pursued from dawn till midnight with an assiduity worthy of a better object. Before the morning cup of coffee is the cigar, and the last turning-over in bed is to throw away the last cigarette. I have never seen among the most inveterate “chewists” or smokers of the “Old Dominion” a more thorough slavery to this “soft, guileless consolation” of the grown males—the young and the fair of our land, of course, being out of the question. It is difficult to believe that such powerful agents do not contribute to unnatural impressibility, and tendency to depression of moral and mental as well as physical exertion, which in the tropics add to climatal causes of disease very considerably.

The women very commonly suffer from the results of ignorance and imprudence at the monthly periods, and leucorrhœa and uterine irritation are among the most frequent of the Marañon complaints, and with difficulty managed. The atonic condition of mucous membranes here, among other modes, shows itself in these and other blennorrhagic discharges. Often among children, especially females, at early ages of life, one encounters annoying fluxes, which give a good deal of trouble in their cure. Generally speaking, the prostration from attacks of disease is greatly disproportionate to the apparent violence



of symptoms. And probably this is more to be noticed among the Anglo-Saxon element and his "cousin" of the United States than among the Latin descendants, on account of previous robust health and power of resistance to the usual causes of depression.\* The Latin bends easily to the storm, but lives along, apparently, better in this depressed condition than the Englishman, who breaks up more hurriedly after he has once experienced severe disease: yet on his recovery he is more restored to his former condition than the Latin under equal circumstances.

*Skin Diseases* are entitled to rank first, not only from their frequency, but also from the obstinate character of their duration. They are grouped together by the people under the general name of *Sarna*, which includes every form of discoloration as well as eruption. These affections of the skin are due not only to the excessive labor of transpiration required of the porous surface of the body, which after a while debilitates it, and produces an obscure irritation, leading to indolent ulcerations or eruptions; but they are also the irritations arising from the bites of myriads of insects which infest earth, air, and water. Among the natives, pure and mestizo, one will see the whole exposed surface of the body pitted with inflamed bites, to remedy which they use vegetable dyes, which go under the general name of *Huito*, generally of a bluish-black or reddish color. These dyes, besides stopping the pores of the skin, are themselves irritating. It is, however, noticed

\* It has long ago been observed that the foreigner stands tropical heats for a while better than the native; but that in the long run there is a progressive descent downward. Statistics of a governor of Cayenne, in 1742, give the following mortality during his administration of that colony for a period of nine years: Proportion in one thousand colonists—First year, 15; second, 19; third, 42; fourth, 21; fifth, 60; sixth, 75; seventh, 82; eighth, 102; ninth, 125. In many cases allowance has to be made, however, for the character of the colonists, who are frequently the bad and abandoned, morally as well as physically.



on the Amazons that the red man of this river-basin is a very slight sweater—a fact that has always attracted attention. One will sometimes find the skin of the Indian rough, hard, and insensible, like the skin of the larger lower animals.

Next to the Indians who suffer from these skin affections, are the English and Anglo-Americans, who bring to this moist country a well-toned system and appetite, and who generally have to pay a severe toll for a long time after their arrival by being the victims of numberless boils or ulcers about the person. This might often be avoided by lessening the amount of heat-making material which they too generally seem to think necessary to use. The Spanish-Peruvian or the Portuguese avoids this tendency best—the relaxed fibre, rather more regular and temperate appetite, and thin-blooded nature of the race making him less susceptible to acute inflammation of the skin or abscesses; though there is a strong tendency to scrofulous sores and “cold abscess” among them, which are hard to manage.

The Englishman or American generally recovers easily from this deranged condition of the transpiratory surface after leaving the climate, and here it may sometimes be considered a providential outlet which has saved some organ from a destructive inflammation. One of the most annoying of the skin affections is an itching of the surface of the body, apparently not attended by eruption, though the almost irresistible tendency to scratch the part affected will give rise to more or less superficial irritation. The hyperæsthesia of the skin is noticed more among the strangers, and gives the notion of a “prickly heat,” without the eruption. It is sometimes intolerably annoying, not only from its itching, but from the dread one has that rubbing the part may cause irritable superficial ulceration.



Ulcers resulting from the various skin irritations are apt to be indolent, and difficult of cure, though in a healthy constitution there is no degeneracy in the type of inflammation. The old women cure these remarkably quick sometimes by the application of a compound of which the balsam of copaiba, recently gotten from the adjoining forest, is the principal ingredient. I noticed on the whole Amazons the frequent use of the copaiba as a stimulating dressing to indolent ulcers or half-healed wounds, and its good effects are of frequent occurrence.

Leprosy, properly so called, is a stranger on the Marañon, though it prevails largely in other parts of the great Amazons valley, near the mountainous districts of Matto-Grosso, and Minas-Geraes, in Brazil.

Of all the diseases one encounters here, which is to be particularly observed for being somewhat out of the general range of professional notice, is the strange one known as "dirt-eating" (*geophagie, mal du cœur, mal d'estomac des nègres, erdessen*, etc.), and noticed by the French more technically under the head *Cachexie aqueuse*. In De la Chambre's *Encyclopædia* the reader will find the subject fully and fairly treated of. According to some writers, this disease had its beginning on our continent in the palmy days of negro-trading on the African coast, when it was transplanted to American shores, and it now enters as one of the chief endemic complaints of all tropical America; and at this distance of over two thousand miles from the sea, on the Amazons valley, where the Negro is a rarity, being merely a waif from Brazil or the Pacific coast, it is the most important disease among the children and women of the country. Here, on the Marañon, the half-breeds are mostly addicted to the practice of dirt-eating—neither the pure brute of a savage nor the more cultivated being so often the victims. Among that class,



when it does prevail, it is a devouring passion, which is truly remarkable. Even strangers, English or the white Peruvians, who have married with the mestizos, and have had children by them, find its presence among their little ones the plague of their life; and the accounts one hears about the tyranny of this habit of dirt-eating on the victims of it would seem almost fabulous, were there not evidences all around one to give sanction to them. Children commence the habit from the time they are four years old, or less, and frequently die from the results in two or three years. In other cases, they grow to manhood or womanhood with the "appetite growing by what it feeds on;" and I have seen here myself, in the case of a mestizo soldier, who was dying from the dysentery which generally, sooner or later, supervenes on this habit, the poor creature, half an hour before his death, detected with a lump of clay stuffed in his sunken cheeks, which he had dragged from the wall near where he was almost breathing his last. Officers here who have the Indian or half-breed children as servants in their employ sometimes have to use wire masks to keep them from putting the clay to their mouths; and women, as they lie in bed sleepless and restless, will pull out pieces of mud from the adjoining walls of their room to gratify their strange appetite, or will soothe a squalling brat by tempting it with a lump of the same material. If persisted in, the effects are surely fatal, at varying terms of years; some living tolerably to middle age, and then dying with dysentery, or from that disease at an earlier period. In the children dropsy is usually the most prominent apparent cause of decline and death.

Various have been the causes assigned for this unnatural appetite, and the obscure intervention of anæmia and decline. I have not as yet had an opportunity of detect-



ing whether the nematoid worm, *ankylostome duodenal*, is the *fons et origo* of this complaint, though its presence in the intestinal canal has been so repeatedly determined by observers that I feel assured of its presence. Locally, among the people, one hears poor diet and a craving for a change urged by victims, as well as observers, as an exciting cause of this practice, and the presence of the worm would very naturally follow on a practice so dirty as this.

The sequelæ of this geophagy—*anæmia* and dropsy—are now, I believe, generally supposed to be consequent on the abstraction of blood from the intestinal walls. I do not know that the administration of vermifuges has ever been practiced with a view of getting rid of these animalcules; and, so far as my own experience and observations go, the only thing done for this cachexia is the administration of astringent tonics, and the giving of advice about diet, which, however, amounts to little or nothing; the patients disappear, after a greater or less time, disgusted with the stranger's physic and admonition. The unnatural cravings of a diseased appetite are often not limited to dirt merely, but the most *outré* articles that can be thought of—coal, cigar-ashes, plaster—enter into their fanciful minds; and I was assured here by an officer that in the case of an Indian girl nearly grown, who was punished for the habit by being confined in a room where her meals were regularly placed, the paper about the walls, the straw of the mattress, linen hanging about, all seemed more attractive to her palate. The most fanciful suggestions of pregnancy—which was not her condition—could not have equaled this poor girl's deranged appetite. It is almost needless to add that treatment in this complaint is nearly useless unless the habit is corrected, and even then the system has been too much undermined often to make remedies of much avail in restoring either healthful looks or



action in the economy. I am told that parents often encourage their children to smoke tobacco at the early age of five years, as it seems, they say, to do away with the fondness for dirt-eating. They have never been able to give me a reason for this fact; nor do I find myself able to solve the question, except, possibly, on the ground of an anæsthetic effect on the palate, and depression of desire to eat any thing. The habit of dirt-eating obtains also largely in some of the Piedmont districts, many of the children and women from Moyobamba and Tarapoto, and other towns, coming here with this practice deeply rooted.

*Dysentery*, as an original disease on the Marañon, is of comparatively rare occurrence. It more generally appears as a sequela of the geophagy. If original, it does not seem intractable, and is to be encountered oftener among the children or foreigners. On the Lower Amazons, and on the Brazil coast generally, its rank, according to some observers, is next after phthisis. The moderate elevation of the thermometer in this tropical section compared with it on the coast, and the greater uniformity of the average annual heat (sudden changes, as before stated, being rare, the sparsely-settled nature of the villages not giving rise to such excesses, from want of material wherewith to disturb the system), probably may be considered as operating causes of its rarity; though, as yet, the difference in amount of population on the Upper and Lower Amazons makes one liable not to take into consideration relative numbers in estimating frequency of disease. The total want of statistical information in this country makes the question of healthfulness somewhat uncertain, as yet. There is not in the dysentery itself any thing particular to notice as regards symptoms or treatment. I have as yet seen no fatal case where the affection was uncomplicated with dirt-eating, or extreme imprudence in dissipa-



tion. The foreigners living and trading on the Marañon have enjoyed singular exemption from this affection. In children, the very common carelessness of parents as regards diet will account for most cases among the young.

After having in our earlier days read of the horrible jungles of the tropics, and later been lectured on the disasters of tropical residence in the wilds where the monkey, tiger, or anaconda alone is acclimated, the medical traveler is more than surprised at the infrequency of *Malarial Fevers* on the whole Amazons, in whose dense forests nature now "wanton[s] as in her prime." Coming out to a section of the earth whose foreign reputation makes it apparently the home of every thing pestilential in the way of febrile affections, the first thing he hears on the subject, on the Lower Amazons, is the repeated statement of the rarity of these disorders on the main river; and as he travels west to the Peruvian territory on the continuation (the Marañon) of the same stream, the experience of those with whom he may have conversed on his way up assures him repeatedly of the truth, which after awhile his own experience in a great measure will confirm. He will also find that the native red man is less able to resist these malarial fevers, and disappears more easily than the white or Negro. But, when the wanderer leaves the main river and betakes himself to the higher grounds of any of the tributaries of this huge watery cormorant, where he begins to encounter rocky beds to the streams, rocky sides to the rivers, a comparative slight chilliness of air in the mornings and evenings, with a greater frequency of fogs, while the midday is a glowing heat—there begins the *Terciana*, as the malarial intermittents are called.\*

\* Bates, the naturalist, speaking of the healthfulness of the main river of the Amazons, and the country on the tributaries, says: "I began now to understand why the branch rivers of the Amazons were so unhealthy, while the main stream was pretty nearly free from diseases arising from malaria. The



In the interior, too, about the low grounds bordering the Piedmont districts of the Cordilleras, or on the water-cause lies, without doubt, in the slack currents of the tributaries in the dry season, and the absence of the cooling Amazonian trade-wind, which purifies the air along the banks of the main river. The trade-wind does not deviate from its nearly straight course west, so that the branch-streams, which are generally at right angles to the Amazons, and have a slack current for a long distance from their mouth, are left to the horror of nearly stagnant air and water." This may apply, possibly, to the Lower Amazons, but on the tributaries of the Alto-Amazonas, where the currents are stronger all the year round than those lower down are at the rainy season, you find the intermit-tents to prevail; nor is the trade-wind either as certain or as strong as below. And it may probably be true that the borders of the Amazons are constantly kept swept by the rising floods, which carry off the decaying material which might engender the malaria. It seems to me that with the impenetrable mass of vegetation as ramparts, as it were, on the banks of the Amazons, and for leagues to the interior, the trade-wind could make little success in getting through this to ventilate the shores at sufficiently low an elevation from the river-margin to prevent malarial emanation from affecting those who would necessarily sleep or work a very few feet above the level of the stream itself. It is a fact noted both by Darwin and Humboldt, in their travels in Peru and other tropical places, that there was to be encountered a greater prevalence of malarial emanation in those districts where there was a dry soil, generally sandy, short grass growing thereabouts, and stagnant pools, as about Arica, Callao, Vera Cruz, Carthagena, and such-like localities. It may, therefore, be, that, toward the head-waters, or the higher inland regions of the Amazons tributaries—the dense foliage of the main river not being so great, the sun being able to penetrate the forest-growth, while at the same time there are present, from the immense rain-fall in these situations, as on the river-margins of the main stream, lagoons which never are washed out or dried up entirely—the same conditions would obtain as in the places referred to above, the actual temperature also being raised by the arid and often sandy nature of the soil about these localities.

The island of Marajó, at the mouth of the Amazons River, is about the size of the State of Rhode Island, or larger. The northwest, north, and west sides of it are low savanna lands. On the south, southwest, and southeast, the country is densely wooded with tropical growth. Some years ago, a town existed on the north side, but the unhealthfulness of the place was so fatal that it was broken up as a commercial port altogether, while Pará, to the south and west, on the opposite or south side of the river, is free from local fevers (excepting occasional epidemics of yellow fever). It may be possible that the northeast trades blowing to the southwest toward Pará, may be purified by having to pass through the dense rampart on the southwest side of Marajó. Pará itself is situated on the south arm of the Amazons, or the Pará, river, as it is known locally, and is surrounded by the virgin growth of the tropical forest all about the place. The prevailing winds there are north-east. [Keller, in his *Exploration of the River Madeira*, makes the follow-



courses of this section, these affections are also to be encountered. Excessive dryness and excessive moisture both seem to prevent the accession of the malaria. The interior wooded lowlands, through which the sun has not shone for ages, are as free from malaria as the mountain-tops. Besides this unsunned condition which prevents evaporation being one cause of exemption, the heavy rains and the flooding for several months, which carry off the decaying material, and the washing-out of the surplus still-water lagoons, must, probably, be noted as among the partial causes of healthfulness. This decaying vegetable matter clogged with mud is deposited in the main stream, where it is hidden from the sun's power, and the air preserved innocuous.

However, in speaking of the freedom of the main Amazons from fevers, one must exercise a little reserve now and then, on account of the inability to get at the true condition of things among a native population which probably suffers and dies without our knowing it, in the nooks and corners of the Amazons, where the unsettled nature of the country does not admit of a true estimate of facts being obtained; but for the larger populations in the villages, frequent talks among the oldest residents will elicit approximate truth. During the early part of the present year, for instance, there was quite an outbreak of "fever" among the natives on the low countries near the mouth of the Amazons, some fifty or two hundred miles above Pará; and so grave was it, that it attracted the notice of the Pará press, which was petitioning the government to have medical aid sent to relieve the poor creatures. And

ing apparently contradictory statements: "First, that the intermittent fevers are severer in the region of the rapids than above or below them, where there are still more fens; second, that in the prairies of Bolivia, where, after the floods, there is much stagnant water, which is drunk without much precaution, the fevers are comparatively rare."—O.]



last year, during the month of September, when the writer of this article passed up the river and happened to be detained at the plantation of a Portuguese, some one hundred and seventy miles above Pará, he was informed by the proprietor that for the last two years there had existed in that section of country, though not immediately in the vicinity of his place, a larger amount of malarial fevers than had ever been known before; and some few cases came under the writer's observation which were decided and severe bilious remittent fevers. At the other places stopped at on the way up to Peru—some eight or ten—nothing was heard of unfavorable to the general reputation which the Amazons enjoys in reference to the subject of malarial disorders.

At the villages on the Marañon and Ucayali the testimony to the freedom from *terciana* is constantly repeated and believed, and also on the Huallága, as high up as Urimaguas—the highest point for steam navigation—at Borja, on the Marañon, where the sierras begin, it is to be encountered. In the village of Iquitos, the largest on the Marañon, being composed of a population of some two thousand souls, Indians, whites, mestizos of Spanish, Portuguese, and English blood, in the last year I have not encountered a single case of *terciana* originating here, and the same testimony is given by the government physician. There have been some cases of re-accession of intermittent fever in those who have come here at varying times from the region of malaria about Borja, high up on the Huallága, or other tributaries of the Marañon. The past experience of intelligent citizens here seems to confirm this statement.\*

\* This statement needed in 1873-'74 some modification, for in the years stated there began to be noticed cases of intermittent fever in the village among those who had lived there all their lives. This change may probably have been due to the fact of the exceedingly filthy condition of the streets,



The villages of the Marañon, of which Iquitos is the largest and most advanced, are situated immediately on the river, above the limit of high water—at Iquitos the rise of the river is about thirty feet at most—and here the woods are cleared away, merely far enough to enable one to put up his cane-sided and thatched-roof houses, while the thick-growing vegetation disputes every inch of ground with the colonist. The so-called streets generally, and more especially at the high-water season, enjoy all the dirty appearance of marshy positions, out of which hundreds of frogs make night hideous with their solemn noise, while an occasional small alligator or water-snake looms above the grassy pool. Yet, notwithstanding this, the people sit out in the open air at all times of night to flee from that pest of the Marañon, the mosquito, which will not let them read, write, or hardly live by a candle-light. The little babies and their mothers squat on the ground on mats or in the dirt, and entertain the passer-by; and not an ague after all this.

To this general history of the Marañon fevers, there has this year [1872] occurred a notable exception, the first in the memory of the “oldest inhabitant.” In June, report reached Iquitos that an epidemic of a “strange fever” had appeared at a village of some two hundred Indians, called Paranari, located some two hundred miles above Iquitos. The place is located immediately on the river, the elevation above high water just sufficient to avoid flooding; and it has a very porous soil, which allows very rapid drying after even hard rains, and immediately surrounded by forest-growth, in all respects, as regards that, like Iquitos.

which from want of labor and money, had been allowed to grow over with grass which half hid pools of stagnant water filled with every species of filth imaginable. To this cause was added an unusual modification of the seasons as to fall and rise of the river.



The account I had of the epidemic is that furnished me by a white governor of the place, who brought his mestizo wife here for treatment, ill with the epidemic. The Indians at first judged it to be *terciana*, but found themselves disappointed in the failure of their native remedies. Becoming, then, panic-stricken, those who were not attacked fled to the woods, and many of the sick died, probably as much from neglect as from the disease. My informant has in the last few weeks received news from there that all the Indians had fled excepting two half-grown boys, one of whom died after the abandonment of the place.

From what I could gather, there must have been a singular severity of symptoms. Great fever, characterized by intermissions in some cases; the appearance of external abscesses in various parts of the body; the expectoration of blood, in some cases profuse; rapid supervening delirium, preceded by violent headache. The wife of the governor I found, on her arrival here, suffering from intermittent febrile symptoms. She had also several abscesses in various parts of the body, and there was a profound debility, a sense of sinking which was very disagreeable, and very marked anæmia. In her case the disease began with chills; diarrhea was also one of her first symptoms, previous to my seeing her, which, I was told, was followed by bloody evacuations, without the other symptoms of dysentery, however. I was told that death in the fatal cases supervened in some four or five days generally. Her attack had lasted some three weeks when I saw her. On her first getting better, she started down the river in a canoe; but the exposure caused a re-accession of the fever, which was intermittent, and she remained a few days at a village some one hundred miles above Iquitos, and took passage in the steamer for this latter place, where she has somewhat regained her usual health, after a protracted



convalescence which has been interrupted at times by slight febrile manifestations, attended with the disagreeable feeling of emptiness and sinking referred to the pit of the stomach, which did not follow any unusual nausea, however. I have not been able to learn any thing as regards the mortality in this epidemic. The whole affair has been one altogether without precedent on the Marañon.

In July of this present year [1872] there prevailed in Iquitos an epidemic of influenza, of which there were some two hundred cases, none fatal.\* It lasted some two months, and was the first noticed on the Marañon. The marked beneficial effects of quinia, which seemed, in fact, the only drug which made any impression on the symptoms, which had a remittency about them in most instances, has induced the opinion of the malarial-febrile origin of this demonstration of one of the Neuroses. The pain in the temples, especially among the women, sometimes became torture, nervous susceptibility in most tropical complaints being an element more pronounced and more difficult to combat than in our more temperate climes. The disease under notice appeared indifferently among all ages, but was more noticed among the women, especially the mestizo class of the community. The epidemic disappeared about the last of August.

In the last few days (October 10) there has appeared here in Iquitos another epidemic form of disease which has been characterized by the following symptoms, mentioned in order of frequency: constipation, often most obstinate; abdominal and epigastric pain, the former more frequent, lasting for days, more commonly *preceding* the constipation, coming on at intervals of a few moments, generally most severe, causing the greatest suffering, men

\* This appearance of influenza is to be found almost yearly about the latter part of the dry season.



sometimes crying from the pain. In some cases, after shifting about for two or three days, the pain would locate itself apparently about the umbilicus, and very little benefited, and in no case permanently, by administration of opiates; *thirst* in nearly all the cases, in some it was extreme, the patient suffering from it. At times the taking of the smallest quantity of water induced eructations almost immediately, and increase of pain. *Fever* present in most of the cases, increasing or appearing only at evening. In some there was no distinct febrile manifestation. *Urine* high-colored in all the cases; *conjunctiva* yellow, sometimes early in the attack, generally more pronounced as the patient began to *recover* from his pain and thirst; *vomiting* frequent, persistent, not permitting remedies to rest on the stomach, the vomited matters consisting of bilious-looking fluids, and sometimes, apparently, pure bile. When there was no decided fever in the case, the pulse was perfectly natural. *Flatulence* supervened early, most difficult to relieve, and frequently the cause of severe pain, eructations being attended with momentary relief. As the cases became relieved of their acute symptoms, there supervened an icteric condition of the surface, with slight headache. Convalescence has been very tardy, it being difficult to restore the appetite, every thing being unpleasant to sight and taste almost.

In the first two or three cases, the symptoms, which seemed to be neuralgic partly, would have almost led one to believe in the presence of lead poison, so nearly were the features allied for a time, had there been any possible way for such a cause to have been assigned. In the very large majority of cases there were prodromata—anorexia, languor, ill-defined headache, sluggishness of the bowels, and slight discoloration of the conjunctiva.

Among the most common of the painful complaints of



the Marañon are severe colics, arising from the ingestion of large quantities of indigestible foods, but which disappear after a few hours under the administration of emetics and calming agents. And, at first, some of the symptoms of the present epidemic were somewhat associated with this other feature of the ordinary causes of suffering; but the sequel showed the cases bore no "relation of causation."

In the treatment, after the uselessness of opiates had been observed, though there was great toleration noticed, the use of quinia was continued for two or three days regularly as an antiperiodic, in view of the paroxysmal character of the pain, as well as the frequent febrile increase toward evening, and the effects were most happy, the pain itself finding relief, as also the constipation; and also the stomach, which seemed to tolerate that remedy when nothing else would remain. Fomentations to the abdomen were perfectly useless. After the violence of the gastric pain had disappeared, but when there was still a gnawing, disagreeable oppression at the epigastrium, very small blisters to the pit of the stomach were excellent. Clysters were serviceable in the lingering costiveness after the severity of the disease had passed. In convalescence there was, in many cases, noticed a feeling of numbness about the abdomen, a feeling of deadened sensation. Calomel was, after the first few cases, given in conjunction with quinia, to relieve flatulence by stimulating digestion, and by preventing decomposition of whatever food might be taken. It also seemed to contribute to laxative effects; and although, from the materials at first vomited, it would seem that the liver was sufficiently stimulated, it was evident, by experience in these cases, that mercury was most successful in its results. The success which followed this medication with quinia and calomel is the best argument in their favor, the relief being steady and unexceptional.



It may be stated that tympanites, which appeared after the disease had existed two or three days, was not relieved by any of the usual carminatives given for such purpose. Relief to the abdominal pain was frequently momentarily obtained by bending the body forward, or pressing the hands against the seat of pain. Belladonna and hyoscyamus were now and then given to prevent any griping action of the quinia or calomel. In some of the cases, especially where the patients had previously suffered from attacks of malarial fevers, quinia was the only medicine given in the attack. To restore the apparently paralyzed condition of stomach and bowels, the effect (or, possibly, in some cases, the cause) of the prolonged constipation, or the effect of great dilatation from flatulence, after the patient had "weathered the gale," the combination of strychnia and quinia was found very efficacious: these preparations were also used in conjunction with the various forms of iron. It was found difficult sometimes to rid the patient of the feeling of physical depression referred to the epigastrium, and the appetite was extremely capricious. Convalescence was no doubt much hindered by the very debilitating effects of the moist heat of this climate.

With this somewhat diffuse account of the present epidemic, in which, out of some twenty-five cases, all occurring within twelve days of each other, with the strongest possible similarity of symptoms, there was no fatal one, it may be suggested whether any causal relation links it with the preceding influenza, or the somewhat obscure state of health at Paranari. I have just learned from a young Peruvian who came here from the port of Urimaguas, on the Huallága, that cases similar to those here now had occurred there, and at Balsa Puerto, a small village some three days' canoe-travel up a small stream to the westward. This young gentleman came here sick with the complaint, and



this was a case in which the neuralgic pain about the abdomen was the most severe and protracted, causing him, at times, to beg his medical advisers to give him something to put an end to life, rather than he should suffer. His shrieks from pain were heard in adjoining streets even. One or two cases had occurred here before his arrival. He reported that some of the cases had proved fatal at the points referred to above. There has been no fatal case here, however. In the case of this young man, there was a good deal of agitation. He would sometimes be perfectly quiet while the doctors were preparing medicine at the bedside, and even their presence would act in calming him for a while. A dose of calomel and quinia, seven grains to five, had a remarkable effect the first time it was tried in arresting the pain; the quinia being continued every three hours without any regard to febrile accession. In no case has any headache been annoying. The evacuations for a few days after the bowels became moved were almost tarry in color and consistence.\*

Incidentally it may be mentioned that at Pará, and at one or two points some two hundred miles up the Ama-

\* The reader will find in Grisolle's *Pathologie Interne*, under the head of *La Colique Végétale*, which is synonymous with *colique de Madrid, de Poitou, de Cayenne, de Surinam*, etc., the symptoms detailed as were experienced here. And one of the authors there referred to, M. Fonssagrives, suggests whether "cette singulière affection ne se développerait point sous l'influence des miasmes analogues ou identiques avec les miasmes palustres." Grisolle seems to more than question the probability, and thinks that the "colique sèche n'est qu'une colique de plomb." The epidemic, as it appeared here, is so thoroughly freed from any suspicion of such a cause, that I can not but be convinced of M. Fonssagrives's correctness in suggesting malarial-febrile causes as producing the symptoms, and that the nervous susceptibilities of the tropics will sufficiently account for any unusual amount of pain or great debility consequent on the attack. I may mention that I had not read the article in Grisolle until after my remarks in the text were written. Since then other cases have occurred, following the same course, and getting well under the same treatment.

A more detailed account of this epidemic was published in the *Am. Jour. of Med. Sciences*, April, 1872.



zons, there has been prevailing, since June, a sharp epidemic of yellow fever.

Among children, the presence of worms is considered almost universal; and among the grown they are also much more frequently seen than I have elsewhere noticed. The number of these, sometimes, is almost beyond belief, and the wonderful power the little victims have of getting along with such tenants is truly surprising. They are, as far as my observation and experience go, easily gotten rid of by the use of *santonin*, which some parents make one of the usual articles to be kept in the house, to be given twice or three times a month, whether the children complain or not. The plan seems to answer well enough. The want of care in preparation of food, the general negligence of domestic hygiene, the habit of dirt-eating, will all sufficiently account for the presence of these parasites. I am disposed to think that in some cases of icterus, or in some of the severe colics, the presence of these animals lodged in the biliary ducts is to be more than suspected. During both of these complaints the discharge of worms by vomiting is not unusual. In a case which occurred here, in the person of an Indian, the rapid supervention of coma and icterus, within six hours after an accession of pain at the epigastrium, led the medical attendant to suspect the entrance of worms into the biliary ducts. Unfortunately, the superstitious nature of the half-caste and Indian did not allow of the diagnosis being confirmed after death, which took place in twenty-four hours after he was attacked.

*Cold Abscesses* are very frequent, the result of constitutional taints, improper alimentation, and general depressing agencies. They are found mostly among the Indian population, and locate themselves among the muscles of the limbs or in the iliac fossa, where they linger along



for months, sometimes. When they become mature, the amount of pus which is discharged from them is sometimes almost incredible. Those who are subject to these drains on the system frequently become more than usually robust after the discharge ceases. The pus is *not* usually thin. The Indian physique, though generally more than usually good as regards form, rounded outline, symmetry of proportion, is by no means a robust one. Handling the muscles of the limbs conveys to the touch the feeling of flabbiness, as though the bones were cushioned with fat rather than with the sinewy fibre of the red man of our Western fields, or the white man of cooler climes; and this superiority of form, which in the women of pure blood is superior to any I have ever seen in our own land, is no index whatever of strength or activity, and under the exhausting suppuration of these abscesses this physique acquires rather an ungainly appearance.

The usual preparations of iodine do not act as efficiently in these tropical districts in resolving the tumors and threatened abscesses, as may be observed in our own colder latitudes. There seems to be a too deep-seated cachexy in the system for the alterative action of such remedies. It seems best to let nature rid herself of this depressed form of irritation, and the discharge does not injure the health materially, as a general rule. Among the Anglo-Saxon foreigners these collections of pus are not nearly so formidable, either from chronicity or abundance, as in the native or the Latin resident.

*Trismus Nascentium* is to be encountered here with some frequency; but in most cases the little one has died without the medical attendant having seen it, and one hears a vague account from the parent. These convulsive diseases are frequently to be set down to the extreme imprudence of the mother in exposing her offspring unneces-



sarily—ophthalmia also resulting from this imprudence, though it is astonishing what a profuse suppuration they will bear without having the eye or the sight affected, it being rare to find the cornea or the humors of the eye implicated in these affections. The infant is bathed directly after birth in cold water, and this cold application is kept up as part of the daily regimen. Few or no precautions are taken to keep it off the damp ground, day or night, and the little scamp kicks and rolls about for hours on his damp mother-earth; or, slung behind their mothers' backs in a shawl, they are carried about with them in their visitings at all times of day or night. It is rare for them to "take cold," apparently, and they often thrive, in spite of book-wisdom, until the age when dirt-eating begins, or longer, if they should not acquire that vice.\*

From repeated abortions, accidental, or possibly more frequently induced artificially, it is rare to see more than two children brought up by Indian or mestizo parents, or in the households of the whites who live unmarried with the women. These abortions result from want of affection—too little and too great luxury and enlightenment seeming to be equally unfavorable to the development of maternal love—and from the system of concubinage which prevails so extensively on the Marañon among the whites, Indians, and mestizos, where the uncertainty of possession of partners makes the female dread the probability of her keeper leaving her with a large family on her hands which she does not care to look out for. The frequency of uterine complaints, as a consequence of these unnatural attempts, produces sterility, or continuous bad health among

\* I have often been surprised at the habit of many of the parents of allowing their little children to drink the rum of the country, and smoke the tobacco; and still more, that these habits are so often indulged in without killing them. Ignorance and vice are so near akin that one can hardly tell which to charge the parent with.



the women; and the population of the Marañon derives little or no increase from a license as regards mistresses, which defeats the only possible object of its toleration—an increase of inhabitants. The very great imprudence of the women at the time of their menstrual flow often results in complaints which tend to chronic bad health and sterility, to which their medication not unfrequently also tends.

The *lymphatic glands* easily become the seat of suppuration, and it is somewhat the rule for the Anglo-Saxon to go through a course of axillary or inguinal induration and suppuration, which appears to be a sort of acclimating process, for a little while after he arrives out. The system recovers itself easily. It is rare to find the Anglo-Saxons having dysentery, nor does their appetite fail them materially—and generally they are the authors of their ills in this climate. The want of variety in diet is, among them, as also among the natives, a constant subject of complaint; and the unalterable scale of dried fish, plantains, and the disagreeable “charapa” (the turtle of the Amazons) is considered as the author of most of the sufferings of the Marañon people.

Among the eruptive fevers, the small-pox now and then has made its appearance among the villages on the Marañon, and played sad havoc among the Indian population, who wither under its presence. Some three years since it spread on the margins of the Ucayali River; and last year, when the writer was on this stream’s whole length, it was a rarity to see a hut or village. The Indian, when taken sick, believes that the demon of evil is the malicious spirit of some personal enemy; and if the invalid dies, they burn up his huts, bows, and arrows—in fact, every thing he owns—and move off as far from the supposed bad genius as is possible. During the epidemic among them



whole sections of country became entirely deserted; the sick were left to die uncared for, or death was anticipated by throwing the sick into the river, while numbers perished from the frantic wish to rush into the water to relieve the intolerable heat of the body. No system of vaccination has been pursued by the government or the communities where the whites live, and a "happy-go-lucky" theory presides over the destinies of village-life on the Marañon. The variola makes its way from the interior towns, such as Moyobamba and Tarapoto, to which the Ucayali and Marañon Indians make their way to trade in fish, wax, sarsaparilla, curiosities, etc.

Some five or six years ago, an epidemic of dysentery prevailed here in Iquitos; but those who were here then—which was some three years after its foundation as a government place—have given me no satisfactory account of numbers or character of the complaint. Epidemic dysentery, some time in the last century, also made its appearance about the country of the Cerro de la Sal, near the head of the Ucayali River; and, according to the manuscripts of the old Franciscan friars, it desolated the district for some years.

Such is a brief sketch of what the medical wanderer encounters after a short stay among the native and foreign population of the basin of the Marañon and Ucayali rivers.

In this retrospect, possibly there will be found some prominent differences between this section and the tropics of the East Indies. The terrible dysenteries, the disastrous fevers, and the extreme derangements of the liver, among the Oriental sojourners, are never encountered here, under  $3^{\circ}$  south latitude, with a tropical forest embracing thousands of square leagues. The difference may be ascribed, probably, to the fact of a less elevated annual heat, which does not reach above  $26^{\circ}$  C.; to a greater uni-



formity of temperature (the result of a want or violent and prolonged changes from variations of winds of the Amazons basin); the usual gentle northeast breezes, not often being varied by the cold southeast winds, which latter only appear, at most, three days at a time, and that but very rarely. And it has occurred to me that this whole Amazons valley, more especially the Marañon portion of it, in its comparative uniform temperature and humidity, resembles somewhat a marine climate as regards its atmosphere, but without the liability of gales at depressed temperatures, which may in some measure account for its greater healthfulness when compared with other tropical river-basins. Whether, in years to come, when these tropical forests are thinned by the immigrant, and the sun breathes all its fire on large cleared districts, with the necessary results of violent and sudden changes of wind and rain, and when the plow or the dredging-machine, which makes progress, may not also turn up malaria in its delving, "it were curious to consider." Yet, as remarked before, one must,\* in estimating comparative health, take into consideration the relative number of inhabitants in the Amazons basin; their scattered locations; inaccessibility; paucity of numbers of the white races; and the little really that is known by the traveler in this part of the world of the state of health of the peoples who, hidden away here and there in the wooded recesses, die, and leave no sign by which to tell of their diseases or of the numbers who have perished, or of how the survivors

\* It is a well-known fact in tropical South America that the dwellers of the mountains stand the change to a lowland climate much less healthfully than the foreigner, of whatever nationality. I have been told by an intelligent Ecuadorian physician, Dr. R. Suarez, formerly of Quito, that the (*ser-rano*) mountaineer who goes to the Pacific coast to trade is very liable to die there; and that it is difficult sometimes to persuade him to undertake expeditions either to that lowland country, or to the borders of the river Napo, which is the outlet of Ecuador to the south and east.



pass their existence, whether in suffering or in robust health.

In looking at tropical populations, it will be noticed, especially in Tropical America, that, though the Anglo-Saxon enjoys a fair share of health, the Spanish and Portuguese races seem to be the natural man-animal of these countries, appearing even more self-sustaining than the Indian himself, not only by an intellectual development, but by a power of physical resistance to climatal depressions. And, in accounting for this adaptation of these races to the *tierras calientes*, or lowlands, of the tropics, it appears to me that the following suggestion of an ingenious French medical writer might very well be worthy of attention. After showing that the blood of the southwest peninsula of Europe is the complex resultant of numerous Indo-European branches allied with the primitive Iberian, which probably first came from Chaldea, with the Semitic about Carthage, and with the Moors of Africa, he goes on to say, "Par ses origines, on peut affirmer que le sang africain a été par trois fois largement infusé dans les veines espagnoles, et que la température élevée de cette péninsule a dû conserver à ce sang sa facile adaptation aux climats tropicaux. Ne doit-il pas aussi à ces sources africaines une entente plus cordiale avec le nègre?" \* \* \*

It is not impossible that the gradual colonizing of the Amazons basin by the Anglo-European or North American will, in time, give rise to a cross with the mestizo or the tropical Latin, which will still further continue to better the future of these intertropical jungles. It is true, probably, that rapid migrations can not be durable or prosperous where the colonists come from a different isothermal zone and retain their blood intact; but crossing with the natives, all things being equal, will favor and accelerate acclimation.



The following is an abstract of a register of weather I have kept in Iquitos for the months named in 1871. French measurements are those used.\*

	APRIL.	MAY.	JUNE.	JULY.	AUG.	SEPT.	OCT.
Average of thermometer....	26°.2	26°.1	25°.8	24°.9	26°.1	26°.2	26°.7
Average of barometer.....	75°.43	75°.49	75°.57	75°.62	75°.53	75°.48	75°.38
Average of wet bulb.....	24°.5	24°.4	24°.0	23°.0	23°.6	23°.8	24°.0
Direction of winds.....	N.E.	N.E.	N.E.	S. & E.	N.	N.W.	N.W.
Direction of storms.....	N.	N.E.	N.E.	S.E.	S.E.	S.E.	N.E.
Number of rainy days.....	17	13	16	11	10	8	14
Highest day average of thermometer.....	27°.5	27°.9	28°.1	28°.1	28°.3	29°.6	28°.7
Lowest day average of thermometer.....	24°.4	24°.2	23°.3	19°.4	20°.6	22°.2	24°.4
Highest record of thermometer.....	29°.3	30°.2	29°.4	29°.5	30°.4	32°.4	31°.0
Lowest record of thermometer.....	23°.6	22°.7	21°.2	18°.8	19°.6	21°.4	23°.8
Highest record of barometer.....	75°.72	75°.86	75°.80	75°.99	75°.88	75°.83	75°.66
Lowest record of barometer.....	75°.12	75°.17	75°.26	75°.32	75°.24	75°.08	75°.03
Highest day average of barometer.....	75°.59	75°.74	75°.72	75°.94	75°.71	75°.71	75°.51
Lowest day average of barometer.....	75°.31	75°.33	75°.44	75°.43	75°.30	75°.29	75°.20
Number of inches rain.....	....	....	3°.13	4°.27	3°.94	9°.33	7°.57

[\* From observations made by Dr. Galt at Borja, April 3, 4, and 5, 1874, we derive the following averages: Barometer, 29°.526; Att. thermometer, 76°.1; Det. thermometer, 76°.2; lowest temperature at night, 72°.2; wet bulb, 73°.6; wind, northerly.

“There is one fact” (says Morelet) “not generally known—namely, that inflammatory maladies are less frequent under the tropics than those which proceed from debility of the organs or suspension of the natural functions of the system. Under the continuous heat, the cellular tissue becomes relaxed, and loses a great part of its contractile power, whence results, among other phenomena, a deficiency of lymphatic circulation, especially in the extremities of the members. Hence the difficulty of healing wounds or bruises in those parts of the person. And while the muscular energy of the system becomes enfeebled, the nervous apparatus acquires a singular irritability. The slightest wounds are excessively painful, and their tendency is toward tetanus, which seems to be without a remedy.”

Malaria is co-existent with vegetable decomposition; it can not be said to be consequent upon it. Fatigue is a predisposing cause to ague. In India, tall individuals are oftener attacked than short ones, and the graminivorous than the omnivorous.—J. O.]



## CHAPTER XLV.

A New Route for Tourists : Up the Amazons and over the Andes.

WITHOUT disputing the pleasure and profit of a European trip, I desire to have it known that a fresh field for travel and adventure has recently been opened in the New World. I refer to the equatorial portion of South America.

The route does not bristle with hoary castles, "the lingering romance of the Middle Ages;" it is not classic with ancient memories and legendary tales, "the land of lost gods and godlike men;" no treasures of art nor architectural piles arrest the eye of the traveler. Instead of fabled sprites and mermaids, there are *bona-fide* alligators and anacondas; for vine-clad hills are rough sierras in primeval wildness; graceful palms and sculptured mountains take the place of cathedrals; while volcanic fires and earthquakes offset the avalanches and glaciers of the Alps. But I am not willing to allow that the pure nature as exhibited on the Andes and the Amazons is a whit behind the combined art and nature of Europe in its power to please, inform, and elevate the mind, and "to fill the thirst of the human heart for the beauty of God's working." Of course, this remark is true only of those who can commune with Nature (for she hath a soul as well as features); in whom, to quote John Foster, a creation infinitely rich with grand and beautiful objects, imparting something more than images to the mind, inspires an exquisite sentiment that seems like the emanation of a spirit. Indeed, travel any where was not invented for those who, having eyes, see not, and, having hearts, feel not.



Now, in South America, Nature has framed her works on a gigantic scale. All her adjectives are superlatives. Her sublime congregation of mountains, plains, and rivers is unrivaled. He who sails upon the Amazons sails upon the largest river in the world, and through a forest unparalleled in extent. Talk not of such a forest as a solitary place. Did you ever try to read in the woods? And did you not "find tongues in trees" that called you away from the brightest page of human genius? We pity the man, the atmosphere of whose heart is so misty and stormy that he can stand within the luxuriant forest of the Amazons, and sigh,

"O Solitude, where are thy charms?"

He who is fairly awake can never fall asleep over the immensity and diversity of the glorious vegetation beside the Great River. And then, as you ascend toward the sources, you behold from some commanding point the vast evergreen forest falling in deep folds from the slopes of the Andes, as royal robes from a monarch's shoulders. What if the route I am to describe is not lined with Babel towers and crowded cities? Can any human architecture compete in impressiveness with the architecture of the Andes? It is impossible to examine the structure of such a mountain-system without concluding with Ruskin that "it has been prepared in order to unite as far as possible, and in the closest compass, every means of delighting and sanctifying the heart of man."

"These great cathedrals of the earth, with their gates of rock, pavements of cloud, choirs of stream and stone, altars of snow, and vaults of purple, traversed by the continual stars," are sanctuaries of ravishing magnificence and splendor. The sea-like Amazons is the symbol of repose; the riven Andes is the emblem of convulsive energy—



“rising like vast supernatural intelligences taking a material shape, and drawing around themselves a drapery of awful grandeur.” If a traveler can ascend the one and cross the other without having his soul filled with a new world of ideas and sentiments, verily his sight must be a vacant stare, and his heart a nether millstone.

Nor is this route utterly barren of history. Who has not heard of Orellana's famous voyage from Quito to Pará? Who has not wept over the tragic episodes in the strange fortunes of the Incas, and read with indignation, yet with intensest interest, the chronicles of Pizarro and his iron-hearted adventurers in search of the Gilded King—chronicles more wonderful than Eastern romance, yet historically true?

In the following itinerary of a tour across South America, I describe a route which may be followed in perfect safety, with the least difficulty and the greatest satisfaction. In my judgment, the journey is as healthful as a pilgrimage to Egypt, and far more refreshing than any number of wanderings in the Adirondacks.

Of course, there will be vexations of spirit and body; but the true traveler expects to rough it. The fastidious, silken tourist should stay at home. The Amazons steamers set an excellent table, the better the nearer Pará: the staples are beef, turtle, rice, beans, farina, bread (except near the end of the voyage), coffee, and dulce. But on the mountains one must make up his mind to relish *chupe* (Indian stew), boiled corn and black beans, and to sleep on a sheep-skin or something worse. The dangers from wild beasts are mainly imaginary: the largest animals in South America I do not care to meet again are mosquitoes. “There is much more danger” (said Livingstone) “of being run over when walking in the streets of London, than of being devoured by lions in Africa, unless in hunt-



ing." As to health, I have little to add to page 331. I have crossed the continent twice, and the Andes four times, and have not been ill a moment. Eat what nature dictates—fruit and farinaceous dishes. Overindulgence in stimulating food is a fruitful source of disease among Northerners. The gastronomics of the cold North should not be carried into the hot South. Avoid the night air and needless exposure. Hang your hammock high, as malarias creep on the ground. Getting wet is a serious matter, for the rapid radiation causes a chill which is not easily shaken off. "Paradoxical as it may sound, the great cause of disease in hot climates is *cold*." Cotton or light woolen garments are safer than linen. The vertical rays of the sun are not to be dreaded so much as the horizontal ones, which strike the forehead or occiput. Remember, also, that wounds in the feet are difficult to heal in the tropics. Between June and December is the best time for travel; and this, also, is the busy season on the Amazons.

Every month a "floating palace" leaves New York for the empire of the South. Suppose you engage passage by the steamer of July 23 for Pará; fare, \$150 gold. The following Saturday will find you in the harbor of St. Thomas; and, passing the beautiful islands of Martinique and Barbados, on Sunday, the 7th of August, you will step upon the wharf of Pará. At the Hotel Comercio you will pay \$2 50 a day. The architecture, commerce, costumes, customs, and suburbs (especially Nazareth) of this motley city can not fail to keep you busy, while profitable excursions might be made to the island of Marajó and up the Tocantíns. Steamers leave Pará for Manáos the 2d, 9th, and 18th of each month; and for Santarem and Obidos, the 12th and 26th. Suppose that on the 18th you board one of the Brazilian steamers bound for Manáos; fare, \$54; time, six days. In this voyage of a thousand



miles, you will discover the marvelous wealth of tropical vegetation, and make your first acquaintance with the King of Rivers. The steamer stops frequently, and four or five hours on the average at each place. The principal points of interest are busy Bréves, the enchanting channel of Tajapurú, the table-hills of Almeirim, the romantic port of Monte Alegre, stately Santarem, picturesque Obidos, and enterprising Serpa. A passable *fonda* has been opened close by the landing. Do not fail to have a row on the Rio Negro, and to visit the cascade in the forest.\* September 12 you will embark on the beautiful "Icamiaba" (well deserving the praises of Bates and Agassiz), and enjoy another charming voyage of a thousand miles. Fare, \$45; time, six or eight days, according to freight. The most important places on the Middle Amazons are Ega (the half-way station across the continent), Fonte Boa, and San Paulo. Tabatinga, the terminus of this voyage, is the frontier-fortress of Brazil. Here you exchange steamers, taking the Peruvian "Morona" or "Pastássa," which will leave Tabatinga for Yurimaguas, on the Huallága, September 21; fare, \$70. The steamer runs only in the day-time, and stops at numerous points, so that you will have a fine opportunity of studying the wild exuberance of nature on the Upper Amazons, where the forest is more magnificent than lower down. The places of chief interest are Maucallacta, Iquitos, Nauta, and San Regis. At Iquitos, an enterprising village of two thousand souls, the

\* An occasional steamer leaves Pará for San Antonio, on the Madeira, 434 leagues; time, nine days. A monthly steamer leaves Manáos for San Antonio, the 27th; fare, \$50. Thence by canoe to Trinidad, 185 leagues; 62 days. From Trinidad to Santa Cruz by canoe, 190 leagues. Santa Cruz to Cochabamba by beast, 119 leagues. Cochabamba to La Paz by beast, 80 leagues. La Paz to Puno by beast and steamer, 50 leagues. Puno to Mollendo by railway, 340 miles. A steamer leaves Manáos for San Isabel, on the Rio Negro, the 1st of every other month. Steamers for the Purús and Juruá leave the 11th and 20th; fare to the terminus on each, \$60.



steamer stops six days. Here are the government iron-works of Peru, carried on by English mechanics. You will reach Yurimaguas, October 5th.

From Yurimaguas you may follow Herndon's track, if you choose, taking canoe up the Huallága to Tingo Maria, and then by mule to Lima. But I advise an easier route: hire a boat and three Indians (\$20) for Balsa Puerto; time, five days. Thence foot it four days to Moyobamba. These "views afoot" will be grievous for the time being, but pleasant memories forever after, and will give you an inkling of South-American life and travel. Moyobamba is a city of nearly ten thousand people, who are busy making hats. You will wish to enjoy the genial climate, and the novelty of this unfrequented spot on the slope of the Andes, for at least a week.\* I therefore set the time of your departure at October 17th. The price of a mule from Moyobamba to Chachapoyas is \$8 or \$10; time, six days. A mule is better than a horse for mountain-travel, as the former is more cautious, and never loses its presence of mind. However, the rider must look out for himself, as it is none of the mule's concern if he be brushed off by an overhanging tree or projecting rock. On this journey, food can be procured only at Rioca and Taulia. To insure a shelter at Chachapoyas, the traveler should bring with him a letter to the Prefect from the Peruvian Minister at Washington. From Chachapoyas to Leimabamba is a good road; time, two days; \$4 50 per beast. Sleep at Tingo. From Leimabamba to Balsas, two days; \$3 per beast, and \$2 for the *arriero*. At Leimabamba you can sometimes get a little corn, beans, eggs, and potato-soup;

\* From Moyobamba to Tarapoto by mule, three to five days, \$5 to \$10; Tarapoto to Chasuta, one day, \$1; Chasuta by canoe to Yurimaguas, two days and one night, five Indians \$4 each and food, and \$10 for canoe. In Moyobamba, Chachapoyas, and Cajamarca, the only "hotels" are restaurants kept by Chinamen.



and at Balsas, dried meat, paltas, oranges, chancaca, and chocolate. From Balsas to Cajamarca, two days, stopping at Huáncó; \$4 or \$5 per beast. Thence it is but half a day's ride to the terminus of the Pacasmayo Railroad. From Pacasmayo a weekly steamer runs to Callao in three or four days, passing by famous Trujillo, and within sight and smell of the guano-bearing Guañape Island; fare, \$23. The best hotel in Lima is the "Maury;" rooms from 50 cents to \$2 50 per day; board and lodging from \$3 to \$4. Upon taking a room, the police hand you a blank to be filled out with name, nationality, whence arrived, whether married or single, business or profession. Steamers leave Callao daily. To Valparaiso, five days, \$100; to Panama, six days, \$120; fare from Callao to San Francisco, \$253; to New York *viâ* Panama, \$197 or \$214. Unless the tourist tarries too long in Lima, he can go *viâ* San Francisco to New York, arriving during the holidays. The entire expenses of such a tour from New York to New York *viâ* the Amazons, the Andes, Lima, and San Francisco, not allowing for a long stay in the cities, need not exceed \$800 gold; time, five months. And I venture to say that you will be ready to compare notes with any one who has spent twice the amount of money in following the beaten tracks of European travel.







## APPENDICES.



# APPENDICES.

## APPENDIX A.

### BAROMETRICAL MEASUREMENTS ACROSS SOUTH AMERICA.\*

Locality.	Altitude.	Barometer.	Boiling Point.	Regnault's Equiv.	Difference.	Other Estimates.
Pacific Ocean.....	0	29.930	212.01			<i>Bar.</i> of Visse, 29.904; Boussingault, 29.867.
Guayaquil.....	10	29.899	211.95	29.891	— .008	<i>B. P.</i> of Visse, 211.8°.
Guaranda.....	8,840	21.976				<i>Alt.</i> of Visse, 8872; Hall, 8928.
Arenal.....	14,250	18.123				<i>Alt.</i> of Visse, 13,917; Hall, 14,268.
Mocha.....	10,900	20.393				
Ambato.....	8,490	22.241				<i>Alt.</i> of Visse, 8541; Boussingault, 8787.
Tacunga.....	9,181	21.693				<i>Bar.</i> of Jameson, 22.218.
						<i>Alt.</i> of Visse, 9180; Boussingault, 9384.
Tiupullo.....	11,662	19.858				<i>Bar.</i> of Jameson, 21.700.
Machachi.....	9,900	21.212				<i>Alt.</i> of Visse, 11,702.
Quito.....	9,520	21.530	195.8	21.485	— .045	<i>Alt.</i> of Visse, 9823.
						<i>Alt.</i> of La Condamine, 9596; Humboldt, 9570; Caldas, 8947; Boussingault, 9567; Aguilar, 9496; Visse, 9307; Bureau des Longs., 9540; Trambly's <i>Ann.</i> , 9538; Jameson, 9513.
						<i>Bar.</i> of La Condamine, 21.404; Humboldt, 21.403; Aguilar, 21.465; Jameson, 21.566.
						<i>B. P.</i> of Visse, 195.6°; Trambly, 184.18°.
Panecillo.....	10,101	21.043				<i>Alt.</i> of Humboldt, 10,244; Aguilar, 10,135.
						<i>Bar.</i> of Jameson, 21.207.
Pichincha, top.....	15,827	17.038	184.5	17.030	— .008	<i>B. P.</i> of Visse, 194.7°.
						<i>Alt.</i> of La Condamine, 15,606; Humboldt, 15,922; Boussingault, 15,676; Visse, 16,200; Hall, 15,380; Jameson, 15,704.
Pichincha, crater...	13,300		189.2	18.672		<i>Bar.</i> of Visse, 16.942.
Antisana H.....	13,300	18.583				<i>Alt.</i> of Visse and Moreno, 13,600.
						<i>Alt.</i> of Humboldt, 13,465; Boussingault, 13,356.
						<i>Bar.</i> of Aguirre, 18.573; Jameson, 18.630.
On Antisana.....	16,000	16.782				
Pinatura.....	10,410	20.791				<i>Alt.</i> of Boussingault, 10,348.
Padregal.....	11,860	19.817				
On Cotopaxi.....	12,860	19.004				
Riobamba.....	9,200	21.705				<i>Alt.</i> of Visse, 9157; Boussingault, 9413.
Cajabamba.....	10,918	20.512				<i>Alt.</i> of La Condamine, 11,000.
Itulcache.....	8,885	22.006				
Tablon.....	10,516	20.800				
Papallacta.....	10,511	20.803	193.8	20.598	— .205	

\* First published in the *American Journal of Science* for September, 1868, to which the reader is referred for other physical observations. The barometric anomaly, noticed particularly on the Lower Amazon, was also observed by Herndon, Castelnau, Chandless, Spruce, and Wallace.



Locality.	Altitude.	Barometer.	Boiling Point.	Regnault's Equiv.	Difference.	Other Estimates.
Guila.....	8,622	22.206				
Pachamama.....	7,920	22.751				
Baeza.....	6,625	23.793				
Chinipleia.....	6,200	24.145				
Cochachimbamba..	4,252	25.832				
Curi-urcu.....	3,247	26.746				
Archidona.....	2,115	27.816	209.00	28.180	+ .364	
Napo.....	1,450	28.419	209.4	28.407	- .012	
Santa Rosa.....	1,100	28.814	210.4	28.982	+ .168	
Coca.....	858	29.022	210.65	29.127	+ .105	
Mouth of the River						
Aguarico.....	586	29.321	211.00	29.331	+ .010	
Do. River Curaray..	500	29.408	210.8	29.215	- .193	
Do. River Napo....	385	29.526	211.4	29.566	+ .040	<i>Alt.</i> at Nauta, by Castelnau, 365.
Pebas.....	345	29.510	211.1	29.390	- .120	<i>Alt.</i> of Herndon, 537.
						<i>B. P.</i> of Herndon, 211.1°.
Loreto.....			211.4	29.566		
San Antonio.....	256	29.655				
Tabatinga.....	255	29.656	211.5	29.625	- .041	<i>Alt.</i> of Spix and Martius, 670: Azevedo and Pinto, 150; Agassiz, 200.
Tunantins.....	138?	29.770				<i>Alt.</i> of Azevedo and Pinto, 124.
Ega.....	100?	29.813	211.9	29.862	+ .049	<i>Alt.</i> of Herndon, 2052; Azevedo and Pinto, 120.
						<i>B. P.</i> of Herndon, 208.2°.
Manáos.....	199?	29.705				<i>Alt.</i> of Herndon, 1475; Castelnau, 293; Spix and Martius, 556; Azevedo and Pinto, 92.
						<i>B. P.</i> of Herndon, 209.3°; Gibbon, 210°.87; Wallace, 212°.5.
Serpa.....	158?	29.752				<i>Alt.</i> of Azevedo and Pinto, 84.
Obidos.....	114	29.802				<i>Alt.</i> of Azevedo and Pinto, 58; Agassiz, 45.
Santarem.....	107	29.808	211.5	29.625	- .183	<i>Alt.</i> of Herndon, 846; Azevedo and Pinto, 50.
						<i>B. P.</i> of Herndon, 210.5°.
Mount Alégre.....	83	29.834				
Gurupá.....	38	29.890				<i>Alt.</i> of Azevedo and Pinto, 42.
Pará.....	15	29.889	211.95	29.891	+ .002	<i>Alt.</i> of Herndon, 320; Azevedo and Pinto, 35; Dewey, 35.
						<i>Bar.</i> of Herndon, 29.708; Dewey, 29.941; Orton (reduced to level of river), 29.914.
Atlantic Ocean.....	-2	29.932	212.16			<i>B. P.</i> of Herndon, 211.5°.
						<i>Bar.</i> of Dewey, 29.977.



## APPENDIX B.

VOCABULARIES FROM THE QUICHUA, ZÁPARO, YÁGUA, AND CÁMPAS LANGUAGES.

[SPANISH PRONUNCIATION.]

English.	Quichua.	Záparo.	Yagua.
Father,	Yáya,	Apochojo,	Yen.
Mother,	Máma,	Año,	Nihúa.
Son (said by father),	Chúri,	Niáto,	Poén.
Son (said by mother),	Cári huáhua,	Tauquí,	Poén.
Daughter (said by father),	Ushúshi,	Coniát or cuniató.	
Daughter (said by mother),	Huármi huáhua,	Itúm.	
Own father,	Quiquin yáya,	Cuqu máno.	
Own mother,	Quiquin máma,	La cuáno.	
Step-father,	La yáya,	Táma quíra.	
Step-mother,	La máma,	Táma quíra (máma?).	
Own son,	Quiquin chúri,	Ia cuniána.	
Step-son,	Quipai chúri,	Saquína cuniána.	
Elder son (said by father),	Cúra (or ñáupa) chúri,	Cuniapíra.	
Elder son (said by mother),	Cúra (or ñáupa, huáhua,	Cuniapíra.	
Younger son (said by mother),	Súlca (or quípa) chúri,	Nunoé.	
Younger daughter (said by father),	Súlca (or quípa) ushúshi,	Nunoé cuniató.	
Only son (said by father),	Zapálla (or zapai) chúri,	Noquí cunián,	Tíqui rai (huahua).
Only son (said by mother),	Zapálla (or zapai) cári huáhua,	Noquí táuco cunián,	Tíqui rai (huahua).
Grandson,	Cári huáhuay,	Cuajengño.	
Granddaughter,	Huármi huáhuay,		
Great-grandson,	Cári vílca.	Cuajenáño.	
Great-great-grandson,	Cári chupúllu.		



Grandfather,	Hátun yáya,	Quirraíto piátzo,	Yen.
Grandmother,	Hátun máma,	Quirraíto ocuáje.	
Great-grandfather,	Machúí yáya,	Quirishépüi.	
Great-grandmother,	Páya (or ápa) máma,	Pára.	
Great-great-grandfather,	Apúsqi (or apúnche) yáya,	Piátzo.	
Ancestors,	Apúsqi cúna,	Idasipóa.	
Brother (said by male),	Hauaúqui,	Cuquihúño,	Rai taíre.
Brother (said by female),	Túri,	Cuanuo,	Rai puipuin.
Sister (said by male),	Páni,	Cuimátó,	Rai pópo.
Sister (said by female),	Náña,	Taqui,	Rai taíre tu.
Elder brother,	Cúrac huaúqui,	Irishia cuquíño.	
Younger brother,	Súllca huaúqui,	Noquí.	
Cousin (said by male),	Chíska huaúqui,	Cuaneráno,	Primoíne.
Cousin (said by female),	Chíska pání,	Cuaneráno,	Primaíne.
Second cousin,	Caílla chíska huaúqui,	Cuaneráno (or cuaramá, relation).	
Third cousin,	Cáru chíska huaúqui,	Cuaneráno (or cuaramá, relation).	
Uncle (father's brother),	Yayapác huaúqui (or háchi),*	Táuco.	
Uncle (mother's brother),	Mamapác (or caca) túri,	Cuánoro.	
Aunt (father's sister),	Ypa (on Marañon, tiaíne),	Cuquíña.	
Aunt (mother's sister),	Mamapác nãña,	Cuáno cuíño.	
Father-in-law,	Cacáy (of male); quihuachí (of female).		
Mother-in-law,	Quihuác (of male); quihuachí (of female).		
Son-in-law,	Másha,	Acamía,	Quiria.
Daughter-in-law,	Kachún,	Cuarí ráno.	
Brother-in-law,	Masaní (or catáy),	Cuajinojóno.	
Sister-in-law,	Ypa (or kachún púra).		

\* Quíchua on Marañon, tiniúti.



VOCABULARIES FROM THE QUÍCHUA, ZÁPARO, YÁGUA, AND CÁMPAS LANGUAGES.—Continued.			
English.	Quíchua.	Záparo.	Yágua.
God-son,	Chúri cáshcai (or cháscai),	(Not used).	
God-father,	Shutichíc (or shutishca) yáya,	Ña achiatáno.	
God-mother,	Shutichíc (or shutishca) máma,	Noaichozáno.	
Relation,	Allu,	Cuaramá,	(Same as brother).
Husband,	Cúsa,	Cuirán,	Rai-huáno.
Wife,	Huármí,	Cuirichán,	Rai-huaturá.
Widower,	Huáccha cári,	Machícho.	
Widow,	Huáccha huármí,	Machícho.	
Twins,	Yshcai huacháshca (or huachác),	Sáro.	
Hand,	Maquí,	Cuichoác,	Samutú.
Foot,	Chaquí,	Cuñocá,	Nimutú.
Fingers,	Maquí pálca,	Canasú,	(No terms for fingers
Toes,	Chaquí pálca,	Cuñocá canasú.	and toes).
Thumb,	(No separate terms for thumb and big toe).	Cumacaná.	
Nails,	Silhuí,	Anahuachá.	
God,	Apúnchi-yáya (God our Father),	Piátzo,	Tupana.
One,	Shuc (or Shug),	Noquí,	Tiquí.
Two,	Ishcay,	Ammasaniquí,	Nanofjoi.
Three,	Quinsa,	Imucú maraquí (above three they have no names, but show their fingers ; do not count above ten).	Momuhí.
Four,	Chúscu,		Nañunjúia.
Five,	Píshca (or pítchca),		Tanaíjo.
Six,	Sócta,		Tiquí ñiháte.
Seven,	Cánchis,		Nañonjaiáte.
Eight,	Púsac (or pusag),		Momunhuaiáte.



Nañanyuá-áte.  
Nanjui. (*Go no higher.*)

Nine, Inscún,  
Ten, Chúnnga,  
Eleven, Chúnnga shug.  
Twelve, Chúnnga íshcay, etc.  
Twenty, Ishcay-chúnnga.  
Twenty-one, Ishcay-chúnnga shug, etc.  
Thirty, Quínsa chúnnga.  
One hundred, Páchac (*or* pátzag).  
One thousand, Guaránnga.  
Ten thousand, (*Would be chúnnga-guaránnga; but they never go over 1000.*)

Ordinal numbers, (*Níquí is joined to the number: e.g., first is shug níquí; second, ishcaý níquí.*)

(*The Caribos count by twos. Thus, one is avícho; two, rabói. Above two, so many twos, as four is rabói-rabói; and six, rabói-rabói-rabói. Ten is expressed by spreading both hands, and twenty by bringing fingers and toes together. Thus the Caribs. Decimal numeration is found among all the American aborigines, ancient and modern, juxtaposition usually designating multiplication.*)

## CAMPAS WORDS.

Mother,	Ina.	Nose,	Aquíry.	Leg,	Curassow,	Choichítes.	Rope,	Piamíníta.
Brother (said by male),	Incho.	Mouth,	Apa-anti.	Belly,	Turtle,	Tutá.	Twine,	Quiritarí.
Brother (said by female),	Iga.	Hand,	Náco.	Wrist,	Monkey,	Tsepé.	Maize,	Chínque.
Sister (said by male),	Incho.	Foot,	Aítse-cunída.	Knee,	Cocoa,	Quinbító.	One,	Paníro.
Head,	Aítu.	Lips,	Achíra.	Ankle,	Clay,	Quipateí.	Two,	Pitiní.
Eyes,	Oquí.	Teeth,	Aíquí.	Nails,	Shirt,	Pápani.	Three,	Pariotohuáy.
		Hair,	Quísti.	Fly,	Fire,	Pamarí.	Four,	Pariopatóta.
		Neck,	Aquínce.	Musquito,	Hammock,	Quio-ots.	Five,	Pariotohuaygae.
		Arm,	Acú.	Armadillo,				
				Pícha.				

(*My informant on numerals, a boy, though quite intelligent, could go no farther; but the tribe undoubtedly count ten.*)



# APPENDIX C.

## COMMERCE OF THE AMAZON.

### I.—VALUE OF PRODUCTS EXPORTED FROM DIFFERENT TOWNS ON THE AMAZON BY THE IMPERIAL STEAMERS IN 1867.\*

Products.	Cametá.	Breves.	Macapá.	Gurupá.	Porto do Moz.	Pratinha.	Mt. Alegre.	Santa-rem.	Obidos.	Villa Nova.	Serpa.	Manaos.	Cudajaz.	Conry.	Ega.	Fonte Boa.	Tonantins.	S. Paulo.	Tabatinga.	Quantity.	Mean Price.	Total Value.
Brazil Nuts...	.....	\$600	\$400	\$290	\$10	\$16	.....	\$1,334	\$6,938	\$2,564	\$6,886	\$15,010	\$1,442	\$498	\$325	.....	.....	.....	.....	18,397 alq.	\$2 00	\$36,794
Cacao.....	\$44,054	1,615	6,429	1,345	257	1,677	\$86	69,111	172,421	28,907	34,462	38,802	1,945	5,192	4,907	\$957	.....	\$310	\$227	314,327 arr.	3 00	942,981
Cattle.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	1,575	600	550	25	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	110	25 00	2,750
Coffee.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	56	33	7	.....	172	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	25	79 arr.	3 70	292
Copalba.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	18	1,422	4,383	8,631	5,175	132	.....	1,559	123	.....	.....	.....	72,030 lbs.	30	2,160
Cotton, raw...	.....	.....	100	90	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	103	293	.....	.....	.....	1	6	.....	232	653 arr.	1 25	816
Dried Meat...	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	145	.....	2,744	15,699	167	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	6,821 "	2 75	18,757
Farina.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	80	37	15	105	10	.....	99 alq.	2 50	247
Guarana.....	138	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	1,620	750	24,240	14,550	60	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	1,374 arr.	30 00	41,220
Hides.....	.....	800	3,302	858	271	152	.....	2,426	4,087	5,787	6,296	2,163	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	11,871	2 00	23,742
Horses.....	.....	75	600	.....	.....	375	3,225	3,975	2,100	.....	.....	300	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	142	75 00	10,650
India-rubber...	123,460	128,440	306,880	85,110	85,780	1,430	.....	22,670	8,640	20,100	209,400	219,340	30,468	7,644	6,308	5,460	2,252	9,155	15,054	128,955 arr.	10 00	1,289,550
Piassaba.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	7,612	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	7,612 "	1 00	7,612
Pirarucu.....	.....	10	20	.....	200	1,805	525	18,902	31,525	40,827	21,025	79,055	8,273	5,944	6,205	7,572	6,768	2,018	920	94,316 "	2 50	235,790
Sarsaparilla...	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	60	.....	2,376	1,392	108	372	33,708	207	943	5,163	4,876	5,209	2,334	3,703	5,119 "	11 80	60,442
Tallow.....	.....	12	212	.....	.....	60	.....	200	1,484	1,368	4,164	16	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	1,893 "	4 00	7,572
Tobacco.....	.....	50	.....	25	.....	25	.....	.....	.....	225	1,187	237	.....	48	360	.....	.....	12	360	205 "	12 23	2,525
Tonka Beans.	.....	.....	.....	43	.....	.....	.....	.....	120	1,070	5	9	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	260 "	4 80	1,248
Turtles.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	76	.....	2	76	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	331	1 80	596
Turtle-oil.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	100	.....	5	8,220	216	2,382	3,123	1,693	1,646	298	335	3,762 j'rs.	4 75	17,769

\* This Table is taken from the *Relatoria da Companhia de Navegação e Comercio do Amazonas*, and includes only the commerce by the Brazilian steamers and the staple products. The vast amount carried by sailing craft and by Peruvian steamers on the Marañon is unknown to us. The number of passengers transported by the steamers in 1867 was 13,886; receipts from passage, \$75,744; from freight, \$210,654. In the reduction, the milroy has been taken at 50 cts. U. S. currency, which was the rate very nearly in 1867. The alquiere (alq.) = .988 of a bushel; arr.=arroba of 32 lbs.



## II. ARTICLES EXPORTED FROM PARÁ TO THE UNITED STATES IN 1860.

Annatto.....lbs.	64,832	Piassaba.....lbs.	3,488
Balsam Copaiba.....“	89,670	Rubber, fine.....“	2,394,656
Cacao.....“	145,888	“ mixed.....“	69,120
Copper, old.....“	1,171	“ coarse.....“	420,000
Hides, wet.....“	616,172	Skins, Deer.....“	64,406
“ dry.....“	4,503	Tapioca.....“	118,080
Nuts, Brazil.....“	23,582	Tonka Beans.....“	18,298
“ “ unshelled...“	19,481		

## III. ARTICLES IMPORTED FROM THE UNITED STATES TO PARÁ IN 1860.


Axes.....dozens,	1,826	Matches.....cases,	174
Candles.....boxes,	594	Oars.....number,	592
Chairs.....dozens,	333	Pepper.....bags,	190
Codfish.....drums,	1,943	Rosin.....barrels,	1,556
Clocks.....number,	660	Rubber and other } pairs,	3,398
Combs.....dozens,	7,353	Shoes.....}	
Domestics.....packages,	2,370	Shooks (box).....number,	16,428
Drugs.....“	435	Soap.....boxes,	6,891
Flour.....barrels,	16,755	Specie, in Gold.....dollars,	113,827
Fire-crackers.....boxes,	1,800	Straw Paper.....reams,	12,903
Gunny-bags.....number,	13,000	Soda-biscuit.....12-lb. tins,	5,954
Gunpowder.....kegs,	2,150	Saltpetre.....kegs,	95
Hams.....tierces,	38	Tea.....chests,	235
Hardware.....packages,	201	Tea.....boxes,	533
Hats, Palm-leaf....cases,	506	Tar and Pitch.....barrels,	329
Knives.....dozens,	2,195	Tobacco.....boxes,	257
Lard.....packages,	2,709	Twine, Cotton.....pounds,	13,322
Lumber.....feet,	75,955	Tortoise-shell.....“	299½
Nails.....kegs,	588		

## IV. DUTIES ON PRINCIPAL IMPORTS FROM UNITED STATES AT PARÁ.

Axes and Hatchets.....	30 reys per pound.
Biscuit, Soda.....	400 “ arroba.
Brooms.....	600 “ dozen.
Chairs, cane-seat.....	1,000 “ article.
“ rocking.....	3,000 “ “
“ “ extra.....	6,000 “ “
Cinnamon, Ceylon.....	500 “ pound.
Combs, rubber.....	600 “ “
“ ivory.....	2,000 “ “
Cotton Goods.....	90 “ sq. vara.
“ “ colored twills.....	150 “ “



Candles.....	240	reys per pound.
Cigars.....	1,200	“ “
Cordage .....	50	“ “
Dirks, ordinary .....	6,000	“ article.
“ extra .....	12,000	“ “
Flour.....	150	“ arroba.
Hats, Palm-leaf.....	180	“ article.
Hams .....	70	“ pound.
Homœopathic Medicine .....	300	“ ounce.
Knives .....	250	“ article.
Lard .....	1,500	
Matting, India.....	240	“ pound.
Nails, to two inches .....	40	“ “
“ over “ .....	20	“ “
Padlocks, brass .....	250	“ “
“ iron.....	180	“ “
Pearl Barley.....	400	“ arroba.
Pepper, India.....	70	“ pound.
Plows .....	free.	
Pork.....	600	“ arroba.
Powder .....	200	“ pound.
Paper, Straw .....	30	“ “
Pilot Bread.....	150	“ arroba.
Roman Cement .....	50	“ “
Rosin.....	1,200	
Sieves, iron wire.....	30	“ pound.
“ brass .....	50	“ “
Shoes, Rubber.....	400	“ “
Store Trucks .....	900	“ article.
Shooks, boxes.....	400	“ arroba.
Soap, Yellow.....	30	“ pound.
Scales, simple .....	120	“ “
Tar and Pitch.....	200	“ arroba.
Tortoise-shell.....	2,500	“ pound.
Tea .....	450	“ “
Twine, Cotton.....	300	“ “
Trunks, 2 to 4 palms.....	2,700	“ article.
“ over 4 “ .....	3,600	“ “
Tobacco, chewing .....	4,800	“ arroba.
“ cut.....	9,600	“ arroba.

 This Tariff went into operation February 23, 1861.



## APPENDIX D.

A LIST OF THE PRINCIPAL LATITUDES, LONGITUDES, MAGNETIC VARIATIONS, BAROMETRIC ELEVATIONS, AND DISTANCES ESTABLISHED BY THE PERUVIAN HYDROGRAPHIC COMMISSION, 1873.

### MARañON.

*Lower Mouth of the Javarí River.*—Lat.  $4^{\circ} 18' 45''$  S. Lon.  $69^{\circ} 53' 10''$  W. G. Var.  $5^{\circ} 38' 54''$  E. El.  $81^m.075$ . Dist. from Iquitos 315 miles.

*Loreto.*—Lat.  $3^{\circ} 54' 20''$  S. Lon.  $70^{\circ} 7' 45''$  W. G. Var.  $5^{\circ} 11' 24''$  E. El.  $87^m.171$ . Dist. from Javarí  $53\frac{1}{2}$  miles.

*Iquitos.*—Lat.  $3^{\circ} 44' 15''$  S. Lon.  $73^{\circ} 7' 30''$  W. G. Var.  $5^{\circ} 56' 0''$  E. El.  $89^m.914$ . Dist. from Javarí 315 miles.

*Mouth of the Ucayáli.*—Lat.  $4^{\circ} 28' 30''$  S. Lon.  $73^{\circ} 21' 30''$ . Var.  $7^{\circ} 2' 0''$  E. El.  $96^m.924$ . Dist. from Javarí  $376\frac{3}{4}$  miles.

*Nauta.*—Lat.  $4^{\circ} 31' 30''$  S. Lon.  $73^{\circ} 27' 0''$  W. G. Var.  $7^{\circ} 2' 0''$  E. El.  $97^m.534$ . Dist. from Javarí  $383\frac{1}{4}$  miles.

*Santa Cruz de Parinari.*—Lat.  $4^{\circ} 36' 30''$  S. Lon.  $74^{\circ} 6' 30''$  W. G. Var.  $7^{\circ} 27' 20''$  E. El.  $106^m.983$ . Dist. from Javarí  $461\frac{1}{2}$  miles.

*Barranca.*—Lat.  $4^{\circ} 59' 53''$  S. Lon.  $76^{\circ} 38' 38''$  W. G. Var.  $7^{\circ} 46' 26''$  E. El.  $138^m.072$ . Dist. from Javarí 733 miles.

*Borja.*—Lat.  $4^{\circ} 31' 37''$  S. Lon.  $77^{\circ} 29' 43''$  W. G. El.  $157^m.277$ . Dist. from Javarí 848 miles.

### HUALLÁGA RIVER.

*Yurimaguas.*—Lat.  $5^{\circ} 51' 55''$  S. Lon.  $75^{\circ} 59' 58''$  W. G. Var.  $7^{\circ} 47' 0''$  E. El.  $137^m.109$ . Dist. from Javarí 742 miles.

*Rumi-Callarina.*—Lat.  $5^{\circ} 58' 32''$  S. Lon.  $75^{\circ} 47' 32''$  W. G. Var.  $8^{\circ} 8' 10''$  E. El.  $148^m.130$ . Dist. from Javarí 788 miles.

### UCAYÁLI RIVER.

*Lago Puca-cura.*—Lat.  $6^{\circ} 4' 45''$  S. Lon.  $75^{\circ} 1' 0''$  W. G. Var.  $7^{\circ} 22' 10''$  E. El.  $114^m.908$ . Dist. from Iquitos 356 miles.

*Puerto de Sara-yacu.*—Lat.  $6^{\circ} 35' 15''$  S. Lon.  $74^{\circ} 58' 30''$  W. G. Var.  $7^{\circ} 52' 8''$  E. El.  $124^m.967$ . Dist. from Iquitos 451 miles.

*Paca-mashi.*—Lat.  $7^{\circ} 53' 15''$  S. Lon.  $74^{\circ} 40' 45''$  W. G. Var.  $7^{\circ} 51' 38''$  E. El.  $132^m.587$ . Dist. from Iquitos 607 miles.

*Yarina-cocha.*—Lat.  $8^{\circ} 15' 0''$  S. Lon.  $74^{\circ} 31' 30''$  W. G. Var.  $7^{\circ} 38' 30''$  E. El.  $136^m.245$ . Dist. from Iquitos 672 miles.

*Mouth of the Pachitá River.*—Lat.  $8^{\circ} 43' 30''$  S. Lon.  $74^{\circ} 32' 30''$  W. G. Var.  $8^{\circ} 45' 40''$  E. El.  $154^m.837$ . Dist. from Iquitos 765 miles.



## PACHITÉA RIVER.

*Cuñu-yacu* (Hot-water).—Lat.  $9^{\circ} 5' 52''$  S. Lon.  $74^{\circ} 48' 15''$  W. G. Var.  $8^{\circ} 59' 26''$  E. El. 169<sup>m</sup>.773. Dist. from Iquitos 825 miles. (At this place are hot springs.)

*Inca Roca* (Inca Rock).—Lat.  $9^{\circ} 9' 4''$  S. Lon.  $74^{\circ} 55' 45''$  W. G. Var.  $8^{\circ} 6' 26''$  E. El. (no observation). Dist. from Iquitos 837 miles. (At this place there are numerous hieroglyphics cut in the sandstone cliff.)

*Confluence of the Píchis and Palcazu*.—Lat.  $9^{\circ} 54' 9''$  S. Lon.  $74^{\circ} 58' 45''$  W. G. Var.  $7^{\circ} 34' 4''$  E. El. 188<sup>m</sup>.365. Dist. from Iquitos 956 miles.

## PÍCHIS RIVER.

*Rochelle Playa*.—Lat.  $9^{\circ} 57' 11''$  S. Lon.  $75^{\circ} 2' 0''$  W. G. Var.  $8^{\circ} 35' 36''$  E. Dist. from Iquitos 971 miles. (Up to this point, named after Captain J. H. Rochelle, navigation is clear and unobstructed for any steamer which can ascend the Pachitéa; beyond this point navigation becomes more difficult, though not impracticable.)

*Tempestad Playa*.—Lat.  $10^{\circ} 5' 6''$  S. Lon.  $74^{\circ} 55' 45''$  W. G. Var.  $7^{\circ} 46' 0''$  E. Dist. from Iquitos 996 miles.

*Mouth of the River Herrera-yácu*.—Lat.  $10^{\circ} 20' 3''$  S. Lon.  $74^{\circ} 54' 0''$  W. G. Var.  $7^{\circ} 59' 26''$  E. Dist. from Iquitos 1030 miles. (This river was named by the Commission after Major Ramon Herrera, of the Peruvian army, who commanded the escort of soldiers accompanying the Commission.)

*Puerto Tucker*.—Lat.  $10^{\circ} 22' 55''$  S. Lon.  $74^{\circ} 49' 0''$  W. G. Var.  $9^{\circ} 7' 30''$  E. El. 213<sup>m</sup>.359. Dist. from Iquitos 1041 miles. (This place was named by the Commission after its president, Admiral John R. Tucker; it is the highest point to which the Píchis River is navigable in canoes, and from it lofty mountains are seen, about seven miles distant, extending in a direction east and west.)

## HERRÉRA-YÁCU RIVER.

*Terminacion Playa*.—Lat.  $10^{\circ} 22' 33''$  S. Lon.  $74^{\circ} 54' 0''$  W. G. Var.  $7^{\circ} 47' 52''$  E. Dist. from Iquitos 1034 miles. (Termination Playa is the highest point to which the Herrera-yácu is navigable in canoes. Lofty ranges of mountains are distant from it about twelve miles.)

## PALCÁZU RIVER.

*Puerto del Mairo*.—Lat.  $9^{\circ} 55' 22''$  S. Lon.  $75^{\circ} 17' 45''$  W. G. Var.  $7^{\circ} 28' 54''$  E. El. 242<sup>m</sup>.315. Dist. from Iquitos 992 miles.



## CURRENTS.

## MARAÑON.

Between the mouth of the Javará River and Tabatinga, the current of the Marañon has a velocity of  $4\frac{6}{10}$  miles per hour.

Between Tabatinga and Letitia,  $3\frac{3}{10}$  miles per hour.

Letitia and Loreto, 3 miles.

Loreto and Puerto de Pebas,  $2\frac{1}{2}$  miles.

Puerto de Pebas and Tigre,  $2\frac{1}{4}$  miles.

Tigre and Iquitos,  $2\frac{3}{4}$  miles.

Iquitos and Tamshi-yacu, 3 miles.

Tamshi-yacu and the mouth of the Ucayáli,  $2\frac{3}{4}$  miles.

Mouth of the Ucayáli and Nauta,  $3\frac{1}{4}$  miles.

Nauta and San Regis,  $3\frac{1}{2}$  miles.

San Regis and the mouth of the Tigre-yacu,  $3\frac{1}{2}$  miles.

Mouth of the Tigre-yacu and Santa Cruz de Parinari,  $3\frac{1}{2}$  miles.

Santa Cruz de Parinari and Parinari,  $3\frac{1}{2}$  miles.

Parinari and Vaca Marina,  $2\frac{3}{4}$  miles.

Vaca Marina and Elvira,  $3\frac{1}{2}$  miles.

Elvira and San Pedro, 3 miles.

San Pedro and Fontevera,  $3\frac{1}{8}$  miles.

Fontevera and the mouth of the Huallága River,  $3\frac{1}{4}$  miles.

Mouth of the Huallága River and Cedro Isla,  $3\frac{2}{10}$  miles.

Cedro Isla and the mouth of the Pastássa River,  $3\frac{1}{4}$  miles.

Mouth of the Pastássa River and Barranca,  $3\frac{1}{4}$  miles.

Barranca and the mouth of the Potro River, 3 miles.

Mouth of the Potro River and mouth of the Morona River,  $3\frac{4}{10}$  miles.

Mouth of the Morona River and Limon, 3 miles.

Limon and Punta Achual,  $3\frac{7}{10}$  miles.

Punta Achual and Borja, average current, 3 miles.

## HUALLÁGA RIVER.

Mouth of the Huallága and Laguna,  $2\frac{1}{4}$  miles.

Laguna and Santa Lucia, 3 miles.

Santa Lucia and Santa Maria, 3 miles.

Santa Maria and Yurimaguas,  $3\frac{1}{4}$  miles.

Yurimaguas and Caina-rachí,  $3\frac{1}{4}$  miles.

Caina-rachí and Rumi-Callarina, 3 miles.

## UCAYÁLI RIVER.

Mouth of the Ucayáli and Lago Puca-cura,  $2\frac{1}{10}$  miles.

Lago Puca-cura and Sara-yacu,  $2\frac{9}{10}$  miles.

Sara-yacu and Yarina-cocha,  $3\frac{1}{10}$  miles.

Yarina-cocha and the mouth of the Pachitéa River, 3 miles.



## PACHITÉA RIVER.

Mouth of the Pachitéa and Inca Roca,  $2\frac{2}{3}$  miles.

Inca Roca and the confluence of the Píchis and Palcaza,  $2\frac{3}{5}$  miles.

## PÍCHIS RIVER.

Mouth of the Píchis River and Puerto Tucker,  $2\frac{1}{3}$  miles.

## HERRÉRA-YÁCU RIVER.

Mouth of the Herrera-yácu River and Terminacion Playa,  $3\frac{1}{4}$  miles.

## PALCÁZU RIVER.

Mouth of the Palcázu River and the Puerto del Mairo,  $3\frac{1}{4}$  miles.



# INDEX.

---

- Aborigines, page 69, 109, 111, 315, 454.
- Achiote, 168, 527.
- Adobe dwellings, 46.
- Agassiz, Prof., on the geology of the Amazonian valley, 280, 282.
- Agriculture on the Amazons, 243, 372.
- Agriculture on the Andes, 75.
- Aground on the Amazons, 239.
- Aguano, 201.
- Aguardiente, 175, 383, 520.
- Alcalde's house, 202.
- Alligator pear, 511.
- Alligators, 35, 296, 482.
- Almeyrim Hills, 252.
- Aloe, American, 100, 532.
- Alpacas, 421.
- Alpaca wool, 438.
- Altar, volcano of, 150.
- Amazons River, annual rise, 274.
- “ “ birds on, 306.
- “ “ cetaceans, 299.
- “ “ commerce, 277, 351.
- “ “ current, 273.
- “ “ delta, 272.
- “ “ depth, 274.
- “ “ etymology, 278.
- “ “ expeditions, 277.
- “ “ first view of, 226.
- “ “ fishes, 295.
- “ “ foreign vessels on, 276.
- “ “ insects, 300.
- “ “ life within, 295.
- “ “ magnitude, 264, 272, 278, 339, 351.
- “ “ natural canals, 265.
- “ “ navigation, 276.
- “ “ reptiles, 296.
- “ “ scenery, 236, 364, 377.
- “ “ source, 264, 349.
- Amazons River, tints, 272.
- “ “ tributaries, 266, 271, 340.
- “ “ volume, 273.
- “ valley, 280.
- “ “ climate, 273, 284, 351.
- “ “ creation of, 117.
- “ “ forest, 287.
- “ “ fruits, 289, 437, 509.
- “ “ geology, 281, 551.
- “ “ minerals, 286.
- “ “ population, 462.
- “ “ slope, 280.
- “ “ soil, 286.
- “ “ trees, 289.
- “ “ zoölogy, 284, 474.
- Amazonian Indians, 316, 462, 470.
- Ambato, 52, 153.
- America, the continent of vegetation, 103.
- America, South, geology of, 114.
- American colonists, 251, 368.
- Ammonites on the Andes, 554.
- Amphisbœna, 194.
- Amusements in Quito, 80.
- Anacondas, 222.
- Ancachs silver ores, 442.
- Andean chain, 119.
- Andes, birds on the, 105, 146.
- “ equipped for the, 37.
- “ first sight of the, 33.
- “ geology of, 115, 553.
- “ heart of the, 48.
- “ last view of the, 214.
- “ of Ecuador, 121.
- “ railway over, 420.
- “ reptiles on the, 107.
- “ rise of the, 115.
- “ sinking of the, 138, 551.
- “ summit of the, 49, 134.
- “ valleys of the, 130.
- “ views from the, 45, 134, 141.



- Anguteros Indians, 222.  
 Animal life, dearth of, 188.  
 Animals on the Amazons, 474.  
 Animals on the Napo, 207.  
 Antiquities, 397, 400, 462.  
 Antisana, volcano of, 144, 180.  
     " hacienda, 144.  
 Ants, battle with, 225.  
     " on the Amazons, 300, 486.  
     " on the Napo, 194.  
 Apothecaries in Quito, 93.  
 Archidona, 191.  
 Architecture in Quito, 78.  
 Arenal, 49.  
 Arequipa, 415.  
     " and Puno Railroad, 412, 451.  
 Armadillo, 310, 477.  
 Army of Ecuador, 87.  
 Arrieros, 36.  
 Arrow-grass, 376.  
 Arrows, Indian, 321.  
 Arts in Quito, 78.  
 Ascending the Andes, 43, 96, 144.  
 Assai Palm, 540.  
 Astronomy on the Andes, 97.  
 Ata fruit, 510.  
 Atahualpa, 56.  
 Atmosphere of Quito, 97.  
 Aya-huasca, 171, 526.  
 Aymaras, 458.  
  
 Baccaba Palm, 544.  
 Baeza, 187.  
 Balsa Puerto, 386.  
 Balsa wood, 507.  
 Balsas, 32, 398.  
 Bamboos on the Napo, 220.  
 Banana, 34, 513.  
 Baños, 149.  
 Bark cloth, 221, 532.  
 Barometric measurements, 622, 633.  
     " anomaly, 241, 226.  
     " variations at Quito, 92.  
 Barra, 243.  
 Bartholomew, St., 54.  
 Bats, 205, 312, 483.  
 Bears, 105.  
 Bed, Andean, 181.  
 Bees on the Amazons, 303.  
     " of Quito, 108.  
     " on the Napo, 207.  
 Beetles on the Amazons, 303.  
     " on the Napo, 206.  
 Bells of Quito, 89.  
 Beni, 342, 355.  
  
 "Big-ear" Indians, 222.  
 Birds on the Amazons, 306.  
     " coloration of, in the tropics, 105.  
     " moulting of, 285.  
     " of South America, 105.  
 Bland, Thomas, 559.  
 Blow-guns, 170, 476.  
 Boa-constrictor, 223.  
 Boats, Amazonian, 353.  
 Bodegas, 35.  
 Bolivian Amazonia, 355.  
 Borja, 350.  
 Botany of South America, 286.  
 Brazilian etiquette, 235, 246, 372.  
     " frontier, 233.  
     " steamers, 234, 353, 619.  
 Brazilians, 323.  
 Brazil-nut-trees, 290, 502, 515.  
 Bread-tree, 34.  
 Breves, 254, 365.  
 Buildings, Andean, 46.  
 Bull-baits, 80.  
 Bull-ring at Lima, 408.  
 Burial customs, 91, 321.  
     " at Quito, 91.  
 Bussu Palm, 543.  
 Butter, 251.  
 Butterflies on the Amazons, 302.  
     " on the Napo, 206.  
 Buzzards, 29.  
  
 Caballococha, 232.  
 Cacao, 30, 290, 437, 517.  
 Cachaça rum, 383.  
 Cachiyacu River, 386.  
 Cajabamba, 153.  
 Cajamarca, 399.  
 Caju, 511.  
 Calabash-tree, 289.  
 Calla-calla summit, 398.  
 Callao, 403.  
 Camino Real, 45.  
 Camellones, 43.  
 Camindo on the Napo, 226.  
 Campas Indians, 322.  
 Canelos, 172.  
 Canoe-life on the Napo, 213.  
 Canoe-paths, 265.  
 Canoes on the Amazons, 353.  
     " on the Napo, 200.  
 Capybara, 310, 477.  
 Caraguairazo, 132.  
 Carapatos, 485.  
 Carboniferous deposits, 557.  
 Carnival, 81.



- Carranqui, 157.  
 Cascarilla bark, 47, 438, 523.  
 Cassiquari Canal, 267.  
 Cathedral of Guayaquil, 26.  
     " of Lima, 407.  
     " of Puno, 424.  
     " of Quito, 66.  
 Cattle on the Andes, 145.  
 Caucho-tree, 288.  
 Cayambi, 143.  
 Cedar on the Amazons, 289.  
 Cemetery, Protestant, 91.  
 Century-plant, 100.  
 Cerro, 33.  
 Cerro de Pasco silver, 440.  
 Cetaceans in the Amazons, 299.  
 Chachapoyas, 396.  
 Chicha, 167, 210.  
 Chilete silver mines, 442.  
 Chillo hacienda, 155.  
 Chimbo, valley of, 46.  
 Chimborazo, 33, 44, 49, 127.  
 Chimbote Railroad, 448.  
 Chimneys, absence of, 44.  
 Chirimoya, 101.  
 Chuquipogyo, 51.  
 Chuquiragua, 100.  
 Church, Colonel, 342, 357.  
 Cigána, 206, 308.  
 Cinchona, 47, 522.  
 Cinnamon, American, 172.  
 Circumcision, 322.  
 Civility, Ecuadorian, 35, 71.  
 Civilization on the Amazons, 236.  
 Clay-eating, 229, 381, 423, 592.  
 Clay formation of the Amazons, 225, 562.  
 Climate of Guayaquil, 28.  
     " of Lima, 411.  
     " of Quito, 91.  
     " of the Amazons, 238, 251, 379, 580, 610, 612.  
 Coal in Peru, 439.  
 Coary River, 242, 269.  
 Coca-chewing, 291, 438, 525.  
 Coca village, 207.  
 Cochineal, 108.  
 Cock-fighting, 35, 80.  
 Cocoa-palm, 35, 515, 548.  
 Coffee, 31, 259, 290, 436, 517.  
 Colleges of Ecuador, 79.  
 Combativeness on the Andes, 95.  
 Commerce of Peru, 431.  
     " on the Amazons, 355, 362, 628.  
 Compressed heads, 171.  
 Compulsory commerce, 195.  
 Condor, 106, 131, 564.  
 Cones of volcanoes, 122.  
 Conibos Indians, 321, 468.  
 Cookery in Quito, 44, 84.  
 Copaiva, 503, 531, 592.  
 Copal-gum, 193, 528.  
 Corals, fossil, 557.  
 Cordillera, 33, 126, 401, 432.  
 Corn, 102, 437.  
 Cosanga River, 189.  
 Costumes of Amazonian Indians, 239, 241.  
 Cotocachí village, 154.  
     " volcano, 142.  
 Cotopaxi, 55, 146.  
     " ascent of, 574.  
     " eruptions of, 125.  
 Cotton, 437, 533.  
 Cotton-mills, 77, 155.  
 Cow-tree, 288, 500, 531.  
 Craft on the Napo, 209.  
 Craters, deep, 133.  
 Crocodiles, 296.  
 Cudajá, 242.  
 Cuenca, 152.  
 Cunchebamba, 53.  
 Curaray River, 224.  
 Curassow, 308, 477.  
 Curi-urcu, 191.  
 Currency of Pará, 260.  
     " of Quito, 75.  
 Custom duties, 361, 374, 629.  
 Cuzco ladies, 82.  
     " Railway, 453.  
 Dangers in South America, 331, 617.  
 Darwin, 282, 465, 466, 560.  
 Debt of Ecuador, 87.  
 Deer on the Napo, 226.  
     " fossil, 154.  
 Descent into Pichincha, 139.  
 Desert of Islay, 415.  
 Dewey, O. A., 557.  
 Dirt-eating, 229, 592.  
 Discipline on the Napo, 204.  
 Diseases on the Amazons, 585.  
     " " Andes, 93, 331.  
 Dogs on the Andes, 95.  
 Dolphins, 299.  
 Dragon-flies, 302.  
 Dress in Quito, 69.  
 Drugs, Amazonian, 522.  
 Drunkenness at Quito, 146.  
 Duties at Pará, 361, 629.  
 Dye-woods, 197, 527.



- Earthquake at Arequipa, 416.  
     " at Ibarra, 157.  
     " at Riobamba, 153.  
     " effect of, on climate, 91.  
     " experience of, 163.  
     " theories of, 161.  
 Eastern Cordillera, 179, 432, 552.  
 Eciton ants, 301, 486.  
 Ecuador, army, 87.  
     " Congress, 86.  
     " debt, 87.  
     " extent, 85.  
     " flora and fauna, 103.  
     " government, 86.  
     " population, 85.  
     " religion, 89.  
     " repudiation, 86.  
     " revenue, 87.  
     " revolutions, 86.  
     " Supreme Court, 87.  
     " volcanoes, 122, 148.  
 Ecuadorian cooking, 44, 84.  
 Education on the Amazons, 360, 366, 371.  
 Education on the Andes, 79, 423.  
 Edwards, George, 195.  
 Ega, 239, 378.  
 Eggs of the alligator, 297.  
     " of the turtle, 297.  
 El Dorado, 183.  
 Elephant at high altitudes, 155.  
 Equator, mean temperature, 262.  
 Expenses of travel, 327, 618.  
 Extractive industry, 361.  
 Farina, 235, 291, 518.  
 Fecundity of native women, 316, 465, 609.  
 Ferns, tree, 38.  
 Fevers, 596.  
 Fever remedies, 331.  
 Fire-flies, 25.  
 Fish ejected from volcanoes, 107, 132, 143.  
     " in the Amazons, 295, 479.  
     " in the Napo, 226.  
     " in Quito valley, 107.  
     " in the tropics, 329.  
 Fishing with barbasco, 169, 479.  
 Flamingoes, 308.  
 Fleas, 487.  
 Flowers on the Amazons, 292, 489.  
     " on the Andes, 50, 102, 136.  
 Fonte Boa, 239.  
 Food, scarcity of, 372, 381.  
 Forest, Amazonian, 490.  
 Forest on the Napo, 216, 219.  
     " trail, 182, 186.  
     " tropical, 36, 38, 287, 490.  
 Fossil bones on the Andes, 154.  
 Fossils in the Amazons valley, 282, 347, 560.  
 Freights on the Amazons, 374.  
 Frogs in Quito valley, 107.  
     " of the Amazons, 304.  
 Fruits of Quito, 101.  
     " on the Amazons, 289, 437, 509.  
 Galapagos Islands, 105, 124.  
 Galt, Dr., 383, 465, 466, 558, 562, 580.  
 Game on the Amazons, 474.  
 Gentians, 103.  
 Geology of South America, 114.  
     " of the Amazons valley, 225, 347, 551.  
     " of the Andes, 552.  
 Glacial theory of Agassiz, 282, 560.  
 Glaciers, absence of, 131.  
 Glimpse of the Andes, 33.  
 Goitre, 94.  
 Gold in Peru, 440.  
     " on the Amazons, 348, 350.  
     " on the Napo, 196.  
 Grapes on the Amazons, 234.  
 Grebe on the Andes, 146, 428.  
 Guacamayo Mountain, 190.  
 Guamani, 144, 179.  
 Guano, 434.  
 Guápulo, 178.  
 Guarani race, 316.  
 Guarana, 290, 524.  
 Guaranda, 46.  
 Guava, 512.  
 Guayaquil, city and people, 25.  
     " climate, 28.  
     " commerce, 29.  
     " history, 28.  
     " market, 30.  
 Guayas River, scenes on, 32.  
 Guayusa tea, 193, 520.  
 Gums, 528.  
 Gurupá, 253.  
 Gypsy-birds, 223.  
 Hammocks, 202.  
 Harbors of Peru, 434.  
 Hats of Guayaquil, 31.  
     " of Moyobamba, 390.  
 Hatuntaqui, battle of, 56, 154.  
 Hauxwell, Mr., 227, 229.



- Health in the tropics, 331.  
     " on the Andes, 93.  
 Heart of the Andes, 48, 398.  
 High altitudes, experience at, 96, 142, 579.  
 Himalayas, vegetation on, 50, 100.  
 Horns, blowing of, 209.  
 Horses, extinct species of, 154.  
     " for the Andes, 36.  
 Hospitality, Ecuadorian, 35, 71.  
 Hotels, Andean, 40, 53, 620.  
     " in Guayaquil, 328.  
     " in Quito, 329.  
 Howling monkeys, 223, 313.  
 Hualgayoc mines, 441.  
 Huallága River, 268, 350.  
 Humboldt, 136, 156.  
 Hummers in Quito valley, 107, 569.  
     " on the Amazons, 308.  
 Hyatt, Prof., 553.  
 Hybrids, 43.  
 Hydrographical Commission, 382, 633.  
 Hypsometric zones, 50.  
  
 Ibarra, 157.  
 Ibis, 308.  
 Iça River, 348.  
 Ida Pfeiffer, 53.  
 Iguana, 304, 478.  
 Imbabura, 143, 154.  
 Immorality of priests, 89.  
 Inaja palm, 547.  
 Incarial relics, 109, 112, 124, 397, 454.  
 Incas in Quito, 56.  
 Indian character, 153, 203, 243, 456, 469, 585.  
     " dwellings, 78.  
     " peons, 36, 183.  
     " savages, 221.  
     " villages, 237.  
 Indians, Amazonian, 315, 462, 470.  
     " Andean, 69, 109, 111, 454.  
     " as travelers, 186.  
 India-rubber-tree, 288, 529.  
 In memoriam, 334.  
 Insect pests, 224, 397, 484.  
 Insects, on the Amazons, 206, 300, 388.  
     " in Quito, 108.  
 Iquitos, 231, 380, 586.  
 Islay, desert of, 415.  
 Itulcachi, 178.  
 Ivory palms, 549.  
  
 Jacamars, 308.  
 Jaçanas, 308.  
 Jacapas, 308.  
 Jaguars, 311, 482.  
 Japurá River, 267, 320, 347.  
 Javari River, 269, 320, 348.  
 Jesuits, 89, 321.  
 Jiggers, 108, 487.  
 Jívaros Indians, 165, 171.  
 Jupati palm, 544.  
 Juris Indians, 319.  
 Juruá River, 269, 319, 347.  
 Jutahí River, 269, 347.  
  
 Kingsley, Charles, 398, 492, 534.  
  
 Labor, scarcity of, 360.  
     " value of, 381, 373.  
 Lady travelers on the Amazons, 236.  
 La Mona, 38.  
 Language of Ecuador, 71.  
 Languages, Indian, 317, 458, 461, 471, 473, 624.  
 Latacunga, 53.  
 Lava, absence of, 122.  
     " streams, 144, 576.  
 Leprosy, 55, 94, 592.  
 Lianas, 188.  
 Lice-eating, 181.  
 Life within the Amazons, 295.  
     " around the Amazons, 300.  
     " on the Solimoens, 377.  
 Lignite on the Amazons, 225, 283.  
 Lima, 403.  
 Lion, American, 105, 482.  
 Living on the Amazons, 235, 372, 381.  
 Lizards of the Amazons, 304.  
 Llama, 104, 421.  
     " fossil, 154.  
 Llanganati Mountains, 149.  
 Locro, 44.  
 Loja, 152.  
 Longevity on the Andes, 92.  
 Loreto, 232.  
 Lotteries in Quito, 90.  
 Lumber on the Amazons, 361.  
 Lumbering on the Amazons, 492.  
 Lungs of mountaineers, 95.  
  
 Maçaranduba-tree, 500.  
 Macas, 172.  
 Macaws, 306.  
 Machachi, 55.  
 Madeira River, 269, 341, 355.  
     " Railway, 345.  
 Malaria, 596.



- Mamaï, 234.  
 Mamelucos, 239, 466.  
 Mammals on the Amazons, 309, 474.  
 Manáos, 243, 370, 376.  
 Manati, 215, 299, 477.  
 Mandioca, 291, 518.  
 Mango, 34, 513.  
 Manseriche Pongo, 351.  
 Manufactures of Manáos, 373.  
     " of Peru, 431.  
     " of Pará, 360.  
     " of Quito, 77.  
 Marañon climate, 379, 580.  
     " River, 227, 379.  
     " steamers, 230, 356, 379.  
 Maravilla, 48.  
 Marcoy, Paul, 380.  
 Market of Quito, 77.  
 Maruim, 485.  
 Mashka, 36.  
 Maspá, 186.  
 Masquerade, Indian, 110.  
 Mastodon, Andean, 154.  
 Matá-matá turtle, 299.  
 Maucallacta, 232.  
 Mauhés Indians, 318, 370.  
 Mazan River, 226.  
 Meat, preservation of, 222.  
 Medical notes, 93, 198, 379, 580.  
 Meiggs, Henry, 445.  
 Merchants of Quito, 74.  
 Meteorology of the Marañon, 583.  
 Mica Lake, 146.  
 Milk on the Andes, 179.  
 Milky Way at Quito, 98.  
 Miriti palm, 538.  
 Misti Volcano, 415.  
 Mixed races, 68, 322, 466.  
 Mocha, 52.  
 Mongruba-tree, 288.  
 Monkey-meat, 203, 474.  
 Monkeys, 223, 313.  
 Montaña of Peru, 231, 432, 581.  
 Monte Alégre, 252.  
 Moquim, 485.  
 Mutúca flies, 224, 485.  
 Moreno, President, 54, 86, 138.  
 Morona River, 350.  
 Mountaineers, 43, 69, 95, 460.  
 Mountains on the Amazons, 252.  
 Mountain travel, 43, 387, 392.  
 Moyobamba, 231, 389.  
     " hats, 533.  
 Mucuja palm, 548.  
 Mules, 43.  
 Muleteers, 36.  
 Mundurucus Indians, 318, 462.  
 Múras Indians, 318.  
 Murumuru palm, 547.  
 Music in the forest, 205.  
 Mosquitoes, 224, 228, 303, 484.  
 Nanay River, 348.  
 Napo country, 164.  
     " diseases, 198.  
     " fish, 226.  
     " Indians, 165, 197, 180, 210, 471.  
 Napo, journey, 174.  
     " navigation, 197, 209.  
     " productions, 196.  
     " rapids, 200.  
     " River, 197, 199, 227, 268, 348.  
     " scenery, 216, 220.  
     " tea, 193.  
     " turtles, 226.  
     " village, 194.  
     " wilderness, 188, 191.  
 Narcotics, 197, 291, 525.  
 Nauta, 231.  
 Navigation of the Amazons, 354.  
 Negroes on the Amazons, 247, 323.  
 Negro River, 242, 266, 319, 346.  
 Newspapers in Ecuador, 27, 80.  
     " in Peru, 432.  
 Nocturnal music, 205.  
 Obidos, 248, 369.  
 Obsidian, 124, 148.  
 Oils, 528.  
 Oranges, 513.  
 Orchids, 216.  
 Orquilla, 439.  
 Orejones, 222.  
 Orellana's expedition, 183, 207.  
 Ores in Peru, 439.  
 Organ-bird, 308.  
 Oriente, 164.  
 Oroya Railroad, 449.  
 Otovalo, 157.  
 Outfit for travel, 327.  
 Pacasmayo, 402.  
     " Railroad, 448.  
 Paita, raised beach at, 115, 552.  
 Paja, or Paramo grass, 49.  
 Palms, cocoa, 35, 548.  
     " on the Amazons, 287, 534.  
     " on the Napo, 219.  
 Palo de cruz, 228, 497.  
 Pampas, geology of, 282.  
 Panama hats, 31, 533, 550.



- Pañuelon, 69.  
 Papallacta, 177, 181.  
 Papaya-tree, 202, 234, 510.  
 Pará City, buildings, 257, 359.  
     " climate, 262, 358.  
     " commerce, 259, 360, 362.  
     " currency, 260.  
     " government, 261.  
     " industry, 358.  
     " people, 258.  
     " situation, 254, 357, 362.  
 Pará River, 254, 271.  
 Paramo, 33.  
 Paranapura River, 384.  
 Parica drug, 526.  
 Parrots, 206, 306.  
 Passés Indians, 319.  
 Pastassa River, 150, 268, 350.  
 Paxiuba palm, 541.  
 Peach palm, 513, 546.  
 Pebas, 227.  
     " fossils, 282, 562.  
 Peccaries, 221, 310, 477.  
 Pentland's altitudes, 428.  
 Peons, 36, 183.  
 Peru, her resources, 431.  
     " physical features, 432.  
 Peruvian bark, 47, 438, 523.  
     " steamers, 230, 379, 619.  
 Pfeiffer, Ida, 53.  
 Piassaba palm, 289, 532, 542.  
 Pichincha volcano, 124, 133, 140.  
 Pigs, mode of dressing, 49.  
 Pine-apples, 509.  
 Pirarucú fish, 295, 479.  
 Piscaguañuni, 394.  
 Pita, 193, 532.  
 Piums, 224, 484.  
 Pizarro at Coca, 183, 207.  
 Plantain, 34, 513.  
 Poison antidote, 332.  
 Politeness, Brazilian, 372.  
     " Ecuadorian, 35, 71.  
 Politics in Quito, 86.  
 Polylepis-trees, 50, 179.  
 Poncho, 69.  
 Population of Amazons valley, 462, 585.  
 Porphyroid trachytes, 124.  
 Porpoises, 299.  
 Porto do Moz, 253.  
 Portuguese settlers, 586.  
 Potatoes on the Andes, 101, 423.  
 Potato-soup, 44, 50.  
 Potro River, 350.  
 Prayinha, 253.  
 President's order, 176.  
 Priests of Quito, 89.  
 Protestant cemetery, 90, 334.  
 Puma, 105.  
 Pumice, 148.  
     " on the Amazons, 268.  
 Puna, 96.  
 Puno, 422, 441.  
 Purus Indians, 318.  
     " River, 269, 346.  
 Quadrupeds on the Amazons, 309, 474.  
 Quartz, paucity of, 122.  
 Quichua Indians, 109, 456.  
 Quito agriculture, 75.  
     " amusements, 80.  
     " architecture, 78.  
     " arts, 78.  
     " atmosphere, 96.  
     " bells, 89.  
     " birds, 106.  
     " bull-baits, 80, 94.  
     " butterflies, 108.  
     " capital, 66.  
     " carnival, 81.  
     " climate, 91.  
     " cock-fights, 81.  
     " cookery, 84.  
     " currency, 75.  
     " diseases, 93.  
     " dress, 69.  
     " drunkenness, 142.  
     " education, 79.  
     " fashions, 70.  
     " fish, 108.  
     " flour, 98, 101.  
     " history, 56, 152.  
     " insects, 108.  
     " ladies, 70, 81.  
     " manufactures, 77.  
     " market, 77.  
     " masquerades, 81.  
     " merchants, 74.  
     " newspapers, 80.  
     " politics, 86.  
     " population, 68.  
     " potatoes, 101.  
     " prices, 329.  
     " Protestant cemetery, 90.  
     " religion, 87.  
     " reptiles, 107.  
     " scenery, 178.  
     " servants, 83.  
     " situation, 55, 59, 62.  
     " streets and buildings, 64, 65.



- Quito street scene, 60.  
   " suburbs, 55, 59.  
   " under the Incas, 56.  
   " under the Spaniards, 57.  
   " valley, 51, 55, 73, 149, 152.  
   " " archæology of, 109, 112.  
 Quitonians, character of the, 71, 86.  
   " primeval, 109.  
  
 Rain-fall at Quito, 93.  
   " on the Marañon, 379, 614.  
 Rain-line on the Andes, 45.  
 Raposa, 233, 311.  
 Regularity of nature, 92, 411.  
 Religion of Ecuador, 87.  
 Religious intolerance, 91.  
 Reptiles at Quito, 107.  
   " on the Amazons, 296, 482.  
 Revenue of Ecuador, 87.  
 Ride down the Andes, 180, 451.  
 Rimos Indians, 322.  
 Riobamba, 150, 153.  
 Rise and fall of the Amazons, 583.  
 River systems of South America, 118, 275.  
 Roads on the Andes, 43, 53, 74, 393.  
 Rodents on the Amazons, 309.  
 Romanism on the Andes, 88.  
 Rose of the Andes, 103.  
 Routes across South America, 325, 385, 620.  
 Rumñagui, 146.  
  
 Sailing craft on the Amazons, 352.  
 Saliter, 435.  
 Salt on the Andes, 196, 388, 392.  
 San Antonio, 233.  
 Sand-dunes, 414.  
 Sand-flies, 224.  
 Sangai volcano, 150.  
 San Paulo, 237.  
 San Regis, 383.  
 Santarem, 251, 366.  
 Santa Rosa, 201.  
 Santiago River, 350.  
 Sapucaya nut, 290, 502.  
 Sarayacu, 383.  
 Sarsaparilla, 224, 523.  
 Saüba ants, 194, 300, 486.  
 Savages on the Napo, 221.  
 Savaneta, 40.  
 Saw-mills on the Amazons, 374, 377, 491.  
 Scenery on the Amazons, 253, 363.  
 Sea-cows, 215, 299, 477.  
 Seasons on the Amazons, 581.  
  
 Serpa, 247.  
 Shells in Quito valley, 109.  
   " in the Amazons valley, 295.  
 Sierra, 33.  
 Silk-cotton-tree, 220, 289, 533.  
 Silk-culture, 108, 439.  
 Silver mines, 440.  
 Sincholagua, 146.  
 Skin-diseases, 590.  
 Sloths, 310.  
 Slow-worm on the Napo, 194.  
 Snakes, scarcity of, 195, 332.  
   " on the Amazons, 305, 483.  
 Snow at high altitudes, 138.  
   " limit in the Andes, 125.  
 Soil in the Amazons valley, 286, 489.  
 Solimoens, 237, 376.  
 South America, geology of, 114.  
   " American fauna and flora, 103.  
   " " Indians, 315, 454.  
 Southerners on the Amazons, 246, 251, 368.  
 Spanish character, 328.  
   " language, 71.  
   " republicanism, 58.  
 Spiders on the Amazons, 304, 483.  
 Spruce, Dr., 537, 538.  
 Stars at Quito, 97.  
 Staunton, Col., burial of, 91, 334.  
 Steam on the Amazons, 230, 234, 330, 353.  
 Storm on the Napo, 213.  
 Straw-hats, 392.  
 Sugar in Peru, 436.  
   " on the Amazons, 252.  
   " on the Andes, 329.  
 Sugar-cane on the Amazons, 291, 520.  
 Suno, 205.  
 Superstition, 54.  
  
 Tabatinga, 233, 378.  
 Table-lands of the Old World, 152.  
 Tablon, 178.  
 Tacunga, 53.  
 Tambillo ridge, 55.  
 Tambo on the mountains, 40, 394.  
 Tapajos River, 270, 340, 355.  
 Tapir, 104, 310, 474.  
 Tariff at Pará, 361, 374, 629.  
 Teffe, 239, 378.  
   " River, 269, 470.  
 Temperature, correspondence of altitude and latitude as to, 145.  
 Termite ants, 301.  
 Textile plants, 532.



- Thermometer, variations of, 92.  
 Tide on the Amazons, 275, 339.  
 Tigre River, 349.  
 Timber on the Amazons, 289, 488.  
 Titicaca Lake, 421.  
 Tiupullo, 54.  
 Toads of the Amazons, 304.  
 Tobacco on the Amazons, 291, 438, 525, 589.  
     " use of, by the Napos, 197.  
 Tocantíns River, 271, 340, 354.  
 Tolling-bell bird, 307.  
 Tonka or Tonquin beans, 502, 521.  
 Tortoise-shell wood, 289, 495.  
 Toucan, 206, 306.  
 Tourists, new route for, 615.  
 Trade on the Amazons, 352.  
 Trade-wind, 118, 597.  
 Trail in the forest, 182.  
 Trapiche, 207.  
 Traveling in South America, 325, 615.  
 Trees in Quito valley, 100.  
     " on the Amazons, 288, 488.  
 Trogon, 308.  
 Trombetas River, 341.  
 Tropical flowers, 292, 489.  
     " forest, 287, 490.  
     " vegetation, 34, 38, 188, 190, 219, 489.  
 Tucker, Admiral, 232, 382.  
 Tucum palm, 171, 546.  
 Tucúna Indians, 320, 470.  
 Tunantíns, 237.  
 Tunguragua volcano, 149.  
 Tupi race, 316.  
 Turtles in the Amazons, 297, 478.  
     " in the Napo, 215, 226.  
  
 Uaupés Indians, 319, 470.  
 Ubim palm, 543.  
 Ucayali Indians, 321, 471.  
     " River, 268, 349, 383, 557, 580.  
 Umbrella bird, 307.  
 University of Lima, 408.  
     " of Puno, 423.  
     " of Quito, 79.  
 Upper Amazons towns, 231, 379.  
 Urarí poison, 197, 228, 526.  
 Urucuri palm, 548.  
  
 Valediction on the Napo, 204.  
 Valley of the Amazons, 280, 357.  
     " of the Andes, 130.  
     " of the Chimbo, 46.  
  
 Valley of Quito, 51, 55, 73, 149, 151, 155.  
 Vanilla on the Napo, 196, 520.  
 Vegetable ivory, 549.  
 Vegetation in the tropics, 34, 38.  
     " on the Amazons, 287, 488.  
     " zones of, on the Andes, 50.  
 Verdure on the Amazons, 285.  
 Verrugas Bridge, 450.  
 Vessels on the Amazons, 353.  
 Veta, 96.  
 Victoria Regia, 292.  
 Vicuñas, 421.  
 Views from the Andes, 45, 398.  
 Villa Bella, 248, 370.  
 Vocabularies, Indian, 473, 624.  
 Volcanoes of Ecuador, 122, 125, 151.  
 Volcano of Misti, 415.  
  
 Wallace, A. R., 466.  
 Washerwomen of Quito, 83.  
 Water-beetles, 295.  
 Water-carriers, 61.  
 Water-shed of the Atlantic and Pacific, 54, 427.  
 Water-snakes, 296.  
 Wayside inn, 40.  
 Wetterman, A., 351, 397.  
 White ants, 301.  
 Willows on the Amazons, 399.  
 Wisse, M., descent into Pichincha, 138.  
 Wood for steamers, 373.  
 Woods of commerce, 488.  
 Wool, Andean, 104.  
     " Peruvian, 438.  
  
 Xingú River, 271, 340, 354, 365.  
  
 Yagua Indians, 320, 471.  
     " palm, 547.  
 Yana-ureu, 142.  
 Ypadú, 291, 525.  
 Yuca, 167, 519.  
 Yurimaguas, 231, 384.  
  
 Záparo Indians, 165, 170, 471.  
 Zodiacal light, 98.  
 Zones of vegetation, 50.  
 Zoölogical provinces of Amazonia, 300.  
 Zoölogy of the Napo, 206.  
     " of South America, 286, 474.







# THE MARAÑÓN

AND ITS TRIBUTARIES

1875

Altitudes above the sea are indicated by figures; Cascades or the limits of navigation by the mark I average width in yards underscored; average depth in fathoms in a C; average current in miles per hour in a □

MAJORITY	VARIATION
Iquitos	5° 34' S. E.
Tukuyuki	6° 35' S. E.
Nauta	7° 35' S. E.
Sanchez	7° 35' S. E.
Mouth of Pachico	7° 45' S. E.
Port Tucker	7° 50' S. E.
Moyabamba	8° 30' S. E.





# THE MARAÑON

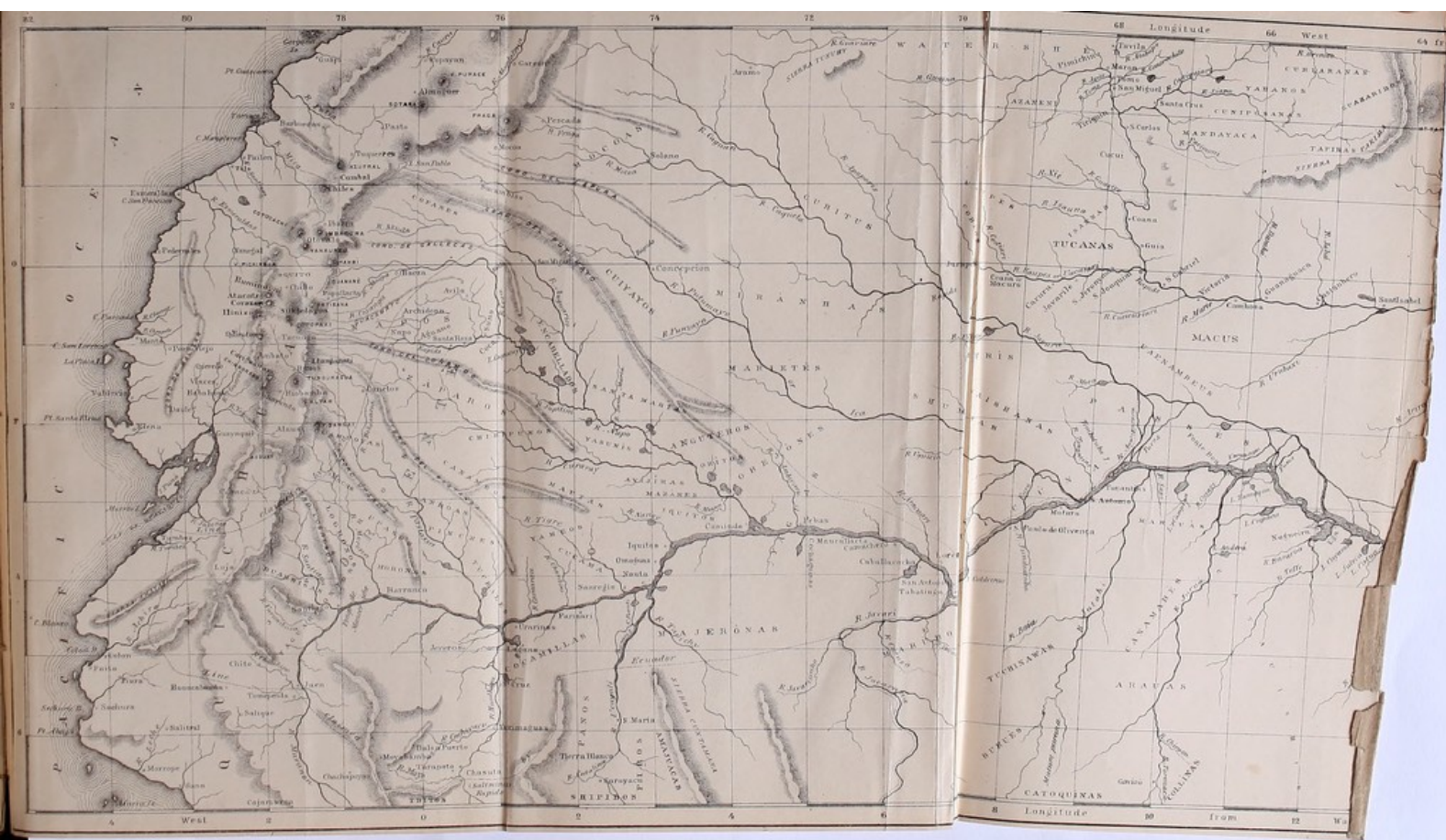
AND ITS TRIBUTARIES

1875

Altitudes above the sea are indicated by figures. Contours of the limits of navigation by the river are marked with a dash and a dot. Shaded areas indicate low-lying land. Currents in miles per hour are indicated by arrows.













# VALUABLE AND INTERESTING WORKS FOR PUBLIC AND PRIVATE LIBRARIES

PUBLISHED BY HARPER & BROTHERS, NEW YORK.

For a full List of Books suitable for Libraries, see HARPER & BROTHERS' TRADE-LIST and CATALOGUE, which may be had gratuitously on application to the Publishers personally, or by letter enclosing Nine Cents in Postage Stamps.

HARPER & BROTHERS will send their publications by mail, postage prepaid [excepting certain books whose weight would exclude them from the mail], on receipt of the price. HARPER & BROTHERS' School and College Text-Books are marked in this list with an asterisk (\*).

**FIRST CENTURY OF THE REPUBLIC.** A Review of American Progress. 8vo, Cloth, \$5 00; Sheep, \$5 50; Half Morocco, \$7 25.

## Contents.

Introduction: I. Colonial Progress. By EUGENE LAWRENCE.—II. Mechanical Progress. By EDWARD H. KNIGHT.—III. Progress in Manufacture. By the HON. DAVID A. WELLS.—IV. Agricultural Progress. By Professor WILLIAM H. BREWER.—V. The Development of our Mineral Resources. By Professor T. STERRY HUNT.—VI. Commercial Development. By EDWARD ATKINSON.—VII. Growth and Distribution of Population. By the HON. FRANCIS A. WALKER.—VIII. Monetary Development. By Professor WILLIAM G. SUMNER.—IX. The Experiment of the Union, with its Preparations. By T. D. WOOLSEY, D.D., LL.D.—X. Educational Progress. By EUGENE LAWRENCE.—XI. Scientific Progress: 1. The Exact Sciences. By F. A. P. BARNARD, D.D., LL.D. 2. Natural Science. By Professor THEODORE GILL.—XII. A Century of American Literature. By EDWIN P. WHIPPLE.—XIII. Progress of the Fine Arts. By S. S. CONANT.—XIV. Medical and Sanitary Progress. By AUSTIN FLINT, M.D.—XV. American Jurisprudence. By BENJAMIN VAUGHAN ABBOTT.—XVI. Humanitarian Progress. By CHARLES L. BRACE.—XVII. Religious Development. By the Rev. JOHN F. HURST, D.D.

**MOTLEY'S DUTCH REPUBLIC.** The Rise of the Dutch Republic. A History. By JOHN LOTHROP MOTLEY, LL.D., D.C.L. With a Portrait of William of Orange. 3 vols., 8vo, Cloth, \$10 50; Sheep, \$12 00; Half Calf, \$17 25.

**MOTLEY'S UNITED NETHERLANDS.** History of the United Netherlands: from the Death of William the Silent to the Twelve Years' Truce—1609. With a full View of the English-Dutch Struggle against Spain, and of the Origin and Destruction of the Spanish Armada. By JOHN LOTHROP MOTLEY, LL.D., D.C.L. Portraits. 4 vols., 8vo, Cloth, \$14 00; Sheep, \$16 00; Half Calf, \$23 00.

**MOTLEY'S LIFE AND DEATH OF JOHN OF BARNEVELD.** The Life and Death of John of Barneveld, Advocate of Holland: with a View of the Primary Causes and Movements of "The Thirty-years' War." By JOHN LOTHROP MOTLEY, LL.D., D.C.L. Illustrated. In 2 vols., 8vo, Cloth, \$7 00; Sheep, \$8 00; Half Calf, \$11 50.



**\*HAYDN'S DICTIONARY OF DATES**, relating to all Ages and Nations. For Universal Reference. Edited by BENJAMIN VINCENT, Assistant Secretary and Keeper of the Library of the Royal Institution of Great Britain; and Revised for the Use of American Readers. 8vo, Cloth, \$3 50; Sheep, \$3 94.

**HILDRETH'S UNITED STATES.** History of the United States. **FIRST SERIES:** From the Discovery of the Continent to the Organization of the Government under the Federal Constitution. **SECOND SERIES:** From the Adoption of the Federal Constitution to the End of the Sixteenth Congress. By RICHARD HILDRETH. 6 vols., 8vo, Cloth, \$18 00; Sheep, \$21 00; Half Calf, \$31 50.

**HUME'S HISTORY OF ENGLAND.** The History of England, from the Invasion of Julius Cæsar to the Abdication of James II., 1688. By DAVID HUME. 6 vols., 12mo, Cloth, \$4 80; Sheep, \$7 20; Half Calf, \$15 30.

**HUDSON'S HISTORY OF JOURNALISM.** Journalism in the United States, from 1690 to 1872. By FREDERIC HUDSON. 8vo, Cloth, \$5 00; Half Calf, \$7 25.

**JEFFERSON'S DOMESTIC LIFE.** The Domestic Life of Thomas Jefferson: compiled from Family Letters and Reminiscences, by his Great-granddaughter, SARAH N. RANDOLPH. Illustrated. Crown 8vo, Cloth, \$2 50.

**JOHNSON'S COMPLETE WORKS.** The Works of Samuel Johnson, LL.D. With an Essay on his Life and Genius, by ARTHUR MURPHY, Esq. 2 vols., 8vo, Cloth, \$4 00; Sheep, \$5 00; Half Calf, \$8 50.

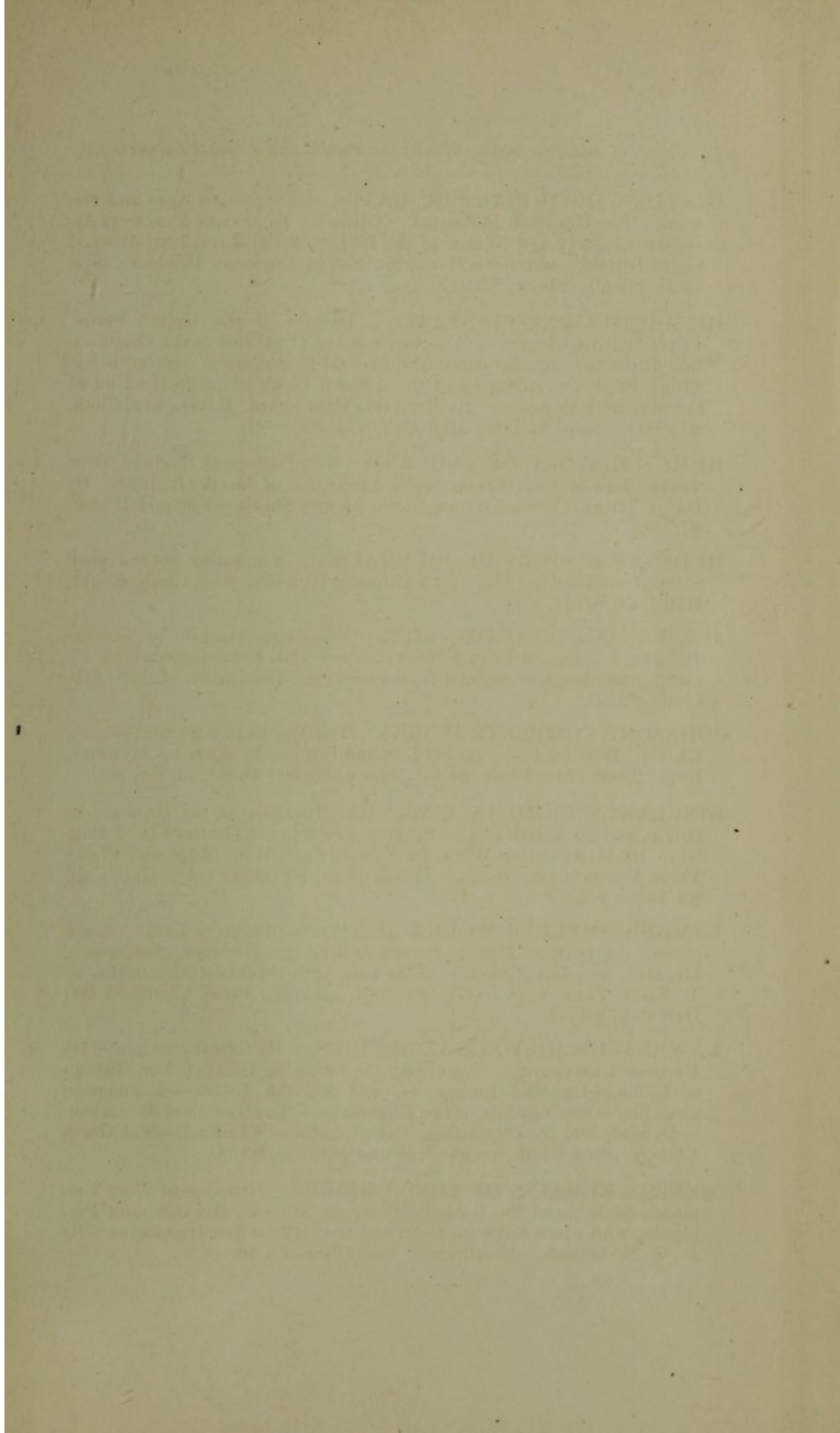
**KINGLAKE'S CRIMEAN WAR.** The Invasion of the Crimea: its Origin, and an Account of its Progress down to the Death of Lord Raglan. By ALEXANDER WILLIAM KINGLAKE. With Maps and Plans. Three Volumes now ready. 12mo, Cloth, \$2 00 per vol.; Half Calf, \$3 75 per vol.

**LAMB'S COMPLETE WORKS.** The Works of Charles Lamb. Comprising his Letters, Poems, Essays of Elia, Essays upon Shakspeare, Hogarth, &c., and a Sketch of his Life, with the Final Memorials, by T. NOON TALFOURD. With Portrait. 2 vols., 12mo, Cloth, \$3 00; Half Calf, \$6 50.

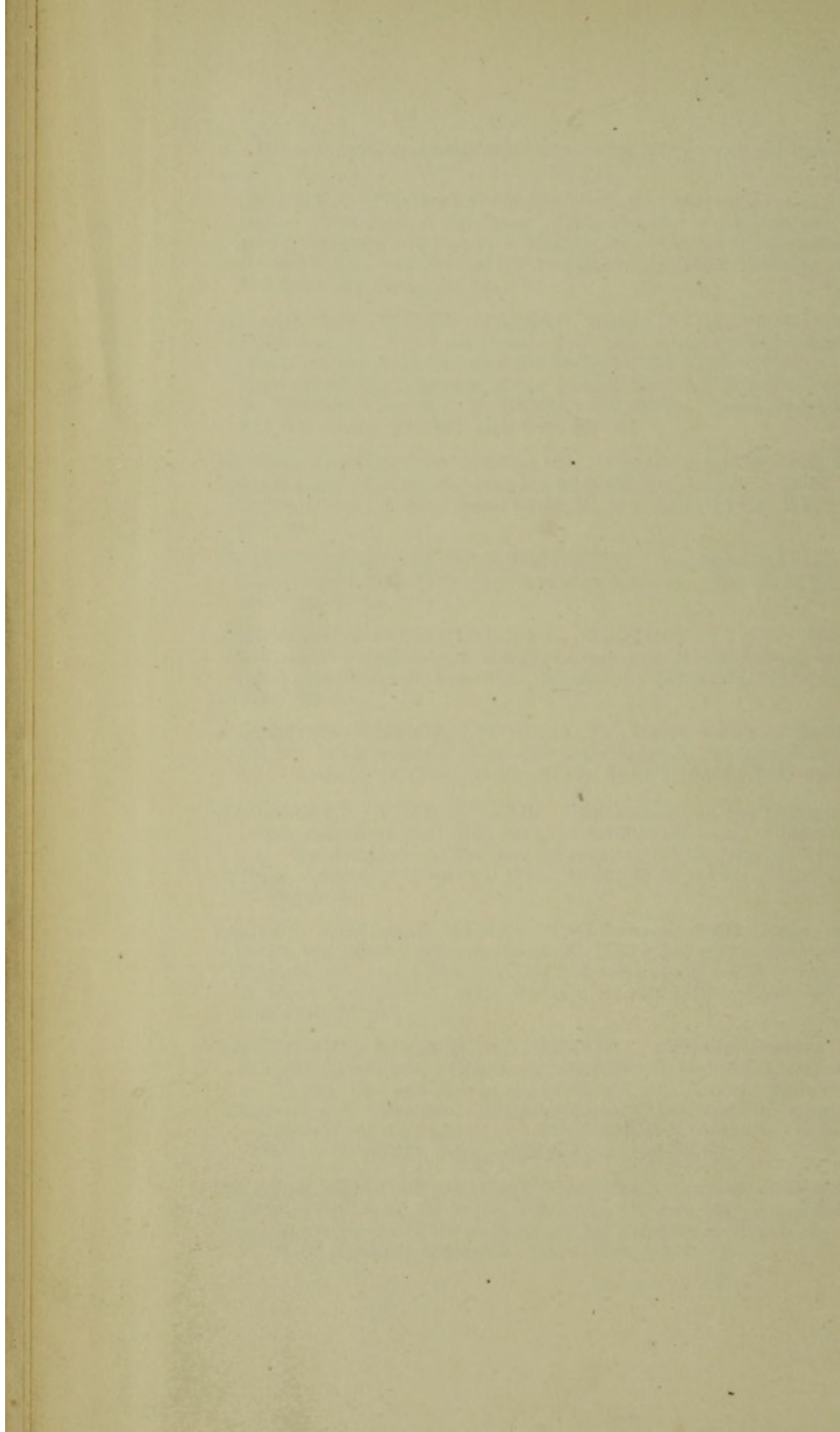
**LAWRENCE'S HISTORICAL STUDIES.** Historical Studies. By EUGENE LAWRENCE. Containing the following Essays: The Bishops of Rome.—Leo and Luther.—Loyola and the Jesuits.—Ecumenical Councils.—The Vaudois.—The Huguenots.—The Church of Jerusalem.—Dominic and the Inquisition.—The Conquest of Ireland.—The Greek Church. 8vo, Cloth, uncut edges and gilt tops, \$3 00.

**MYERS'S REMAINS OF LOST EMPIRES.** Remains of Lost Empires: Sketches of the Ruins of Palmyra, Nineveh, Babylon, and Persepolis, with some Notes on India and the Cashmerian Himalayas. By P. V. N. MYERS. Illustrated. 8vo, Cloth, \$3 50.

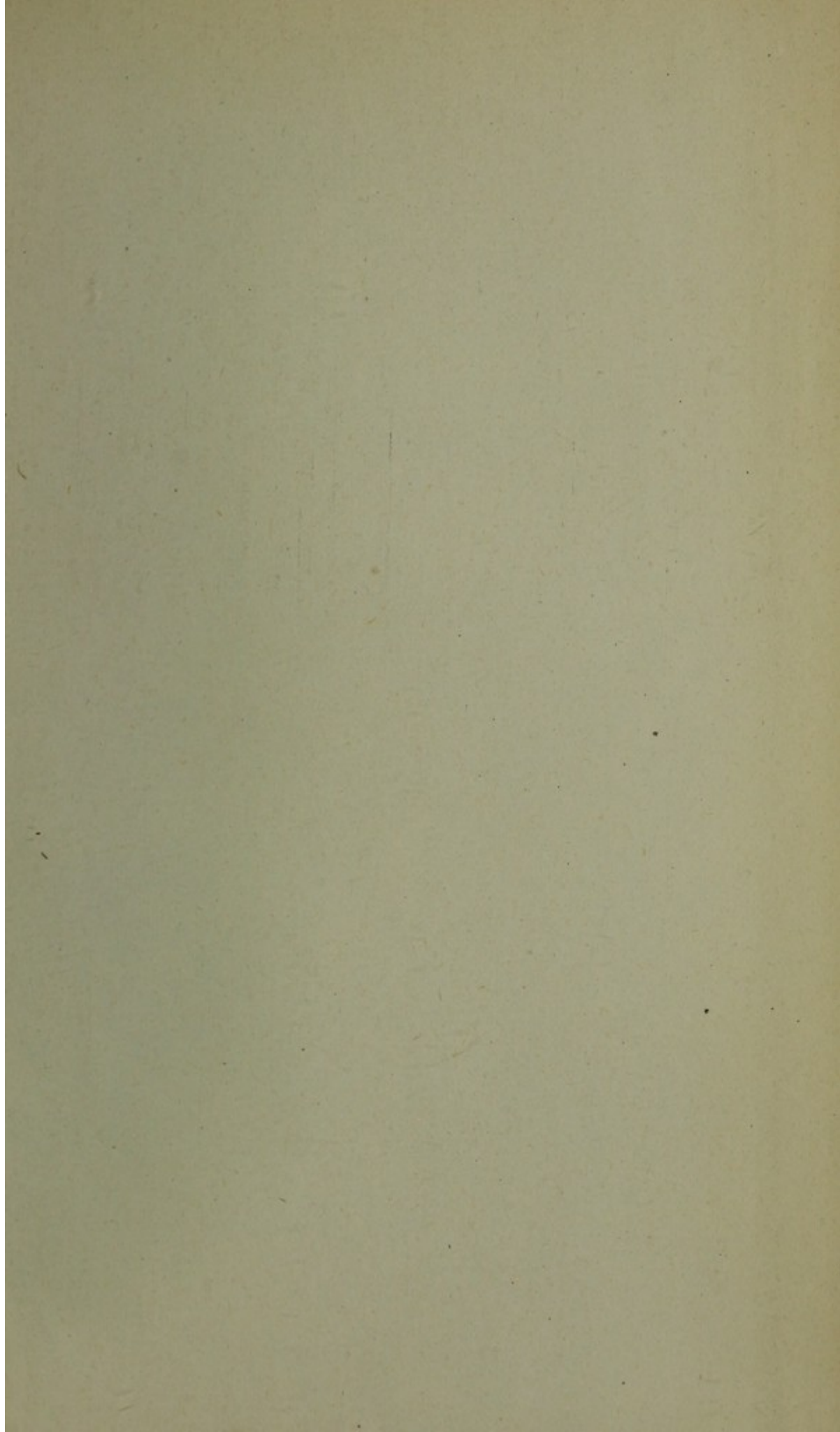




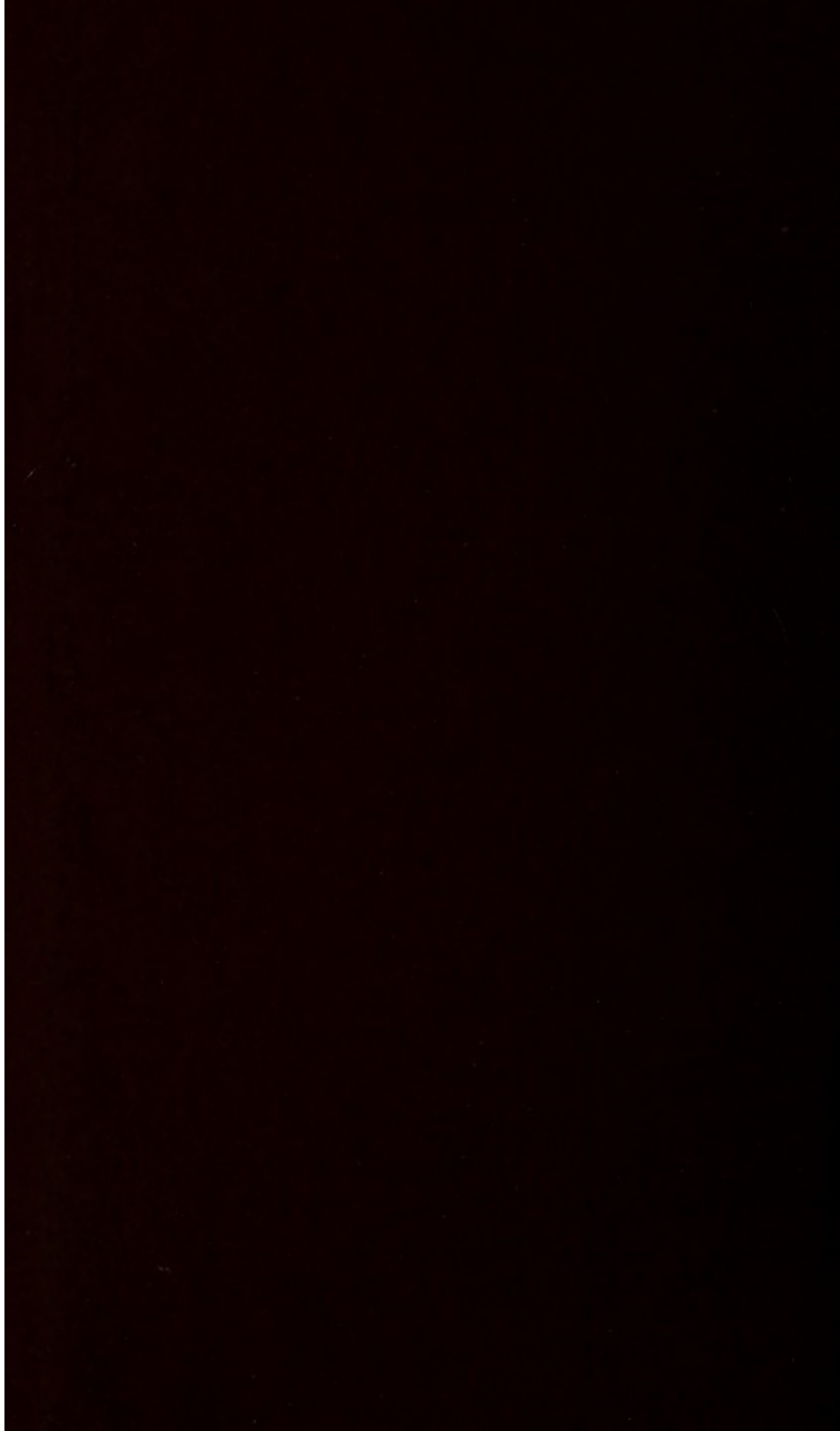


















1100  
1875